



Virginia  
Military Organizations  
in the  
World War

With Supplement of  
Distinguished Service

---

ARTHUR KYLE DAVIS  
EDITOR

VIRGINIA BEACH PUBLIC LIBRARY  
INFORMATION SERVICES DIVISION  
GENERAL REFERENCE BUREAU  
936 INDEPENDENCE BOULEVARD  
VIRGINIA BEACH, VIRGINIA 23455



PUBLICATIONS  
of the  
**Virginia War History Commission**

---

SOURCE VOL. V

---

Virginia  
Military Organizations  
in the  
World War

---

With Supplement of  
Distinguished Service

---

ARTHUR KYLE DAVIS  
EDITOR

---

Published by order of  
The Executive Committee  
State Capitol, Richmond, Va.  
1927


REFERENCE  
DO NOT REMOVE FROM LIBRARY.

Copyright  
by  
The Virginia War History Commission  
1927



TO THE  
VIRGINIA  
SOLDIERS, SAILORS AND MARINES  
Who Took Part in the  
WORLD WAR

THIS VOLUME IS DEDICATED BY THE  
VIRGINIA WAR HISTORY COMMISSION



Digitized by the Internet Archive  
in 2011 with funding from  
LYRASIS members and Sloan Foundation



# Foreword

## I.

Of the myriad units of the American forces in the World War, only thirty-two are here treated as "Virginia Military Organizations." Even this modest claim may be disputed and the very title of the volume may be called in question, since the army Tables of Organization gave no official recognition by states. But the Virginia Commission is ready to take the field against all comers in defense of this claim of thirty-two distinct units specifically though not exclusively Virginian, and it will not abate its insistence that Virginia had in this war thirty white units and two colored units, ranging in size from regiments to companies and embracing about one-fifth of all the Virginians in the American forces. The task of unravelling the threads of state military history from the close-knit fabric of national history is well under way in Washington as well as in Virginia. Each state unit finally will have again "a local habitation and a name."

After eight years of plodding and persistent labor, the History Commission here presents fifty-eight histories of these thirty-two Virginia Units in the World War. The citizens of the state will read the volume for its narratives, the Virginia soldiers will search it for records of service, and the student of history will turn to it for the facts with which it is crammed. The Virginia posts of the American Legion will find that it establishes their right to place tablets recording Virginian service in any one of hundreds of villages and towns and forts and camps and sectors and battlefields. The opinions and criticisms given here, interesting side-lights of service, will also interest many.

The whole vast expanse of specific state military service in the World War has been a sea of darkness and an area of silence. This volume is "the first that ever burst into that silent sea."

This state silence is an interesting aftermath of the War. Probably it is due to two facts. The first is that the army plan ignored state lines, except in the matter of drafts and quotas and allocations, and the second is that the names of the state military units were sunk without trace in the nomenclature of the American forces. The states are slow in recovering from these blows to state pride and to state history.

But Virginia is tenacious of state history and of state names honored through decades. Thus the state clung to the name of its Virginia militia and did not change the "Virginia Volunteers" to the "National Guard" until the summer of 1916. Even this new title was lost when the National Guard units were mustered into Federal service in 1917-1918.

This volume rescues and conserves the history of these Virginia units and connects it with the pre-war history. It preserves the continuity of Virginia's military chronicles and even links the World War with the Civil War. It is an important task that offered many interesting problems of plan and method and relative values. To trace the Virginia Units among the American forces, to secure the manuscript or printed history of each unit, and to compile these into a narrative source volume of 400 pages—all this called for something of concerted labor and patient effort.

Where there is only one manuscript history of a unit, this is given practically as submitted. Where there were several manuscript histories of the same unit, these have been combined into one account. Where the printed histories of units have been available, these have been put under contribution, and the longer published histories have been abridged or compiled into briefer narratives suited to the limited space available. The original plan to reproduce each manuscript history in full was not practicable on account of expense, but it is believed that no fact or opinion of value has been omitted in bringing the material into one volume.

Three of the contributions will be of special interest for Virginians and for the general reader. These are Colonel H. L. Opie's valuable history of the Third Battalion of the 116th Infantry of the 29th Division; Captain Frank P. Varney's excellent account of the 117th Trains Headquarters and Military Police of the 42nd Division, and Major Marshall M. Milton's history of Battery B, 60th Regiment C. A. C. Hardly inferior to these in interest



to Virginians are General Samuel G. Waller's brief sketch of the 116th Infantry, Colonel T. M. Wortham's account of the 111th Field Artillery, Major Mathew F. James' account of the 104th Ammunition Train (Horse Battalion), Rufus Bradley Scott's account of the 115th Field Hospital of the 104th Sanitary Train, Captain Julius J. Hulcher's history of the 319th Ambulance Company, the Editorial Committee's history of the 314th Machine Gun Battalion and of the 318th Infantry, Lieutenant Edley B. Craighill's account of the 317th Infantry, the history of Battery F, 60th Regiment, C. A. C., by Captain Charles Cortlandt Walton, Jr. and William H. Phillips, and the five important stories of the Virginia Medical units.

## II.

Only some twenty thousand of the estimated hundred thousand Virginians in the American forces are treated here, for the reason that the very title of the volume excludes any reference to the service of the thousands of Virginians that served in units not specifically Virginian or in the regular army or in the navy or in the marine corps. The Commission has made earnest and continued effort, however, to secure the individual records of these thousands and as a result of this work the archives contain 12,500 individual service records, 2,500 soldiers' letters, 52 diaries, and 1,342 citations of Virginians.

It is obvious that the inability to secure the histories of these four large classes of Virginians—those in the army or navy or marine corps or non-Virginian units—makes it all the more important to preserve the true story of the twenty thousand Virginians in the thirty-two units that retained their Virginia identity. It will be a long task to secure the full records of the men from this state scattered through all the branches of the service. Even with these units it is to be noted that they were not exclusively Virginian and that through losses, transfers, etc., many of the original members do not appear in the final rosters. It is to be noted also that, although the troops treated in this volume fall into two classes—those from the National Guard and those inducted into the National Army by the operation of the selective service law—these are all equally members of Virginia units.

These narratives were written by men who were soldiers rather than writers. Since their value for history inheres in this fact, no apology is made for deficiencies in plan or style or diction. Also no special apology is made for the gaps and omissions in many of the narratives, since the contents of a source book must be limited to the data collected. There is no attempt to improve some histories that are meager or inadequate. The one effort has been to collect in this volume all pertinent information that could be obtained through the Washington offices of the Adjutant General's Department, of the Army War College, of the Surgeon General, of the Chief of Engineers, and of the Militia Bureau, and also from many published volumes containing such information. As to the manuscript histories in the archives, few changes have been made, and these only as an aid to the reader or on account of limited space. The original manuscripts are available in the archives of the Virginia Commission.

It is gratifying to have at last a story of the fighting told by Virginians themselves. Some of them do not hesitate to speak out plainly about matters usually omitted from official histories. Virginians may find here the story of specific units drawn largely from definite localities. This volume translates the fighting service of our men into terms easy to understand, and there is appended a lexicon or table of parallel names of the units in state service and in Federal service.

Some of the thirty-two organizations had units within units, like "laborious Orient ivory, sphere in sphere." Hence there are fifty-eight unit histories instead of thirty-two. To cite two instances, the 116th Infantry has here twenty histories—one of the regiment, one of each of the three battalions and one of each of the sixteen companies—and the 111th Field Artillery has eight histories—one of the regiment, one of the Supply Company and one of each of the six batteries. At last one may learn what became of our Virginia "Blues" or "Grays" or "Guards" or batteries or companies or regiments.



### III.

Of the thirty-two Virginia Units treated in this volume, eight were in the 29th Division, one in the 42nd Division, four in the 80th Division, twelve were Coast Artillery units, five were Medical units, and two were Engineer Service units (colored).

Another grouping may be made on the basis of service. Not all of the Virginia Units went overseas. Eleven of them had home service only. Company A, Virginia Signal Corps, was broken up at Camp McClellan in October, 1917, and its members were assigned to other units of the 29th Division. Ten of the twelve Coast Artillery Companies were kept on guard duty at industrial and munition plants or served at different posts in the Chesapeake Bay area until mustered out. Hence these eleven Virginia Units have no overseas history.

Of the twenty-one Virginia Units that went overseas, six had neither front line service nor combat service. The two Engineer Service Battalions (colored) were assigned to construction work; two Medical units, Base Hospital 45, of the Medical College of Virginia, and Base Hospital 41, of the University of Virginia, did active work behind the front in their proper sphere of service. Two military units, the 111th Field Artillery, comprising batteries from Hampton, Richmond, Norfolk, Portsmouth, Danville and Lexington, and the 104th Ammunition Train (Horse Battalion), formerly the Richmond Light Infantry Blues, had training and service overseas, but no front-line service.

Seven Virginia Overseas Units had important first-line service, but no combat service. These were the two Virginia units of the 104th Sanitary Train of the 29th Division (namely, the 115th Field Hospital, organized from Field Hospital No. 1, Radford, and the 115th Ambulance Company, formerly Ambulance Company No. 1, of Norfolk); the 117th Trains Headquarters and Military Police of the 42nd Division (formerly the 1st and 2nd companies of the Virginia Coast Artillery); the 319th Ambulance Company of the 80th Division (formerly Ambulance Company 46, organized by the Richmond Red Cross Chapter); S. S. U. 516 (formerly University of Virginia Ambulance Company); S. S. U. 517 (another University of Virginia Ambulance Company), and S. S. U. 534 (formerly the Washington and Lee University Ambulance Company).

Even after eliminating these thirteen units of the twenty-one that went overseas, there remain eight Virginia Units that had active and important combat service at the front in the final great campaigns in France. These were the 116th Infantry (comprising the 1st, 2nd and 4th Virginia Infantry Regiments); Company B, of the 112th Machine Gun Battalion (organized from the Machine Gun Company and part of Company D of the 4th Virginia Infantry), and Company D, of the 112th Machine Gun Battalion (formerly Machine Gun Company of the 1st Virginia Infantry); the 317th Infantry, the 318th Infantry and the 314th Machine Gun Battalion (organized from Virginians of the 80th Division at Camp Lee); Battery B, 60th Regiment, C. A. C. (organized in Roanoke), and Battery F, 60th Regiment, C. A. C. (organized in Richmond).

Taken as a whole, this volume seems to offer a fairly broad view of many phases of modern warfare. In the stirring accounts of the fighting of the eight Virginia Combat Units, the reader may get his fill of active campaigns and may feed on the details of combat "*tout son saoul*." The stories of the seven Virginia Front-Line Service Units, embracing a field hospital, five ambulance companies and the 117th Trains Headquarters and Military Police, are no whit less impressive, and it is to be remembered that the 117th was overseas longer and served in more sectors and campaigns than any Virginia organization except one ambulance company—S. S. U. 517. The accounts of the six Virginia Units Behind the Front include the inspiring histories of Virginia's two Base Hospitals and of two of her most representative organizations that were on the way to the front when the Armistice was signed. These were the 111th Field Artillery and the well-known Richmond Light Infantry Blues, the Horse Battalion of the 104th Ammunition Train, which changed from an infantry battalion to a cavalry squadron in the effort to get into the fighting. The accounts of the two colored Service Battalions are regrettably meager.

In the narratives of these twenty-one overseas units and of the eleven



home service units it would seem that these Virginia organizations ran the gamut of war experiences and offer concrete and typical examples of the practical working of the American War Plan.

The claim that these thirty-two units were Virginia Organizations may be reviewed in a paragraph. Eight Virginia Units of the 29th Division and one of the 42nd Division were originally Virginia National Guard units. Three of the Virginia Units of the 80th Division were of the 159th Infantry Brigade, which was known as a Virginia organization, and the fourth Virginia unit of the 80th was originally the Ambulance Company organized and equipped by the Richmond Red Cross chapter. The twelve Virginia units in the Coast Artillery were recruited in communities of this state and were transferred to Federal service. Of the two Virginia Base Hospitals, 45 was the Medical College of Virginia Hospital and 41 was the University of Virginia Hospital. Of the three Virginia Ambulance Units (S. S. U. 516, 517 and 534), the first two were organized at the University of Virginia and the third at Washington and Lee University. The two Virginia Engineer Service Battalions (colored) were made up of drafted colored men, mostly from Virginia.

The sailing dates of the twenty-one Virginia overseas units were as follows: August, 1917, S. S. U. 517; October, 1917, 117th Trains Headquarters and Military Police; December, 1917, S. S. U. 516; January, 1918, S. S. U. 534; March, 1918, 510th Engineers Service Battalion and 511th Engineers Service Battalion; April, 1918, Battery B and Battery F, 60th Regiment C. A. C.; May, 1918, 318th Infantry, 317th Infantry, 314th Machine Gun Battalion and 319th Ambulance Company of the 80th Division; June, 1918, 116th Infantry, 111th Field Artillery, 115th Field Hospital and 115th Ambulance Company of the 104th Sanitary Train, 104th Ammunition Train (Horse Battalion), Company B and Company D of the 112th Machine Gun Battalion of the 29th Division; July, 1918, Base Hospital No. 45 and Base Hospital 1, No. 41.

#### IV.

**The eight "Virginia Overseas Combat Units" served as follows:**

The 116th Infantry experienced first-line service in the Haute-Marne Sector in France in July and August, 1918, and was involved in several raids of minor significance. The regiment moved to the Argonne early in September and on October 8th, near Samogneux, joined in the Meuse-Argonne offensive. The 116th remained in action without relief until October 29, 1918.

Companies B and D, of the 112th Machine Gun Battalion, were attached to the 116th infantry and the 115th Infantry regiments in the operations in the Argonne from October 8th to 29th, 1918, and had a battle experience similar to theirs.

The 317th and 318th Infantry and the 314th Machine Gun Battalion of the 80th Division gained their first front-line experience with the British in July and August, 1918. None of these three outfits did any real fighting, however, until the Meuse-Argonne offensive, on September 26, 1918. From then until withdrawn, on November 6th, these organizations were almost constantly in action.

Batteries B and F of the 60th Regiment, C. A. C., were trained at Camp de Souge in France until September 7th, leaving for Toul on that day. On September 17th, they set out for the Argonne Sector and occupied various firing positions from then until the signing of the Armistice, moving forward as the American advance progressed. This completes the sketch of the first-line fighting of these eight Virginia units.

**The seven "Virginia Overseas Front Line Units" served as follows:**

The 117th Trains Headquarters and Military Police served in the Lorraine, followed by the Champagne, after which came Chateau-Thierry, St. Mihiel, the Meuse-Argonne, and finally in Germany with the Army of Occupation.

The 115th Field Hospital and the 115th Ambulance Co. of the 104th Sanitary Train served the 29th Division during its period of combat training with the French in Alsace from July 27th to September 23, 1918. The first active service at the front began on October 8, 1918, when the division

#### VIII.



commenced its operations east of the Meuse River. The command was continuously on duty until the 29th Division was relieved, on October 29th.

The 319th Ambulance Company trained along with the other units of the 80th Division in conjunction with the British in the Artois sector in July and August, 1918. It entered the Meuse-Argonne offensive on September 26th, and gained its first experience of real war. It was relieved on November 6th.

Ambulance Section 517 went overseas in August, 1917, and took over work of the field service at the American Hospital at Neuilly. Attached to a French division in Alsace in November, 1917, and served there until March, 1918, when ordered to Flanders. Subsequently served in Ypres, Champagne and Argonne sectors and after the Armistice with the Army of Occupation in Germany.

Section 516 sailed from Hoboken in December, 1925, and reached France the middle of January. Moved to Sandricourt and was there attached to 66th French Division. Served in the Vosges until April, 1918. Served in Amiens, Chemin des Dames sectors, and in October, 1918, took part in the fighting on the Oise-Sambre Canal. Moved to Belgium after the Armistice and remained until February, 1919, leaving for France in that month.

Section 534 went overseas in January, 1918. Proceeded to Versailles in March and joined the 12th French Infantry Division. Served in the Somme campaign and then in the Vierzy and Hartennes sectors, afterwards in the Chemin des Dames attack. The section moved to Belgium in October, 1918, and was at Chreushautem when the Armistice was signed.

#### **The six "Virginia Overseas Units Behind the Front" served as follows:**

The 111th Field Artillery went overseas in June, 1918, landing first in England, crossing to France in July. The regiment was billeted in various towns until August, when it moved to Camp Meucon and commenced active training with the French "75." The regiment had completed its training and was on the way to the front when the Armistice was signed.

The Horse Battalion of the 104th Ammunition Train went overseas in June, 1918, going by way of England and reaching France in July. Moved to St. Denis, where it established the hospital. Base No. 41 operated there battalion was moving to the front when the Armistice was signed.

Base Hospital No. 45 went overseas in two sections in July, 1918, and proceeded to Autun in central France. Moved to Toul in August and definitely established the hospital. The nurses joined the unit in September. The unit remained at Toul until February, 1919. Returned to America in March.

Base Hospital No. 41 moved overseas in July, 1918, and landed at Glasgow in Scotland, proceeding thence by rail to Southampton, embarking at that point for Havre. From Havre the unit proceeded by way of Paris to St. Denis, where it established the hospital. Base No. 41, operated there until February, 1919. Sailed for the United States in April.

The two colored Engineer Service Battalions went overseas in March, 1918, and landed at Pauillac, France. These battalions were split up into detachments and sent to various points in France and England on labor and construction details.

#### **The eleven "Virginia Home Service Units" served as follows:**

Company A, Virginia Signal Corps, was broken up at Camp McClellan in October, 1917, and the members assigned to various units in the 54th Field Artillery Brigade. All of them went overseas in June, 1918, and quite a few saw active service at the front, three members of the original company being killed.

The 10th, 11th, 12th, 13th and 14th Companies of Virginia Coast Artillery were organized in the summer and fall of 1917. They were stationed at various shipbuilding and industrial plants on guard duty until November 1, 1918, when they were ordered to join the 35th Regiment, C. A. C., then being organized at Fort Howard, Md., and Fort Du Pont, Del. Before the companies could move, however, the Armistice was signed.

The 3rd, 4th, 6th, 7th and 8th Companies of Virginia Coast Artillery all reported to Fortress Monroe and were assigned to posts in the Chesapeake Bay Area, where they remained for the duration of the war.

## V.

Special thanks are due to General Jo. Lane Stern and to Colonel John A. Cutchins for assistance in this work. Though skeptical of the feasibility of the plan even after the Executive Committee gave a free hand, they used their influence and energy in bringing into the archives many of the unit histories here published, and they also read and criticised the copy for this volume. Their expert knowledge of military affairs and their keen interest in the movements of Virginia troops, enabled them to render service of the highest value in this work.

In this as in all the other volumes, the unfailing industry and intelligence of Miss Ruth K. Cunningham has been invaluable. Throughout the work of the Commission she has been not only the chief clerk, but also the chief assistant, and her efficient hand is evident in every volume issued. Special credit is due to Mr. Russell B. DeVine for unearthing in Washington the record of the two colored Service Units and the complete record of the distribution of the members of the Virginia National Guard, given on pages 410-421. Also, his work in the compilation of this volume has been equalled only by that of Mr. A. Burton Clarke in the series of community histories. To these three research workers and to half a dozen others, the appreciation of the Commission is expressed on the dedication page of the seventh volume.

The final word of thanks, however, must be for the three members of the executive committee, Dr. Henry R. McIlwaine, Gen. Jo. Lane Stern and Col. Charles R. Keiley. Their generous confidence and their constant co-operation through a double lustrum have made possible the completion of a task that at times seemed peculiarly difficult.

ARTHUR KYLE DAVIS.

Petersburg  
12 February 1927



# List of Virginia National Guard Units, Showing Home Station of each and Federal Organi- zation into which it was transferred.

<b>Alexandria</b>	
Co. G, 1st Va. Infantry-----	{ Hdq. Co. and Cos. A. E. L., 116th Infantry Co. D, 110th M. G. Battalion
<b>Big Stone Gap</b>	
Co. H, 2nd Va. Infantry-----	Co. K, 116th Infantry
<b>Bristol</b>	
10th Co., Va. Coast Artillery-----	Battery E, 35th Regiment, C. A. C.
<b>Cape Charles</b>	
Co. H, 4th Va. Infantry-----	{ Hdq. Co., Supply Co., M. G. Co., 116th Infantry Cos. A, B, C, D, E, F, and Hdq. Det., 104th Supply Train
<b>Charlottesville</b>	
Co. D, 1st Va. Infantry-----	{ Hdq. Co., and Cos. C and H, 116th Infantry Co. D, 110th M. G. Battalion
<b>Chase City</b>	
Co. E, 2nd Va. Infantry-----	Co. F, 116th Infantry
<b>Covington</b>	
Co. H, 1st Va. Infantry-----	{ Hdq. Co. and Co. H, 116th Infantry Co. D, 110th M. G. Battalion
<b>Culpeper</b>	
Co. B, 2nd Va. Infantry-----	Co. I, 116th Infantry
<b>Danville</b>	
Co. M, 1st Va. Infantry-----	{ Hdq. Co. and Co. C, 116th Infantry Co. D, 110th M. G. Battalion
Battery E, 1st Va. Field Artillery-----	Battery E, 111th Field Artillery
6th Co., Va. Coast Artillery-----	{ 6th Co., Coast Defenses of Chesapeake Bay
<b>Emporia</b>	
Co. M, 4th Va. Infantry-----	{ Supply Co. and Battery F, 111th Field Artillery
<b>Farmville</b>	
Co. A, 2nd Va. Infantry-----	Co. G, 116th Infantry
<b>Franklin</b>	
Co. I, 4th Va. Infantry-----	{ This Company. was split among the 111th and 112th Field Artillery, the 104th Amm. Train, the 104th Supply Train, the 110th, 111th and 112th M. G. Battalions, 104th Field Sig. Bn., and the 104th Mob. Ord. Repair Shop.
<b>Fredericksburg</b>	
Co. K, 2nd Va. Infantry-----	Co. K, 116th Infantry
3rd Co., Va. Coast Artillery-----	{ 10th Co. Coast Defenses of Chesapeake Bay
<b>Front Royal</b>	
Co. D, 2nd Va. Infantry-----	Co. D, 116th Infantry
<b>Gloucester</b>	
8th Co., Va. Coast Artillery-----	{ 12th Co., Coast Defenses of Chesapeake Bay

## Grundy

4th Co., Va. Coast Artillery-----} 8th Co., Coast Defenses of Chesapeake Bay

## Hampton

Battery D, 1st Va. Field Artillery---Battery D, 111th Field Artillery

## Lexington

Battery F, 1st Va. Field Artillery---Battery F, 111th Field Artillery

## Lynchburg

Co. E, 1st Va. Infantry-----} Co. L, 116th Infantry  
Co. D, 110th M. G. Battalion  
Co. L, 1st Va. Infantry-----} Co. L, 116th Infantry  
Co. D, 110th M. G. Battalion  
2nd Co., Va. Coast Artillery-----} 117th Trains Headquarters and Military Police

## Luray

Headquarters Co., 2nd Va. Infantry--Headquarters Co., 116th Infantry

## Newport News

Co. C, 4th Va. Infantry-----} This Co. was split up among the 115th and 116th Infantry, the 112th M. G. Bn., 104th Supply Train, 104th Engineer Train, 116th F. H., and 104th Field Signal Bn.

## Norfolk

Headquarters Co., 4th Va. Infantry---} This Co. was split up among the 116th Infantry, 111th F. A., 104th Field Signal Bn., 104th Engineer Train, 116th F. H., and the 104th T. H. and M. P.  
Supply Co., 4th Va. Infantry-----} Supply Co. and Co. L, 116th Infantry  
116th Field Hospital and 104th Mob. Ord. Repair Shop  
Machine Gun Co., 4th Va. Infantry---Co. B, 112th M. G. Battalion  
116th Field Hospital  
Sanitary Det., 4th Va. Infantry-----} Med. Det., 112th M. G. Battalion  
Co. A, 4th Va. Infantry-----} This Co. was split up among the 116th Inf., the 111th F. A., the 104th Engineer Train, the 104th Supply Train and the 104th T. H. and M. P.  
Co. D, 4th Va. Infantry-----} Co. K, 116th Infantry  
Co. B, 112th M. G. Bn.  
Co. E, 4th Va. Infantry-----} This Co. was split up among the 116th Inf., the 104th Supply Train, the 104th Engineer Train, and the 104th Field Signal Bn.  
Co. G, 4th Infantry-----Co. E, 116th Infantry  
Battery B (Light Artillery Blues), 1st Va. Field Artillery-----Battery B, 111th Field Artillery  
Ambulance Co. No. 1-----115th Ambulance Co.

## Petersburg

Co. G, 2nd Va. Infantry-----Co. G, 116th Infantry

## Portsmouth

Co. K, 4th Va. Infantry-----} This Co. was split up among the 115th and 116th Regiments, the 111th F. A., and the 104th Supply Train.  
Co. L, 4th Va. Infantry-----} This Co. was split up among the 116th Inf., the 111th F. A., the 116th Ambulance Co., the 104th Amm. Train, and the 104th Supply Train.  
Battery C (Grimes Battery), 1st Va. Field Artillery -----Battery C, 111th Field Artillery

## Pulaski

Co. L, 2nd Va. Infantry-----Co. M, 116th Infantry



## Radford

Co. M, 2nd Va. Infantry-----Co. M, 116th Infantry  
Field Hospital Co. No. 1-----115th Field Hospital Co.

## Richmond

Sanitary Det., 1st Va. Infantry-----	Sanitary Det., 116th Infantry .
Co. A, 1st Va. Infantry-----	{ Hdq. Co. and Cos. B, C, E, G, 116th Infantry
Co. B, 1st Va. Infantry-----	Co. B, 116th Infantry
Co. C, 1st Va. Infantry-----	{ Hdq. Co. and Cos. A, B, C, 116th Infantry
Co. F, 1st Va. Infantry-----	{ Co. D, 110th M. G. Bn. Hdq. Co. and Cos. B and C, 116th Infantry
1st Squadron Va. Cavalry (Light Infantry Blues) -----	{ Co. D, 110th M. G. Battalion
	104th Ammunition Train
Co. A, Va. Signal Corps-----	{ This Co. was split among the 110th, 111th and 112th F. A. Regiments and Hdq. Det. 54th F. A. Brigade.
7th Co., Va. Coast Artillery-----	{ 11th Co., Coast Defenses Chesapeake Bay
9th Co., Va. Coast Artillery-----	Battery F, 60th Regiment, C. A. C.
12th Co., Va. Coast Artillery-----	Battery B, 35th Regiment, C. A. C.
13th Co., Va. Coast Artillery-----	Battery C, 35th Regiment, C. A. C.

## Roanoke

Machine Gun Co., 1st Va. Infantry----	{ Co. D, 112th M. G. Bn. (later be-
	came Co. D, 112th M. G. Bn.)
Supply Co., 2nd Va. Infantry-----	Supply Co., 116th Infantry
Sanitary Det., 2nd Va. Infantry-----	Sanitary Det., 116th Infantry
Co. F, 2nd Va. Infantry-----	Co. F, 116th Infantry
1st Co., Va. Coast Artillery-----	117th T. H. and M. P.
5th Co., Va. Coast Artillery-----	Battery B, 60th Regiment, C. A. C.
11th Co., Va. Coast Artillery-----	Battery A, 35th Regiment, C. A. C.

## South Boston

14th Co., Va. Coast Artillery-----Battery D, 35th Regiment, C. A. C.

## Staunton

Headquarters Co., 1st Va. Infantry---	{ Hdq. Co., Supply Co., M. G. Co., Cos. A, B, D, G, L, 116th Infantry Co. D, 110th M. G. Bn.
Supply Co., 1st Va. Infantry-----	Supply Co., 116th Infantry
Co. I, 1st Va. Infantry-----	{ Co. A, 116th Infantry Co. D, 110th M. G. Bn.
Co. K, 1st Va. Infantry-----	{ Co. A, 116th Infantry Co. D, 110th M. G. Bn.
Machine Gun Co., 2nd Va. Infantry---	Machine Gun Co., 116th Infantry

## Suffolk

Co. F, 4th Va. Infantry-----Co. E, 116th Infantry

## Warrenton

Co. C, 2nd Va. Infantry-----Co. D, 116th Infantry

## Waverly

Co. B, 4th Va. Infantry-----	} This Co. was split up among the 116th Infantry, the 111th Field Ar- tillery and the 104th Supply Train.

## Winchester

Co. I, 2nd Va. Infantry-----Co. I, 116th Infantry

In addition to the foregoing National Guard commands, the following units were organized at the places indicated and these communities may properly be regarded as the home stations of said units:

**Richmond**

Base Hospital No. 45-----	Base Hospital No. 45
Ambulance Co. No. 46-----	{ 319th Ambulance Co. of 305th Sani-
	{ tary Train, 80th Division

**University of Virginia**

Base Hospital No. 41-----	Base Hospital No. 41
Ambulance Co. -----	Section Sanitaire Unie 516
Ambulance Co. -----	Section Sanitaire Unie 517

**Washington and Lee University**

Ambulance Co. -----	Section Sanitaire Unie 534
---------------------	----------------------------



# List of Source Material for Volume V

## SOURCES FOR THE TWENTY-NINTH DIVISION

- Official History of the 116th Infantry. Lt.-Col. S. G. Waller. Ms. typn. 7 pp.  
History of the Third Battalion. Major H. L. Opie. Ms. typn. 64 pp.  
History of Headquarters Co. Lt. H. W. Holly and Lt. J. J. Ward. Ms. typn. 10 pp.  
History of the Supply Co. Lt. E. L. Colwell and Sgt. J. S. Schneider. Ms. typn. 11 pp.  
History of the Machine Gun Co. Lt. A. A. Grove and Sgt. O. P. Gregory, Ms. typn. 16 pp.  
Casualty Record of the Machine Gun Co. Ms. typn. 12 pp.  
History of the Sanitary Det. Major Giles B. Cook. Ms. typn. 13 pp.  
History of Co. A. Lt. J. T. Fuller and Lt. L. E. Allen. Ms. typn. 6 pp.  
History of Co. B. Lt. W. E. Bartenstein. Ms. typn. 6 pp.  
History of Co. C. Sgt. Hugh T. Williams. Ms. typn. 10 pp.  
History of Co. D. Lt. R. M. Redyke. Ms. typn. 10 pp.  
History of Co. E. Lt. R. R. Brown and Lt. Paul R. Hanenman. Ms. typn. 10 pp.  
History of Co. F. Lt. J. V. Sanderson. Ms. typn. 13 pp.  
History of Co. G. Lt. Barry Wetzler. Ms. typn. 10 pp.  
History of Co. H. Lt. C. W. Tallman. Ms. typn. 8 pp.  
History of Co. T. Ms. typn. 5 pp.  
History of Co. K. Sgt. W. J. McDaniels. Ms. typn. 19 pp.  
History of Co. L. Ms. typn. 6 pp.  
History of Co. M. Ms. typn. 20 pp.  
History of the 111th Field Artillery. Col. T. M. Wortham. Ms. typn. 14 pp.  
History of Battery A. Lt. C. H. McCurdy, Corporal V. S. Perkins and Private H. X. Thacker. Ms. typn. 4 pp.  
History of Battery B. Submitted by Col. T. M. Wortham. Ms. mim. 20 pp.  
Battery B, 111th Field Artillery. Letter from Battery Historian to Col. Wortham. Ms. typn. 8 pp.  
History of Battery C. Ms. typn. 9 pp.  
History of Battery D. Ms. typn. 4 pp.  
History of Battery E. Lt. Chas. E. Marrew and Sgt. John R. Mallery. Ms. typn. 3 pp.  
History of Battery F. Ms. typn. 10 pp.  
History of the Supply Co. Lt. Harry M. Hughes. Ms. typn. 7 pp.  
History of the Horse Battalion, 104th Ammunition Train. Major Mathew F. James. Ms. typn. 9 pp.  
History of 104th Ammunition Train. Captain J. C. Frey. Ms. typn. 12 pp.  
History of Detachment, 104th Ammunition Train. Captain Thomas F. Flynn. Ms. typn. 7 pp.  
Roster Co. A, 104th Ammunition Train. Ms. typn. 3 pp.  
Historical Sketch, A and C Cos., 104th Ammunition Train. Captain Ward. Ms. typn. 2 pp.  
Headquarters, Horse Battalion, 104th Ammunition Train. Major Mathew F. James. Ms. typn. 2 pp.  
Operations of 104th Sanitary Train in Campaign North of Verdun. Major J. B. Huggins. Ms. typn. 4 pp.  
History of the 115th Field Hospital Co. Rufus Bradley Scott. Ms. typn. 24 pp.  
History of Co. A, Va. Signal Corps. Captain Edwin P. Conquest. Printed 2 pp.  
Sketch of 1st Va. Infantry. General William J. Perry. Ms. typn. 56 pp.  
Sketch of 2nd Battalion, 2nd Va. Infantry. Major G. O. Leach. Ms. typn. 6 pp.  
History of Medical Dept. of 2nd Va. Infantry, April, 1917, to October, 1917. Major Adam T. Finch. Ms. typn. 4 pp.  
Some Notes on the Medical Dept. of the Nat'l Guard of Va. Major Adam T. Finch. Ms. typn. 2 pp.  
Dental History of the 29th Division. Captain J. M. Hughes. Ms. typn. 20 pp.  
Virginia Soldiers in the War. General Jo. Lane Stern. Ms. typn. 4 pp.

Organizations that Went Into the War. General Jo Lane Stern. Ms. typn. 2 pp.

The Field Artillery Regiment. General Jo Lane Stern. Ms. typn. 2 pp.

The Coast Artillery Regiment. General Jo Lane Stern. Ms. typn. 7 pp.

#### SOURCES FOR THE FORTY-SECOND DIVISION

History of the 117th Trains Headquarters and Military Police. Captain Frank P. Varney. Ms. typn. 36 pp.

Diary of Private G. W. Reed of the 1st Co., 117th T. H. and M. P. Ms. typn. 127 pp.

#### SOURCES FOR THE EIGHTIETH DIVISION

History of the 317th Infantry. Lt. Edley B. Craighill. Printed and published, 96 pp.

History of the 318th Infantry. Printed and pub., 192 pp.

History of the 314th Machine Gun Battalion. Printed and pub., 82 pp.

History of the 319th Ambulance Co. Captain Julius J. Hulcher. Ms. typn. 10 pp.

Brief History of the 80th Division. Col. Jennings C. Wise. Ms. typn. 29 pp.

Medical History of the 80th Division. Copied from Surgeon-General's Office. Ms. typn. 100 pp.

Brief History of 315th Field Artillery. Denny Wright. Ms. typn. 87 pp.

History of 319th Infantry. Captain Josiah C. Peck. Printed and pub. 61 pp.

History of 305th Engineers (from Headquarters, Fulvy, France). Ms. typn. 28 pp.

Sketch of 319th Ambulance Co. Carlton Crump. Ms. typn. 4 pp.

Overseas Diary of Co. G, 317th Infantry. Printed and pub. 28 pp.

Casualty Record Co. G, 318th Infantry. Compiled by Russell L. Stultz. Ms. typn. 15 pp.

Work of the 320th Infantry in the Defeat of the Hun. Ms. typn. 19 pp.

Our "E" Story. Officers of E Co., 319th Infantry. Ms. typn. 57 pp.

Report on Operations, Sept. 9th to Nov. 11th, 1918. Headquarters 80th Division. Ms. typn. 29 pp.

Roster of Headquarters Troop, 80th Division. Ms. typn. 7 pp.

Miscellaneous Material *re* 80th. Copied from Material loaned by A. M. Ely, of Philadelphia.

My Service with the A. E. F. in France. Captain Melville B. Oakham, 320th Infantry. Ms. typn. 13 pp.

Series of 10 Letters *re* 80th Division.

Check List of Historical Data and Material *re* 80th Division, 318th Infantry, Co. G, 318th Infantry, and Miscellaneous.

History of the 155th Field Artillery Brigade.

Report on Operations, 80th Division.

Operations Report, 159th Infantry Brigade.

Organizational Roster of Deaths in 80th Division in France and Burial Locations.

#### SOURCES FOR THE COAST ARTILLERY

Sketch of 3rd Co., Va. C. A. Capt. Alward L. Johnson. Ms. typn. 2 pp.

History of 8th Co., Va. C. A. Sgt. F. W. McKee. Ms. typn. 7 pp.

History of 9th Co., Va. C. A. Capt. C. C. Walton. Ms. typn. 27 pp.

History of 10th Co., C. A. Capt. Henry C. Stuart. Ms. typn. 6 pp.

History of 11th Co., Va. C. A. Capt. Peyton T. Jamison. 1 pp.

History of 13th Co., Va. C. A. Lt. J. C. Crafford. 1 pp.

Roster and History of 14th Co., Va. C. A. Capt. John V. Thompson. Printed and pub., 16 pp.

History of First Battalion, 60th Regt. C. A. C. Ms. typn. 150 pp.

History of Coast Artillery in 60th Regt., C. A. C. Engineer Wm. H. Phillips. Ms. typn. 7 pp.

War Record of Battery F. W. L. Price. Ms. typn. 4 pp.

Letter from Col. Henry Fairfax Ayres. Ms. typn. 1 pp.

Sketch of 10th, 11th, 12th, 13th and 14th Cos. Va. C. A. Capt. S. K. Funkhouser. Ms. typn. 4 pp.



## SOURCES FOR THE MEDICAL UNITS

- History of U. S. Army Base Hospital No. 45. Printed and pub., 352 pp.  
History of Base Hospital No. 41. Printed and pub., 29 pp.  
History of S. S. U. 516. Staige Davis Blackford. Published in "The University of Va. in the World War." 4 pp.  
History of S. S. U. 517. William Hudson Rogers. Published in "The University of Va. in the World War." 5 pp.  
History of S. S. U. 534. Forrest Fletcher. Ms. typn. 5 pp.

## SOURCES FOR THE ENGINEER UNITS

- History and Record of Events of 510th Engineers' Service Bn (colored). Ms. typn. 20 pp.  
Letters of Lt. Col. George E. A. Fairley *re* 511th Engineers Service Bn. (colored). Ms. typn. 3 pp.

## BOOKS CONSULTED

- Our 110 Days Fighting. Arthur W. Page. Printed and pub., 283 pp.  
Our War With Germany. Spencer Bassett. Printed and pub., 386 pp.  
History of the 29th Division. Lt.-Col. John A. Cutchins. Printed and pub., 493 pp.  
Medical History of the 29th Division.  
Operations of the 29th Division (East of Meuse River, 1918). Printed and pub., 410 pp.  
German Documents Accompany Operations of 29th Division. Printed, 584 pp.  
Why Soldiers Do Not Talk About the War. Hugh Williams.  
Reports of the Adjutant-General of Va., for 1916, 1917 and 1918.  
Medical Dept. of U. S. Army in the World War, Vol. VIII. Printed and pub., 1097 pp.  
Historical Report of the Chief Engineer (Including Operations of the Engineer Dept., A. E. F., 1917-1919). Printed and pub., 438 pp.

## SOURCES RELATING TO VIRGINIA MILITARY ORGANIZATIONS CONSULTED IN WASHINGTON

- Station Report.  
Morning Reports.  
Returns.  
Regimental D. R. C.  
Orders.  
Training Reports.  
Medical Reports.  
Camp Records.  
Organization Records.  
Militia Bureau Records.  
Miscellaneous Section A. G. D.  
War Diaries.  
Operation Reports.  
Situation Maps.  
Overseas and G. H. Q. Records.

## UNUSED MS. HISTORIES IN VA. W. H. C. ARCHIVES

- Report of Quarry and Road Work, Base Section No. 1, A. E. F. Maj. Wm. L. Lee. Ms. typn. 11 pp.  
Front Royal Remount Depot and the World War. R. P. Cooke. Ms. typn. 2 pp.  
Report from Bureau of Animal Industries, U. S. Dept. of Agriculture, Front Royal, Va. Col. S. R. Millar. Ms. typn. 4 pp.  
Welcome Home Celebration Program, Front Royal, Va. Printed, 30 pp.  
U. S. Naval Batteries. Ms. typn. 18 pp.  
History of 830th Aero Squadron. Ms. typn. 2 pp.  
Overseas Service of Major Chas. J. Cabrow, 104th Engineers. Ms. typn. 83 pp.  
XVII.





# Table of Contents

## PART I

	<i>Page</i>
<b>VIRGINIA UNITS IN THE 29th DIVISION</b> -----	1-206
Summary of Activities of the 29th Division-----	4
Source Material for the History of the 116th Infantry-----	5
<b>116TH INFANTRY</b> -----	6-130
(Formerly 1st, 2nd and 4th Virginia Infantry)	
116th Infantry -----	6-9
1st Battalion -----	10-14
2nd Battalion -----	16-19
3rd Battalion -----	20-49
Headquarters Co. -----	50-52
Supply Co. -----	53-57
Machine Gun Co. -----	58-65
Sanitary Co. -----	66-70
Co. A -----	71-74
Co. B -----	75-78
Co. C -----	79-84
Co. D -----	85-87
Co. E -----	88-91
Co. F -----	92-95
Co. G -----	96-101
Co. H -----	102-105
Co. I -----	106-108
Co. K -----	109-117
Co. L -----	118-121
Co. M -----	122-130
<b>111TH FIELD ARTILLERY</b> -----	131-178
(Formerly 1st Virginia Field Artillery)	
*Battery A -----	143-145
†Battery B -----	146-155
‡Battery C -----	156-160
Battery D -----	161-168
Battery E -----	169-170
§Battery F -----	171-175
Supply Co. -----	176-178
<b>¶104TH AMMUNITION TRAIN (HORSE BATTALION)</b> -----	179-185
(Formerly 1st Squadron Virginia Cavalry)	
<b>104TH SANITARY TRAIN</b> -----	186-198
115th Field Hospital Co. -----	186-195
(Formerly 1st Va. Field Hospital Co.)	
115th Ambulance Co. -----	196-198
(Formerly 1st Va. Ambulance Co.)	
<b>112TH MACHINE GUN BATTALION</b> -----	199-205
Company B -----	199-202
Company D -----	203-205
<b>SIGNAL CORPS</b> -----	206
Company A.	

## PART II

<b>VIRGINIA UNITS IN THE 42nd DIVISION</b> -----	207-227
117th Trains Headquarters and Military Police-----	208-227
(Formerly 1st and 2nd Cos. Virginia Coast Artillery)	

## PART III

<b>VIRGINIA UNITS IN THE 80th DIVISION</b> -----	239-333
Summary of Activities of the 80th Division-----	231
318th Infantry -----	232-281
317th Infantry -----	282-303
314th Machine Gun Battalion -----	304-327
319th Ambulance Co. -----	328-333

\*Richmond Howitzers.

†Norfolk Light Artillery Blues.

‡Grimes Battery of Portsmouth.

§Rockbridge Artillery.

¶Richmond Light Infantry Blues.

## PART IV

	<i>Page</i>
<b>VIRGINIA COAST ARTILLERY UNITS</b> .....	335-365
Outline of Origin and Service of Virginia Coast Artillery Units.....	337
<b>60TH REGIMENT</b> .....	339-354
Battery B. (Formerly 5th Co. Va. Coast Artillery).....	339-349
Battery F. (Formerly 9th Co. Va. Coast Artillery).....	350-354
<b>35TH REGIMENT</b> .....	355-354
Battery A. (Formerly 11th Co. Va. Coast Artillery).....	355
Battery B. (Formerly 12th Co. Va. Coast Artillery).....	356
Battery C. (Formerly 13th Co. Va. Coast Artillery).....	357
Battery D. (Formerly 14th Co. Va. Coast Artillery).....	358
Battery E. (Formerly 10th Co. Va. Coast Artillery).....	359
<b>COAST DEFENSE OF CHESAPEAKE BAY</b> .....	360-366
6th Co. (Formerly 6th Co. Va. Coast Artillery).....	360
8th Co. (Formerly 4th Co. Va. Coast Artillery).....	361
10th Co. (Formerly 3rd Co. Va. Coast Artillery).....	362-363
11th Co. (Formerly 7th Co. Va. Coast Artillery).....	364
12th Co. (Formerly 8th Co. Va. Coast Artillery).....	365-366

## PART V

<b>VIRGINIA MEDICAL UNITS</b> .....	367-403
Outline of Origin and Service of Virginia Medical Units.....	369
Base Hospital No. 45 .....	370-381
(Medical College of Virginia Unit).	
Base Hospital No. 41 .....	382-391
(University of Virginia Unit).	
Section Sanitaire Unie 516 .....	392-394
(University of Virginia Ambulance Section).	
Section Sanitaire Unie 517 .....	395-398
(University of Virginia Ambulance Section).	
Section Sanitaire Unie 534 .....	399-403
(Washington & Lee Ambulance Section).	

## PART VI

<b>VIRGINIA ENGINEER UNITS</b> .....	405-409
Outline of Origin and Service of Virginia Engineer Units.....	406
510th Engineers' Service Battalion .....	407-408
511th Engineers' Service Battalion .....	409
<b>DISTRIBUTION OF MEMBERS OF VIRGINIA NATIONAL GUARD</b> .....	410-421

## APPENDIX

<b>VIRGINIANS OF DISTINGUISHED SERVICE—SUPPLEMENT TO VOLUME I.</b> .....	423-504
Explanatory Note .....	424
Corrections and Additions to Volume I.....	425-527
Summary of Certified Honors in Volume V.....	428-429
Distinguished Service List—Certified—in Volume V.....	430-471
Summary of Honors in Volume V .....	472-477
Local Honor List for Volume V.....	478-481
Summary of Honors by Cities and Counties for Volumes I and V.....	482-487
Distinguished Service List—Not Certified—in Volume V.....	488-490
Distinguished Service Roster for Volumes I and V.....	491-504



PART I

---

Virginia  
Military Organizations  
in the  
Twenty-Ninth Division

*"BLUE AND GRAY"*

# TABLE OF CONTENTS

## (TWENTY-NINTH DIVISION)

	Page
Summary of Activities of the 29th Division.....	4
Source Material for the History of the 116th Infantry.....	5
 <b>116th Infantry:</b>	
Summary of Activities of the 116th Infantry .....	6
History of the 116th Infantry, by Colonel (now Brigadier-General) Samuel G. Waller .....	7
Summary of Activities of the 1st Battalion .....	10
History of the 1st Battalion, by Russell B. De Vine .....	11
Summary of Activities of the 2nd Battalion .....	15
History of the 2nd Battalion, by Russell B. De Vine .....	16
Summary of Activities of the 3rd Battalion .....	20
History of the 3rd Battalion, by Major (now Colonel) H. L. Opie..	21
Summary of Activities of the Headquarters Company .....	50
History of the Headquarters Company, by First Lieutenant H. W. Holly and Second Lieutenant J. J. Ward .....	51
Summary of Activities of the Supply Company .....	53
History of the Supply Company, by Second Lieutenant Everett L. Colwell and Sergeant John S. Schneider .....	54
Summary of Activities of the Machine Gun Company .....	58
History of the Machine Gun Company, by Captain Joseph P. Ast, First Lieutenant Arthur A. Grove and Sergeant Ivey P. Gregory..	59
Summary of Activities of the Sanitary Detachment .....	66
History of the Sanitary Detachment. Author not known .....	67
Summary of Activities of Company A .....	71
History of Company A, by First Lieutenant John T. Fuller and Second Lieutenant Logan E. Allen .....	72
Summary of Activities of Company B .....	75
History of Company B, by First Lieutenant W. E. Bartenstein .....	76
Summary of Activities of Company C .....	79
History of Company C, by Sergeant Hugh T. Williams .....	80
Summary of Activities of Company D .....	85
History of Company D, by First Lieutenant Robert Redyke .....	86
Summary of Activities of Company E .....	88
History of Company E, by First Lieutenant Benjamin R. Brown and Second Lieutenant Paul H. Hanenman .....	89
Summary of Activities of Company F .....	92
History of Company F, by First Lieutenant James V. Sanderson ..	93
Summary of Activities of Company G .....	96
History of Company G, by First Lieutenant Barry Wetzler .....	97
Summary of Activities of Company H .....	102
History of Company H, by Second Lieutenant Clyde W. Tallman ..	103
Summary of Activities of Company I .....	106
History of Company I. Author not known .....	107
Summary of Activities of Company K .....	109
History of Company K, by First Sergeant Wirt J. McDaniels .....	110
Summary of Activities of Company L .....	118
History of Company L. Author not known .....	119
Summary of Activities of Company M .....	122
History of Company M. Author not known.....	123
 <b>111th Field Artillery:</b>	
Summary of Activities of the 111th Field Artillery .....	131
History of the 111th Field Artillery (September, 1917, to June, 1918), by Colonel T. M. Wortham.....	132

	Page
History of the 111th Field Artillery (June, 1918 to April, 1919), by Russell B. De Vine .....	141
Summary of Activities of Battery A .....	143
History of Battery A, by Lieutenant C. H. McCurdy, Corporal V. S. Perkins and Private H. X. Thacker .....	144
Summary of Activities of Battery B .....	146
History of Battery B, submitted by Colonel T. M. Wortham .....	147
Summary of Activities of Battery C .....	156
History of Battery C. Author not known .....	157
Summary of Activities of Battery D .....	161
History of Battery D. Author not known .....	162
Summary of Activities of Battery E .....	169
History of Battery E, by First Lieutenant Charles T. Marrew and First Sergeant John R. Mallery .....	170
Summary of Activities of Battery F .....	171
History of Battery F. Author not known .....	172
Summary of Activities of the Supply Company .....	176
History of the Supply Company, by First Lieutenant Harry M. Hughes .....	177

### 104th Ammunition Train:

Summary of Activities of the 104th Ammunition Train (Horse Battalion) .....	179
History of the 104th Ammunition Train (Horse Battalion), by Russell B. De Vine .....	180

### 104th Sanitary Train:

Summary of Activities of the 115th Field Hospital Company .....	186
History of the 115th Field Hospital Company, by Rufus Bradley Scott .....	187
Summary of Activities of the 115th Ambulance Company .....	196
History of the 115th Ambulance Company, by Russell B. De Vine ..	197

### 112th Machine Gun Battalion:

Summary of Activities of Company B .....	199
History of Company B, by Russell B. De Vine .....	200
Summary of Activities of Company D .....	203
History of Company D, by Russell B. De Vine .....	204

### Signal Corps:

History of Company A, by Captain Edwin P. Conquest .....	205
--	-----



## Summary of Activities of the Twenty-Ninth Division

---

The 29th Division was called into existence, by Special Order No. 189, from the Headquarters, Eastern Department, Governor's Island, N. Y., dated July 26, 1917, which designated the old 8th Division as the 29th, which, by this order was to be constituted of the National Guard units from New Jersey, Maryland, Virginia, the District of Columbia and Delaware. (The Delaware units were subsequently withdrawn and organized as separate pioneer infantry). Due to the fact that the division included troops from the North and South the name of Blue and Gray Division was adopted during the early stages of its existence.

The division trained at Camp McClellan until June, 1918, leaving for France about the middle of the month and arriving at the ports of Brest and St. Nazaire on the 27th.

The 29th moved to the Tenth Training Area after a few days at the ports of debarkation and established headquarters at Prouthoy.

The 54th Artillery Brigade, 104th Supply Train, 104th Sanitary Train, 104th Ammunition Train, and 104th Trains Headquarters and Military Police landed in England and moved to France by way of Havre. The 54th Artillery Brigade and 104th Ammunition Train were sent to the artillery training center at Camp Meucon. The other units that had landed in England joined the division later in Alsace. The 29th moved to billeting areas near Belfort the middle of July and remained there from the 17th to 25th under the command of the XL Corps of the French Tenth Army.

Infantry units started moving into the line on July 25th, in the center sector, Haute Alsace, and by August 10th the sector was occupied solely by units of the 29th and the command of the sector passed to the commanding general of the 29th Division.

The division was ordered to the Robert Espagne Training area on September 23rd. However, this order was changed and the division placed in the American First Army reserve where it remained until October 1st. Relieved October 1st and placed in reserve of the French XVII Corps. The 58th Infantry Brigade went into action attached to the 18th French Division, the remainder of the 29th, less the 104th Engineers, remaining in the French XVII Corps reserve. The 57th Brigade went into action about the 12th, in support of the French 18th Division. After three weeks of active fighting the 29th was relieved by the 79th Division on October 29th/30th and went into billets. The division was under orders to join the American Second Army for the attack on Metz when the Armistice was signed.

During this offensive the division advanced over seven kilometers, captured 2,400 prisoners and many cannon and machine guns, besides great quantities of military property of all kinds.

The 29th spent the winter in training and returned to the United States in May, 1919.

Virginia units in the 29th Division were as follows: 116th Infantry, 111th Field Artillery, Horse Battalion of the 104th Ammunition Train, 115th Field Hospital Company and 115th Ambulance Company of the 104th Sanitary Train, Companies B and D of the 112th Machine Gun Battalion, Company A, Virginia Signal Corps.

# Source Material for the History of the One Hundred and Sixteenth Infantry

In the files of the Virginia War History Commission

---

History of the 116th Infantry, by Colonel (now Brig.-Gen.) S. G. Waller.  
History of the 3rd Battalion, by Major (now Colonel) H. L. Opie.  
History of the Headquarters Company, by First Lieutenant H. W. Holly and Second Lieutenant J. J. Ward.  
History of the Supply Company, by Second Lieutenant Everett L. Colwell and Sergeant John S. Schneider.  
History of the Machine Gun Company, by Captain Joseph P. Ast, First Lieutenant Arthur A. Grove and Sergeant Ivey P. Gregory.  
History of the Sanitary Detachment, by Major Giles B. Cook.  
History of Company A, by First Lieutenant John T. Fuller and Second Lieutenant Logan E. Allen.  
History of Company B, by First Lieutenant W. E. Bartenstein.  
History of Company C, by Sergeant Hugh T. Williams.  
History of Company D, by First Lieutenant Robert Redyke.  
History of Company E, by First Lieutenant Benjamin R. Brown and Second Lieutenant Paul R. Hanenman.  
History of Company F, by First Lieutenant James V. Sanderson.  
History of Company G, by First Lieutenant Barry Wetzler.  
History of Company H, by Second Lieutenant Clyde W. Tallman.  
History of Company I. Author not known.  
History of Company K, by First Sergeant Wirt J. McDaniels.  
History of Company L. Author not known.  
History of Company M. Author not known.  
Sketch of 1st Virginia Infantry, by General William J. Perry.  
Sketch of 2nd Battalion, 2nd Virginia Infantry, by Major G. O. Leach.  
History of Sanitary Detachment, by Major Giles B. Cook.  
History of Medical Department, 2nd Virginia Infantry, by Major Adam T. Finch.  
Some Notes on Medical Department of National Guard of Virginia, by Major Adam T. Finch.  
Virginia Soldiers in the War, by General Jo Lane Stern.  
Virginia Organizations that Went Into the War, by General Jo Lane Stern.

\* \* \* \* \*

## Publications and Records Used for Reference and Corroboration.

History of the Twenty-Ninth Division, by Colonel John A. Cutchins.  
Brief History of the Twenty-Ninth Division, by Recruiting Publicity Bureau.  
Operations of the Twenty-Ninth Division East of Meuse River, 1918.  
Medical History of the Twenty-Ninth Division.  
Our 110 Days Fighting, by Arthur W. Page.  
Why Soldiers Do Not Talk About the War, by Sergeant Hugh T. Williams.  
Station Reports, Morning Reports, Returns, War Diaries, Regimental D. R. C., Operations Reports, Orders, Situation Maps, Training Reports, Medical Reports, Miscellaneous Section A. G. D., Camp Records, Organization Records, Militia Bureau Records, Overseas and G. H. Q. Records.

## Summary of Activities, One Hundred and Sixteenth Infantry, Twenty-Ninth Division

Organized at Camp McClellan, Anniston, Alabama, October 4, 1917, from the 1st, 2nd and 4th Virginia Infantry Regiments. Trained there for nine months. Left June 11, 1918, for port of embarkation. Sailed on the U. S. S. *Finland* from Hoboken, N. J., June 15, 1918. Arrived St. Nazaire, France, July 27, 1918. After three days, the regiment moved to Argillieres, near Champlitte. Early in July, moved to Auxelles Bas and from there to La Chappelle, in August, later to Reppe and Brechaumont, then back to Reppe, during which time the regiment occupied front line trenches in Haute-Marne sector. Moved to Offemont early in September, from there to Hargeville, thence to Souhesme-le-Grande and camped in Bois Bouchet about October 1st. Proceeded to base of departure near Samogneux October 7th. Attacked German positions east of Meuse north of Samogneux and Brabant October 8th. Fought the engagements of Mailbrouck Hill, Molleville Farm, Bois de Consenvoye, Bois de Grande Montagne, Etrayes Ridge. Relieved October 29th and moved to Brillon. Proceeded to the Eleventh Training Area November 22, 1918, with headquarters at Serqueux. Regiment engaged in training until spring. Entrained April 13th for Le Mans area.



# History of the One Hundred and Sixteenth Infantry

By Colonel (now Brigadier General) Samuel G. Waller

The 116th Infantry, U. S., was organized October 4, 1917, pursuant to G. O. No. 7, Headquarters 58th Infantry Brigade, 29th Division, dated September 29, 1917, at Camp McClellan, Anniston, Ala., with a war strength of 105 officers and 3,686 men.

Virginia had responded promptly to the call of the nation by sending forward her guard units—the First, Second and Fourth Virginia Infantry Regiments, the Richmond Light Infantry, Blues' Battalion, the Richmond Howitzers and the Norfolk Light Artillery Blues, all of which had glorious traditions in the service of the United States dating back to the Revolutionary War.

For nine months this regiment, composed of a personnel gathered from the entire state, trained at Camp McClellan under General Charles G. Morton, in musketry, gas warfare and the use of the bayonet. The unit developed an *esprit de corps* during this training period, which presaged its great deeds on the battlefields. On June 11th the first step of the long journey was taken, and on the 15th, the unit was aboard the U. S. S. *Finland*, at Hoboken, N. J. The night previous a great liner had been sent to the bottom near the mouth of New York harbor by one of the German submarines that "were sinking prey along the New England coast." Von Boehm was driving the allied armies back on Paris, and it seemed as if they might be compelled to abandon their positions. These developments indicated the necessity of the immediate entry into action of the American troops upon their arrival overseas.

## Arrival at St. Nazaire

The convoy of thirteen ships, after a rendezvous at sea and many anxious moments, arrived at the port of St. Nazaire after a voyage lasting thirteen days, June 27, 1918, without mishap, accompanied by the battleship *North Carolina*, and during the latter part of the trip by fourteen American destroyers.

The entry to the harbor was attended by French submarine chasers and American seaplanes and dirigibles. The hulls of three stranded transports and a mine-sweeper just ahead revealed the dangers incident to the journey of the soldiers overseas. After remaining in St. Nazaire at a former British camp for three days, the regiment proceeded to Argillieres, in the vicinity of Champlitte, passing through the cities of Nantes, Nevers, Bourges and Gray. It had been planned for the 116th to remain here for a period of four weeks' training. Owing, however, to the pressure upon the allied front the regiment moved early in July to Auxelles Bas, thence in August to La Chappelle, thence to Reppe, thence to Brechaumont, thence to Reppe, during which period of time it occupied front line trenches in the Haute Marne sector, Alsace. On August 26, 1918, one of the battalions was raided by the enemy, supported by fierce artillery barrage, about 4:30 A. M. This engagement lasted about two hours, at the end of which time the enemy withdrew. The 116th Infantry was the first unit of the 29th Division to draw German blood. The brunt of this raid fell upon Company F, which behaved gallantly and fearlessly in action. To use the words of Brigadier-General, H. H. Bandholtz, commanding the Fifty-Eighth Brigade, "You damned Virginians fought like hell." Early in September the 116th moved to Offemont, near Belfort, thence to Hargeville, thence to Souhesme-Grande, and about October 1st, was bivouacked in Bois Bouchet as a part of the army reserve of the First Army, then driving forward in the Meuse-Argonne offensive.

### Days of Hard Fighting Ensued

The operations west of the river Meuse were held up by enfilade artillery fire from the east side of the river in the vicinity of Haumont Preas-Samogneux, on October 7th. This regiment was attached to the 18th Division, 17th French Corps, and though it had marched more than 110 kilometers a few days previously, proceeded a distance of twenty-one kilometers on the night of October 7th, and crossed the river Meuse at Charney and occupied its base of departure in the vicinity of Samogneux. The Third Battalion was in the first line; the First Battalion in support, and the Second Battalion in reserve. It attacked as part of the 58th Brigade at 4 A. M., October 8th, 1918, and passing over the formidable works of Malbrouck Hill, continued therefrom in a northwestern direction through Bois-de-Brabant-a-Meuse, and Bossois Bois to the south edge of the Molleville Farm, the normal objective, arriving there on schedule time—"H" hour plus seven hours and thirty minutes. The advance met with stubborn resistance from machine guns, artillery of large caliber, anti-tank guns and gas shells. October 15th, the regiment accomplished the difficult task of capturing Molleville Farm and entering the Bois De La Grande Montagne, a region infested with machine guns. In this attack the Third Battalion was the assault battalion, with the Second Battalion in support and the First Battalion in reserve. On October 23rd, supported by auxiliary arms and all of the machine guns of the 29th Division, the 116th executed the difficult task of advancing eastward into the Bois d'Etrayes and capturing Hill 361. General Claudel stated in G. O. 135, 17th French Corps: "The Austro-Germans had lost on an arc of fifteen kilometers, those arrogant observatories which had defied the heroic defenders of Verdun."

To quote from the Army and Navy Journal, the report of General March: "Those operations east of the Meuse resulted in the capture of the great guns that were enfilading and holding up the drive of the First American Army west of the Meuse, thereby permitting it to advance on Sedan, and moreover, the Germans were driven back beyond the line from which the crown prince launched his attack against Verdun in 1916, and which had remained in their hands until October 8, 1918." Having attained these heights the division had observation upon the enemy terrain in the direction of Etraye for a distance of twelve kilometers, which enabled the American artillery to fire accurately in that area, and compelled the enemy's general withdrawal. The 29th was relieved October 29, 1918, by the 79th Division, after a period of twenty-one days of service in a region poorly supplied with water, strategically fortified by the enemy, mercilessly pounded by artillery, under unfavorable weather conditions, scantily supplied with food and insufficiently protected by blankets and outer clothing. The 116th Regiment captured more than 2,000 prisoners, 250 machine guns and 29 guns of large caliber, and great quantities of war material. Its casualties during these operations consisted of approximately 1,000 wounded and 250 killed. One officer and three men were captured by the enemy. During the operations of the division, in which this regiment was employed throughout, four German divisions were withdrawn from its front.

On the night of October 29th, the regiment marched to Verdun and Brillon, in the vicinity of Bar-le-Duc. On November 11th, when the Armistice was signed, it was under orders as part of the Second Army, to proceed to the sector south of Metz. On November 22nd, the regiment moved to the Eleventh Training Area, with headquarters at Serqueux. A heavy training schedule irrespective of weather conditions was followed from that time until April 12, 1919, when the regiment moved to Le Mans, preparatory to embarking for the United States.

### Various Headquarters of Regiment

The regiment established the following headquarters in France: St. Nazaire, Argillieres, Auxelles, La Chappelle, Reppe, Brechaumont, Offemont, Hargeville, Souhesme la Grande, Bois Bouchet, Samogneux, Ormont Ravine, Death Valley, Malbrouck, Consenvoye, Molleville Farm, Verdun, Brillon, Foucheres, Serqueux, Marolles les Braults.

The regiment was especially complimented by the commanding general, American Expeditionary Forces, for discipline on the march to and from the front, and the many letters of testimonial from generals of high rank form a part of the records of the organization.

Perhaps the greatest honor shown the 116th, after its return from the front, came when it was selected as the representative regiment of the American Expeditionary Forces and the Twenty-Ninth Division, by General John J. Pershing to parade at Chaumont, France, in honor of Field Marshal Sir Douglas Haig, commander-in-chief of the British armies, and his staff. On this occasion the organization was transported from Bourbonnelles-Bains to Chaumont, 210 kilometers, by motor trucks. Later the 116th was selected as the representative organization of the VIII Corps to demonstrate a regimental fire problem, employing the most recent tactics in turtleback formation, and the use of all auxiliary arms to one of the armies then in France. The state of efficiency of the regiment was at such a high point that it was held at Le Mans only a day or two and was returned to the United States nearly two months in advance of schedule.

The official statistics compiled by General Headquarters, American Expeditionary Forces at Chaumont, filed with the War Department at Washington, tell the deeds of the regiment, but not the acts of individual gallantry and heroism of those who "never flinched in battle" or "gave up an inch of captured ground" to the Hun, and who were always inspired and led forward by the example and conduct of Captain Robert Y. Conrad, of Winchester, Va., the first officer, and Corporal Herbert W. Folkes, of Roanoke, Va., the first enlisted man, killed in action.



## Summary of Activities, First Battalion One Hundred and Sixteenth Infantry, Twenty-Ninth Division

Organized at Camp McClellan, Anniston, Ala., October 4, 1917. Trained there until June, 1918. Entrained the 11th day of that month for Hoboken, N. J. Sailed for France June 15th, and arrived St. Nazaire on the 27th. Battalion left for Champlitte July 2nd. Marched to Pierrecourt, where training was commenced. Proceeded to Auxelle Haute July 19th, thence to Grosmaigny on the 28th, thence to Anjoutey. Moved to Foussemagne August 9th, and resumed training. Marched to Traubach le Haute August 21st, and the next day entered trenches at Center of Resistance Gildwiller. Battalion relieved September 6th, and returned to Foussemagne. Left for Vitrey on 19th, proceeding to Belfort on the 24th, and entraining. Arrived Mussey next day and marched to Chardogne and billeted. Moved into billets at Genicourt September 29th. Proceeded to Regnancourt October 1st, thence on to Souhesme-les-Grande and on the 5th, moved to Bois Bouchet. Participated in engagements of Malbrouck Hill, Molleville Farm, Bois de Consenvoye, Bois de Grande Montagne, Etrayes Ridge. Battalion relieved October 29th, moving to Belleville, thence to Glorieux, where trucks were boarded for Brillon. Marched to Hironville and trained until November 17th, proceeding thence to Danmarie. Moved to Ligny on 22nd and entrained. Detrained at Vitrey and marched to Serqueux. Moved to Parnot March 15, 1919. Left Parnot in trucks April 13th, and entrained at Jussey for the Le Mans area. Detrained at Beaumont and proceeded to Marolles les Braults and billeted.

# History of the First Battalion

Compiled by Russell B. De Vine

**Sources**—History Company A, First Lieutenant John T. Fuller and Second Lieutenant Logan E. Allen. History Company B, First Lieutenant W. E. Bartenstein. History Company C, Hugh T. Williams. History Company D, First Lieutenant Robert Redyke. Operations of the Twenty-Ninth Division (East of Meuse River, October, 1918.)

The following records in the Adjutant General's Department and the Army War College, Washington, D. C.

Station Reports, Returns, Morning Reports, War Diaries, Regimental D. R. C., Operations Reports, Orders, Situation Maps, Training Reports, Medical Reports, Miscellaneous Section A. G. D., Camp Records, Organization Records, Overseas and G. H. Q. Records, Militia Bureau Records.

—o—

The 116th Infantry of the 29th Division was formed at Camp McClellan, Anniston, Alabama, on October 4, 1917, by the consolidation of the 1st, 2nd and 4th Infantry Regiments of the Virginia National Guard.

The 1st Battalion of this regiment was organized as follows: Company A, by combining Companies G, I and K of the 1st Virginia Infantry; Company B, from Companies A, B and C of the 1st Virginia Infantry; Company C from Company M of the 1st Virginia Infantry; Company D from Companies C and D of the 2nd Virginia Infantry.

Officers named to command the companies were: Company A, Captain H. L. Opie; Company B, Captain William A. Stack; Company C, Captain Howard A. Raines; Company D, Captain S. G. Waller. Major William S. Martin, of Lynchburg, was put in charge of the battalion.

A program of intensive training was at once entered upon by the companies composing the battalion and this schedule was faithfully carried out during the stay at Camp McClellan. Major Martin was succeeded as commanding officer of the battalion by Major Curdts, who was followed by Major Gill. The day the battalion left Camp McClellan Major Johnston was appointed to the command.

Orders for departure overseas were received in May, 1918, and preparations for leaving were rushed. The battalion entrained on June 11, 1918, and traveling by way of Cleveland, Tenn., Bristol, Lynchburg, Washington and Philadelphia, reached Jersey City on the 14th.

Embarkation of the battalion on the U. S. S. *Finland* was completed and the ship was on its way out of New York harbor by midday of June 15th. Land was sighted on June 27th, after an uneventful voyage and the *Finland* anchored in the Loire River late that afternoon. The ship docked at St. Nazaire the next day and the battalion at once debarked and marched to Camp No. 1, Base Section No. 1.

After resting there from June 28th, until July 2nd, the battalion boarded a train for Champlitte, which was reached on July 4th. There the battalion detrained and marched to Pierrecourt where it at once started training. Leaving Pierrecourt on the 17th of July, the battalion marched to La Ferte and entrained. Detraining the following day at La Chapelle it proceeded to Auxelle Haute, where a stay of ten days was made. On the 28th, the battalion left for Grossmagny, from which place it marched to Anjoutey. After spending several days there, the battalion left on August 9th for Fussemagne where it resumed training activities. While there, Major Curdts was transferred and Captain Alexander was designated as battalion commander.

The 1st Battalion broke camp on the 21st of August and marched to Traubach le Haut where it remained for the next twenty-four hours, after which it resumed the march to the Center Sector, Alsace, where it went into position at the Center of Resistance *Gildwiller*. Companies A and B were the first to go into the trenches, while C and D went into billets at Heckenfaulsuiller. On the 28th of August C and D relieved A and B Companies. During this tour of trench duty, Companies A and C were stationed in the Holsberg Sector and Companies B and D in the Telz-

burg Sector. The battalion was relieved on the night of September 6th, by companies of the 115th Infantry and marched to Gevenatteu, returning the following night to Fussemagne.

On September 19th, the battalion left for Vitrey, remaining at that point until the 24th, when it proceeded to Belfort and entrained. Reaching Mussey on the 25th, the command hiked to Chardogne and billeted. The stay there was brief, for the battalion was aroused and ordered to move to Conde. On September 27th, orders were received for the battalion to be held in readiness alongside a fleet of trucks parked on the Conde-Hargeville road. No further orders were received so on the 28th, shelter tents were pitched. The morning of the 29th, in accordance with instructions, the battalion marched to Genicourt and went into billets, having been placed in the Corps reserve.

Genicourt was left about one o'clock the morning of October 1st, the battalion reaching Regnancourt at 11:00 A. M. Leaving there at 7:30 P. M., the outfit proceeded to Souhesme les Grand, where shelter tents were set up. The battalion remained there until the night of October 5th, when it again took up the march. Bois Bouchet, just outside of Germonville was the next stopping place and there the men rested until the 7th. The battalion left at 5:00 P. M. October 7th for Samogneux to join in the attack scheduled for the following morning, in which the 58th Infantry Brigade of the 29th Division was to play a prominent part.

The Nord Canal Meuse River was crossed at Charny and by 4:00 A. M. of October 8th, the battalion was in position. At 5:00 A. M. the line "jumped off" with the 3rd Battalion in the lead, the 1st Battalion in support, and the 2nd Battalion in reserve. By 9:30 A. M. the 1st Battalion executed a passage of lines with the 3rd and continued to press forward with A and B Companies leading, C and D in support. Although the advance was held up for several hours on Malbrouck Hill by heavy machine-gun fire, the battalion succeeded in reaching both intermediate and normal objectives before nightfall. Some of the men sought shelter in captured dugouts, but most of them dug in and waited for daylight.

The enemy counter-attacked in force on the morning of the 9th during a dense fog, but was repulsed and the battalion again moved forward, this time through a heavy barrage. Company B was exposed to machine gun fire from the right flank, the French having failed to keep up with the rapid advance of the American troops. The French failed to advance that day, so the 1st Battalion spent the night in shell holes and in the open. October 10th was spent in reorganizing and consolidating the position. Major Alexander was wounded and Captain Stack took charge of the battalion, remaining in command until the relief was effected on October 29th. Lieutenant Mooring succeeded Captain Stack in command of Company B.

On October 11th, 1st Battalion resumed the attack at 6:00 A. M. in a heavy fog, and attempted to cross the open ground of Molleville Farm without artillery preparation. One machine-gun company which only had about 800 rounds of ammunition was in support. As the men advanced across the open field they were caught by heavy artillery and machine-gun fire from the enemy. The former seemed to be using direct fire from an elevation on the battalion's right flank. Company B reached the crest of the hill and captured some of the enemy trenches but it was impossible to advance further, so the men sought cover in shell holes until nightfall when they fell back to the partially prepared trenches in the rear, while Company C found shelter in the woods at the edge of the field. Casualties in this attack were very heavy. Contact was maintained with the units on the right and left. The 2nd Battalion of the 116th Infantry was in support. The above positions were maintained until the night of October 13th, when relief was effected by the 3rd Battalion. The 1st Battalion moved back to Bois de Brabant where it remained in reserve until the night of October 16th. This time was spent in reorganizing.

The 1st Battalion resumed the advance on the morning of October 16th, moving forward in reserve to the 2nd and 3rd Battalions. By 9:30 A. M. the northern edge of the Bois Boissois was reached and there the command went into position. The battalion was subjected to heavy shell



fire the entire day. That night and during the early hours of the next morning the 1st Battalion relieved the 2nd and 3rd Battalions in the first line on the high ground in the northeast part of the Bois Montagne. The position was consolidated and liaison established. The battalion remained in this location until the night of the 18th, under almost constant fire from snipers and machine guns. The Germans counter-attacked on the morning of the 17th, but were easily repulsed. They seemed badly confused as to the exact location of the American lines and Company B captured one of their mess details which had gotten lost. The 1st Battalion was relieved by the 2nd on the night of the 18th, and returned to its former position in Boissois Bois, where it remained in support until the morning of October 23rd. The advance was resumed that morning under cover of a heavy artillery and machine-gun barrage, directed against the Bois D'Etrayes and adjoining enemy lines of communication. The 2nd Battalion was to lead the attack advancing from Grande Montagne with Bois D'Etrayes as the objective, while the 1st Battalion was to move forward behind the 2nd and take up positions along the forward slope of high ground in the northern part of Bois D'Etrayes, facing north and covering left flank of the 2nd Battalion as the latter became exposed to the advance. The 1st Battalion moved from the Bois Boissois and took up its position behind the 2nd in the Grande Montagne, the movement being completed at 4:30. The advance was strongly resisted from the very beginning and it soon became necessary to send Companies A and B to reinforce the 2nd Battalion. The objective was at last reached but, due to the extreme resistance on the part of the enemy and the difficulties of the terrain, the positions were not consolidated and liaison established until nearly midnight. Before this could be accomplished it was necessary to clean up various machine-gun nests and snipers that had been overlooked in the attack or had filtered in from the left between the assault and support echelons of the 2nd Battalion. Due to the casualties and disorganization of the latter, it was necessary to put all four companies of the 1st Battalion on the front line in order to maintain a continuous front. This front was finally established about midnight on the forward slopes of the high ground in the Bois D'Etrayes. Company B was on the left in liaison with the 115th Infantry, then came Companies A, C and D, the latter in touch with the 2nd Battalion on the right. This line was held until the 26th of October. A feeble counter-attack by the enemy on the 25th was easily repulsed. Most of the time was spent in digging in and in strengthening and consolidating positions.

The 114th Infantry took over part of the sector on the 26th of October which enabled Company D to withdraw and permitted the other companies to contract and thereby strengthen their positions. The 1st Battalion was now organized in three lines—an observation parallel, consisting of several two-man rifle pits, established by each front line company, a line of resistance, occupied by three companies, and a line of support occupied by Company D. This position was held until the morning of the 28th. Wire was strung in front of the lines on the night of the 26th, and the positions were strengthened in every way. On the 28th, Companies B and D were relieved by the 114th Infantry, but word was received on the 29th, that it would be impossible to relieve Companies A and C until daybreak, due to the scattered condition of the units scheduled to effect the relief. The relief was finally completed at 7:00, the morning of October 29th. The battalion was subjected to a heavy bombardment of gas and high explosives the night of the 28th and the morning of the 29th. During the stay of the battalion in C. R. Etraye, sniper and machine-gun activity was practically continuous, as was shell fire on the rear areas. Companies A and C, along with battalion headquarters, moved to Belleville on October 29th, via the Brabant-Samogneux-Bras-Belleville road, arriving at 11:15 o'clock and joining Companies B and D, which had arrived at 4:30. The battalion rested for several hours and then proceeded to Glorieux where it boarded trucks for Brillon. From there the battalion marched to Haironville, where, after resting for several days, it resumed training. Replacements were received here.

Orders had been received for the battalion to become part of the

reserve of the Second Army and all preparations had been completed for leaving when news was received on the morning of November 11th, that the Armistice had been signed, which was immediately followed by orders to remain in billets. Major Selby, who had been promoted from captain, was in command of the battalion, Captain Stack having returned to Company B.

A schedule of intensive training was followed at Haironville until November 17th, when the battalion moved to Danmarie. The command left the latter point at 2:00 A. M. on the 22nd of November and marched to Ligny-en-Barrois where it entrained and proceeded to Vitrey-en-Vernois and hiked from there to Serqueux. Training was resumed there and carried on until the battalion moved to Parnot on March 16, 1919. Leaving Parnot in trucks on the 13th of April, the 1st Battalion entrained at Jussey for Beaumont. From there it marched to Marolles les Braults. Preparations were at once commenced for the return to America.

## Summary of Activities, Second Battalion, One Hundred and Sixteenth Infantry, Twenty-Ninth Division

Organized October 4, 1917, at Camp McClellan, Anniston, Ala. Trained there until June, 1918. Entrained on the 11th of that month for Hoboken, N. J. Sailed for France on the *Finland*, June 15th, and arrived St. Nazaire on the 27th. Entrained for Champlitte July 2nd. Detrained July 4th and marched to Frettes and billeted. Moved to La Ferte-sur-Amance on the 17th and entrained. Detrained at Celford and marched to Grosmagny. Left on the 24th for Soppe le Haut. Took over sector in front lines July 27th. Battalion moved to Vauthiermont August 7th and to Traubach-le-Haute on the 17th and Beuthwiller on 20th. Entered trenches and remained until 27th. Relieved that date and returned to billets at Traubach le Haute. Moved to Vauthiermont September 4th, thence to Offemont on the 17th. Entrained at Belfort September 23rd for Revigny, marching from latter point to Seigneulles on the 24. Proceeded to Souhesme-le-Grande October 1st, thence to Bois Bouchet on the 5th. Took part in engagements of Malbrouck Hill, Molleville Farm, Bois de Consenvoye, Bois de Grande Montagne, Etrayes Ridge. Relieved October 28th and marched to Faubourg de Pave. Proceeded to Glorieux on the 29th and boarded trucks for Combles. Moved to Brillon November 13th and on to Foucheres several days later. Marched to Ligny on the 22nd and entrained for Jussey. From there battalion marched to Lariviere and Aigremont. Battalion followed training schedule through the winter. Entrained for the Le Mans area April 13, 1919.



# History of the Second Battalion

Compiled by Russell B. De Vine

**Sources**—History Company E, First Lieutenant Benjamin R. Brown, and Second Lieutenant Paul R. Hanenman. History Company F, First Lieutenant J. V. Sanderson. History Company G, First Lieutenant Barry Wetzler. History Company H, Second Lieutenant Clyde W. Tallman. Operations of the Twenty-Ninth Division (East of Meuse River, October, 1918.)

The following records in the Adjutant General's Department and the Army War College, Washington, D. C.:

Station Reports, Returns, Morning Reports, War Diaries, Regimental D. R. C., Operations Reports, Orders, Situation Maps, Training Reports, Medical Reports, Miscellaneous Section A. G. D., Camp Records, Organization Records and G. H. Q. Records, Militia Bureau Records.

—o—

In accordance with the reorganization plans of the War Department the 1st 2nd and 4th Regiments of Virginia Infantry were merged into one regiment—the 116th Infantry—On October 4, 1917, at Camp McClellan, Anniston, Alabama.

The 2nd Battalion was composed of Companies E, F, G and H. Company E was formed from Company G of the 4th Virginia Infantry, as the base unit, to which had been transferred a number of men from Companies B and F of the 4th Virginia Infantry. The new company was commanded by Captain Roland Thorp, of Norfolk, Virginia. Company F was formed from Companies E and F of the 2nd Virginia Infantry, with Captain Linwood G. Figgatt of the latter company as commanding officer. Company G was organized from Companies A and G of the 2nd Virginia Infantry and was commanded by Captain Winston B. Davis. Company H was formed from Company H and ninety-three men from Company D of the 1st Virginia Infantry. Captain Albert S. Burnham was assigned to command the organization.

Major George O. Leach, of Front Royal, Virginia, was placed in command of the battalion with Lieutenant Charles C. Moss as Adjutant. The battalion comprised men from all sections of Virginia, many of whom had seen service on the Mexican Border in 1916.

Training in accordance with the prescribed schedules was started at once and this continued without let up until the battalion left Camp McClellan, in June, 1918. Drilling was the order of the day and target work and bayonet practice were carried on regularly. Hikes were of frequent occurrence. French and British officers and non-coms, fresh from the battle lines in France instructed the Americans in the arts of warfare.

From early December on through the spring, constant rumors of an early departure kept everyone stirred up.

The winter of 1917-1918 was an exceptionally severe one and many unusual hardships were endured by the men. Epidemics of measles and mumps occurred from time to time in the battalion.

Detachments of men were sent overseas from time to time and others were transferred to aviation fields at San Antonio and other places during the winter. A dozen or more of the men of the 2nd Battalion attended the Third Officers' Training Camp at Camp McClellan, nearly all of whom secured commissions.

Major Leach was retired the latter part of February, 1918, because of his age. Captain Linwood G. Figgatt, of F Company, assumed command of the battalion temporarily. Captain Samuel G. Waller was appointed battalion commander on the 9th of March, 1918, and Lieutenant C. Vaughan, III, was made Adjutant. Captain Waller was promoted to Major on March 26th, and remained in command of the battalion from that time forth. In May and June replacements were received to fill vacancies caused by transfers and promotions. These men came from all parts of the United States, very few being Virginians.

The 2nd Battalion participated in the five days maneuvers of the 58th Brigade in May, 1918. During these maneuvers the battalion lived in

shelter tents and under conditions as nearly like war as it was possible to make them. Sham battles were fought and various problems were worked out.

The battalion paid a great deal of attention to maintaining proper sanitary conditions in its area and gained a most enviable reputation in this respect throughout the division.

On the 11th day of June, 1918, the battalion left Camp McClellan for the port of embarkation. The troops received a royal welcome all along the route and stations in Virginia were crowded with people anxious to get a last glimpse of the boys. The command detrained at Jersey City on June 14th and crossed the Hudson River on a ferry boat to Hoboken, where the U. S. S. *Finland* was boarded.

The following day at noon the convoy sailed. Everyone was required to wear life preservers because of the constant danger from submarines. "Abandon boat" drills were held daily. The voyage was without especial incident. The weather was good and the morale of the men excellent. Only one submarine was sighted and that disappeared after being fired upon by several of the ships.

Land was sighted on June 27th, and the *Finland* entered the harbor of St. Nazaire that afternoon. The battalion disembarked the following day and marched out of the city to a rest camp, where it spent five days. During this period details of men were furnished for various purposes around the camp.

On July 2nd, the battalion entrained for the town of Champlitte, Haute Saone. Detraining on the 4th of July, the command marched to the village of Frettes, where headquarters were established and Companies F, G and H went into billets. Company E was quartered at Larette. Chauchat automatic rifles and steel helmets were issued, and training was started at once. Orders came on July 12th, detaching Major Waller and Captains Burnham, Davis and Thorp and sending them to school. Captain Figgatt was left in command of the battalion, and Lieutenants B. R. Brown, J. D. Twitty, C. C. Crowder and S. A. McKinney in command of Companies E, F, G and H, respectively.

The battalion left Frettes on July 17th, and after marching twenty-five miles, reached La Ferte-sur-Amance, where gas masks were drawn. Box cars were then boarded and the battalion proceeded to Celford, not far from Belfort, where it detrained and marched to Grosmaigny. There battalion headquarters were established and Companies E, F and G were billeted, while Company H was located at Petitmaigny. The battalion got its first taste of real war in this sector, and also came in contact for the first time with civilians who were pro-German in their sympathies. Enemy planes flew overhead every day and a number of thrilling battles in the air were witnessed. On July 24th, the battalion started on the last lap of the march to the front lines, moving only at night. Soppe-le-Haut, four kilometers from the front, was reached the night of the 25th.

Lieutenant James C. Jessup was appointed Gas Officer of the battalion, Lieutenant John Coulter, Liaison Officer, and Lieutenant Harry F. Powell, Intelligence Officer. The latter was subsequently succeeded by Lieutenant Charles Holtman. The various battalion officers were taken on a tour of the front line trenches in the Buchwald sector on July 27th by Lieutenant Hazard, of the 205th French Infantry. Companies E and F took over the sector occupied by a company of the above regiment the following night, Companies G and H remaining in support at Soppe-le-Haut, and battalion headquarters moving to Coppe-le-Bas. The very closest relations prevailed with the French and the time spent in the trenches provided valuable experience for both officers and men. On August 3rd, Major Waller returned from school and Captain Figgatt resumed command of Company F.

The battalion moved to Vauthiermont on August 7th and went into quarters with the exception of Company E, which proceeded to Lariviere. While the command was billeted in this area, Captains Davis, Thorp and Burnham returned from school and took charge of their companies. On August 17th, the battalion marched to Traubach-le-Haut and on the evening of the 20th, proceeded to Beuthwiller and established headquarters. Com-



pany H went into billets at Beuthwiller, Company G at Ueberkuwen, and Companies E and F went into the front line trenches. The local inhabitants who were strongly pro-German in their sympathies caused a great deal of trouble, while the battalion was in this sector by constant signalling to the enemy. The Germans shelled the front lines heavily on the morning of August 26th, after which an attacking party came over, only to be beaten back. The battalion experienced its first casualties in this engagement. The 3rd Battalion of the 116th Infantry relieved the 2nd on the evening of August 27th and the latter marched to Traubach-le-Haut and went into billets.

September 4th found the battalion marching to Vauthiermont, where Companies E, G and H went into quarters, Company F proceeding to Lari-viere. During the stay in this area the battalion took part in divisional maneuvers. The 2nd Battalion was chosen to execute a raid on the Kaiser Vorwerk trench system. The engineers reproduced this system in detail and the battalion rehearsed every particular of the proposed attack until each man knew exactly what he had to do. These plans had to be abandoned, however, when the battalion suddenly received moving orders.

The command marched to Offemont on the 18th of September, where it remained until the 23rd. Entraining at Belfort, it proceeded to Revigny and marched from there to Seigneulles on the 24th. For two days it was held in readiness to enter the Montfaucon drive, but no further orders came, so it returned to its quarters. The battalion next moved to Souhesme-le-Grande, going into camp in a wood two kilometers further on. On October 5th, it proceeded to the Bois Bouchet, where it went into the Corps reserve. Leaving on the 7th, the 2nd Battalion moved into position on the Canol de L'Est, 400 meters south of Samogneux, where the German Crown Prince had made such desperate efforts to wipe out the Verdun salient.

At 5:00 A. M. on October 8th, the 2nd Battalion advanced in reserve, the 3rd Battalion being the assaulting wave with the 1st in support. The 2nd executed a passage of lines at 9:30 A. M., becoming the support battalion at that time, the 1st Battalion relieving the 3rd in the front line. The 2nd continued in support until the normal objective south of Molleville Farm was reached, about 6:00 P. M. The French troops on the right had not only failed to gain ground, but had been forced to fall back south of Ormont Farm. During the night they reported that they would launch an attack against Ormont Farm at 5:00 A. M. The 2nd Battalion suffered a heavy counter-attack on the right flank at 5:30 that morning, but the enemy was driven off with heavy losses in the Ravine Bourvaux.

The 2nd Battalion was in support of the 1st after the latter attacked the Bois de Consenvoye on October 9th, with the 3rd in reserve. The same formation obtained the following day in the assault on Boissois Bois. The 1st Battalion was held up by heavy machine gun fire from the vicinity of Molleville Farm and Bultry Bois, so the 2nd executed a passage of lines and became the assaulting battalion while the 3rd became the support and the 1st went into reserve. The 2nd dug in on the north side of Boissois Bois on October 11th, but was relieved by the 3rd Battalion on the 12th and took up a position in reserve on the southeast side of Boissois Bois, where it remained until October 15th. The battalion took part in the attack launched against Molleville Farm on October ---- in support of the 3rd Battalion with the 1st in reserve. The objective, the Bois de la Grande Montagne, was reached at 9:35 o'clock. The 2nd was relieved by the 1st Battalion the next day at 6:00 A. M. and occupied the Bois de Consenvoye in support, returning again to the line on the 17th and relieving the 1st Battalion in the Bois de la Grande Montagne. The enemy launched a strong counter-attack against the battalion's positions at 9:30 o'clock, but had to fall back. The battalion remained in the same position until the 19th, being relieved by the 3rd and going into reserve in Boissois Bois, leaving there on October 21st to go in reserve near the northwest edge of Bois de Brabant-sur-Meuse. No change in position occurred until the 23rd, when the battalion constituted the assaulting wave in an attack extending due east from the Bois de la Grande Montagne to the Bois d'Etrayes, with the right of the sector northeast of Hill 361. Company G and a part of H



Company made up the assaulting wave. They followed the barrage very closely and pressed forward to the normal objective. Companies E and F, which were in support, were halted and prevented from crossing the ravine by machine-gun and rifle fire. The enemy troops responsible for this firing were finally routed. Companies E and F were then used to fill the gap between the 116th and 115th Regiments and the position was organized. Lieutenant Peters, in command of Company H, took charge of "mopping up" enemy dugouts and trenches.

Preceded by a barrage lasting one hour and thirty-five minutes, the Germans delivered a strong counter-attack the evening of October 23rd, and another the following morning, near Hill 361. Companies E and F were relieved at 3:00 A. M. on October 25th by the 1st Battalion and Companies G and H were relieved the following night by the 114th Infantry.

The 2nd Battalion occupied support positions in the Boissois Bois on October 26th, and was in reserve the following day in the northwest edge of Bois de Brabant-sur-Meuse. It was relieved on the 28th by the 79th Division and marched to Faubourg de Pave, north of Verdun. The command marched through Verdun on the 29th to Glorieux and boarded trucks for Combles, which was reached at 3:30 A. M., October 30th.

During these operations the battalion fought with gallantry. Severe losses were sustained, Lieutenant John C. Leavell and forty-six men being killed and seven officers—Captains Davis and Burnham, and Lieutenants Jessup, Powell, McGavery, Crowder and Sanderson, and two hundred and eighty-six men wounded, while thirty-two enlisted men were reported missing. Chaplain Bull was killed on October 23rd in the attack on Molleville Farm. The Medical and Sanitary troops attached to the battalion rendered extremely valuable assistance during the entire period and the band of the 116th Infantry was most helpful in the evacuation of wounded. Lieutenant Hearn did especially fine work dressing wounded under fire, as did Lieutenant Robert Stickley, the dental surgeon attached.

The 2nd Battalion was ably supported in its operations by the Machine Gun Company of the 116th Infantry and Major Waller stated that he had never "seen a more efficient organization."

Due to the absence of officers at school and on other details there were only three line officers with the companies. Companies F and G were exceptionally well handled by Sergeants W. C. Price and W. B. Davis.

The battalion remained in Combles for two weeks, resting and refitting. Orders had been received for the unit to become part of the Second Army Reserve in the attack on Metz, but the signing of the Armistice on November 11th, resulted in these orders being rescinded. The battalion moved to Brillon on November 13th, and after several days there, proceeded to Foucheres. Leaving the latter point on the 22nd, the battalion marched to Ligny-en-Barrois and entrained for Jussey. After detaining there it marched to Larivière and Aigremont. The battalion participated in divisional maneuvers on December 20th, near Fresnes.

The majority of the wounded officers and men returned to the battalion by Christmas. Captain S. R. Millar, Jr., was appointed to the command of Company E, and Captain James B. Kaine, who had just been assigned to the regiment, to command Company H. Captain Roland Thorp was made Regimental Adjutant.

An intensive schedule of training was entered upon and this was followed out no matter what the weather conditions were. The battalion carried out this program so faithfully that in the two battalion combat maneuvers held by the regiment, it won first place each time. The battalion also took part in the regimental wild boar hunt which was staged on Washington's birthday, February 22, 1919, in the Bois de Rougemont.

The command took part in the review of the 29th Division by General Pershing, at Fresnes, on March 24, 1919. The 116th Infantry was chosen by the Commander-in-Chief to parade at Chaumont in April before Field Marshal Sir Douglas Haig. The battalion proceeded to Chaumont for this event in trucks and returned the same way.

On April 13, 1919, the battalion entrained for the Le Mans area to prepare for the return to the United States. It arrived at Beaumont after three days en route. Battalion headquarters and Company E were located in Meurce, Company F, in Nauvay, G and H in Marolles-les-Braults.

## Summary of Activities—Third Battalion, One Hundred and Sixteenth Infantry, Twenty-Ninth Division

Organized October 4, 1917 at Camp McClellan, Anniston, Alabama. Trained there until June 1918. Entrained June 12th for Hoboken, N. J. Sailed June 15th on the *Finland* for France and arrived St. Nazaire on the 27th. Left for Champlitte July 3rd, and marched thence to Genevrières. Set out for the front July 19th, and entered the sector C. R. Doller in Alsace. Entrained September 26th at Belfort for Revigny and marched to Seigneulles. Marched to Amblaincourt October 2nd and to Souhesme les Grande on the 3rd, thence to Fort du Chana near Verdun. Moved to Samogneux October 7th. Took part in engagements of Malbrouck Hill, Molleville Farm, Bois de Consenvoye, Bois de Grande Montagne, Etrayes Ridge, October 8th to 28th. Relieved October 28th and marched to Verdun. Proceeded by truck on the 29th to Saudrupt and billeted. Marched to Lisle en Rigault November 1, 1918, and resumed training. Moved to Haironville November 14th, thence to Morley on the 16th. Entrained at Ligny November 22nd. Detrained at Vitrey on the 23rd and marched to Parnot. Remained there in training until March 15, 1919, when moved to Serqueux. Left for the Le Mans area April 13th. Sailed from St. Nazaire for United States on the *Matsonia* May 10th. Landed at Newport News May 21st and was demobilized at Camp Lee May 29, 1919.

# History of the Third Battalion

By Colonel H. L. Opie

Comprising as it did, men from all parts of the state, the Third Battalion, 116th Infantry, United States Army, was truly a representative Virginia unit. It was formed at Camp McClellan, Alabama, on October 4, 1917, by combining small strength companies from the First, Second and Fourth Virginia National Guard regiments, and as originally formed, included four companies of 250 men and five officers each, together with the major and his staff, a total of twenty-two officers and 1,000 non-commissioned officers and men.

This battalion spent the period from October 4, 1917 to June 12, 1918, in training with the regiment, 116th Infantry, 58th Brigade, 29th Division. It entrained as a separate unit for Hoboken on the latter date, rejoined the regiment at Hoboken on June 14th, when that unit sailed for France on the U. S. Transport *Finland*, landed at St. Nazaire, France, June 27th, 1918, arrived at Genevrières, Department of Haute Marne, July 4th, spent fifteen days in this training area, left for the front July 19th, first went into the quiet sector of C. R. Doller, Alsace, spent the succeeding days until September 18th in Alsatian trenches or support positions, was then hurried by a short railway journey and forced marches to Fort du Chana, near Verdun, engaged in the East Meuse Offensive from October 8th to October 29, 1918, and was at Lisle-en-Rigault, reformed and ready to return to take part in the drive on Metz when the Armistice was signed. It sailed for home with the regiment on Transport *Matsonia*, from St. Nazaire, on May 10th, landed in Newport News May 21st, and was demobilized at Camp Lee, Virginia, May 29, 1919, with as fine a record of service as any similarly organized unit with the same length of service in the American Expeditionary Forces.

The four units of the battalion were Companies I, K, L and M. Company I was formed from a consolidation of Companies B and I, Second Virginia Infantry. Company B was from Culpeper, Company I, the base company, from Winchester. Captain Robert Young Conrad commanded this company.

Company K was formed by consolidating Companies H and K of the Second Virginia, and a part of Company D of the Fourth Virginia. Company H was from Cape Charles, Company K from Portsmouth, and Company D from Norfolk. The new company was commanded by Captain James L. Mitchell, of Norfolk.

Company L was formed by a consolidation of Companies E, L, and a part of Company G, all of the First Virginia Infantry. Companies E and L were from Lynchburg, and Company G from Alexandria. Captain (afterwards Major) George Murrell Alexander commanded this company, of which his old company L, of the First Virginia, was the base.

Company M was formed by consolidating Companies L and M of the Second Virginia, with Company M of East Radford as the base company, Captain James W. Wright, of East Radford, commanding. Company L was from Pulaski.

The first commanding officer of the Third Battalion was Major John Fulmer Bright, of Richmond, originally from the First Virginia Infantry. His Adjutant was First Lieutenant Leroy E. Brown, who shortly after the organization of the unit was transferred to the 111th Field Artillery, on November 3, 1917, and Second Lieutenant Beverley C. Wilkes, of Richmond, was promoted to First Lieutenant and Adjutant, serving in that capacity until a short time before the battalion returned from France, when he was transferred to other duties in the A. E. F.

## Early Training

During the remaining months of 1917, the battalion was commanded by Major Bright, the regiment by Colonel Robert F. Leedy, the brigade by



General Charles D. Gaither, and the division, except for six weeks during which he made a trip to England and France, by Major General Chas. G. Morton, a typical martinet of the old Army, a good organizer and a stern disciplinarian, who considered men and officers as mere fragments of the machinery of war and treated them as such.

Men in training camps throughout the country, whether in tents or barracks, will long remember the severity of the winter of 1917-18. Even as far south as Alabama, it was said to be the most rigorous on record. The troops at Camp McClellan had only tents for shelter, and until late in December were scantily clad, poorly shod, and poorly equipped with the implements of their branch of the service. They were high in morale, however, despite the gloom and dissatisfaction with which they greeted the breaking up of their old units, and by the 1st of February, 1918, were in better shape for field service than when they actually sailed for France, some four months later, after the companies had been depleted by frequent transfers, and then refilled with drafted recruits with no training whatever.

#### Major Bright Retired

Early in March of 1918, Major Bright was relieved from command of the battalion on account of physical disability, greatly to the regret of both his superiors and subordinates, as he was considered one of the finest and ablest types of National Guard officers. He was succeeded by Major H. L. Opie, who was promoted from a captaincy within the regiment, on March 5, 1918, and assigned to the command of the Third Battalion on March 14, 1918.

Much could be written of the hardships and difficulties encountered during the rather extended training period, of the bright and dark spots of camp life; of the lack of an effective system of company organization for months, and the oftentimes futile training schedules provided by division headquarters; the difficulty of obtaining supplies and equipment for the first six months; of the attitude of the Regular Army officers toward the National Guard officers, and the very patient and finally successful efforts of the Army to "smash the Guard," but it is not the intention of the writer to dwell upon these matters. They may be counted as things that are past; impositions, humiliations, hardships, injustices, which were endured of necessity during a national emergency, but against a repetition of which the country should provide.

#### Training Difficulties

After four months of scattering effort on the part of division headquarters, a very effective training schedule was issued, and splendid progress was made in training for both open and trench warfare. Individual, squad, section and platoon instruction was provided in bayonet and grenade fighting, construction of trenches, communication, gas warfare, combat formations, scouting, sniping, rifle practice, musketry problems, map reading, and finally offensive and defensive problems by battalions. The continual transfer and shifting of officers and enlisted personnel, though in large measure unavoidable, made it extremely difficult to attain and maintain the desired standard of efficiency. Yet woe betide the unit commander found wanting. There was no palliation, no excuse. Such is the hard necessity of war.

In early May of 1918, the companies of the battalion were reduced by constant details and transfers to furnish replacements for overseas units, from their original strength of 250 men each to about 115 men each, and there was also a considerable shortage of officers. The company commanders remained the same, with one exception. Captain Wright was relieved for physical disability, and First Lieutenant Elliott K. Howe was put in command of M Company. Some ten or twelve lieutenants had also been transferred or promoted, and this number of vacancies existed. The battalion was never again brought up to anything like its original strength of officers or men until long after the Armistice.

### The First Replacements

On May 3rd, the battalion received 340 untrained men, ten per cent of whom could speak no English, and many others but a few words. These men had been shunted back and forth from four different camps, but they were patriotic Americans, willing and eager to serve their country, and they soon learned the rudiments of soldiering and were assimilated by the various companies in an unbelievably short time. The more apt were making some of the older men look to their laurels before they had been with the organization more than a few weeks.

On January 1st, Colonel H. K. Threlkeld, of the Regular Army, had succeeded Colonel Robert F. Leedy as regimental commander. On May 1st, Colonel Threlkeld was succeeded by Colonel Wm. J. Perry, formerly of the First Virginia Infantry, and on June 5th, Colonel Perry was succeeded by Lieutenant Colonel Hobart M. Brown, of New Jersey, but recently promoted from the Military Police Battalion. The latter commanded the regiment from June 5th until it reached France.

### Ready for the Battle Front

During April and then all during the month of May, sailing orders were momentarily expected, and the entire personnel of the battalion was "on its toes" and working with feverish eagerness and intensity to attain the training apex. Their morale was at high tide and when definite sailing orders were actually received in early June, they felt that they had surmounted every difficulty, passed successfully every test of training, and were ready for the supreme test of all at the battle front.

Overseas equipment, such as was on hand, was crated and boxed and bagged by a system laid down throughout the division, and labeled with various symbolic devices instead of unit numbers. Springfield rifles had been displaced by Enfields, and efforts made to master the new method of shooting. There had been little or no live grenade practice, and no automatic practice, but all expected to catch that up on the other side in short order. And they did.

On June 12, 1918, the Third Battalion entrained at Camp McClellan for Hoboken. Arriving at port on the night of the 13th, it joined the rest of the regiment which had preceded it, and embarked on the U. S. Transport *Finland*, which sailed with five other transports early next morning. The second day out seven large transports from Newport News joined the New York fleet, making a convoy of thirteen troop ships carrying 70,000 men, said to be the second largest individual trans-Atlantic troop movement in history.

### A Safe Crossing

Fair weather and smooth sailing marked the voyage across and although there were many rumors of U-boat attacks, and a number of shots were fired at suspicious looking objects, the entire convoy ran the gauntlet of the German sea terror without serious mishap, and reaching the Bay of Biscay, split for two destinations, Brest and St. Nazaire. The Third Battalion landed with the regiment at St. Nazaire on the early morning of June 27th, and marched at once to the rest camp at that place. This camp was built on a slightly elevated and sandy plateau, and consisted of numerous Adrian barracks constructed by the French and English. There was little food and less water here, and everyone was glad when the "rest" was over and moving orders were received on July 1st to proceed to an unknown destination.

All movements except that of ocean transport were by battalions. The Third Battalion left St. Nazaire on July 2nd, packed into forty little French box cars, each bearing the now famous legend, "Hommes 40-Chevaux 8." Two days of this, and the outfit had traveled clear across France, to the little town of Champlitte, near the Swiss border, arriving at the railroad on July 4th. Here the battalion was split, Companies I and K marching to billets at Genevrières and Companies L and M to Gilles. These two



little provincial villages were in the Department of Haute Marne, the most of which constituted a large American training area. The nearest big town was the ancient fortified city of Langres, a big American army school center.

### Welcomed by French Peasants

Two weeks were spent at Genevrières, but the intensive cultivation of the land, the net-work of roads, and the numerous villages, made it difficult to do more than drill in small units. The battalion needed rifle, live grenade and automatic practice more than anything else, but these essentials to effective training had to be deferred. Hardening exercises, combat formations, co-ordination of groups, bayonet fighting and communication occupied most of the time.

The companies had the good fortune to be the first American troops to be billeted in this area, and they were greeted as the saviours of France by the inhabitants. Nothing was too good for them, and while the district was very poor, officers and men alike have nothing but the most pleasant recollections of the simple folk of this quaint old community. The villagers joined wholeheartedly in the American Fourth of July celebration, and the soldiery in turn helped to stage a Bastille Day celebration on the 14th of July. On this national holiday, the citizens of Genevrières cemented the cordial relations between themselves and their American allies by generous libations of wine and champagne to company and officers' messes, sufficient to slake the thirst of the thirstiest, though contrary to general orders. The matter of maintaining the *entente cordiale*, offending generous allies or obeying the letter of an order, left only one recourse.

### French Sunshine

At this time of the year, the sobriquet of "Sunny France" seemed entirely appropriate, a fact that was soon forgotten once the rainy season set in. Here seldom a cloud drifted across the azure sky, and the peace and quiet of the country-side gave no hint of war. Little news and few rumors reached the villages, but the absence of able bodied men and women, the paucity of stock and farm implements and supplies, the occasional tolling of the bells announcing mass for another departed soul at the distant battle front, the sight of a disabled *poilu* here and there, recuperating from his wounds, and the milling soldiers in olive drab, all contributed to give a tense seriousness to the environment.

But the peace and quiet of these campestrial scenes could not allay the throbbing eagerness for a part in the big events transpiring at the front, and the deadly purpose for which these men had left their distant homes and traveled three thousand miles across land and sea—to give battle to the Hun.

Official communiques had informed the battalion of the checking of the Hun offensive at Chateau Thierry and the Second Marne, and late at night on the 18th of July came the regimental commander, himself, Colonel H. K. Threlkeld, who had been again assigned to the regiment, to inform the major that orders had been received to move the entire division to the front and that his battalion would be the first in the regiment to move. At 1 A. M. Brigadier General H. H. Bandholtz, who some months previously had succeeded to the command of the brigade, appeared at battalion headquarters with marching orders, and early next morning, the four companies had been assembled at Genevrières, and were on the march with heavy packs to La Fert. From there they proceeded to Belfort, by rail, and an arduous night march brought them to Versemont in the Vosges, near the Alsatian border.

### Preparations for the Trenches

At Versemont, Companies I, K and L were billeted and M Company was moved a kilometer farther north to Reversemont. Here the battalion was held for five days in reserve for the Alsatian front. Live grenades,



Chauchat automatic rifles, helmets and gas masks were issued, and although the divisional training orders still provided close order drill and field exercises for the entire day, under penalty of relief from command for any unit commander caught varying from the prescribed schedule, time was found for automatic rifle, rifle and hand grenade practice. Needless to add, this soon proved invaluable, especially to the men who had been barely two months with the organization, as familiarity with these weapons was as essential to the safety of our own troops from accident as it was necessary to their proper and confident use in trench and open warfare.

### The First Enemy Air Scout

At Versemont, the Virginians got their first view of hostile aircraft, and incidentally their first shower of missiles from the air—but these latter came from the “antis” fired at the plane. On approaching the front zone orders for the “gas alert” and night marching and concealment from enemy air scouts had been received, but it was not until early morning of July 20th that an enemy plane was actually sighted. Reveille had sounded and sleepy eyed doughboys were debouching from their billets for the morning check roll, when a number of sharp explosions high in the air greeted their ears. Following the direction of the sounds with the eye, little feathery puff-balls of white smoke could be seen, many thousands of feet heavenward. Few knew the significance of these until they saw others flash into existence and gradually disappear, and heard the cry from women and children: “Le Boche! Le Boche!” So high up was the enemy scout that he was located with difficulty, and as the light caught the bottom of his fuselage, he looked like a big tin can, floating in space. The air barrage did nothing more than make him keep his distance, but it gave the men their first real thrill since landing in France, and bespoke others soon to come.

### We Enter Alsace

On July 25th, the brigade commander visited battalion headquarters and informed the battalion commander that his unit had been selected as the first in the regiment for a tour in the trenches. Marching orders were received late in the afternoon, to proceed to Rougemont, in Alsace, lay up the next day, and await further orders. The battalion reached Rougemont without event, other than frequent stopping by French sentries at bridges, villages and crossroads, but after some argument and the calling of a sous-officier, the column was always allowed to proceed, though lacking the password, or formal French order.

Orders arrived promptly at Rougemont to proceed to Geuvenheim. The troops were already in the heart of the beautiful Vosges country, which looked for all the world like a Gargantuan chromo. The only indications that they were in the “Zone of the Front” were the frequent signs in French: “Gas Alerte!” “Route en cas d’alarm!” “Cave d’abri!” and camouflaged artillery emplacements. None of the orders gave any indication of the conditions at the destination, and it was thought that each new march would bring up at the actual front. Movements were now conducted with the utmost secrecy, and quiet, and the men were not even allowed to smoke as they marched.

### The Front At Last

Something after midnight of the 26th found the head of the column at Geuvenheim. A sleepy Etat Major with the battalion billeting party, which had gone ahead, impressed the new arrivals with the necessity for quiet and caution, and the battalion was put away in such billets as were available. There was not a mount in the outfit, and all hands were pretty well worn out after their twenty kilometer hike under full pack, so little thought was given to the situation until morning, when it was found that they were actually in a shell torn village of Alsace, which was serving as the P. C. (command post) for a French major.

The commander of the Virginia battalion reported under orders to Major J. Guichert, 205th French battalion, and was courteously received. Though they had no interpreter, and neither could speak the other's language, the information was imparted with considerable delay and difficulty, that the sector was a quiet one, designated by the French as a "rest" sector, that it was known officially as the "C. R. Doller" (Center of Resistance Doller), and that it was directly opposite Mulhouse which was in enemy hands. Two small French infantry companies and a machine gun company then occupied the trenches, with one company in reserve at battalion headquarters.

### A Quiet Sector

Geuvenheim was still inhabited by a nondescript population, speaking a mongrel tongue, more German than French, but many of the houses, especially on the outskirts, had been wrecked or partially demolished by shell fire, and a shell had struck a stable and killed a number of horses just before the arrival of the Virginians. Boche planes were continually scouting overhead, and it was very necessary that information of the arrival of fresh troops be kept from the enemy. Bedraggled camouflage screens, which had seen long usage, gave some concealment along the roads and streets, especially from an enemy drachen which hovered along the front as soon as the morning mists cleared away.

### First Sight of No Man's Land

July 28th, Companies I and K under command of Captain Robert Y. Conrad and First Lieutenant A. H. Stone, respectively, were sent into the front line trenches, and Companies L and M were held in reserve at the battalion P. C, under First Lieutenant R. Chester McGhee and First Lieutenant E. M. Howe. These companies, however, were not the first of the regiment in the trenches, as it was learned the original order had been changed, and two companies of the Second Battalion had entered the front line of Soppe la Bas, the adjoining sector, on the previous day.

Most of this country was well wooded and as the lines were far apart, offered fine shelter for company command posts, combat groups and communication trenches. The only excitement was furnished by occasional enemy shelling long distance machine gun fire, night patrols, enemy planes and balloons, and the eerie feeling that the enemy might be staging a raid at any moment under cover of darkness.

On August 3rd, L and M Companies relieved I and K in the front lines, and took up the training routine under several French officers and under officers, who had served also with the first two companies. French soldiers of all ranks were of invaluable assistance, and gave freely of their veteran experience in war, as far as the limitations of language would permit. The soldiers of the olive drab and the horizon blue were truly brothers in arms.

### War Balloon Brought Down

While in this sector, the men of the battalion were treated to their first sight of an air battle, and also saw their first enemy war balloon brought down in flames. The French commander announced the arrival of a new air squadron on August 7th, and declared that it would destroy the enemy drachen hovering over Mulhouse the next morning. The drachen made its usual ascent at 7 A. M. and shortly afterwards it was set upon by three French planes and destroyed. The next morning another took its place, and it was also promptly destroyed. This one was not replaced.

The battalion was relieved of front line duty on August 11th, and marched to St. Cosme and Reppe, the latter place being headquarters of the regiment. It had had its first "baptism of fire" and invaluable trench, patrol and scouting experience under the nerve tension of battle, without the loss of a single man. This was war de luxe. It had its advantages



and its disadvantages. While it gave the individual soldier the exalted morale so valued by all military leaders, it also inclined to give him a careless disregard for the future and a contempt for enemy power that often induced him to take unnecessary chances.

### Enemy Spare Villages

Reppe and St. Cosme were both in range of the enemy "heavies" and open to air bombardment, but the Hun showed no inclination to bombard the inhabited Alsatian villages unnecessarily, mainly because this had been German territory and, expecting to get it back, he wanted it as little damaged as possible. So the artillery and the planes devoted their entire attention to troop movements, railheads, depots and gun positions.

The terrain in the vicinity of St. Cosme offered very good facilities for training a battalion or even a regiment for open warfare, and the next two weeks after its arrival were devoted by the Third Battalion to every phase of open fighting in the war game. This period and a week in early September presented the only opportunities the organization ever had for deployment as an individual combat unit, or for problems in attack as provided in the new tactics laid down in the instructions from G. H. Q. for open warfare.

For these maneuvers, a machine gun company, Stokes mortar, one pounder, pioneer and signal detachments were assigned to the battalion, making it a complete little army within itself, except for the light artillery piece which had recently come into general use with an assault battalion, in the Allied armies. The battalion thus composed, comprised some 800 infantrymen, 180 machine gun men, 60 men of the battalion scout platoon, and 85 in the three smaller groups, and 25 officers of all arms, a total of 1,150 officers and men.

### We Prepare for Open Warfare

Orders had come from G. H. Q. that all possible time be devoted to training for open warfare, as provided in the pamphlet, "Combat Instructions for Small Units." This dealt with the so-called combat group, the smallest individual fighting unit, the platoon, the company and the battalion, the latter being the largest individual fighting unit. Very intensive training in the short space allowed, was given the smaller units in order that they might be well grounded before the work of battalion operations was begun. For this latter, the battalion was deployed on a front averaging five or six hundred meters and to a depth of about eight hundred, with two companies deployed in four lines, in the first or assault wave and two companies in support, following the first wave at from three to five hundred meters according to terrain. The formation of the support companies as provided in training bulletins, was "lines of platoon or half-platoon columns or combat groups," but under the advice of First Lieutenant Raymond Tout, French informateur assigned to the battalion headquarters, the old squad column formation, which held the squad together as a unit and at the same time presented the smallest possible target to the enemy artillery and machine guns, was adopted. This formation saved many casualties in later battle operations, and finally came into general use in the A. E. F. training methods after the Armistice.

### Officers Sent to Army Schools

From Reppe, Major Opie was sent for a two weeks' course to the Field Officers School at Langres. Captain Conrad, Captain Alexander, and several lieutenants had already been sent to the Infantry Officers' School, and the battalion was left in command of Captain Mitchell. First Lieutenant R. C. McGhee had been sent back to the States as an instructor. Captain Alexander was returned to his company at Reppe, and was immediately promoted to a majority and assigned to the command of the First Battalion. This left First Lieutenant W. D. Cunningham in command of L Company.



### Front Line Trenches Again

After two weeks' hard training in reserve at Reppe, the battalion was again ordered to the trenches, this time at C. R. Balschwiller, where it relieved the Second Battalion, 116th Infantry, on the night of August 26-27th. On the morning of the 26th, the Second Battalion, after suffering a heavy bombardment, had been attacked by a strong enemy raiding party. The enemy gained the first line trenches, but was beaten back with severe losses. The Second also suffered heavy casualties in killed and wounded, but never lost a prisoner to the enemy, and gained a splendid name for itself for the manner in which it endured the enemy shelling, which all but reduced the trenches at many points, and then beat off the attackers with rifle fire and grenades.

Balschwiller, like the other sectors of the Alsatian front, was subdivided into the sector of the right and the sector of the left. Company I took over the right front, Company K the left, both having P. C.'s at Buthwiller. Company L was held in close support at Ueberkumen, with Company M a kilometer farther back at battalion headquarters at Balschwiller. Both Ueberkumen and Balschwiller were inhabited and little damaged by shellfire. Buthwiller, however, was shattered and occupied only by troops in abri and cellars. Company I was in liaison with Company M, 113th Infantry on the right, and Company K with Company A, 116th, on the left.

Major Opie returned from Langres and resumed his command on August 28th. At this time, First Lieutenant Dinges was in command of I Company, Captain J. L. Mitchell, K Company, First Lieutenant Cunningham, L Company and Captain A. D. Barksdale recently returned from special duty, was in command of M Company.

### Our Patrols Active

Trenches were closer together in Balschwiller sector, the country was more open and there was considerably more activity than in the Doller. However, patrols from the scout platoon and from the companies dominated "No Man's Land" at night, and snipers by day, forcing the enemy to keep well under cover. Even with the high powered glasses in the O. P.'s, little activity was to be observed in the enemy trench system, although "Heinie" was usually moving about to some extent in the back areas. Trenches were in a bad state of repair, the wire being shot to pieces in numerous places, and it was necessary to keep large working parties busy remedying these defects. It was while thus engaged that the first casualties occurred. On the night of August 30th, Privates Carey L. Campbell and Robert T. Wicker were wounded by indirect machine gun fire and on the following night Private David L. Meeks was wounded in the same manner. Enemy shelling occurred at frequent intervals, but caused few casualties. The chief damage inflicted was to trenches, command posts, and wire communications.

### Gas Alarms

A gas projectory attack inflicted heavy casualties upon the 114th Infantry on the right of the divisional sector, and the 113th suffered comparatively heavy casualties from high explosive shells on its support positions, but no unit of the 116th suffered severe casualties in this sector, other than in repulsing the enemy attack already mentioned. Gas alarms were frequent, but were due more to lack of training and unfamiliarity with actual conditions than to necessity. A klaxon horn would sound, or a gas rocket would appear far down the line, and the alarm would be taken up with a terrific din along the entire front, giving the sound effect of a country "shanghai" party on a magnified scale, armed with horns, gongs, bells and tin pans. The men made a frolic of it at first, but the novelty soon wore away, and good gas discipline was observed.

### The First Raid Staged

Activity of patrols from the 115th Infantry the last few days in August and the first three days in September, and the arrival at Balschwiller of a French artillery detachment, equipped with six inch mortars, indicated that a detachment from the 115th, then in reserve, was preparing to launch a raid through the sector of the Third Battalion, but the only information battalion headquarters had of the contemplated attack came from the French commander, until the late afternoon of the 30th, when the brigade commander, General Bandholtz, arrived at battalion headquarters. The major requested information as to the plans for the raid in order to protect the men of his own unit and those of the raiding party which was to pass through his lines, but the request was met with a rebuke, and the information from the general that the raid was none of the major's business.

The raid was staged on the morning of August 31st. Captain E. Brooke Lee, of Maryland, commanded the party, with First Lieutenant Sprague second in command. The enlisted personnel comprised over a hundred picked non-commissioned officers from the 115th Infantry, a detachment of engineers, First Lieutenant Marvin Menefee, with two one-pounder cannon and crews of the 116th Infantry Headquarters Company, and a squad of infantry from the Third Battalion. The little cannon and the infantry squad were added as an afterthought, receiving their orders at 11 o'clock the night before the raid. The only information given the battalion commander of the front line was that the attack would be launched through his right sector, on the Kaiser Vorwerck, a re-entrant in the enemy works, and that the artillery preparation would start at 6 A. M.

### The Box Barrage

The French mortars brought "fire of destruction" to bear on the enemy wire for half an hour and then laid down a box barrage on the point of attack. Under cover of this, the raiding party advanced across No Man's Land, and entered the enemy lines, to find the entire position evacuated. Several enemy dead, victims of artillery fire, were found, but no prisoners. Enemy artillery reacted on the attackers, and enemy machine gunners and snipers, manning *petit postes* and communication trenches on either flank of the point "boxed" by the artillery fire, poured a galling cross fire into the flanks of the raiders, as they returned across No Man's Land to their own lines, claiming heavy toll from their ranks.

### Raid Proves Disastrous

So far as could be learned at Third Battalion headquarters, no official report of the losses on this disastrous and lamentable raid was ever made, and no roster of those who took part was kept. There were approximately 150 men in addition to the three officers in the party, and it is believed that over fifty per cent of the men were killed, wounded or prisoners with the enemy. Forty-five men, the majority of them suffering from gunshot wounds, were given first aid at the Third Battalion dressing station, three men of Company I were wounded and one was killed in the trenches, two men of the one-pounder detachment were wounded, and Captain Lee and four sergeants were left in a shell hole in No Man's Land.

Third Battalion scouts under the scout officer, First Lieutenant Will P. Nye, assisted by Lieutenant Menefee, who had volunteered for the duty, worked feverishly all day, salvaging the dead and wounded from No Man's Land, and as soon as night fell, Lieutenant Nye, again accompanied by Lieutenant Menefee, as a guide, set out for the enemy lines with a strong patrol, in search of Captain Lee and party.

### Patrols Search for Wounded

Captain Lee and one of his sergeants passed the patrol in the darkness, but doubtful of its identity, failed to challenge. He reached Third



Battalion headquarters at 1 A. M. and reported that he had left three men, desperately wounded, in a shell hole, giving the position on the map. Another patrol was hastily organized, and Lieutenant Menefee, although almost completely exhausted from the work of the day and night, volunteered for the third time as patrol guide. It was a long and arduous trip from battalion headquarters to No Man's Land in the dark, and by the time the head of the patrol reached the crest of the little ridge which marked the half way point between the opposing lines, day was breaking. A shattered tree trunk had been given as the landmark by which to orient the place where the three wounded men lay. This tree and a little gully were located without difficulty and scouts were ordered to crawl forward and make a thorough search of the vicinity. This was successful. Enemy flares thrown at intervals on a point closer to their wires, seemed to indicate that the Boche had the poor fellows located and had prepared an ambushade. The patrol leader decided that it was madness to attempt a rescue with his handful of men, under the circumstances, and gave the order to retire.

That night another attempt was made to learn something definite of the fate of the missing men. This time two guides were furnished from the original raiding party, two corporals who had seen the men as they fell. This also was unsuccessful. Lieutenant Nye, who led the patrol, the two guides and several members of the scouts reported that they ran into an enemy ambushade, were cut off and partially surrounded, when it became necessary to give the word to withdraw. Being unable to distinguish friend from foe in the darkness, but aided by a pouring rain, the patrol crawled back to safety in their own lines. The three missing men were never recovered. This unfortunate affair cast a shadow over the entire brigade for many days.

#### Battalion Staff Increased

The battalion had gone to France with a headquarters group consisting of a major, and adjutant and a sergeant major. While at Geuwentheim, the idea of considering a battalion merely a tactical unit was abandoned by higher authority, and it was made an administrative unit as well. It then became necessary to organize a clerical force by details from the companies. Orders also provided for a scout platoon of sixty men and a scout officer, all detailed from the line companies. At Balschwiller, the staff was further increased by a gas officer, an assistant scout officer, and a liaison officer. Second Lieutenant Fred G. Traut as assistant scout officer and First Lieutenant Floyd Cunningham as liaison officer. In addition to these, the headquarters group included an artillery officer, a machine gun officer, and one-pounder and Stokes mortar officers, attached for front line duty with the battalion.

After the raid by the 115th Infantry, little of importance beyond the usual routine happened in the sector, and the battalion was relieved the night of September 8-9th by Major Barrett's battalion of the 115th, and returned to St. Cosme. Here another week was spent in open warfare problems, grenade, rifle and Chauchat practice, and the outfit was then ordered to Reppe, near Belfort. Before leaving St. Cosme Captain Conrad rejoined his command, Captain Mitchell was slightly wounded from the careless handling of a grenade, in a throwing bay, and was evacuated to hospital, and First Lieutenant Ewart Johnston was assigned to the command of L Company and shortly afterwards promoted to the captaincy of that company.

#### Under Secret Orders

Four days were spent at Reppe, and then the battalion was marched to Belfort where it entrained for an unknown destination on the afternoon of September 23rd. "Entrained" is the formal word. As a matter of fact, the troops, soaked from a steady downpour, were jammed into leaky, ramshackle box cars. Two days and nights of this, and Revigny, near Bar-



le-Duc, was reached, with orders from a staff officer that this was the detrainment point, and the final destination was to take part in a big American offensive to be staged in a few days. The battalion spent the day in the woods on account of the high visibility and consequent opportunities for observation from the air, and that night proceeded to Seignuilles, where it arrived in the early hours of the morning of the 25th. This small village of probably 800 souls, furnished billets for the 115th Infantry and the Second Battalion, 116th Infantry, in addition to the Third.

### Allied Air Fleets

It was at Seignuilles that the men of the Third saw a vast air fleet for the first time. France, with American support, had gained the mastery of the air here, and where previously, in the Alsace sector, the Virginians had seldom seen more than half a dozen friendly planes in the air at once, here it was a common thing to see thirty or forty of all descriptions, bearing the Allied markings. The upper reaches of the air at times were fairly alive with them.

The village was about 70 kilometers behind the Verdun lines, and nothing of importance happened here for near two days, which were spent in making what were believed to be final preparations to participate in the big American offensive, which all knew was soon to break.

### The Argonne Offensive

Intermittent artillery fire could be heard in the distance, but faintly. At 11 P. M. of the 25th, however, the storm broke unheralded and in deadly earnest. The horizon for miles east and west was lighted with the flash of firing cannon, with a glare as of a flaming world, undulating before a mighty wind. An unceasing and overpowering volume of sound reached the back areas, and the vibrations shook the most solid structures of Seignuilles, even at a distance of nearly 50 miles from the gun emplacements. The drum fire of the artillery was the first intimation that the "big push" was on, and that the Third was first to be used in reserve and not as front line troops. However, the division had them formed in line along side a long column of French camions to await orders. Here they remained for forty-eight hours in a heavy drizzle of rain, and shortly after the trucks were moved away empty, orders came to proceed by night marches in the wake of our advancing armies. Two night marches and two days spent in bivouac in drenched woods, brought the unit to Souhesme le Grande. On these two marches the men met the first hardships that taxed their endurance to the breaking point, but they withstood the test to a man. The marches were made in heavy going, with full packs, with the flood gates of heaven open. Even the rest periods along the route were fraught with misery and suffering from the fatigue and the cold rain. Billets were a thing of the past. The devastated area had been reached, and from now on the troops were not even to enjoy the friendly, if odorous, shelter of a French cow stable.

### News of Great Victories

In the big offensive which the Americans had launched on the Argonne front on the early morning of September 26th, heavy artillery preparation had smashed the enemy first line positions, and our splendid armies had advanced on a fifty kilometer front to a depth of fifteen kilometers in eight days, capturing the towns of Chatel Chehery, Apremont, Baulny, Montfaucon, Septsarges, and many other strongholds on this general line. Official communiques bore the news to all arms in support and reserve, and a high elation prevailed in the back areas over this triumphal feat of American arms, also a consequent eager impatience to get into the thick of it.

The Third Battalion spent from October 1st to October 3rd at Souhesme. Here again Allied aircraft kept the enemy planes at a distance, but oc-

casionally an adventuresome scout would dart from the clouds on the hazardous mission of locating reserves and instantly scores of our planes were on his tail like a pack of hounds after a hare. And usually a falling machine, in smoke and flames, told the tale of another stout heart and steady hand who would give battle in the clouds no more. Several enemy Fokkers were brought down near the battalion bivouac.

#### On Dead Man's Hill

On the afternoon of the 3rd, Colonel Harris brought personal orders to Major Opie that his battalion had been selected from the regiment to participate in operations near Verdun. The orders were very indefinite. The Colonel, accompanied by Major Opie and Captain Copin, French informateur with the regiment, went forward through Germonville to Dead Man's Hill to reconnoitre. From this position they could sweep with their glasses a vast sector of the four year battle around Verdun, but on account of the distance, could get only a general idea of the terrain east of the Meuse, over which the coming offensive was to be launched. They could locate Samogneux, Brabant-sur-Meuse, and Consenvoye, which were thought to be on the parallel of departure, and hilly, wooded country beyond. It did not look very promising. The artillery of both sides was active, but the reconnaissance was effected without much difficulty.

#### Near Historic Verdun

On returning through Germonville, the battalion was met on the march, commanded by Captain Conrad, who had received orders during the absence of the major to proceed to Fort du Chana, on a hill overlooking Verdun from the west. The march had been started at dusk, and du Chana was reached early next morning. The big push was still in progress, and from the heights of du Chana the battle line could be easily defined for a considerable distance to the north and west. The attack was slowing up, however, as the enemy brought in fresh forces against the victorious but battle weary troops of the assault, who had outdistanced both their artillery and their supplies. A slight lull along the front, a breathing spell for re-adjustment, replenishment and replacement, and the offensive would be renewed with its original determination and intensity.

At du Chana, some ten kilometers from the enemy, the Third Battalion, like the rest of its parent regiment, was still without its munitions. The men were poorly clad and poorly shod, but with an incomparable morale. The flimsy, shoddy uniforms, especially the breeches, were almost in tatters, and the English field shoes, issued in emergency haste, with little regard to sizes requisitioned by supply officers, added to the miseries of every night march. At Souhesme, twenty pairs of breeches per company were received, and these were ordered to be given to the twenty men showing the largest rents in seats and knees.

#### French Order Received

On October 5th, the first definite word indicating the part the battalion was to play in coming operations, was received in the shape of orders from the 18th French Division. The regimental commander had received this order and promptly transmitted copies to his battalion commanders. The 58th American Brigade, consisting of the 115th and 116th Infantry regiments, was attached to the 18th French Division, 17th Corps, for an attack east of the Meuse, against the strongly entrenched enemy positions of Malbrouck, Consenvoye, Ormont, Molleville Farm, Haumont and Etraye.

The parallel of departure of the 116th Infantry was along the Meuse, with its right resting on the ruins of the village of Samogneux, and extending 1,000 meters to the Ravin des Roches. The Third Battalion was the assault battalion, with the First, under Major Alexander, in support, and the Second, commanded by Major S. G. Waller in reserve. The Third was to be in liaison with the 66th French Colonial Infantry on its right, and the



Second Battalion 115th Infantry, on its left. In the interests of secrecy, the day and hour were not given.

Shortly after this initial order was received at battalion headquarters, a plentiful supply of automatic and rifle ammunition arrived, together with a very limited supply of hand and rifle grenades, signal rockets and flares. The rifle grenadiers of the two assault companies received three V. B. grenades each, and the hand bombers two O. F. grenades each. Twelve each should have been the minimum, for each grenadier and hand bomber, for an important operation. Eighteen inch wire cutters were also provided for the assault waves, and teams were quickly organized and instructed in their use.

#### A Midnight Reconnaissance

On the night of October 6th, Major Opie, accompanied by his adjutant, First Lieutenant Beverley C. Wilkes, Major G. M. Alexander and several other officers, crossed the Meuse at Charny and proceeded to Samogneux to make a reconnaissance under cover of darkness, of the "jump off" positions. A battalion commander of the 46th French Infantry furnished them with guides and a protecting patrol, and they passed through the French lines and effected their hazardous mission without mishap. The attack was to be a surprise affair, launched at daylight against enemy flank positions which were enfilading the great American advance, and therefore no daylight reconnaissance or troop movements could be made.

Three days were spent by the Third Battalion in bivouac along the hedgerows and in the groves near du Chana, overlooking the great fortress of Verdun. The other battalions of the regiment, with regimental headquarters, were some six kilometers to the rear, in the Forêt de Bouchet, near Fromerville. The enemy evidently never suspected that the shrubbery crowning the hilltop adjacent to the fort hid nearly a thousand men, for although shells were constantly passing overhead, aerial battles were frequent, and night bombing raids were made on Verdun and various other troop centers, no shells found their way into the camp of this unit.

#### Conference at Headquarters

On the afternoon of the 6th, a final war conference was held at regimental headquarters, with Colonel Harris presiding. Other officers present were Majors Alexander, Waller, Opie, and Cook, the latter the regimental surgeon, Captain Ralph Millar, the regimental adjutant, Captain Copin, the French informateur with the regiment, Captain Herbert May, Regimental Operations officer, Captain Louis N. Duffey, of the regimental staff, and several junior officers. Battle maps, dispositions under the French divisional order, and regimental dispositions were discussed and the day of the attack was announced, October 8th. The hour was still a guarded secret. No brigade or regimental orders had been issued other than verbally. One of the subordinate officers openly expressed his dissatisfaction with the plans, contemplating an attack of such magnitude on prepared enemy positions, held and improved upon year after year for four years, and involving as the attack did, so many complicated questions and dispositions. Colonel Harris agreed and decided to issue a written regimental order during the night. Having no written brigade order, other than a march memorandum, the Colonel, accompanied by the major of the assault battalion, then visited the P. C. of the 115th Infantry, where arrangements were made with Lieutenant Colonel Mills, second in command of that regiment, to co-ordinate in so far as possible, the night movements of the two regiments.

#### Auxiliary Units Assigned

At 2 P. M. the evening before the attack, the regimental order was received at Third Battalion headquarters. It assigned to the battalion for the attack, Company D, 112th Machine Gun Battalion, Captain F. H.



Bondurant commanding; the regimental one-pounder platoon, First Lieutenant Marvin J. Menefee commanding; the Stokes mortar platoon, Lieutenant Jesse Reed commanding; a detachment of Pioneers and a Field Signal detachment. The Machine Gun Company reported in due time that afternoon. The one pounder and Stokes units were to be transported as near as possible to Samogneux, the clearing point for the regiment, in motor trucks. So also were the pioneer and signal detachments.

### Objectives to be Taken

General Andlauer commanded the 18th French Division, to which the 58th American Brigade was attached. In his order under date of October 5, 1918, he gave the mission of the mixed division, to take the heights of Haumont, Ormont and Consenvoye Woods, in order to throw the enemy back to the Meuse heights. From these positions enemy guns were enfilading the American advance beyond Montfaucon, and causing severe losses. Their capture was necessary if this advance was to continue. The divisional order gave three objectives, the Intermediate, the Normal, and the Objective of Exploitation.

The first line battalions were to take the intermediate objectives, consisting of highly intrenched and fortified enemy positions; the second line battalions were to take the hastily prepared positions of the normal objective and the third line battalions passing through the other two battalions, were to regain contact with the enemy, push the attack and exploit the ground gained. One hour's artillery preparation was to precede the initial attack, and was then to play upon each objective in succession, according to a specially arranged schedule.

### No Written Brigade Order

No written orders for the attack were ever issued by the commander of the 58th Brigade, according to statements from the two regimental commanders. The special object of such an order would have been to coordinate the work within the brigade, first between the two regiments and then among the six infantry battalions and the various auxiliary groups. Also to make the tactical dispositions, according to the terrain and key positions of the enemy works, to specify combat liaison groups, arrange brigade supply, evacuation and numerous other details. For some reason, left unexplained, this was never done. The brigade commander was Colonel Caldwell, and his adjutant was Major, afterwards Colonel Chas. B. Finley.

The key position in the zone of action of the 58th Brigade was Malbrouck Hill, with a crest whose altitude was 336 meters, from which radiated high, irregular ridges, to the cardinal points of the compass. Malbrouck defenses were almost on the axis of advance of the brigade, being only about a hundred meters off the left boundary of the sector of the 116th Infantry, and the same distance within the right of the sector of the 115th Infantry.

### Battalion Objectives

The order of the French division commander issued on the 5th, and his supplemental order of the 6th, gave specific dispositions, missions, and schedules for the three battalions of each regiment as far as a divisional order could give them. The regimental order specified the battalions in order from front to rear, and detailed their work within the regimental zone to each of the battalions by number. The Third was the first line, or assault battalion. The First was the support battalion and the Second was the reserve battalion. The Third was to lead the attack and capture the enemy first, second and third lines of intrenchments, constituting the Intermediate objective. The First was to execute a passage of lines on this objective, and pursue the enemy to the Normal Objective, and there the Second Battalion was to "leap frog" the First and take the Objective of Exploitation. All three objectives were to be taken the 8th. The entire attack was to be made over rough country, rolling from deep wooded

ravines to high, steep, thickly wooded hills and ridges, presenting every desired facility for defense, and all but insurmountable difficulties for attack. The direction of the attack was slightly east of north for the first four kilometers and then directly north.

The assault battalion, attacking over rough, shell-torn, hilly, open ground to the enemy first line, according to the map, would then pass a ravine ascend a hill, reach the second line, jump two hills and approach the third line, along the southern edge of Bois Brabant-sur-Meuse. Except for scattered thickets, the terrain between the parallel of departure along the Meuse and the southern edge of Brabant woods was open country, in full view of enemy observation posts and balloons, and hence under constant shell and machine gun fire. The First Battalion was then to pass over the wooded stretch covered by Bois Brabant-sur-Meuse, Bossois and Molleville Bois, all heavily timbered and comprising a front of about 1,200 meters and a depth of 2,500 meters. The Second Battalion, third in line, was to operate over an open stretch about a thousand meters long and eight hundred meters deep, known as Molleville Farm, and penetrate as far as possible into Bois de la Grande Montagne. All battalions were to maintain close combat liaison with the 66th French Colonials on the right and the 115th Infantry, its sister regiment, on the left. The initial front of the regiment was 1,000 meters (about four-fifths of a mile), and the depth of the advance was to be seven kilometers (about four and a half miles). All of these details have an important bearing not only on the future operations of the Third Battalion, but of the entire 29th Division, of which it was a part.

#### An Arduous Night March

March orders were received at Third Battalion headquarters shortly after the attack orders arrived. By 5 P. M. the necessarily lengthy battalion orders had been written and sketches made from the map for platoon leaders, as maps were issued only to include company commanders. It was nearly dark, and a misty rain was falling when the outfit set out on its twenty-three kilometer hike for Samogneux. It was fair going to the Meuse crossing at Vacherauville, but from there across Talou hill to Samogneux was a hell of barbed wire, debris, shell holes and trenches, the wreck of a battle field which in the pitchy blackness of the night seemed to be a frenzied mass of shattered but still living forms, blocking the way and entangling the feet of the bedraggled and weary soldiery.

The unit was to be in position at midnight. Shortly before that hour the head of the long column arrived at the last French outpost at Samogneux. There French guides were furnished, and the various infantry companies and the machine gun companies were conducted through the wire into No Man's Land and into their respective positions on the southern slope of the ridge which they were first to attack next morning. Stokes mortar, One-pounder and Pioneer units also arrived and were placed in their respective positions. The Field Signal detachment which was to furnish field telephones and other communications, was evidently lost in the night. It never showed up.

#### On the Parallel of Departure

It was learned from the French guides that the Zero hour was 5 A. M. This was confirmed at 4 A. M. in a message received from regimental headquarters. Shortly after the Third Battalion went into position, the Second Battalion of Marylanders arrived and passed across its rear to their positions. Then Major Alexander reported with his battalion, which went into its support position. Everything was now in readiness for the surprise attack, provided the artillery, which had been noticed in the rear areas, was in readiness, and sentries were posted and most of the men, in spite of the peril of their position, soon fell to sleep on the sodden hillside. Enemy shells were falling just across the river and now and then a flare or rocket from the trenches ahead, or a machine gun spitting



viciously into the night, bespoke the nervousness of the Austrian troops which were said to be occupying the opposing sector, but the battalion suffered no casualties while biding their time against the supreme test.

The disposition of the Third Battalion for the attack was as follows: two companies in the first line, two companies in the second line. Company I, Captain Conrad commanding, was the assault company of the right, with Company M, Captain Barksdale commanding, following in support at 600 meters. Company L, Captain Ewart Johnston commanding, was the assault company of the left, with Company K, First Lieutenant A. H. Stone commanding, in support, following at 500 meters. Each company in its turn, had two platoons in the first line and two in support. The first line platoons were deployed at twelve meter intervals, on a thousand meter front; the succeeding platoons marched in staggered squad columns of not exceeding eight men each. A platoon of four machine guns was placed to the right rear, and one to the left rear of the assault companies, and the third platoon was held in reserve at battalion headquarters. The Stokes mortars were placed halfway between the assault and support echelons on the right and the one-pounders at the same relative position on the left—the one for high angle fire from low positions onto ravines, trenches, wooded tracts, and low placed targets, and the other for flat trajectory fire on direct targets in the open at long range. The battalion, thus deployed, comprised some 1,100 men and twenty-one officers, and covered a front of 1,000 meters and a similar depth.

#### Zero Hour

The opening of the fixed barrage preceded the advance of the infantry. Zero hour, and dawn was well advanced. A single gun spoke in the rear. As though this were a pre-arranged signal, the storm broke with a tempest of sound, scores of guns all along the artillery parallel splitting the air with their thunder, and the first stage of the big offensive was on. Both the noise of the firing and the rush of whirring missiles overhead, indicated that the guns employed were French 75's and 105's, and not the heavy calibre demons usually loosed upon strongly intrenched enemy positions in "fire of destruction." The mission of this light artillery barrage was to keep the enemy in the ground until the assault waves could reach him with the bayonet.

With the opening of the artillery fire, secrecy was off. The signal whistles of the company and platoon leaders set the various lines in motion, the men lighting their cigarettes as they advanced, this being their first opportunity to smoke for many hours, under high nervous tension. The haze had lifted considerably and in the faint light of early morn, the advancing battalion of Marylanders on the left and the French Colonials on the right could be plainly seen, the lines upon lines of men in various formations, most of them carrying their rifles at the high port, advancing on the whole extended front, with the shells of their own guns shrieking overhead, presented the initial effect of a vast maneuver, and this effect prevailed, even after the enemy artillery reacted. It was a glorious and never to be forgotten sight.

#### The Enemy Barrage

Twenty minutes elapsed before the enemy artillery reacted, and in that time the various elements had gained their full distance in marching, and the advance groups had cut and trampled the first bands of opposing wire entanglements. When the shells did come, instead of presenting a carefully prepared curtain of fire across the front, they raked the battalion from front to rear and from flank to flank. For a space it looked like nothing could live in such a hell of fire and hail of metal, but the wide deployment of the assault troops was the tactical answer to the situation, and the tide of soldiery moved steadily and irresistibly onward, never halting or wavering except to pick their way over yawning chasms and trenches, or giving way slightly to the right or left in efforts to escape the heaviest



shell groupings. Lieutenant Raymond Tout, the French informateur with battalion headquarters, could not restrain his admiration.

"Ah," he would exclaim in his precise English; "This I have not seen in four years of the war! This is open warfare which means the finish!"

Enemy advanced trenches were reached at 6:20 A. M. as scheduled. According to orders, the artillery was to fire a five minutes smoke barrage to indicate to the advancing infantry its first objective was reached, and also that the artillery was about to lift to the next objective, the enemy's intrenched second line. But the artillery had not provided itself with smoke shells. The right companies could see the French smoke signal, and held up, but L Company on the left, seeing no smoke signal, walked into its own barrage, and suffered some casualties in addition to those caused by the enemy shells. Friendly shells caused losses in the headquarters groups of both Captain Johnston and First Lieutenant Chas. P. Serrett, one of his platoon leaders.

#### First Prisoners Taken

The enemy advance lines and *petit postes* were thinly held, as usual. These fell into the hands of the advance screen of skirmishers without serious resistance, and without increasing rifle power of the infantry screen. Here the first prisoners were taken, small groups of poorly clad Austrians, dirty, ill fed, and with few officers. A rather unusual feature in a line of observation, was the presence of deep and well constructed dugouts, along the trench lines beyond the first ridge crest. The mopping up parties soon exhausted their supply of two grenades per man on some of these, and contented themselves with firing their pistols into others and shouting at the entrance, "Kommen sie heraus!"

But in several instances, Heinie didn't come out until the first waves had passed over and the support wave was approaching. Then groups came out, armed with Lewis automatics. Battalion headquarters, advancing on the axis of march, ran into one of these, killing three of the machine gunners with pistols before the others went through the formality of doffing their helmets, putting on their red-banded fatigue caps, and shouting "Kamerad!" Fourteen prisoners were taken. One who could speak English said that the attack was expected, and that their officers had gone to the rear. We would have heavy fighting on the line of resistance, the enemy third line. This was to be expected.

#### Second Line Taken

At 7 A. M. just two hours after Zero, the enemy second line was reached, by the leading elements, and here too, the five minutes' smoke barrage failed to register. Only a few scattering prisoners were taken in these positions, but the enemy guns had shortened their range and were causing more casualties. First Lieutenant G. Traut, a Marylander assigned to I company, was the first officer in the battalion to fall severely wounded. A bursting shell hurled him into the air, piercing his body in six places with fragments. His platoon headquarters group was also shattered. The other companies suffered a number of casualties, but the advance was not checked.

As had been anticipated, the enemy main line, running from Malbrouck Hill, along the southern edge of the Bois de Brabant-sur-Meuse, offered the strongest resistance. This was reached at 9:30 A. M., the Third Battalion having driven a deep salient into the enemy territory, with the French held up far to the right rear and the Marylanders not in sight on the left. Malbrouck Hill, with a high ridge running from its crest northward, was on the flank, and honeycombed with strong enemy works. Three steep ridges had already been captured by the Virginians. Another ridge and the southern edge of the big woods were to be reduced before the mission of the battalion was accomplished. Beyond the crest of this last ridge, the advance was checked by heavy machine gun fire, rifle, grenade and minnenwerfer fire. The serried ranks rapidly telescoped like an accordion, each succeeding line feeding into the front from the

rear, until the assault companies, with several platoons from the supports, formed a powerful firing line that swept the enemy trenches not a hundred yards away, beat down the opposing fire, and then assaulted with the bayonet.

#### Captain Conrad Falls

The frontal positions were cleared and prisoners were coming back in large columns when a heavy flank fire was poured into the battalion from the heights of the Bois d'Haumont and Bois d'Ormont and Ormont Farm, in the French sector, and Malbrouck Hill in the sector of the 115th Infantry. Captain Conrad fell mortally wounded from this fire, while leading his company, and heavy casualties were suffered all along the line. Enemy artillery soon added its hail of high explosives to the fire of its infantry, and a large squadron of enemy planes swept the lines at will, first with bombs and then with machine guns. This kept up for two hours, during which it seemed that no single life could endure. Yet the fighting front was extended to the right until Lieutenant Dinges, the only surviving officer with I company, led an assault upon Ormont Farm, which was taken, together with a bag of nineteen prisoners and four heavy machine guns. Troops posted in entrenchments deep in the Brabant renewed the frontal fire, and far to the left fire from a strong point on a wooded knoll, enfiladed the battalion communications along the ridge in its rear and swept the support and reserve battalions, then merged near our support position.

#### Critical Stage of the Battle

The action was at its most critical point. All battalion arms were engaged—the usual infantry weapons—the machine guns, mortars and small cannon. The time for the first passage of lines, 9:30 A. M., had passed, and 12 noon, the time scheduled for the second passage was fast approaching. And there was no cessation of the enemy fire from the flanks. At 11 A. M. Alexander's First Battalion, followed closely by Waller's Second Battalion, reached the Ravin de Boussieres and then moved forward to an unnamed ravine just south of Brabant woods. Fire from a score of machine guns from the Malbrouck Hill positions on the left, swept the ridge to their front, between them and the Third Battalion, and made the matter of further advance an extremely hazardous, if not an impossible undertaking.

#### Captain Johnston's Coup

At this critical stage of the fight, Captain Johnston having cleared his front, launched a sudden attack to the flank, against the Malbrouck Hill positions, on his own initiative. Lieutenant Stone, of K company, was ordered to his support. The attack was driven home with the bayonet, and was so quickly and effectively delivered from an advantageous position reached by captured trenches, that resistance was quickly overcome, all the positions taken, and 210 prisoners, including a battalion commander and his staff, were captured. The coup was exploited to the front and flank, and the ground gained was held. The material taken included eighteen heavy machine guns, many light guns of the Lewis type, hundreds of rifles, two six inch guns, three 77's, a food dump, an ammunition dump, two anti-tank rifles, several minnenwerfers, and much other equipment. This was the key position of the brigade zone of advance, and was re-inforced and fortified generally in accordance with its importance. The light artillery preparation had made but little impression on its deep bays, concreted machine gun positions, traverses and shelters. In fact, at no point, had the artillery very seriously reduced the enemy positions. The fixed barrage was not of sufficient intensity nor were the shells of sufficiently heavy calibre.

#### Go Beyond Objective

After cleaning up the Malbrouck Hill positions and the southwestern corner of Bois Brabant, Captain Johnston, finding no support troops in



his rear, turned again into his sector, and joined by First Lieutenant Stone with a portion of K company, advanced two kilometers toward the normal objective, reaching Bossois Bois, in the left half of the regimental sector before he was withdrawn to his ordered position on the Intermediate Objective in the late afternoon. At about 1 P. M., the entire front and flanks had been sufficiently cleared of the enemy to admit of the first passage of lines, which was effected by the First Battalion through the sector of the right, under searching artillery fire only. The advance elements of this organization had hardly penetrated half a kilometer into Brabant woods, however, before they met with machine gun nests and organized rifle fire, which had to be reduced. Some sixty prisoners were taken here, by Companies A and B, one man, Private Henry P. Whitesell, of Company A, reported to Third Battalion headquarters with a column of seventeen, which he claimed he had rounded up single handed. At any rate, he had them.

#### Regimental Flanks Exposed

When the First Battalion passed through the Third, the latter began the work of consolidating the captured positions against counter attack, and this was quickly effected, except on the left, where L and K companies, in the eagerness of the pursuit had over-reached their objective. The Marylanders were reported to be deep into Consenvoye woods, on the left, at noon, but there was a gap between the two regiments which had not been bridged by the combat liaison company, and the communication across its own front was not established by the efforts of the Third Battalion until late afternoon. The French did not come abreast of the Third until 4 P. M., consequently when the Second Battalion passed through the Third, close on the heels of the First, both these two units had an exposed right flank, and at times received intense machine gun and artillery fire from the Bois d'Ormont heights, and later from the Bois de la Reine, outside of their zone of action. During the afternoon the entire regiment was harassed by searching artillery fire, indirect machine gun fire and enemy bombing planes, which also made free use of their machine guns. Not a single Allied plane appeared during the day.

#### Alexander Reaches Objective

At 4 P. M. a message was cleared through the Third Battalion message center from Alexander, stating that he was on his objective and awaiting the arrival and passage of Waller's battalion. Captain Johnston, who had been withdrawn through the ground covered by the First, after nearly reaching the left portion of the objective, had previously reported passing Major Alexander with his headquarters group, leading his battalion through the southern edge of Molleville Bois, within about a kilometer and a half from his objective. After the receipt of the Alexander message, a message arrived from Waller, giving his position in the Brabant woods, just ahead of the lines of the Third and between the First and Third, and stating that he could not advance further on account of his exposed flank and asking for reinforcements. First Lieutenant Dinges, still holding his position on the eastern edge of the sector between Ormont farm and Brabant woods, was ordered to protect Waller's right, and Major Waller was advised of this order, also of the fact that Captain Barksdale, with M and a portion of I company, was strongly posted along the ridge in his immediate rear. Company G, of Waller's battalion, was just in rear of Captain Barksdale's position. Just before dusk, heavy artillery was concentrated on Molleville Bois, occupied by the First Battalion. Artillery and divisional officers later claimed that this came from enemy guns on the flank in the vicinity of Wavrille and Etraye, but the shells passed directly over Third Battalion headquarters, and the entire group of officers here, noting the effect and the objective, were convinced that they were from our own artillery, intended for Montagne woods and firing short. Our artillery was firing at the time, and Major Alexander expressed his belief that the disastrous effects on his front lines were from friendly guns



firing short. At any rate, he was compelled to withdraw his lines for nearly a kilometer and dig in for the night.

#### Prisoners and Material Taken

The positions here given are those of all three battalions of the 116th Infantry on the night of October 8-9th with Alexander in front, a portion of Waller's battalion in support, and Opie's Third Battalion, with which there were portions of Companies E and G, in reserve. Regimental headquarters was still located near the parallel of departure.

The Third Battalion, in the day's operations, had netted its full objectives, nearly 600 counted prisoners, two large calibre cannon, five light field guns, five trench mortars, several one pounders, a food dump, an ammunition dump, 30 heavy machine guns, 36 light Maxims and Lewises, the latter evidently captured from the British Fifth Army the preceding March, three anti-tank rifles, approximately 1,000 rifles, hundreds of helmets and much other material. Reports of captures were made to regimental headquarters as they occurred. The operations against well nigh impregnable enemy positions, had cost the Third the lives of twenty-two of its splendid soldiers, including the gallant Conrad, and sixty-five wounded, several of them fatally. These figures do not include losses of accompanying units, the figures on which are not obtainable. There were no casualties from gas. Fairly accurate reports were submitted to regimental headquarters during the day, and copies retained.

#### Enemy Attacks Under Cover of Fog

The night of October 8-9th was spent without incident more serious than spasmodic shelling. At dawn a fog prevailed so dense that a man could hardly be seen in the open a hundred yards away. In the woods it was almost impenetrable at a few yards distance. Shortly after 6 o'clock a number of men straggled through the lines of the Third Battalion and reached headquarters on a ridge in the rear. It was reported that the enemy had started a counter attack on the right flank and that in the confusion they had become separated from their officers. They were formed into a secondary line along the ridge for a distance of about 400 meters, and Captain Jos. P. Ast, of the 116th Machine Gun Company, who had posted his guns on the high ground to the left, was put in command of this line, consisting of portions of four companies. The situation of all three battalions looked extremely critical, especially should a heavy counter attack develop under cover of the fog against the exposed right flank. Patrols under command of Lieutenants Will P. Nye, Floyd Cunningham and Frank P. Isenee of the battalion staff, were sent to the right, left and front, and orders were hurried to the company commanders to take every possible precaution against surprise. Quieting reports soon came in from the patrols. A counter attack, supported by artillery, had developed against the right flank of the two advance battalions, and a Boche patrol had run into the right of Third, but all efforts of the enemy had been defeated.

The secondary line was withdrawn, formed into platoons and turned over to their officers, who had by that time reported to battalion headquarters. The First Battalion, followed by the Second, resumed the advance and again reached its objective on the northern edge of Bossois Bois late in the morning. The Third remained in its reserve position as ordered and endured the grewsome ordeal of clearing the battlefield of dead and wounded. Most of the latter had been removed as they fell and many had been carried to the rear by prisoners, but the joint dressing station, near battalion headquarters, still had nearly one hundred men from the various units of the night of the 9th, when regimental headquarters was moved to the Third Battalion sector. Most of these were placed in captured shelters, where they were compelled to remain for nearly sixty hours without food or water.

### First Molleville Farm Attack

During the early morning of the 10th, an order was received directing the First Battalion to attack the open area of Molleville Farm. This order arrived at the message center at 6:55. The attack was to start at 7:00. The leading battalion is said to have received its order at about 8 A. M. The Third was later ordered to send two companies to support this attack from the left at the juncture of the 115th and 116th sectors. Companies K and M, under Captain Barksdale, were sent forward. They returned before night to their former positions, with some casualties from shell fire. They had not been engaged in the front lines.

### Howe and Cunningham Killed

During the night of October 10-11th, Colonel Harris was relieved and transferred to another unit on orders from the division, and Lieutenant Colonel R. H. Kelley, divisional machine gun officer, was assigned to the command of the 116th. Lieutenant Colonel Chas. C. Bankhead was assigned as second in command. Colonel Kelley issued orders for an attack by the First Battalion on Molleville Farm and Montagne woods during the early morning of the 11th, and the entire Third Battalion was ordered from its reserve position "on the heels" of the First and Second Battalions, which were closely intermingled. The gallant Alexander had been severely wounded on the evening of the 9th, and had been finally evacuated. Captain Wm. A. Stack succeeded to the command of his battalion. In moving into the support position, First Lieutenant E. H. Howe, of M Company, and First Lieutenant Floyd Cunningham, battalion liaison officer, were killed, and a number of men were killed and wounded.

### The 57th Brigade Comes In

On the 10th, the 57th Brigade, composed of the 113th and 114th Infantry regiments, with auxiliary troops, relieved the 66th French Infantry, and took up the advance along the right of the sector of the 116th Infantry, with the 113th on the immediate right. The front line battalions were not in touch when the attack of the 11th was made, hence the leading battalion of the 116th, with its left covered by the leading battalion of the 115th, suffered heavy casualties from both frontal and flank fire when it entered the open area of Molleville Farm, and was unable to advance more than an average of two hundred meters from the Bossois Bois. On account of the exposed position, this ground was given up when darkness fell, and the troops withdrawn to the cover of the woods.

On the 12th a gap of considerable width existed between the leading battalions of the 116th and the 113th regiments. The ground was reported as unoccupied by the enemy. The Third Battalion was ordered to throw M company into this gap. This company encountered considerable opposition and suffered the loss of six men killed and thirty-three wounded. Lieutenant Hodge, with the scout patrol, reported the distance between the two regiments as nearly a thousand meters, from the eastern edge of Bossois Bois, through Molleville Bois to the junction of the Ravin de Molleville and the Ravin de la Reine. It became necessary to send another company to help fill the gap, and this was finally accomplished by sending in L company.

### Food Arrives

In face of constant shelling, the company rolling kitchens were brought into Consenvoye Woods the night of the 11th, and on the morning of the 12th officers and men received their first hot meal and water supply since the 7th. Ammunition of all kinds was also replenished, and communication fully established along the entire divisional front.

During both the 11th and 12th, the depth of the regiment was only about 400 meters, in a holding position, the men occupying individual fox holes in Bossois Bois and Molleville Bois, and a few captured dugouts. I company held fragmentary trenches which it had dug as a second line. The



normal depth of a regiment disposed in a defensive sector was usually fixed at a minimum of 1,500 meters. The crowded condition of the units was causing unnecessary casualties and the lack of depth made the preparation of successive defensive positions in case of counter attack impossible. An assault driven home against the first line would have been disastrous for all three battalions. The attention of the commanding officer was called to this on the 11th and on the night of the 12th the Third Battalion was ordered to relieve the First and Second Battalions and prepare to make an assault on the morning of the 13th on the Molleville Farm and Montagne Woods positions. Relief was accomplished after dark in a steady downpour, and the relieved units were conducted to the rear, to occupy the reserve positions vacated by the Third Battalion on the morning of the 11th.

#### Holding an Extended Front

Companies I, K, L and M were now holding the front of the regiment, which was approximately two kilometers, one kilometer assigned by orders, between co-ordinates 25 and 26, and which was taken over from the two sister battalions, and one between 26 and 27 (see Map Verdun B), which represented the gap filled by Companies L and M on the 12th, and constituted a portion of the sector of the 113th Infantry. This front presented an irregular line stretching from the northwest corner of Bossois Bois, at the junction of co-ordinate 25 across the northern edge of Bossois Bois and Molleville Bois, nearly to the junction of co-ordinates 27 and 81. Map readings are not given in their military sense for obvious reasons.

#### Front Line Reconnaissance

There was some dispute about the front of the division, and on the morning of the 13th, two officers of the Third reconnoitered the front line positions of the 115th, 116th, and 113th, and presented a sketch to regimental and brigade headquarters, showing the front held by the battalion, in liaison with Captain Grimes' Marylanders on the left and Captain Peterson's New Jersey company on the right. This sketch was instrumental in having the New Jersey regiment relieve Companies L and M and the consequent shortening of the front to the kilometer between co-ordinates 25 and 26. A re-adjustment of the company positions within the battalion was then made. Company K remained in the front line sector of the left, and Company I was withdrawn from the sector of the right to the support of K company. Company M was placed in the front line sector of the right, with Company L in support. This was the disposition for the attack as originally ordered for the 13th, but the order was counter-manded and the attack deferred until the 15th, to allow time for the placing of heavy artillery.

#### High Morale Endures

Cold October rains fell intermittently day and night; food and drinking water were very uncertain quantities, and even when not actually fighting in the dripping woods, incessant shelling at all hours and rain soaked clothes and ground made adequate rest out of the question; yet the morale of the officers and men alike remained on a high plane in these terrible days, and seldom a complaint was heard except against the enemy. This high morale in the face of hardships and dangers that tried men's souls and tested their endurance even to the breaking point is one of the brightest chapters in the history of the Virginians.

Colonel J. McA. Palmer was now in command of the 58th Brigade, having succeeded Colonel Caldwell. Lieutenant Colonel Kelley, soon afterwards made Colonel, was still in command of the regiment. Both were Army officers from the regular establishment, and splendid types of officers and men. Both had been assigned to their latest commands in the heat of the action.

On the 13th and 14th feverish preparations were being made for the



resumption of the offensive on the 15th. The Boche was equally active in strengthening his works and bringing in fresh troops to meet the attack that he knew was sure to come. Colonel Warfield's 322nd Field Artillery was moved up to support the attack of the Third Battalion, and ten six inch trench mortars were installed just behind the lines to destroy the enemy machine gun nests and pill boxes in Montagne Woods. On the night of the 13th, a captured dugout in which Third Battalion headquarters was located caught fire, and a severe explosion followed, but although the shelter was filled with sleeping officers and men, no one was seriously hurt.

#### Verbal Orders to Attack

Final orders were issued for the attack on the 14th. Battalion commanders were called to regimental headquarters on Malbrouck Hill, and Colonel Kelley issued the orders verbally. The Third Battalion, still holding the front, was to make the attack, with the Second Battalion in support and the First in reserve. The 113th was to execute a "covering movement" by an "on right into line" to protect the right flank of the Third while the 115th Infantry, then slightly in advance of and holding the high ground to the left front of the Third, and protecting that flank, was to advance as soon as the leading elements came abreast of its front lines. The attack was to be supported by 27 light field pieces, 10 heavy trench mortars, and a machine gun barrage from 16 guns.

The ordnance massed for this attack instances the importance with which it was regarded at superior headquarters. The situation was indeed a difficult one, to be handled as proposed, that is, by a frontal attack. Molleville Farm comprised a rectangular open area, 1,000 meters long and 800 meters in depth, heavily timbered on all four sides. The Third Battalion held the south side; the 115th Infantry, the west; while the enemy held the north and east sides. The terrain to Montagne Woods was rolling, cut with small ravines and with a gradual ascent, offering the defenders a perfect field of fire at mid and short ranges; on the right was a steep ridge, topped by Bultry Woods, a point of which stuck into the flank of No Man's Land like a giant wedge. This was strongly held by enemy machine gun nests with infantry support, and with an enfilade covering the entire farm area.

#### Third Battalion in Readiness

As previously stated, Companies K and M held the front lines from left to right. Companies I and L were in support in the same order. In the battalion plan of attack, the support companies were to pass through the holding companies, which were then to follow in support. This placed the attacking forces in order—Company L, Captain Johnston commanding, assault company of the right; Company M, Captain Parksdale commanding, support company of the right; Company I, First Lieutenant H. R. Dinges commanding, assault company of the left; Company K, First Lieutenant A. H. Stone commanding, support company of the left. Captain Mitchell, formerly commanding K company, reported during the night, after the attack orders were issued, and was to accompany Stone in an advisory capacity. The Stokes mortars, on the right, were to fire upon Bultry Woods as their first target; the one pounders on the left and primary and secondary targets along the front of Montagne Woods; the attached machine gun company under Captain F. H. Bondurant, reinforced by four guns, was to fire the overhead barrage. Combat liaison groups and battalion scouts furnished the liaison between units within the battalion and with flank units. First Lieutenant John Morrison, of the 322nd Field Artillery reported to battalion headquarters as artillery observer. Zero hour was 8 A. M. This was to be preceded by half an hour's artillery and machine gun barrage, which was to lift to successive objectives. At 7:50 the infantry first lines were to advance across the open toward Montagne, which they were to reach by 8, when the barrages would lift and allow them to drive home their bayonet attack.

As a prelude to the next day's work, the battalion commander and the four infantry company commanders made a careful reconnaissance of the enemy positions and the ground over which they were to operate, both from their own front lines and the most advanced post of the right, held by the 115th Infantry. The attack must succeed without question, and every possible contingency was considered,—the chance of flank units being held up, of the barrage falling short, of overshooting, or not registering on the target with sufficient intensity, possible interruption of communications and flank protection and possible counter attacks. Each company commander was reminded again that no unit commander, no matter of how small a group, could escape responsibility for his flanks.

#### The Attack in the Fog

October 15th dawned late and gray with a heavy fog. It was probably the most fateful in the history of the Third Battalion. Promptly at 7:30 the artillery preparation, mingled with the whining ping of the trench mortars and the incessant rattle of the machine gun barrage, started. Battalion headquarters had been established in a thicket in the edge of Bossois Bois, on the parallel of departure and the axis of the advance. At 7:50 o'clock the first line infantry screen moved forward and soon became dim shadows in the fog. A hundred meters and the next line followed. This had hardly emerged from the woods under the arc of our own barrage when a heavy machine gun and rifle fire burst from the ridge on the right and Bultry Woods, apparently enflading the advance of the right assault company. The left was in plain view, except for the fog, but a slight hummock prevented more than a fragmentary view of the right at this stage. The left advanced steadily on, until its eight lines had cleared the woods, but it was soon learned that the right was in serious trouble from its right front and flank.

#### Headquarters Group Goes it Alone

At this juncture, Colonel Kelley, accompanied by the regimental surgeon, Major Giles B. Cook, came to Third Battalion headquarters. He informed Major Opie that the entire first wave had advanced, that the 113th Infantry on the right had advanced and that Major Opie should have by that time established his P. C. in the enemy's lines in Montagne Woods.

It was 8:10 when this conversation ended. The colonel was satisfied that his view of the situation was correct. Enemy artillery was in reaction and battalion headquarters was under fire from machine guns at considerable range. The headquarters group consisted of Major Opie, First Lieutenant Beverley C. Wilkes, the adjutant, Scout Officer Will P. Nye, Gas Officer F. P. Isensee, Medical Officers Frederick Vohburgh and A. H. Krohn, and Artillery Observer First Lieutenant John Morrison, and about forty runners, scouts, signal men, etc. The Stokes, one pounder and machine gun commanders were with their units, on special orders from the regiment. This group was formed into a single line skirmish formation (with the exception of the sanitary detachment which joined the line without orders) and was ordered to advance on Montagne Woods. Knowing that the right was held up, we intended to come in behind I company, which had gained a foothold in Montagne in the face of bitter resistance from the enemy positions, which it had taken, and thrown back the holding forces.

#### Fog a Valuable Ally

This advance was effected by short rushes without firing, though under scattering fire from undetermined points. The group was armed mainly with pistols and had little firing power and furthermore had little idea what forces confronted it until within probably two hundred yards of its objective, when an oblique fire was opened from the enemy left in Montagne Woods. The line which was probably 200 meters long, faced this fire and drove straight into it. The edge of the woods was gained with but few casualties, the enemy, evidently thinking that strong forces



were attacking under cover of the fog, hastily withdrawing. It was found that the left of the advancing line overlapped the right of Company I for fifty or more meters, and that the right extended probably 150 meters across newly captured ground. Lieutenant Nye was ordered to gather up seven men and reconnoitre the front to get in touch with the retiring enemy and prevent a surprise attack from that point, three men were sent to the extreme right to guard against a surprise attack from that point, a runner was sent out to find Company I's headquarters, and the following message was forwarded to the regiment: "P. C. at edge of woods, near axis of march, first objective. Many snipers and machine guns still along the edge of woods. Not yet in contact with company commanders. Forces seem scattered. Need support."

#### Enemy Lines Gained

This message was timed at 8:55 A. M. But a few minutes had elapsed between the time the edge of the woods was taken and the time the message was dispatched. No supporting troops were anywhere in sight and only a few men from I company had been located in the woods. The left of the thin line was fairly well anchored but the remainder was, in military parlance, "in the air."

Probably ten minutes after the position was reached, enemy machine guns and snipers opened fire from points but a short distance in our front, quickly followed by guns and a few grenades from our right. The men were posted along a slight embankment, with a shallow ditch at its base. With the major were the adjutant, the artillery observer, the message sergeant and several runners.

#### Headquarters Group All But Wiped Out

When the enemy fire opened from the flank, Lieutenant Menefee, of the one-pounders, appeared from the left and asked Major Opie for the position of the target. As he did so, several Maxims from the right rear, which had evidently been passed by in the fog, opened on the headquarters group. Lieutenant Morrison and several runners were killed outright, and Major Opie, Lieutenant Menefee and several others were wounded at the first burst. These guns continued to sweep the rear of the entire line for over two hours. They were located in a camouflaged position in the open, and after the fog lifted, offered a good target from our own left rear positions, but they apparently drew no fire from our supports. Lieutenant John Lyons, of the 116th Machine Gun Company, which had advanced on the left, fell a victim to these guns, being instantly killed and Lieutenants Vosburgh and Krohn were seriously wounded. It was later reported that the trail of their deadly work along the south edge of Montagne was marked by the bodies of 79 men and officers killed and scores of wounded.

#### Adjutant Wilkes Seeks Help

Third Battalion headquarters was completely shattered. The merciless machine gun fire, snipers and minnenwerfer fire poured in from the right flank and right rear, in an instant made it "every man for himself." Adjutant Wilkes, the only remaining unwounded man with the major, was ordered to make a dash for it and get help. The shallow ditch along an old road, saved the lives of many wounded, though it was packed in places with the living and the dead. Several men escaped with their lives by reason of being buried beneath the bodies of their less fortunate comrades.

#### Flank Attack Succeeds

Major Opie finally made his way across the front to a more sheltered zone in the captured portion of the woods. Here he found Lieutenant Stone and a group of men from both I and K companies. Stone with K company had come up in support of I, and these two companies had pene-



trated the left sector of the woods on a front of about 400 meters and to an average depth of about 250 meters. Gathering together some sixteen or eighteen men, Stone and the Major drove into the woods across the flank toward the east, clearing the woods of the enemy, and taking a few prisoners and machine guns. Dividing the woods almost in half was a sixty centimeter railroad with a Y, the branches from which separated in extended arcs and then ran to the east and to the west. Near this Y an enemy group was encountered and destroyed. Stone and his handful of men were posted along the eastward fork of the railroad with orders to hold until the line was built up and the front extended. This took hours of hard and continuous fighting along the entire line.

#### New Headquarters Group Assembled

At noon, Major Opie located Major Waller's P. C. in a small dugout in the southwesternmost corner of Montagne Woods. He reported through Waller's message center to the regiment for the first time in three hours. When the major left the P. C. of the Second Battalion, he was joined by Adjutant Wilkes and Lieutenant Nye, who had run the gauntlet of machine gun fire and returned from their different missions. A few men were gathered together, another headquarters group was organized, a command post was established near the railroad Y, and the attack continued. Meantime, the companies of the right, L and M, were making slow but steady headway. It had become early apparent that the leading unit of the 113th had not advanced at all, and these two companies were compelled to fight their way forward and to flank at the same time. By 2 P. M. they could be seen in Bultry Woods, but communications with them had not been re-established since the events of the early morning.

#### Saxon Unit Captured

Corporal Mezoff of E company reported to Major Opie about mid-afternoon. He had a Saxon lieutenant and 19 other prisoners, guarded by three men, and was looking for Major Waller, his battalion commander. Mezoff said that he and his squad had captured these men and four heavy machine guns in a position which he indicated as just south of Montagne Woods. These were unquestionably the guns that shot up Third Battalion headquarters. The lieutenant, who was in a highly nervous state, was questioned by Major Opie and Lieutenant Wilkes, but spoke only broken English. He told Wilkes in German that he had done his duty, that he had fired his guns until he was cut off from the rear and almost surrounded, when he decided to try to save the lives of himself and his men by surrendering. He refused to give information of any military value. Later, in the presence of Major Waller, he repeated most of what he had said, adding that he had surrendered to the little corporal, that he was from the 105th Saxon Machine Gun battalion (his collar bore the numerals 105) and that he had come into the sector "several days ago." He refused positively to divulge the position of the next flanking machine gun nest, which was still causing trouble.

#### Liaison with 115th Restored.

Liaison had not yet been established with the front of the 115th Infantry, though its approximate position could be located by the din of the battle. Shortly after the Mezoff episode, Major Opie met Captain Wagner, near the left of the 116th sector. The captain reported that he had but 20 men left from his combat liaison group, and he had not yet been able to get in contact with the front of his regiment. Contact was effected, however, within half an hour, after repeated and gallant efforts on the part of this small group and its leader.

All during the afternoon, efforts to extend the front in Montagne Woods with I and K companies were met with local counter attacks, and when these two companies exhausted their ammunition, they were ordered to hold with the bayonet. They held, and gradually worked their way

to the objective on the left, with a refused flank on the right. Communication with Companies L and M was re-established at 3 P. M. These two companies had fought their way through Bultry Woods and thence to Montagne with the greatest difficulty and in the face of severe losses. Captain Johnston, in a message to Major Opie, stated that the 113th, which regimental orders had stated would cover his right flank, not only had not moved, but had received no orders to move, consequently his right flank was exposed to heavy fire and counter attack during the entire day's advance, and he was constantly threatened by enemy groups which endeavored to work into his rear.

### An Infantry Victory

By nightfall, the southern half of Montagne Woods was in the hands of the Third Battalion, with its objective for the day attained. The machine guns were brought up, defensive organization perfected, and necessary reports submitted to the regiment. The fight was primarily an infantry victory, gained at heavy cost, on account of the plan of battle and the fact that the auxiliary weapons failed through one cause or another to reduce the known enemy positions.

The heavy fog, cloaking the movements of the different units from the enemy except at close quarters, contributed largely to the success of the attack. Officers of the battalion discussing the operation, stated that had it not been for the timely protection of this fog, hardly a man would have crossed the Molleville Farm alive. Nor was the fight the less bitter at close quarter for the fog. The most determined and heroic efforts on the part of company and platoon leaders were necessary to overcome the enemy advantages of position, shelter, field of fire, and machine gun.

Unsurpassed acts of individual bravery and leadership were performed by officers and men alike, and the roster of citations is but partial recognition of the many deeds of personal heroism performed that day.

### Remnant of the Old Battalion "Carries On"

Eight days of almost constant fighting under terrific conditions, found the battalion a mere skeleton of its former strength and glory. The strength report submitted by Captain Barksdale on the morning of the 16th, showed that I company had one officer and sixty-eight men, K company one officer and fifty men, L company two officers and eighty-five men, and M company two officers and fifty-four men, headquarters three officers, a total of nine officers and 257 men of the original total of twenty-four officers and 790 men. Reduced to little more than thirty per cent of its original strength, tried by the bloody test of three sanguinary attacks, harassed by all manner of enemy weapons day and night, as well as by the elements, weary and sick from the nauseous gases of the battlefield, the remaining officers and men, their physical bodies all but dead from the ordeal, yet remained dauntless in spirit and determined to "carry on" as long as the spirit could lash the body into action. For at this stage, the greatest of American battles was just at its climax and the men of the Third Battalion had many days of indescribable danger and hardship ahead of them in the front lines. Relief was already long overdue, but the only relief to be had was by shifting the shattered battalions of the regiment from one position to another within itself.

### High Tide of the Advance

Before daylight of the 16th, the Third was relieved of its front line positions by the First, only to be returned to direct enemy contact on the night of the 18th, on the high ground of Montagne Woods. The First had improved the holding position by a gain of a hundred meters to the front, and several hundreds to the right, but the right flank, from the Ravin de Molleville through Bultry Bois to the Damvillers road, was still exposed to the enemy and subject to constant enfilade.

Montagne Woods, the defended portion of which was taken on October 15th, represented the high tide of the advance of the 29th Division. During the remaining two weeks that the 115th and 116th regiments occupied this sector, no further ground was gained to the north, but the front was considerably extended to the eastward in the direction of Etraye. On October 23rd, the division launched an attack on an extended front, against Bois d'Etrayes, le Hauppy Bois and Bois de la Reine. In the zone of action of the 116th Infantry, which had as its mission the taking of the Pylone observatory and the enemy works in this vicinity, the Second Battalion was the assault battalion, with the First in support, and the Third, used as covering troops for the left flank of the advance, along the road to Damvillers and the sixty centimeter railroad running parallel with this road. This operation resulted in an advance for the 116th Infantry of some 600 meters, with the capture of Etrayes Ridge, several machine guns and a few prisoners, the number of which is not stated in the regimental report. Captain Barksdale commanded the Third Battalion. The losses of the Third Battalion in this action were comparatively light.

#### Relief at Last

On the morning of the 24th, the Third Battalion relieved the Second. On the night of the 27-28th, it was relieved by a unit from the 79th Division, and on the night of October 28-29th, it was withdrawn from the active front and marched to Verdun. Here motor trucks awaited its arrival and the troops got their first truck ride. They rode to Saudrupt, where they remained in rest billets until November 4th. On that date the unit marched to Lisle-en-Rigault, where it remained until after the Armistice. Preparations were being made for participation in the proposed drive on Metz when news of the Armistice was received.

The Third went into the Meuse-Argonne offensive with twenty-four officers and 790 men. After twenty-one days of fighting it was relieved. Nine officers and 205 men survived the ordeal unscathed and served out the entire three weeks to the bitter end.

#### News of the Armistice

It was in Lisle-en-Rigault that news of the Armistice was received. Leaving that village on November 13th, the Third marched to Halronville, thence to Morley, and from Morley by truck and afoot to Parnot, department of the Haute Marne, near the old training area occupied early in July. Arriving at Parnot on November 22nd, the battalion remained billeted in this place until March 16, 1919, when it was removed to regimental headquarters at Serqueux. Here it remained until the division was ordered home. It is not the intention of this chronicle to deal with the post-armistice period, the hardships, necessary and unnecessary, endured in the muggy weather of a French winter and spring, in outdoor training in many respects more intensive and exacting than that during the war. This would be anti-climax—a matter of dull routine, marking time in anticipation of the gang-plank and home.

#### Thinned Ranks Filled

Shortly before arriving at Parnot, Major Chas. R. Pollard, National Army, was assigned to the command of the Third, succeeding Captain Barksdale. Replacements in officers and men were received to fill the vacancies caused by battle losses, and the organization was thus brought up to its old strength. A number of men were also returned from hospitals, but many officers and men on being discharged from the hospital, were transferred to strange outfits, without regard to their wishes or the wishes of those comrades with whom they had endured the test of blood. The divisional command had no heart for the individual and little appreciation of the fact that no tie in man's social relations binds like the tie of the battlefield. But the comradeship of the officers and men of



the Third Battalion of Virginians will endure as long as life endures and whenever two or three of them foregather, they glory in the proud record of their old unit, and salute the memory of those "buddies" who died on the battlefields of France for the glory and honor of their country.

#### The Gang-Plank and Home

On May 10, 1919, the battalion embarked with the rest of the regiment on the U. S. Transport *Matsonia*, at St. Nazaire, landed at Newport News on May 21st, and was mustered out of the army on May 29th, 1919, at Camp Lee, Virginia.

Time and retrospect and review of what the Third Battalion accomplished in its eleven months' service with the A. E. F. in France, but intensify the pride and affection the men who served under its banners feel for the old Third. "The Fighting Third" was the soubriquet bestowed upon it by the auxiliary units who fought at its side, and the name was well placed. The Third, in twenty-one days of fighting, never failed to take its objective, never gave ground to the enemy, never lost a prisoner from its ranks, captured 618 prisoners from the enemy, two 155-mm. cannon, five 77 mm. cannon, five trench mortars, thirty-six heavy machine guns, forty light machine guns, three anti-tank rifles, over 1,000 rifles, and vast stores of ammunition and supplies.

The men of the Third upheld the best traditions of their good Virginia ancestors, and while many in its ranks were from other States, all shared alike in the glory of its achievements.

## Summary of Activities, Headquarters Company, One Hundred and Sixteenth Infantry, Twenty-Ninth Division

Headquarters Company organized at Camp McClellan, Anniston, Alabama, October 4, 1917. Trained at above camp eight months. Entered for port of embarkation June 10, 1918. Embarked at Hoboken on U. S. S. *Finland* June 15, 1918. Arrived St. Nazaire, France, June 27, 1918. Reached Champlitte July 4, 1918. Assembled at Auxelles Bas July 17th, and on the 25th marched to La Chappelle and entered the trenches. Company remained in this sector until September 6th when it moved to Offemont. Proceeding by train and on foot the company reached the front on October 7th. Went into action October 8th, participating in following engagements: Malbrouck Hill, Molleville Farm, Bois de Consenvoye, Bois de Grande Montagne, Etrayes Ridge. Relieved on October 29th and moved to Brillon and billeted. Moved to Saudrupt November 3rd. Returned to Brillon area November 13th for three days, then moved to Le Bouchon. Entrained on 24th for Bourbonne les Bains area, detraining at Jussey and marching to Serqueux. Resumed training schedule.

# History of the Headquarters Company

By First Lieutenant H. W. Holly and Second Lieutenant J. J. Ward

In accordance with the new War Department Tables of Organization, the 1st, 2nd and 4th Regiments of Virginia Infantry were consolidated to form the 116th Regiment of Infantry at Camp McClellan, Anniston, Alabama, on October 4, 1917.

Headquarters Company, composed of specialty platoons, namely, Trench Mortar Platoon, 37 MM Gun Platoon, Signal Platoon, Pioneer Platoon, and a Headquarters Platoon, consisting of a regimental Band, Intelligence Section, Mounted Scouts, and Orderlies, was then formed. In forming Headquarters Company, therefore, it was necessary to select men with the necessary, special qualifications for work in the respective platoons. In order to obtain these a careful inspection was made of the qualification cards of the men and those selected were assigned to Headquarters Company to undergo a course of instruction in the work for which they were best fitted.

Headquarters Company of the 116th Infantry was formed and placed under the command of Captain Gunyon M. Harrison, with the following named officers to assist him:

- 1st Lt. Alfred D. Barksdale, Commanding Headquarters Platoon.
- 1st Lt. Jesse V. Reed, Commanding Trench Mortar Platoon.
- 1st Lt. Marvin J. Menefee, Commanding the 37 MM Gun Platoon.
- 2nd. Lt. Robert M. Herr, Commanding Sappers and Bombers Sec.
- 2nd. Lt. Jonathan C. Gibson, Commanding the Signal Platoon.
- 2nd Lt. Edgar B. Grier, Commanding Pioneer Platoon.

The company underwent a course of intensive training at Camp McClellan, Alabama, each platoon being under a competent instructor in its specialty, in preparation for overseas service. After eight months of hard training, the company as a part of the 29th Division, proceeded from its training station at Camp McClellan, Alabama, on June 10, 1918, to the port of embarkation at Hoboken, New Jersey, and boarded the U. S. S. *Finland*, bound for France on the 15th day of June, 1918.

After an uneventful voyage of twelve days, the *Finland* cast anchor in the harbor of St. Nazaire, France, and on June 28th the regiment disembarked and proceeded to billets in the vicinity of St. Nazaire for several days rest. After three days the regiment entrained and proceeded to a billeting area near Champlitte, Headquarters Company being quartered in Argillieres, arriving there on the 4th day of July. The Signal, Cannon and Trench Mortar Platoons were then detailed to adjacent towns for special instruction in their specialties.

On the 17th of July, the company was assembled at Auxelles Bas, and on the 25th of the same month, marched to Le Chappelle, where it was assigned to duty in the trenches. Upon being relieved, the company was marched to Reppe and billeted therein. During the stay of the company in Reppe and in Brechaumont, about three kilometers distant, the time was spent in alternative periods of duty in the trenches and in training. The 116th Infantry, of which the Headquarters Company was a part, was in support of the 115th Infantry. The company was in the sector from the 8th of August to the 6th of September, at which time it proceeded to Offemont. After a short stay at this point, it was marched to Belfort and entrained, arriving at Mussey, the company detrained and marched to Hargeville, arriving there on the 24th of September, 1918. On the 30th of September the company marched to Regnancourt and thence on to Souhesmes-Grande, arriving there on the 1st of October. Shelter tents were pitched and the company camped here for two days, then proceeded by night marches to the woods north of Fromerville, where, after two days and three nights, it moved on to a sector west of the Meuse River to take part in an attack.

The 116th Regiment went into action on the 8th day of October and remained actively engaged for a period of twenty-one days, being relieved on the night of the 29th. During this period, nine men, including one officer,



(First Lieutenant Jesse V. Reed), were killed and forty-three men wounded in Headquarters Company.

Upon being relieved, the company proceeded to Verdun and remained until the following evening. Trucks were assigned to the regiment here and it was taken to Brillon and billeted. During its stay in Brillon, every effort was made to clean up the clothing and equipment of the men and to check up on shortages in equipment and supplies which had been lost in action.

On November 3rd, the company was billeted in Saudrupt, about three kilometers from Brillon and entered upon a period of training. On the 13th of November, the company returned to the Brillon billeting area for a period of three days, after which it marched to Le Bouchon. On the 24th of November, a night march was made to Ligny-en-Rigault, where the company entrained for the divisional billeting area of Bourbonne-les-Bains. De-training at Jussey, it was marched to Baincourt and thence to Serqueux, arriving there the night of November 26th. Upon the arrival in Serqueux, the company entered upon a schedule of training, designed to perfect the men in the specialties of each platoon, close order drill and school of the soldier and squad.

Changes in the commissioned personnel occurred during this time, which left the following named officers in command:

Captain John W. White, Commanding the Company.

1st. Lt. Harry B. Dyche, Commanding the Pioneer Platoon.

2nd. Lt. Robert M. Herr, Commanding the Trench Mortar Platoon.

2nd. Lt. John J. Ward, Commanding the Signal Platoon.

1919.

On the 1st of April, First Sergeant George J. Smith, who had been First Sergeant of the company since its inception, and Sergeant Arthur L. Brown, Sergeant of the Signal Platoon, received their commissions in the United States Army as Second Lieutenants. Lieutenant Smith was assigned to Headquarters Company, 114th Infantry, and Lieutenant Brown was attached to Headquarters Company, 116th Infantry.

## Summary of Activities, Supply Company, One Hundred and Sixteenth Infantry, Twenty-Ninth Division

Organized October 4, 1917, at Camp McClellan, Anniston, Alabama, from Supply Company, 2nd Virginia Infantry, and men from various companies of 1st and 4th Virginia Infantry Regiments. Served at Camp McClellan until June 10, 1918, when entrained for port of embarkation. Reached Camp Merritt, N. J., June 12th, and boarded U. S. S. *Finland*, which sailed June 15th. Arrived St. Nazaire, France, June 27th. Left St. Nazaire July 3rd, reached Champlitte July 5th. Remained at Frettes until July 17th, on which date moved to La Ferte-sur-Amance and entrained for Luaux. Detrained there and marched to Auxelles-Bas. Remained there seven days, leaving for Bethonvillers on July 25th. Moved to Reppe August 8th and to Brechaumont on the 24th. Returned to Reppe on September 4th and remained until the 17th, then moved to Offemont. Remained there five days, entraining at Belfort on the 22nd for Hargeville, which was reached on the 24th. Moved to Seraucourt September 30th. Proceeded to Bois Bouchet October 4th and on to Viller-les-Moins. Established regimental dump on Brabant-Bois de Consenvoye road, northeast of Brabant, on October 11th. Regiment relieved October 29th and moved to Brillon on 30th. Supply Company remained there until November 17th, when train was boarded at Ligny. Jussey was reached November 23rd, and company marched to Serqueux. The winter was spent there, the company moving to the Le Mans area the middle of April, 1919, billeting at Marolles-les-Braults.

# History of the Supply Company

By Second Lieutenant Everett L. Colwell and Sergeant John S. Schneider, Jr.

On the 4th of October, 1917, at Camp McClellan, Alabama, in compliance with reorganization orders, the Supply Company, 2nd Virginia Infantry, was designated as the nucleus for a new and larger company to be known as the Supply Company, 116th, Infantry. Members of the 1st and 4th Virginia Regiments of Infantry—were assigned to the new organization.

This organization had as its head Captain Charles H. Kindervater, who was also Regimental Supply Officer. Second Lieutenant Walter E. Morrison was second in command, and the two at that time composed the commissioned personnel of the company. The non-commissioned officers, on October 5th, were: Regimental Supply Sergeants, Preston M. Browning, James H. Campbell and John S. Schneider, Jr.; First Sergeant, William A. Campion; Mess Sergeant, Hugh G. McGhee; Stable Sergeant, Cephas G. Grant, and Corporal, Leo Normoyle. Later First Sergeant Campion gained admission to the Second Officers' Training Camp and was replaced by First Sergeant William G. Dozier. Regimental Supply Sergeant Campbell was replaced by Regimental Supply Sergeant Clyde F. Batman. Clyde G. Gillespie, John W. Freeman, and Corporal Leo Normoyle and John W. Taylor were promoted to the grade of Sergeant. Private Frank C. Murray was promoted to Corporal, and Regimental Supply Sergeant Frank L. Guy, Sergeant Randall McGavock, Q. M. C., Ordnance Sergeant Laurence W. Walton, and Corporal Phillip H. Moore were attached to the company for duty.

The duties of the company during the time it was in Camp McClellan were to equip the troops for overseas service with both quartermaster and ordnance property, and it was continually necessary to replace unserviceable and worn out equipment and clothing with new articles. Much work was done in this line and coupled with the work of subsistence everything progressed favorably.

Then came a change of commanding officers. Captain Charles H. Kindervater was relieved by a division order on December 29th and Captain James Cerney, Q. M. C., was placed in command. Although the change of captains came suddenly and without warning, everyone was working to the same end, efficiency, and very little change in the company could be noticed.

Then came the time when we were ordered to begin packing for a movement, and later another order to turn in animals. These animals were in excellent condition due to the good management of the officer in charge, and the good attention paid them by the wagoners of the company. The animals were turned into the Remount Depot and the packing of supplies was continued, until when finished, five hundred and twenty-three packages, including animal-drawn transportation, had been marked and made ready for shipment.

During the 8th and 9th of June, the loading of all supplies on the railway cars was completed, and on June 10th the passenger train with this company aboard, left the training camp for the port of embarkation.

Arriving at Camp Merritt, N. J., on the 12th of June, we only remained until the following morning at 4 o'clock, and at that time marched to a place known as the Alpine Landing on the Hudson River. A ferry awaited us, and after going aboard we were carried down the river to the Hoboken piers. Landing on Pier No. 6, we went on board the U. S. S. *Finland*. Three hundred and sixteen more cases of clothing and equipage were added to our already large number of packages and loaded on the ship. At last, on June 15th, the ship *Finland* was towed out into deep water, and after getting under her own steam, headed towards the Atlantic.

Two days out brought us in contact with the remainder of the convoy which had sailed from Newport News, Virginia. The twelve transports then headed under good speed towards France. The *Finland* pulled into the harbor at St. Nazaire, France, on the afternoon of June 27th, and dropped anchor for the night. The following day it went into dock, and,



after debarking, we proceeded to Camp No. 1, Base No. 1, just outside of the city.

At this camp, during six days of quarantine, the regiment was equipped with overseas caps, spiral puttees, and three hundred and sixteen cases of clothing and equipage were issued. Upon receiving orders to move, traveling rations were issued to each car, and on the 3rd of July we started across France.

Passing through the cities of Angers, Tours and Nevers, we arrived at Champlitte early on the morning of July 5th, where after having unloaded, we marched to the village of Frettes to be billeted. At this station our time was devoted to settling accounts with the companies of the regiment and procuring as much needed equipment as possible. Steel helmets and a variety of ordnance property was issued. Signal property was also issued and the subsistence department underwent its first experience of issuing rations to the companies while they were stationed in another town or village.

Here it was that we received our first animal-drawn transportation in France. They were French fourgon wagons, and after having used mules for some time past, they looked as strange as the horses that were procured with them. The weather favored us while in Frettes and on July 17th, we marched to Laferte-sur-Amanche. Here we received our first issue of gas masks, and after loading our transportation and travel and reserve rations the train departed.

We arrived at Luaux and immediately marched to Auxelles-Bas. During our stay of seven days in this place our time was devoted to distributing the daily garrison rations to the various units of the regiment. Companies A, B, C, and D were stationed in Auxelles-Haut; Companies E, F, and G at Grossmagny; Company H, at Petit Magny; Company I, K, L and M. at Vescemont; and the Machine Gun Company at Elois. We also drew more animals at this place as well as rolling kitchens, rations, carts, limbered combat wagons, and escort wagons.

July 25th we marched from Auxelles-Bas, arriving at Bethonvillers July 26th. Clothing in a moderate quantity was issued, and subsistence was carried to the 1st, 2nd and 3rd Battalions, which were then in St. Germain, Soppe-le-Haut, and Geuvenheim, respectively, and the Machine Gun Company still at Elois. More ration carts were procured and animals including mounts, were also drawn from the Quartermaster. Bicycles were also received at this place.

On August 8th we moved again. This time to the village of Reppe only a kilometer from the German (Alsace) soil. At Reppe rations were hauled each day to the battalions, which were then being held in reserve in support of the 115th Infantry. An abundance of clothing and equipage, including marmite and milk cans, and the trench rations were issued, in anticipation of entering the trenches. Animals, water carts and animal covers were drawn. In fact, the animal transportation was practically completed. Worn out clothing and unserviceable equipment were replaced and everything was in readiness when the troops entered the trenches.

We moved our supply dump and company headquarters to Brechaumont on August 24th, the line companies having already taken over their sector. Now being on German soil, we redoubled our efforts to the end that the enemy might be decisively defeated. The replacement of worn out clothing and unserviceable property, including both quartermaster and ordnance, was becoming a daily occurrence. Property mutilated or rendered unserviceable in action was received for the first time in the history of the company, and events pointed to a bloody struggle for the boys we were feeding, clothing and equipping. Trench gas equipment was issued, including and unserviceable property, including both quartermaster and ordnance-transportation to a battalion dump. It was then carried to the kitchens by carrying parties from the various companies. Subsistence was handled by Regimental Supply Sergeant John S. Schneider at the Regimental Dump, by Sergeant John W. Taylor, Frank C. Murray, and Leo Normoyle at the 1st, 2nd and 3rd Battalion dumps respectively. The battalion Supply Officers were Second Lieutenant Everett L. Colwell, Second Lieutenant Samuel L.

Johnson, Second Lieutenant John J. Cleary at the 1st, 2nd and 3rd battalions, respectively.

On September 4th we returned to Reppe. Again the replacement of old clothing with new was taken up. Trench rations were then turned into the Quartermaster. Repairs to transportation were under good headway and rations were still issued in the usual manner. The ordinary routine of work was followed until September 17th, on which date we moved to Offemont. Only five days were spent at this station and very little work could be done. At nine o'clock the night before we entrained from Belfort, the subsistence department received at the Quai Militaire, at Belfort, two days reserve and three days travel rations for the regiment. This constituted a large amount of rations, notably hard bread and canned meats, of which there were more than eight tons of each. These rations were separated during the night in four parts and loaded on the trains during a hard rain.

Having left Belfort on September 22nd, we arrived at Revigny the following morning, and after having unloaded transportation and equipment, proceeded to the woods east of Neuville-sur-Orne, where we partook of a meal and prepared to remain overnight. Before nightfall, however, we were again on the move by way of Vassincourt, Mussey, Bussy-la-Cote, Chardogne, and thence to Hargeville. At Hargeville the members of this company slept in barns, railway freight stations and wagons. This was on September 24th and on September 29th we were again ordered to move. The day we moved a quantity of quartermaster and ordnance supplies were received and it was necessary to work late into the night to dispose of this material.

It was about 1 A. M. when our wagons cleared Hargeville and a cold rain was falling. Moving all night, morning found us at the foot of a steep hill, slick with mud and clay. It was necessary to "snake" nearly every team up this hill. We arrived at Seraucourt September 30th. Soon after arriving rations came and the subsistence detail loaded on the trucks and proceeded to Souhesme-la-Grand and established a dump, the company following that night. The following day the company arrived at Souhesme-la-Grand.

October 4th we moved again. This time to Le Bois Bouchet, southwest of Germonville, remaining there for two days awaiting orders. October 8th we arrived at Villers-les-Moines, two kilometers southwest of Charny, and five kilometers northwest of Verdun. Here the company established headquarters. Rations were received from the Division Quartermaster at this point and delivered with animal transportation north of Samogneux until October 11th for distribution to the regiment. The distribution of these rations was made under a number of difficulties. The roads were shelltorn and shell fire was, at times, quite intense. The rations were sent by ration carts to the company kitchens, where hot meals were prepared for the fighting units. Ammunition wagons and horses were kept at Neuville. Ammunition was delivered to a point north of Samogneux.

On the morning of October 11th the regimental dump was established on the Brabant-Bois de Conservoye road one kilometer northeast of Brabant, where it remained until the regiment was relieved. Rations were sent by wagons to this point from Villers-les-Moines. On October 16th, the Division Quartermaster began delivering rations to the dump direct by trucks from Charny. About one day's rations were accumulated and each day before 8 A. M. rations were delivered to the kitchens of the various companies. Hot meals were cooked whenever possible and taken by carrying parties to the troops. Water was delivered twice each day, morning and afternoon, and the water carts always returned to the dump before nightfall. The kitchens were visited each day to determine, by observation, just what could be used the following day. The animals were well separated in order to keep the casualties down to a minimum. Whenever kitchens became unserviceable on account of shell fire companies doubled up and the rations for both companies were delivered to the kitchen in use. A sufficient amount of grain and forage had accumulated to insure the feeding of the animals early in the morning, without waiting for the trucks from the Division Quartermaster.

The Ordnance Detachment, with First Lieutenant Albert B. Carter in



command, consisted of Ordnance Sergeant Laurence W. Walton, Corporal Philip Moore and a detachment of men. The ammunition dump was maintained on the opposite side of the road from the ration dump. Ammunition was taken in the woods, from where it was carried by the troops. Wagons were parked on both sides of the road, the ammunition wagons on the north-east side and the remainder on the opposite side. Reserve animals were kept at Villers-les-Moines and were available for immediately replacement of injured animals. Vehicles were also kept at that station. The operation base and company headquarters kept in close communication with each other. October 25th the ordnance property was drawn at Charny and delivered to 2nd Battalion headquarters. The ration dump (operation base), was under the immediate command of Second Lieutenant Everett L. Colwell.

October 29th the regiment was relieved and withdrew to Verdun, where one day's rations were issued to the troops. The 116th proceeded on October 30th to Brillon, nine kilometers southwest of Bar-le-Duc. Trucks took all available kitchens to their proper stations and the kitchens were ready for the troops when they arrived. We remained at Brillon until November 17th and during that time delivered rations to the battalions with Ford trucks. Ordnance and quartermaster property was drawn and issued in abundance. Every man was issued a new outfit of clothing in place of that worn while in the trenches. The Ford trucks and all but forty-eight animals were turned over to the quartermaster for the use of the 3rd Division. Captain James Cerney, our commander, was transferred to the Service of Supplies, leaving First Lieutenant George B. Fretwell in command. Three days' reserve and two days' field rations were drawn from the quartermaster and issued to the regiment November 13th.

We marched to Le Bouchon on November 17th and remained there until the 22nd, on which date we marched to Ligny, and boarded the train for a new area. Transportation and animals were loaded as before, and the two days' field rations then on hand were consumed in place of the travel rations. The following morning the train left and on November 23rd we arrived at Jussey. From there we marched to Serqueux. At this station gas masks were turned in to the supply sergeant and conditions resumed their pre-war status.

November 29th we received another commanding officer, in the person of Captain William A. Stack, formerly commanding officer of Company B, this regiment, who during the action north of Verdun, was in command of the 1st Battalion. During Captain Stack's career as commanding officer of this company, things progressed very smoothly and everything was worked out in an efficient manner. He was assigned to the 1st. Battalion as commanding officer on March 8th and we received First Lieutenant Charles F. Krauss as Acting Supply Officer and Commanding Officer.

A divisional horse show was held at Bourbonne-les-Bains on January 11th and the company won two first prizes, three second prizes and one third prize. Later, on February 8th, there was a Corps horse show and in this show we received one second prize and four third prizes.

First Lieutenant Charles F. Krauss was relieved from duty with the company on March 25th and Captain Munroe B. Hutton was assigned as commanding officer and Supply Officer.

On April 12th, 13th and 14th this company moved from Serqueux by way of Jussey to the Le Mans area and after having arrived was stationed at Marolles-les-Braults. The usual issuing and receiving of property was transacted and rations were issued with trucks. Wagoners Roy E. Layne and Samuel J. Holladay were awarded Divisional citations for bravery in action north of Verdun.



## Summary of Activities, Machine Gun Company, One Hundred and Sixteenth Infantry, Twenty-Ninth Division

Company formed October 4, 1917, at Camp McClellan, Anniston, Alabama, from Machine Gun Company of 2nd Virginia Infantry and men from Companies H, K and L. Trained at Camp McClellan until June 10, 1918, when entrained for port of embarkation. Sailed from Hoboken on U. S. S. *Finland* June 15th, reaching St. Nazaire, France, June 27th. Remained there until July 2nd. Reached Champlitte July 4th and marched to Argilleres and billeted. Left for Aubigny July 13th. Entraining at Vaux on July 18th proceeded to La Chappelle and marched from there to Elois. Left latter place for St. Germaine August 7th, proceeding to Fraise on 8th. Left Fraise August 19th, going into trenches on 20th in C. R. Balschwiller. Relieved night of August 28th, proceeding to Brechaumont. Moved to Fontaine September 4th. Left for Offemont near Belfort September 17th. Entrained at Belfort on 23rd, detraining at Revigny and marching to Hargeville on the 24th. Moved on September 29th and camped in woods near Souhesme-le-Petite October 1st. Marched to Bois Bouchet October 7th, reaching Samogneux the next morning. Took part in the engagements of Bois de Consenvoye, Malbrouck Hill, Molleville Farm, Bois de la Grande Montagne and Etrayes Ridge in the period from October 8th to 29th. Relieved night of October 28th and proceeded to Faubourg de Pave. Moved by truck to Brillon on 29th and billeted. Left for Tremont on November 13th, proceeding thence to Lisle-en-Rigault on the 15th and to Nante-le-Petit on the 17th. Marched to Ligny on the 19th, detraining at Jussey next day and proceeding to Fresnes. Remained there until December 30, 1918, then moved to Serqueux. On January 18, 1919, moved to Armoncourt. Leaving there on April 12th, entrained at Jussey for the Le Mans area and billeted at Avesnes.

# History of the Machine Gun Company

By Captain Joseph P. Ast, First Lieutenant Arthur A. Grove and  
Sergeant Ivey P. Gregory

The 2nd Virginia Infantry was ordered out for service on the Mexican Border on June 19, 1916. The regiment mobilized in Richmond, Virginia, on June 27, 1916, and after being mustered into the Federal service and equipped it entrained for Brownsville, Texas, on July 6th, arriving there on the 11th.

When the regiment was mobilized it had no machine gun company. To the following officers was assigned the duty of organizing the company, which was done after the regiment arrived on the border: Captain Joseph P. Ast, formerly Commissary Officer of the 2nd Virginia Infantry; First Lieutenant Arthur A. Grove, formerly Inspector of Small Arms Practice, 2nd Virginia Infantry; Second Lieutenants Ewart Johnston and James N. C. Richards.

The company was organized in the latter part of July, men being transferred from Companies B, E, F, L and M. Among the non-commissioned officers were First Sergeant Charles B. Board, Supply Sergeant Harry B. Dyche, Sergeant Elmer M. Jones and Sergeant Francis L. Woolfolk. Lieutenant Richards was later transferred to the 36th Infantry and First Sergeant Board was promoted to Second Lieutenant. The company was equipped with four Lewis guns and five Ford trucks constituted the transportation.

The company took part in all of the marches and training of the regiment, including a maneuver from November 15th to 25th, ending with a review of all the troops in Brownsville district. The review took place on the historic battlefield of Resaca de la Palma, 23,000 troops of all branches of the service passing before Brigadier General James Parker, commander of the Brownsville district.

One of the most pleasant as well as profitable experiences of the company was a course of instruction at the Machine Gun School at Harlington, Texas, January 15th to 30th, 1917. The company received the grading "very good," only one National Guard machine gun company receiving a higher mark. While war with Mexico was fortunately averted, there is no doubt that the 2nd Virginia would have given a good account of itself had it crossed the Rio Grande.

The company entrained for Virginia with the regiment on February 11, 1917, arriving in Richmond on the 16th and was mustered out of the Federal service on the 28th. Before the 2nd Virginia Infantry returned from the border, diplomatic relations had been broken with the German Government. A declaration of war being imminent, the National Guard was called out on March 25th. The different companies of the 2nd Virginia Infantry assembled at their respective home stations, the Machine Gun Company assembling at Staunton, Virginia.

On April 12th the company took up outpost duty on the Norfolk and Western Railroad, guarding bridges at Pekin, Mary's Creek, Loch Laird, Buffalo Forge and Natural Bridge Station, Virginia. Company headquarters were at the last named point.

The 2nd Virginia Infantry was mobilized in Roanoke, Virginia, in the latter part of August, 1917. Recruits were assigned to all companies, including the Machine Gun Company, and training commenced at once for the work ahead.

On September 5th the regiment entrained for Camp McClellan, Anniston, Ala., arriving there on the evening of the 6th. Work on the company street was started promptly and soon this outfit had one of the best streets in the regiment.

The company was designated as the Machine Gun Company of the 116th, Infantry. Officers were Joseph P. Ast, Captain; Arthur A. Grove, First Lieutenant; Charles B. Board, and Ewart Johnson, Second Lieutenants; Harry B. Dyche, First Sergeant. The company was brought to full strength by transfers of men from Companies H, K and L of the old 4th

Virginia Infantry. Work commenced in earnest, and the company soon showed great improvement in discipline and training.

On September 15th-17th, Lieutenant Charles B. Board was promoted to First Lieutenant and First Sergeant Harry B. Dyche was promoted to Second Lieutenant. Second Lieutenant Herbert M. Morris, formerly of the 4th Virginia Infantry was assigned to the company on October 4th. He resigned soon after, and Second Lieutenant John Lyons, formerly of the 1st Virginia Infantry was assigned to us. Second Lieutenant Elmer M. Jones, a former member of the company was promoted from Battalion Sergeant Major and assigned to the company, as was also First Sergeant David B. Yount, formerly First Sergeant of Headquarters Company 1st Virginia Infantry. This company sent five candidates to the Third Officers Training Camp, at Camp McClellan, four of whom, Wayde M. Geoghehan, Owen Nalle, Francis L. Wolfolk, and David B. Coffman were commissioned.

On March 13th Captain Joseph P. Ast left for a course of instruction at the Machine Gun School at Fort Sill, Okla., returning on May 14th. In April a test of all machine gun companies in the 29th Division took place in which test this company stood seventh among fourteen entries. Owing to many transfers for overseas service, the strength of the company was greatly reduced. In the latter part of May, National Army men from several camps were received, bringing the company up to its full quota.

During the stay at Camp McClellan, many of the officers and non-commissioned officers attended the Divisional Schools, which resulted in great benefit to the organization. This outfit has always had an excellent mess. At Camp McClellan the kitchen force, under Mess Sergeant William A. Haislip, took great interest in their work and secured excellent reports on inspection. The company has also always received excellent reports on inspection of personnel and quarters. June 10th witnessed the entrainment of the company for Hoboken, and four days later the men marched aboard the *Finland*, which sailed on June 15th, at 12:19 P. M. At last the 116th was on the way to Europe.

There were thirteen transports in the convoy, escorted by the cruiser *North Carolina* and a destroyer. The sea was very calm and the trip uneventful except for one alarm, which amounted to nothing. The convoy split up on nearing the coast of France, part going to Brest and part, including the *Finland*, going to St. Nazaire.

June 27th the *Finland* cast anchor in the harbor of St. Nazaire. The regiment disembarked the next day; the Machine Gun Company being the first to land. Marching to a camp on the outskirts of town, the command remained there until July 2nd, when it left for eastern France. Champ-litte, in the Department of Haute Saone was reached on July 4th. From there the company marched to Argillieres, ten kilometers northeast of Champ-litte, where it went into billets for the first time. It is a coincidence that the men arrived within sound of the artillery on July 4th. It was a good omen. July 13th the company left in trucks for Aubigny. Lieutenant Arthur A. Grove, First Sergeant David B. Yount and Sergeant William L. Passaro left to take a course in machine gunnery in the Second Corps School at Chatillon sur Seine on July 13th, the company going in trucks to Aubigny the same day. July 18th we left Aubigny, entrained at Vaux sous Aubigny, and arrived at La Chappelle at 6:30 P. M. the same date, detrained and marched to Elois. Some good training was received here, including range work.

Left Elois at 6 P. M. on July 26th for St. Germaine, arriving there about midnight. Some good work on the machine gun range was done here. Left St. Germaine at 9 A. M. on August 7th and arrived at Fraise at 12:45 A. M. on August 8th. On the evening of August 12th the men of the company witnessed an aeroplane battle for the first time. A French aviator brought down a Boche plane, the latter falling near Fontaine. August 13th, Lieutenant Arthur A. Grove, First Sergeant David B. Yount and Sergeant William L. Passaro returned to the company after completing the course at Chatillon sur Seine, Second Corps School. Captain Joseph P. Ast and Sergeant Raymond H. Hill left to take a course at the Army Machine Gun School at Langres, on August 16th.

On August 17th Lieutenants Grove, Board and Lyon and First Ser-



geant Yount and Sergeants Howell, Gregory and Adams reconnoitered positions in C. R. Balschwiller. Two days later the company left Fraise for positions in the line in C. R. Balschwiller, bivouacking that night in the woods near Traubach le Bas. On the night of August 20/21, this company relieved Company E, 112th Machine Gun Battalion in C. R. Balschwiller, reporting to Major S. Gardner Waller, 2nd Battalion 116th Infantry, to which battalion we were attached during this tour of duty. The company C. C. was at Beuthwiller, First Lieutenant Arthur A. Grove in command. The First Platoon, under Sergeant Joseph T. Adams, occupied support positions, one section at Uberkumen and one section at Balschwiller. The Second Platoon, Second Lieutenant John Lyon, was in battery position on the hill above the canal near Eglingen. The Third Platoon, First Lieutenant Charles B. Board, occupied battery position in edge of the woods near Gildwiller sur le Mont.

Early on the morning of August 26th the Boche, supported by heavy artillery fire, made an attack on the front line trenches occupied by the 2nd Battalion. In response to signals the Second and Third Platoons laid a barrage, which was of great assistance in driving back the enemy. We were relieved on the night of August 28/29, by Company D, 112th Machine Gun Battalion, and marched to Brechaumont, arriving there the morning of the 29th. This tour of duty was the company's baptism of fire. Good work distinguished the period of service. Fortunately there were no casualties.

We left Brechaumont on the night of September 4th and arrived at Fontaine early on the morning of the 5th. September 6th, First Lieutenant Charles B. Board and Sergeant Harry B. Howell made a tour of inspection of machine gun positions in the sector of the 116th Infantry. September 9th the company fired a box barrage on a range near Montreux Vieux. September 16th, Captain Ast returned to the company, having completed his course in the Army Machine Gun School at Langres. On this date a regimental maneuver took place, starting at Fontaine and ending at East Reppe. Fontaine was left on the morning of September 17th and we marched to Offemont, a suburb of Belfort, arriving there the same day.

On September 23rd, the company entrained at Belfort for the Verdun sector and detrained at Revigny early on the morning of the 24th. Marched to Hargeville, arriving there the same morning. September 26th, First Lieutenant Charles B. Board and Sergeant Harry B. Howell left to take a Machine Gun course at the First Corps School at Gondiecourt. September 28th the command left Hargeville and marched to the aviation field near Rembercourt, leaving there on the 30th and marching to Souhesme-la-Grande via Seracourt. The next morning we pitched shelter tents in the woods near Souhesme-la-Petite. On the night of October 4th, we marched to Bois Bouchet, arriving there on the morning of the 5th, where camp was established.

At 5 P. M., on October 7th, the company left Bois Bouchet for the front, arriving at Samogneux at 4 A. M. the next morning. On leaving Bois Bouchet, Captain Joseph P. Ast, commanding the company, Second Lieutenant John Snead, First Platoon; Sergeant Raymond H. Hill, Second Platoon, and Second Lieutenant Phillip D. Tarbell, the Third Platoon, First Lieutenant Arthur A. Grove in charge of the train; First Sergeant Joseph T. Adams in charge of the gun carts. The following reports of operations of this organization north of Verdun was submitted to the Commanding Officer of the 116th Infantry by Captain Joseph P. Ast. This company was attached to the 2nd Battalion, 116th Infantry, and left Bouchet at 7 o'clock on October 7, 1918, arriving in the vicinity of Samogneux on the morning of the 8th. At H. hour, the company moved by way of canal to point of departure and followed the support companies of the 2nd Battalion in squad columns at 200 yards. On reaching the high ground south of Bois de Consenvoye, the company ran into a heavy artillery barrage which was being maintained by the enemy, also heavy machine gun fire S. W. edge of Bois de Consenvoye, where we sustained a loss of five men wounded. This fire seemed to have come from a machine gun nest, which had been passed by the first wave of the infantry. At this point the company went into action and assisted the infantry in taking these nests. Continuing

from here the march was taken up through heavy artillery fire, closing in on the 2nd Battalion 116th Infantry, which at this time had reached its objective, having reached a point about 200 yards beyond that reached by organizations on its right and on its left. One platoon of the company took up positions on the right, one platoon on the left flank, and one platoon remained in reserve. Early on the morning of the 9th, we were subjected to considerable artillery fire from the enemy's large caliber guns, inflicting a loss of five killed and seven wounded.

On the morning of the 9th the enemy made a rather strong counter attack, which the company assisted in checking by laying a barrage in ravine east of Bois de Brabant sur Meuse, killing a number of the first German troops that had been encountered up to that time. The company was then assigned to 1st Battalion of 116th Infantry to protect its flanks in Bois de Consenvoye. On the 10th numerous enemy planes flew over our sector at will, harassing us with machine gun fire and very effectively directing the enemy's artillery. On the 11th we were re-attached to the 2nd Battalion, 116th Infantry, which was in reserve in Bois de Consenvoye, and while moving through these woods we sustained a loss of one officer and five enlisted men by gas. From the 12th to the 14th the company was in support of the 1st Battalion in an attack on Molleville Farm, and took up positions protecting its right and left flanks in the north edge of Bois de Consenvoye. That night it was subjected to heavy artillery fire, with a resulting loss of three men wounded. On the 13th the company, less one platoon, which remained with the 1st Battalion on the front line, went into reserve. On the 14th this company was in reserve in Bois de Consenvoye.

At 8 P. M. this company jumped off from the line of departure in Bois de Consenvoye with 2nd Battalion 116th Infantry in support of the 3rd Battalion 116th Infantry, in an attack on Molleville Farm, having two platoons moving 100 yards in rear of the second wave of the 2nd Battalion. Our first platoon on the left continued its advance and arrived at road north of Molleville Farm at the time the infantry reached this point. This platoon was put in action to sweep the road to the right and left and to cover a possible withdrawal of our infantry. Our second platoon was held up along with the infantry companies on the right by heavy machine gun fire from our front and right flanks. At all times during the advance across the Molleville Farm we were under heavy machine fire, losing one officer and three enlisted men killed. We were assisted in our advance across this open ground by a heavy fog, which prevented our sustaining very great losses in reaching our objective. Our second platoon came forward and together with our first platoon assisted the infantry in consolidating the position.

On the 16th we went into reserve in Bois de Consenvoye with the 2nd Battalion 116th Infantry, returning to the line on the night of the 17th with the 2nd Battalion, 116th Infantry, taking up positions on the right and left flanks.

The company was relieved on the night of the 19th and remained in reserve until the morning of the 23rd.

On the 23rd we moved to Bois de Montagne and advanced with the 2nd Battalion, 116th Infantry, in an attack on Bois d'Etraye. The company was composed of two platoons, one with the first wave and one with the second wave. The platoon with the first wave gained its objective and rendered valuable assistance to the infantry in holding its ground with both its right and left flanks open, and assisted in breaking up three counter attacks made by the enemy. The platoon remained in this position until the night of the 26th without relief. The infantry of the second wave being cut off by the enemy machine gun and artillery fire, was unable to advance and moving up to support the second line of the infantry, was subjected to heavy fire. This was kept up during the entire day and losses were sustained to the extent of three men killed and eight wounded, with two guns put out of action by machine gun fire. This platoon rendered very valuable assistance in preventing the enemy infiltrating between the second line of infantry and the first line, which had gone on through to its objective, and inflicted heavy losses on the enemy.

On the 24th the company was relieved and went back into support lines



in Bois de Consenvoye, where it remained until the night of the 27th. On the 27th we moved back in reserve and remained there until finally relieved on the night of the 28th, at which time we proceeded to Faubourg de Pave and remained there until the evening of the 29th, when we embussed at a point southeast of Verdun and went into billets at Brillon.

The Machine Gun Company went into action on the morning of the 8th with six officers and 163 enlisted men and sustained a loss of one officer killed, one wounded and one gassed; enlisted men, sixteen killed, thirty-four wounded and fourteen gassed. The company was active either in the front line or in support almost the entire time and displayed wonderful endurance in keeping up with the infantry, always arriving on the objective by the time the infantry reached it and displayed an admirable spirit in withstanding the hardships and overcoming difficulties incident to the progress of the drive. At no time was the strength of this organization depleted by more than four men not fully accounted for. When the company went forward it took with it every man present for duty and had absolutely no stragglers except in the case of two men who are still missing. This unusual record is due first, to fine discipline and to the absolute control of the men by the non-commissioned officers. It may be said that the most noticeable defect observed was in liaison, especially between the infantry and artillery and the lack of aerial support, which not only deprived our artillery of observation but permitted the enemy aviators to mark our lines and harass us with machine gun fire at will. The company received excellent support by the infantry of the battalion to which it was attached, under command of Major S. G. Waller, who was thoroughly conversant with machine gun tactics, which enabled this company to render very valuable assistance in reducing machine gun nests, and to assist in the consolidation of ground.

On November 11th, we were packing up to go on another front when the news was received that the Armistice had been signed. November 13th we went to Tremont, where we were attached to the 112th Machine Gun Battalion, for the purpose of instruction and discipline. November 14th Sergeant Ivey P. Gregory left to take a course at the Army Machine Gun School at Langres. November 15th we moved to Lisle en Rigault. November 16th First Lieutenant Charles B. Board was transferred to the 112th Machine Gun Battalion and First Lieutenant Robert T. Markham was transferred to the 112th Machine Gun Battalion. No November 17th we moved to Nante le Petit. On November 19th we marched to Ligny, where we entrained for Fresnes sur Apace, detraining at Jussey on the evening of the 20th, and marched to Fresnes, arriving there the same night. All the machine gun companies of the 29th Division were billeted at Fresnes and the same schedule of instruction was carried out by all. On December 11th, 12th and 13th a test of machine gun companies of the Division took place. In spite of being handicapped by lack of equipment the company made a fairly good showing. On Friday, December 13th, the following officers reported to the company, having been assigned to it to fill vacancies; Second Lieutenant Joseph L. King, of Windsor, Va., formerly of the 28th Division, and Second Lieutenant Moore C. McIntosh, of Worthington, Indiana, formerly of the 84th Division.

The 29th Division engaged in maneuvers on December 20th. In the problem our company was with the 3rd Battalion of the 116th Infantry, the assaulting battalion and followed the same at 400 meters. The company maintained an excellent formation, all through the exercise. On December 30, 1918, the company moved from Fresnes sur Apace to Serqueux, where the 116th Infantry P. C. was located. Here we maneuvered with the different battalions of the regiment.

On January 4, 1919, this company entered a squad in the machine gun contest in the 29th Division Horse Show at Bourbonne les Bains. The squad consisted of Corporal James D. Poole, Privates 1st class, Patrick F. Kelly, Lemmuel D. Ethridge, Anthony P. Seifert, Stock C. Karpa, French Thomas, Fred Frey, Rex J. Delong and Henry Beumer. The squad came back with the third prize.

On January 18th we moved to Arnoncourt, four kilometers northwest of Serqueux. Here the company took part in a great many maneuvers



with the different battalions of the regiment. Here we did a great deal of range work and had some practical experience in firing problems in connection with the infantry. On the range we qualified a good many men in machine gun and pistol firing. The company took part in a competitive maneuver with the 2nd Battalion of the 116th Infantry against the 3rd Battalion of the 115th Infantry on March 13th. The 115th won the contest by a margin of seven points.

The 24th of March will be long remembered by the men of this organization, as on that day the 29th Division was reviewed by General Pershing. The review took place at Fresnes sur Apace. The company hiked to Fresnes the day before and billeted there that night, taking part in the review the next day.

On April 4th the 116th Infantry was paid the highest compliment that could be paid an organization. The regiment was taken in trucks to Chaumont and was there reviewed by General Pershing and Field Marshal Sir Douglas Haig. Our company loaded the machine gun carts in trucks and took them along. After being inspected, the regiment passed in review, this company passing in line of sections, the men pulling the carts by hand. The company made an excellent showing.

On April 6th an order was received to the effect that the 29th Division was transferred to the S. O. S. On Saturday, April 12th, we left Arnoncourt in trucks for Jussey, where we entrained at 2:00 o'clock the next morning for the Le Mans area. Detained at Beaumont on the morning of the 15th and made a twenty-four kilometer hike to Avesnes, where we have since been billeted. Although a very small village, it is very clean and the people are very pleasant, and the mayor has done everything in his power to make things comfortable for us.

The 29th Division is credited with the following service in France:

Defense of Center Sector, Haute Alsace, 25th of July to 25th of September, 1918.

Grand Montagne Sector, Meuse Argonne, October 8th, 1918.

Battle of Malbrouck Hill, October 10th, 1918.

Battle of Molleville Farm, October 11th, 1918.

Attack on Bois D'Ormont, October 16th, 1918.

Battle of the Grand Montagne, October 23rd, 1918.

Capture of Etraye Ridge, October 16th, 1918.

Attack on Bois Belleu.

In all of the engagements this company took an active part and it is a source of pride to us to know that the company made good on both fronts. The company suffered heavy casualties on the Meuse Argonne front. Here is our Roll of Honor:

#### KILLED

Second Lieutenant John Lyon, Sergeant Hazel W. Hester, Private, first class, James L. Blow, Private William E. Baker, Private Edward F. Eanes, Private Clarence D. Wilkins, Private Herman G. Hodges, Private, first class, Julian D. Miller Private, first class, Fitzhugh L. Booth, Private, first class, Arthur L. Eanes, Private Alphonse F. Dolese, Private Irvin T. Mankin, Private Julian R. Campbell.

#### WOUNDED

Second Lieutenant John W. Snead, First Sergeant Joseph T. Adams, Private Asa F. Dewberry, Private William J. Bush, Private Charles Delaney, Private Shirley P. Pullin, Private James R. Standard, Sergeant Raymond H. Hill, Private Thomas B. Concar, Corporal Burley B. Ward, Private Thomas L. Kendrick, Private Robert L. Parker, Private Percy E. Garnett, Private Olin E. Doss, Mechanic Joseph P. Karpa, Private Earl L. Lomax, Private Robert R. Robbins, Private Arthur R. Aldridge, Private Robert L. Poole, Private James Carroll, Private Harry Bloom, Corporal George A. Dunn, Private John C. Christian, Private Wiley R. Alexander, Private James E. Patterson, Private Bernard Lynch (died in hospital), Private Gustave M. Koberstein, Corporal James D. Poole, Private James E. Overturf, Private Daniel E. Britton, Sergeant Clarence J. Bridwell, Bugler Paul Parson (died in hospital).

**GASSED**

Second Lieutenant Philip D. Tarbell, Sergeant George G. Sibold, Sergeant David A. Yancey, Private Evarist Laveille, Private Arvalee A. Cromwell, Private Charles O. Early, Private Carney E. Sexton, Private, first class, Stock. C. Karpa, Bugler Archie C. Hale, Private Benjamin F. Etheridge, Private Ernest L. Grogan, Private, first class, Charles Weber, Private Herbert C. Ripley, Private Thomas O'Donnell, Private William H. Kennett.

**SHELL SHOCKED**

Mechanic George W. Vogt.

**CAPTURED**

Private Walter T. Nellis.

## Summary of Activities, Sanitary Detachment, One Hundred and Sixteenth Infantry, Twenty-Ninth Division

Organized October 4, 1917, at Camp McClellan, Anniston, Ala. Trained there until June, 1918. Entrained for Hoboken, N. J., June 11th. Sailed for France on the *Finland* June 15th, and arrived St. Nazaire on the 27th. Left for Champlitte July 3rd. Two weeks later moved to La Ferte-sur Amance and entrained for Belfort area. Went into billets at Auxelles Bas, then proceeded to La Chapelle and entered front lines July 27th. Sanitary Detachment split up among the various battalions and proceeded on August 8th and 9th to Reppe, Vauthiermont and Foussemagne. Battalions moved on August 20th-22nd to Hechen, Beuthwiller and St. Cosme. Sanitary troops accompanied their respective battalions. Entrained at Belfort for Revigny, proceeded thence to Hargeville. Left for Regnancourt September 30th and moved to Souhesme le Grande, October 14th. Moved to Bois Bouchet October 5th. Participated in engagements of Malbrouck Hill, Molleville Farm, Bois de Consenvoye, Bois de Grande Montagne, Etrayes Ridge, October 8th to 29th. Relieved October 29th and moved to Verdun, proceeding thence to Brillon. After three weeks there, moved to Le Bouchon. Left for Ligny after one week and entrained for Jussey and Vitrey. Sanitary troops accompanied battalions to Serqueux, Parnot and Lariviere, where winter was spent in training. Entrained for Le Mans area April 12th.



# History of the Sanitary Detachment

[EDITOR'S NOTE:—The author of this story is not known.]

In accordance with G. O. No. 7, 58th Infantry Brigade, Camp McClellan, Ala., dated the 29th of September, 1917, the 116th Infantry was formed from the 1st, 2nd and 4th Infantry Regiments of the Virginia National Guard, which at this time composed Virginia's only infantry brigade. This became effective on the 4th of October, 1917, and to the infantry was attached the Sanitary Detachment of the 1st Virginia Infantry and part of the Sanitary Detachment of the 2nd Virginia Infantry.

Major Giles B. Cook, M. C., was assigned as Surgeon of the new regiment having previously been Surgeon of the 1st Virginia Infantry, First Lieutenant John McGuire, M. C., and First Lieutenant George F. Hollar, M. C., were assigned from the 2nd Virginia Infantry, making three medical officers and fifty-one enlisted men.

From the date of organization to the following June, training preparatory for active service overseas was in effect, this period being covered at Camp McClellan, Alabama. On the 10th and 11th of June, 1918, the regiment entrained for an unknown destination. Detraining at Camp Merritt, N. J., on June 13, 1918, and remaining one day, the detachment, less one medical officer and two enlisted men traveling with each battalion, after an early morning march, proceeded by ferry to Hoboken, N. J., where we were transferred to S. S. *Finland*. On the day following, June 15, 1918, we steamed out of New York harbor on the long anticipated journey overseas. The voyage overseas was without incident of an unusual nature. No deaths occurred en route and only a few were admitted to the hospital. Measles, which had been ever present in Camp McClellan, accompanied us and supplied most of the hospital cases.

Disembarking at St. Nazaire, France, on June 28, 1918, we remained in barracks for five days and then departed for our first training area in the interior of France, which was in the neighborhood of Champlitte.

At this station the battalions were billeted in different towns and the attached medical personnel was divided and assigned to the separate battalions except four enlisted men who were kept with the surgeon at Argilliers, Regimental Headquarters. The assignment of Medical Officers to battalions was as follows: Lieutenants Platter and Krohn with 1st Battalion, Lieutenants Hearn and Door with the 2nd, and Lieutenants Vosburg and Sayre with the 3rd.

After a stay at this station of two weeks, during which time an intensive course of training was pursued, orders came to move once more. The march to the entrainment point, Laferte-sur-Amance, was a long one, the first of many to come and with full equipment under a summer sun is well remembered. The destination was in the Belfort area and after first billeting in the vicinity of Auxelle Bas we proceeded to Aix La Chapelle, where, on the 27th of July, we relieved the French and first experienced front line service in a quiet sector. The 1st Battalion was in reserve at Anjoutey, while the 2nd and 3rd occupied the front line. The health of the command was good and little happened in this area, there being but little activity either on the part of the enemy or ourselves.

On the 8th and 9th of August the regiment was relieved and changed stations. The Regimental P. C. and 3rd Battalion moved to Reppe the 2nd Battalion to Vauthiermont and the 1st to Foussmagne. Here the regiment was in reserve behind the 115th Infantry, Centers of Resistance, Gildwiller and Balschwiller. During this period, training in first aid, stretcher work, and combat exercises with the battalions were continued.

On the 20th and 22nd of August, the 1st Battalion established its P. C. at Hecken, and the 2nd at Beuthwiller, relieving the 115th Infantry. The 3rd Battalion moved to St. Cosme and became the regimental reserve. Sanitary troops with their battalion combat equipment proceeded with their respective battalions and established aid stations behind the combat companies. This service continued until the 18th of September, when the regiment was withdrawn to the vicinity of Belfort. The health of the command while in this area was good. A few casualties resulted from high explosives.

On August 26th a raid was repulsed by the 2nd Battalion with one

killed, ten wounded and ten slightly gassed and shell shocked. First aid and evacuation to ambulance was well handled by the attached sanitary troops. Lieutenant Hearn was with the battalion aid station at the time.

On two other occasions casualties occurred in the 1st and 3rd Battalions as the result of raids while they were in the front line. This experience gave all sanitary troops of the regiment opportunity to become accustomed to shell fire and also to familiarize them with their duties in actual combat. The spirit, interest and service of all the detachment was good. While in this area thirteen replacements were received.

Casualties in the regiment while in this sector were:

	Officers	Enlisted Men
Killed -----	0	3
Wounded -----	1	45
Gassed -----	1	16
Missing -----	0	0

On the 23rd and 24th of September the regiment entrained at Belfort and on the night of the 24th and 25th detrained at Revigny in the Bar-Le-Duc area, proceeding from this point by marching to billets in Hargeville and nearby towns. The regiment became at this time part of the First Army Reserve, during the attack in the Argonne forest and we were at all times prepared to move on short notice. After five days at this station, thirty-six hours of the time standing by trucks in the rain, the march towards the front was resumed, on September 29th, and Regnancourt was reached on the morning of the 30th. Resting during the day, we continued the march that night and arrived at Souhesme le Grande the morning of October 1, 1918, where we halted for four days' bivouacking in the woods on the outskirts of the town. These two night marches had been long and hard ones, as the roads were muddy and dark and the rain was falling most of the time.

At Hargeville, several cases of influenza had developed and others continued to appear until after active offensive operations were began north of Verdun. The number of cases were not sufficient to be called an epidemic, but were more numerous than at any other time in the history of the regiment. Its occurrence followed movement by train to this area and was probably encouraged by cold exposure in cars and the long fatiguing night marches in the rain. That it became no more widespread was due to the frequent movements and the adoption of bivouac life for billets at this time. Notwithstanding the exposure, sore feet and tired backs, the morale of the regiment was excellent.

From Souhesme les Grande another nights march brought us to Le Bouchet woods, where we arrived at daylight on the 5th of October, 1918. This was near Fromerville and the stay of two days was cheerfully spent in anticipation of an early engagement. On the afternoon of October 7th, orders to move came and after another dark and rainy night march of twenty-four kilometers, we arrived at our line of departure near Samogneux. Before arriving at our destination we passed some of our own artillery that were firing at five or ten minute intervals. Everyone by this time realized that the enemy was not far distant and an air of tense expectancy was manifest among officers and men.

Before the arrival at the line of departure the ambulance that had been assigned to accompany the regiment was dismissed, the dental surgeons to their battalions and the litters distributed to the bandsmen who had been turned over to the Sanitary Detachment by the Regimental Commander as stretcher bearers. The 3rd Battalion was the assaulting unit followed by the 1st and 2nd in the order named as support and reserve. The battalion surgeons remained as previously assigned, as did the enlisted personnel also. At 5 o'clock on the morning of the 8th the artillery opened with their barrage and the advance began. Rapid progress was made and some casualties from enemy artillery were suffered at the line of departure. Some of the medical personnel became separated from their battalions while giving aid to wounded and attending to their evacuation. The surgeon with a detachment of bandsmen followed the regiment, evacuated those



overlooked, and directed all sanitary troops to their battalions. This procedure was again followed on the second day, using the Engineers aid station at Samogneux as an evacuation point. By the third day liaison had been well established and the location of the ambulance dressing station in Consenvoye Bois had become known, operations were systematized and the work of the Sanitary Detachment from this time until leaving the sector was accompanied with satisfactory results. The band which, during the whole offensive, was under orders of the surgeon, did most creditable work, and together with the regimental sanitary troops, evacuated most of the wounded of the regiment as far as the ambulance dressing station. Two medical carts were brought forward to points near the front and parked there. Supplies were distributed from this point and the drivers who were left with the cart horses and officers mounts in the rear came forward each day to give such aid as was needed at the time. Each battalion maintained its own aid station and evacuated direct to the ambulance dressing station. The regimental surgeon who made his headquarters at regimental P. C. supervised the whole and gave any aid that might be required there.

On the 10th of October the detachment suffered its first casualties, Privates Maryland V. Griffith and Samuel Weinstein being wounded, and Private Isaac G. Mills gassed. Private Griffith died on the morning following at 1 o'clock. He was a good soldier and always attentive to duty. Private Weinstein was later evacuated to the United States and Private Mills returned from the hospital to the organization in December. On the 15th of October both battalion surgeons, Lieutenant Fred Vosburg and Lieutenant Albert H. Krohn were severely wounded while advancing with their battalion across Molleville Farm and were later evacuated to America. On the 16th of October, Privates William S. Northington and Edward C. Hightower were wounded and never returned to the organization.

The work of the Sanitary troops after the first two days was most commendable. They remained with their battalions at all times and did their work faithfully under most trying and hazardous conditions, giving little thought to themselves. The commendation given them by the officers and men whom they served was most gratifying, for they had won the respect of the combat soldiers who in peace times often fail to realize the duties of sanitary troops and not until actually in need do they acquire this knowledge.

Private Brainard W. Johnson was recommended for exceptional bravery while attending the wounded, and was decorated with the Distinguished Service Cross. This recommendation came from the commanding officer of a line company.

On October 29th, after a long to be remembered three weeks, we were relieved by the 79th Division and proceeded by marching to Verdun, where another day passed. From there we were carried by trucks to the Bar-le-Duc area with Brillion as P. C. Troops were here cleaned up and re-equipped preparatory for another action. Ten replacements reported at this station for the Sanitary Detachment some of whom had only recently arrived overseas and had had little training.

On November 10th orders were issued to move the same night and become part of the reserve of the Second Army. The signing of the Armistice resulted in these orders being countermanded. Both events were received with favor, although it seemed to the writer that a return to active hostilities was preferable to remaining in a rest area which afforded little rest, as intensive training was resumed after two days. The announcement of the signing of the Armistice was received with gratification, but the lack of any kind of demonstration was most noticeable.

During the offensive east of the Meuse from the 8th to the 29th of October, the casualties in the regiment were as follows:

	Officers	Enlisted Men
Killed in action -----	9	179
Wounded -----	22	769
Missing -----	0	23
Gassed -----	3	328
Total -----	34	1,399



From Brillon, after a stay of over three weeks, we proceeded to Le Bouchon. Remaining here nearly a week, we proceeded by marching to Ligny, where we entrained for the Bourbonne-les-Bains area. Detraining at Jussey and Vitrey in the early morning of the 23rd of November, 1919, the regiment proceeded by marching to the several towns where they were to billet. The 1st Battalion went to Serqueux, where Regimental Headquarters was established, the 2nd Battalion to Lariviere and the 3rd Battalion to Parnot. This was a march of over thirty kilometers and the troops were tired out on arrival at their stations. Training schedules were resumed after the men had gotten settled. Although quarters were not very comfortable and mud and rain were ever present the winter passed with little serious sickness.

On the 6th of April, 1919, orders were received transferring the division from the 8th Corps to the S. O. S. This news was hailed with much joy as the troops were getting tired of their routine and were anxious to return home. Notwithstanding the monotony of drill and maneuvers the morale of the regiment was high.

Mention should be made of the 4th of April, 1919, when the regiment was selected to go to Chaumont and be inspected and reviewed by General Pershing and Field Marshal Haig. The trip was made in trucks. An early start brought us to our destination at about 11 o'clock. All the troops were in high feather and very much pleased to have been selected for such an honor. The whole ceremony passed off without a hitch and from the comments made by the two reviewing generals it was a creditable exhibition.

On the 12th of April the regiment began moving from the Bourbonne-les-Bains area by motor trucks to Jussey, where it entrained for the Le Mans area. On the 15th of April the regiment detrained at Beaumont and marched to nearby towns with Regimental Headquarters at Marolles-les-Braults. Here in this area the regiment busied itself in preparing for embarkation to the United States.

## Summary of Activities—Company A, One Hundred and Sixteenth Infantry, Twenty-Ninth Division

Organized Camp McClellan, Anniston, Alabama, October 4, 1917, from Companies I and K of 1st Virginia Infantry, and Company G of 1st Virginia Infantry. Trained at Camp McClellan until June 12, 1918, entraining that date for Hoboken. Reached latter point June 14th and sailed for France on board the *Finland* the following day. Arrived St. Nazaire June 27th. Entrained for Champlitte July 3rd, going into billets at Pierre-court next day. Trained there until July 17th when company started a series of moves taking it through La Chapelle, Auxelles Haut, Anjoutey, Grossmagny, Foussemagne, Traubach le Haut, to C. R. Gildwiller which was reached August 22, 1918. After tours of duty in trenches on September 6th, Company A proceeded to Gevenatten and on the 8th to Foussemagne, and resumed training. Moved to Vertrigne September 19th where training was continued until 24th when company marched to Belfort and entrained. Reached Mussey on 25th and marched to Chardogne, thence to Genicourt on 26th. Left on October 1st, marching to Regnancourt, thence to Souhesme-les-Grande. Entered fighting north of Verdun morning of October 8th and took part in engagements of Malbrouck Hill, Molleville Farm, Bois de Consenvoye, Bois de Grande Montagne and Etrayes Ridge. Company relieved October 29th and proceeded to Brillon, thence to Haironville. Moved to Danmarie November 17th. Entrained at Ligny on 22nd, reaching Jussey following day, and marched to Serqueux. The winter was spent there. Moved to Parnot March 15, 1919 and left for Le Mans area April 13th, going into billets at Marolles.

# History of Company A

By First Lieutenant, John T. Fuller and Second Lieutenant Logan E. Allen

Company A, 116th Infantry, was organized at Camp McClellan, Anniston, Alabama, on October 4, 1917, by consolidation of Companies I and K, 1st Virginia Infantry, from Staunton, Va., and Company G, 1st Virginia Infantry from Alexandria, Va. Company I, 1st Virginia Infantry, being the base company per G. O. No. 7, Headquarters 54th Depot Brigade, September 29, 1917. Captain H. L. Ople, of Staunton, Va., was placed in command of the company and remained in command until March 9, 1918, at which time he was relieved and placed in command of the 3rd Battalion, 116th Infantry, and First Lieutenant Lewis N. Duffy placed in command of the company. Lieutenant Duffy remained in command of the company until May 14, 1918, when he was succeeded by Captain Herbert D. May. The company underwent intensive training at Camp McClellan, Anniston, Ala., from October 4, 1917, to June 12, 1918.

The company left Camp McClellan on June 12, 1918, for the port of embarkation, arriving at Hoboken, N. J., on the morning of June 14, 1918, and embarked the same morning on the U. S. S. *Finland* for overseas duty. The company arrived at St. Nazaire, France, on June 27, 1918, and disembarked the morning of June 28th. It marched to Camp No. 1 Base Section No. 1, just outside of the city of St. Nazaire, and camped there until the morning of July 3, 1918, at which time it entrained and arrived at Champ-litte, on the morning of July 4th, and marched the same morning from Champ-litte to the village of Pierrecourt, arriving there about 11:30 A. M., where it went into billets. The company started training in Combat of Small Units and Specialties on July 5, 1918. It remained in training at Pierrecourt until the morning of July 17, 1918, and left Pierrecourt on the morning of the 17th and marched to La Ferte, arriving the same evening; entrained there and arrived at La Chapelle the morning of July 18th; marched from La Chapelle to Auxelles Haut, arriving there the same evening; continued training until the 26th of July; left the night of the 26th and marched to Grossmagny; continued the march until the night of the 27th, and arrived at Anjoutey on the morning of the 28th, where it again went into billets and continued training. Captain Herbert D. May was relieved of command to report to Regimental Headquarters on July 31, 1918, and First Lieutenant Walter C. Gannaway was placed in command. The unit left Anjoutey the 9th of August and marched the same night to Foussemagne, where it again went into billets and continued training. Lieutenant Gannaway was relieved of command of the company on account of Lieutenant Duffy returning from school, August 4, 1918. Lieutenant Duffy resumed command of the company the same day. Company remained in Foussemagne until the night of August 21st, marched to Traubach le Haut, arriving there the same night and remained until the next night, when it resumed the march to the trenches. It arrived in C. R. Gildwiller sector, Haute Alsace, about 10:30 P. M., on the 22nd of August, 1918, and went under its first artillery bombardment that night. Company remained in this sector until the night of the 28th of August, being relieved by Company C, 116th Infantry. During the stay in C. R. Gildwiller Sector, Haute Alsace, we underwent artillery bombardment each day and had patrolling and general trench work. Company went into support night of 28th of August at Faulkwiller. First Lieutenant Louis N. Duffy was relieved of command of the company on September 1, 1918, and First Lieutenant James E. Peters took command. It remained in Faulkwiller until the night of September 6, 1918, and marched the same night to Gevenatten, and remained there the next day and resumed the march that night, arriving on the morning of September 8th at Foussemagne, where it again went into billets. Resumed training until the morning of September 19, 1918, when it left and arrived the same evening at Vertrigne, and remained there and continued training



until the morning of September 24th, at which time it left and marched to Belfort, entrained the same morning and arrived at Mussey the morning of September 25th. Marched from there to Chardogne, arriving the same morning. Went into billets until the morning of the 26th, when it resumed the march, arriving the same morning at Genicourt, where the company again went into billets. Left the evening of the 27th, and marched about two miles from Conde, and there pitched shelter tents. Broke camp the morning of the 29th and moved into billets at Genicourt. First Lieutenant James E. Peters, promoted from First Lieutenant to Captain on September 30, 1918, was assigned to Company A, 116th Infantry. The company remained at Genicourt until the morning of the 1st of October, 1918, and left the same morning about 2:30 A. M., marched to Regnancourt, arriving there about 11:30 A. M., remaining there until 6:30 P. M., when it again resumed march, arriving at Souhesme-la-Grande about 3:30 A. M., the morning of the 2nd of October, 1918. Here it went into shelter tents just outside of the village and remained there until the night of the 5th of October, 1918, when it marched to Bethelainville, pitched shelter tents and remained there until the 7th of October, leaving that day for the front.

Company A entered the campaign north of Verdun on the morning of October 8, 1918, and participated in the engagement of Malbrouck Hill, in October, 1918. Captain James E. Peters was wounded October 8, 1918, and Second Lieutenant Harry R. Blackham was placed in command. The company took part in the battle of Molleville Farm, October 10, 1918. Second Lieutenant Henry R. Blackham was killed in action October 11th, and Second Lieutenant John T. Fuller resumed command. The struggle for the Grand Montagne was on October 16, 1918, and Etrayes Ridge was captured on the 23rd of October, 1918. The company remained in the line until October 29th, at which time it was relieved.

The company marched to Verdun the night of the 29th of October, 1918, left Verdun on trucks and arrived at Brillon the same night and marched from there to Haironville, arriving the morning of October 30, 1918. Second Lieutenant John T. Fuller remained in command of the company from October 11th to the 1st of November, 1918, at which time he was relieved by First Lieutenant Walter C. Gannaway, who remained in command until November 3, 1918, when he was relieved by Captain E. W. Mooring. On the morning of November 10, 1918, new men were received to replace those who were killed and wounded in action during the offensive. Left Haironville the morning of November 17th and marched to Danmarie, arriving the same evening. Remained there until the 22nd of November, then marched to Ligny and entrained. Arrived at Jussey on the 23rd, and marched to Serqueux, arriving the morning of the 23rd, went into billets and started intensive training again.

The company passed the winter, most of which was spent in intensive training, at Serqueux. Left Serqueux for Parnot, another village in the Division area, the 15th of March, where special attention was given to disciplinary drill. Left Parnot on April the 13th for Le Mans area, traveling three days and nights, arriving at Beaumont—the railhead of the new area of the Division. Company left Beaumont and hiked fifteen kilometers to the village of Marolles, where it went into billets again, and commenced work preparatory to moving to the port of embarkation of St. Nazaire, from whence it moved home.

The following are the names of the men killed in action:

Corporal William H. Newman, Center Sector, Haute Alsace; First Lieutenant Herbert R. Holleman, Malbrouck Hill, N. of Verdun; Second Lieutenant Henry R. Blackham, Malbrouck Hill; Corporal Reuben B. Padgett, Molleville Farm; Corporal John R. Mitchell, Grand Montagne; Corporal Fred. I. Brubeck, Grand Montagne; Private Harvey W. Smith, North of Verdun; Private William H. Smith, Molleville Farm; Private Emery N. Derbyshire, Molleville Farm; Private Joseph Slovachek, Molleville Farm; Private Cardie E. Cottingham, Molleville Farm; Private Ira P. Martin, Grand Montagne; Private Salvatore Cicero, Grand Montagne; Private William Le Bonte, Grand Montagne.

## DIED OF WOUNDS

Private, first class, James B. Jackson, Molleville Farm; Private, first class, Lonnie A. Barland, Molleville Farm.

## WOUNDED IN ACTION

Supply Sergeant James W. Thacker, Sergeant James W. Miller, Sergeant James H. Bettis, Sergeant Robert P. Webber, Corporal Horace E. Black, Corporal Harvey J. Pleasants, Corporal Robert P. Rowan, Corporal Elmer B. Moubray, Corporal Raymond N. Padgett, Corporal Charles W. McCauley, Corporal Haskill C. Robertson, Corporal George H. Southards, Corporal John B. Reynolds, Corporal Samuel G. Carter, Corporal Alfred W. Brooks, Mechanic Karl C. Pterfish, Mechanic Edward R. Freeman, Mechanic Wallace B. Fitzgerald, Private, first class, Charles H. Allen, Private, first class, George J. Benedict, Private, first class, Ryland B. Compton, Private, first class, Henry Carpenter, Private, first class, Herman S. Coleman, Private, first class, Ernest L. Henry, Private, first class, William R. Hicks, Private August J. Jackson, Private, first class, Verney V. Jackson, Private, first class, George W. Lucas, Private, first class, Charles L. Miller, Private, first class, Robert J. Poss, Private, first class, John L. Swats, Private, first class, Alfred L. Walters, Private Roy P. Bent, Private Albert P. Bounds, Private Prentiss W. Bozeman, Private Harry A. Breakstone, Private Henry H. Cales, Private Robert H. Elliott, Private William E. Elrod, Private Willard R. Evans, Private Abraham Goldberg, Private Harry H. Hensley, Private Edwin J. Hunt, Private Eugene McCauley, Private Edward Miller, Private Claude T. Moultrie, Private Morice E. Newton, Private Jimmy J. Reeves, Private Edwin Robertson, Private William J. Shea, Private Roy M. Shultz, Private Linwood R. Simpson, Private Clifford B. Stilwell, Private Roy E. Tredway, Private Jean T. Valley, Private Inganuis Zarzyski.

## MISSING IN ACTION

Sergeant John B. Harris, Corporal Harvey M. Hyler, Private Wilber H. Tyler, Private William T. Bowling, Private Santford R. Howton, Private James Tasso, Private Walter A. Arnold.

## DIED OF OTHER CAUSES

Corporal Carl W. Dudley, at Camp Hospital, Camp McClellan, Alabama.

## RECOMMENDED FOR D. S. C. OR FOR GALLANTRY IN ACTION

First Lieutenant John T. Fuller, First Sergeant Malcolm R. Gilbert, Corporal Robert P. Rowan, Private, first class, James M. Zirkle.

## Summary of Activities—Company B, One Hundred and Sixteenth Infantry, Twenty-Ninth Division

Company organized at Camp McClellan, Anniston, Alabama, from Companies A, B, C and F of 1st Virginia Infantry. Trained there until June 11, 1918, leaving that date for port of embarkation. Sailed from Hoboken, N. J., on the *Finland* June 15, 1918, arriving St. Nazaire, France, on the 27th. Departed from St. Nazaire July 2nd for Pierrecourt where training was started. Left for Auxelle Haut the 19th, proceeding to Anjoutey on July 26th. Company remained there until August 10th, when it marched to Fousse-magne. Marched from latter station August 21st, to Hecken, entering front line trenches. Continued in Center Sector, Alsace, until September 23, 1918, entraining that date for Mussey, from which point marched to Hargeville, remaining there until 30th. Leaving that night, company reached Souhesme les Grande October 2nd, and remained there until the 4th. October 7th the company moved into position for the beginning of the offensive north of Verdun. Participated in engagements of Malbrouck Hill, Molleville Farm, Bois de Consenvoye, Bois de Grande Montagne, Etrayes Ridge. Company relieved night of October 28th and marched to Belleville, thence proceeded to Haironville by truck. Moved into billets at Serqueux November 11th and remained there all winter. Moved to Parnot March 15, 1919, leaving there April 13th for Le Mans area.



# History of Company B

By First Lieutenant W. E. Bartenstein

Company B 116th Infantry was formed per General Order No. 7, Headquarters 58th Infantry Brigade, dated October 3, 1917, at Camp McClellan, Anniston, Ala., from what was formerly the Richmond Grays Battalion (Companies A, B, C and F, 1st Virginia Infantry), with Captain William A. Stack in command; First Lieutenants James E. Peters, James F. Dunn and Wyatt B. Corneal and Second Lieutenants Earle T. Reynolds and Edward W. Mooring. The company under the very efficient command of Captain Stack took part in all the drills and maneuvers at Camp McClellan and was considered one of the best in the regiment.

On the 11th of November Lieutenant Corneal was transferred to Company M, 116th Infantry, and Second Lieutenant Mooring, having been promoted to First Lieutenant, was assigned to duty with the company and Second Lieutenant Charles F. Taylor was transferred from Company D, 116th Infantry, to duty with the company. On the 1st of April, 1918, Second Lieutenant Earle F. Reynolds was promoted to First Lieutenant and appointed Adjutant of the 1st Battalion. On the same day Second Lieutenant Herbert R. Holleman was assigned to duty with the company. On April 18, 1918, First Lieutenant James F. Dunn was transferred to Company M 116th Infantry, and on the 26th day of May, First Lieutenant William G. Bartenstein was transferred from Company C, 116th Infantry, to duty with the company.

The company, with six officers and 231 men, left Camp McClellan under the command of First Lieutenant James E. Peters for the port of embarkation, Hoboken, N. J., on the 11th of June, 1918, Captain Stack having been placed temporarily in command of the battalion, and embarked at 12:00 o'clock noon the 15th of June, 1918, on the transport *Finland*, arriving at St. Nazaire, France, on June 28, 1918.

The company left St. Nazaire on July 2nd, arriving at Pierrecourt on July 4th, continuing its training, leaving there on the 18th of July, and arriving at Auxelle Haut the 19th. At this place the men were issued steel helmets and gas masks and trained in night marches and maneuvers.

On July 20th First Lieutenant Mooring was detailed as Battalion Supply Officer and Battalion Instructor in Grenades. First Lieutenant Bartenstein was detailed as Battalion Division Officer and Second Lieutenant Holleman as Battalion Gas Officer.

Leaving Auxelle Haut on July 25th, we proceeded by night marches to Anjoutey, arriving there on the 26th of July and leaving on the night of the 10th of August. We marched to Foussemagne, leaving there on the 21st of August and proceeded by night marches to Hecken where we went into the front line trenches, the center sector of Alsace, relieving the 1st. Battalion of the 115th Infantry. The company was relieved on the night of August 30th by Company D, 116th Infantry, and went into support, where it remained until the battalion was relieved by the 3rd Battalion, 115th Infantry, on the night of September 7th. On that night the company marched to Cunneliers and went into rest billets, where it again took up intensive training, remaining there until the 17th of September.

It then marched to Vertrigne, about three miles from Belfort, remaining there until the 23rd of September. On the 23rd of September we proceeded by train from Belfort to Mussey and marched to Hargeville, where we remained until the 30th of September. On the 29th of September, Second Lieutenant Charles F. Taylor was transferred as Battalion Scout Officer and Second Lieutenant Lloyd G. Boone was assigned to duty with the company. On September 28th First Lieutenant James E. Peters was promoted to Captain and assigned to A Company, 116th Infantry, and Second Lieutenant Herbert R. Holleman was promoted to First Lieutenant and assigned to duty with Company A.

On the night of September 30th, we proceeded by night marches in very bad weather and arrived at Souhesme le Grande on the 2nd of October.

We rested there until October 4th and moved by night marches to Bois Bouchet (near Fromerville), arriving there on the 5th of October and remaining there until the 7th. At 7:00 P. M. on the 7th of October we marched to our place in the Meuse Argonne offensive north of Verdun.

On the 8th of October at 5:00 A. M., the 29th Division started over the top with the 58th Brigade (116th Infantry Regiment), the assaulting wave, and the 57th Brigade in support. The formation of the 116th was 3rd Battalion assault, 1st Battalion support, and 2nd Battalion reserve. The Division was attached to the 17th French Army Corps and remained under their command until the 11th of October, when it was returned to the command of the First American Army. The French Army Corps Commander in a General Order commended very highly the 58th Brigade for its bravery at this time.

At 9:30 A. M. on the 8th of October the 1st Battalion executed a passage of lines with the 3rd Battalion and continued the advance, capturing on that day the intermediate and normal objectives. The formation of the battalion at this time was A and B Companies assaulting, and C and D Companies in support. The company advanced successfully, meeting with little resistance, and had very few casualties. Austrians were opposed to us and the company alone captured about 200 prisoners and 20 machine guns. The enemy seemed to be entirely surprised as our advance was so fast that he did not have time to defend himself and was captured. At about 11 o'clock A. M. the advance of the battalion was temporarily stopped by a very heavy and accurate M. G., but B Company, under the command of Captain Stack, pushed on. It was at this time that Captain Stack won the admiration of his men by his coolness. The men still describe him as walking along, pointing out the safe places for them to go, while he himself was standing upright. Sergeant Carlisle A. Gorman, Leader of the First Platoon, with Corporal Joseph E. Allen and Private Edward W. Techel captured eight machine guns, 5 officers and 78 privates. They had gotten in advance of their platoon and made this capture entirely alone, thereby permitting their company and the battalion to advance with few casualties, for which they were awarded the D. S. C. The company advanced and captured the normal objective. Strong enemy reinforcements of Prussian Guards arrived at this time, who delivered a strong counter attack, but they were easily stopped and at the normal objective the company stopped for the night and dug in, waiting for daylight to continue advance. The enemy made another strong counter attack but was again driven off, and the company began the advance again, meeting with very determined resistance. Here the company received a heavy machine gun fire from the right flank (the French having failed to keep up with our rapid advance). Private Israel J. Chamberlain volunteered to go to them and find out that the men were not French. He went about 300 yards through the open and in full view of the enemy and found a French captain who told him that he held the front line. Chamberlain returned to the company with the information, and assisted in shooting several of the enemy and in capturing about 5 machine guns and 63 men, for which he was awarded the D. S. C.

The advance now was through a very dense forest and resistance was very stubborn but the company pushed on to Molleville Farm. The battalion at this time was about 1000 yards in advance of the French on the right, thereby leaving our flank exposed to fire from high ground. Major Alexander was wounded on this day and Captain Stack was placed in command until the battalion was relieved on the 29th of October. Lieutenant (now Captain) Mooring immediately resumed command of the company. On the morning of the 10th of October, the battalion attacked Molleville Farm. Molleville Farm is open ground and about 800 yards from Bois de Grande Montagne. It is a hill for about 500 yards, with strong trenches on the crest which were strongly held by infantry and machine gun. The remaining 300 yards is flat to the woods which were also intrenched and held by machine guns and artillery.

At 1 P. M. on the 11th of October the 1st Battalion attempted to capture Molleville Farm. There was no artillery preparation. One machine gun company which only had 800 rounds of ammunition was our only sup-



port. The company reached the crest of the hill and captured the trenches, but the light artillery and machine guns from both the front and right flanks were so heavy and accurate that it was impossible to advance further. The casualties on this advance were very heavy. This attack will long be remembered by all members of the battalion and company. The company took shelter in shell holes which seemed known to the enemy who dropped shells in each hole with unerring accuracy. The company held its ground until darkness when it fell back to the partially prepared trenches in the rear. The company was relieved by the 3rd Battalion on the night of the 13th and moved back into reserve where it remained for 48 hours, when it moved up in support through shell fire and gas. We remained in support until the 17th, when we again took over the front lines, relieving the 2nd Battalion.

On the morning of the 18th, the 1st Battalion pushed on to the first final objective (Etrayes Ridge). B Company was again one of the assaulting units. It was relieved by the 3rd Battalion and moved into support. It moved again into the front line on the morning of the 23rd, where, in conjunction with the 2nd Battalion, it captured the final objective and dug in.

The 1st Battalion was the assaulting wave and in the front line for fifteen of the twenty-one days of the offensive. B Company was always one of the assaulting companies. The battalion attacked and successfully captured three of the five objectives of the regiment. During the drive the company lost 15 men killed, 2 died of wounds and 119 wounded.

The company was relieved on the night of the 28th by M Company, 114th Infantry, and marched to Belleville (near Verdun) and moved from there on the night of the 29th by motor trucks to Haironville in rest billets, where we received enough replacements to bring the strength of the company up to 178 men. On November 4th, First Lieutenant Edward W. Mooring was promoted for bravery on the field of battle to Captain, and transferred to the command of Company A, 116th Infantry. On the 17th of November, 1st Battalion moved from Haironville by marching and train to this station (Serqueux), arriving on November 24th.

On November 26th, Captain William A. Stack was relieved from duty with the company and transferred to the command of the Supply Company, 116th Infantry. All the hardships the boys went through on the front were as nothing compared with that of giving up their Captain, who had been their Company Commander from the time the 116th was formed until he was transferred. He led them gallantly "over the top" on the morning of the 8th of October, so gallantly that, although the men already regarded him as a great leader, his bravery on that memorable occasion won for him a larger place in their hearts. He was recommended by the enlisted men of Company B for a D. S. C. for bravery on the field of battle. On the 16th of December, Captain Lee Jarrell was assigned to the company and assumed command. The company is now in rest billets at Serqueux.



## Summary of Activities—Company C, One Hundred and Sixteenth Infantry, Twenty-Ninth Division

Formed at Camp McClellan, Anniston, Alabama, October 4, 1917, from Company M, 1st Virginia Infantry. Trained at Camp McClellan until June 11, 1918, entraining that date for Hoboken, N. J., reaching there on the 14th. Sailed June 15th on the *Finland*, arriving St. Nazaire on the 27th. Entrained on July 1st for Champlitte, marching from there to Pierrecourt and billeting. Company trained there until July 17th proceeding on that date to Auxelles Bas, moving to Fousse-magne one week later. August 17th, company left Fousse-magne for the front lines. Remained in this sector until relieved September 5th, when company returned to Fousse-magne. Proceeded to Belfort and entrained September 24th for the Verdun sector. Detrained at Mussey and marched to Chardogne and billeted. Moved to Genicourt on the 29th and to Souhesme les Grande on October 1st, thence to Bois Bouchet on the 5th. Moved into position night of October 7th and "jumped off" next morning in attack on Malbrouck Hill. Took part in operations of 116th Infantry October 8th to 29th, Malbrouck Hill, Molleville Farm, Bois de Consenvoye, Bois de Grande Montagne, Etrayes Ridge. Relieved October 29th and marched to Belleville, then moved by truck to Haironville. Marched to Danmarie November 17th. Entrained at Ligny on the 22nd, proceeding to Vitrey, thence by marching to Serqueux. Remained there until spring. Moved to Parnot March 15, 1919. Left Parnot April 13th for Le Mans area.

# History of Company C

By Sergeant Hugh T. Williams

G. O. No. 7, Headquarters 58th Infantry Brigade, dated October 4, 1917, consolidated the 1st, 2nd and 4th Virginia Infantry to be designated and thereafter known as the 116th Infantry, and by reason of his seniority, Colonel Robert F. Leedy, formerly of the 2nd Virginia Infantry, was placed in command.

The nucleus of Company C, 116th Infantry, was Company M, 1st Virginia Infantry, which came to Camp McCellan with the largest enlisted personnel of any company in the regiment, numbering on its rolls one hundred and sixty-nine enlisted men and three officers, and commanded by Captain Howard W. Raines, of Danville, Virginia, who entered the company as a private and was promoted through all ranks to Captain, which commission he had held for seven years. Lieutenant George Gilkeson, of Staunton, Virginia, was assigned to the company as was Second Lieutenant Harry Reagan, of Danville, Virginia, both having held commissions in the National Guard and both being on duty with Company M, 1st Virginia Infantry, at the time of the reorganization order. Lieutenant Gilkeson, having shown exceptional ability, was sent from the company to school at Fort Sill, Oklahoma, from which school he was graduated with high honors and, much to the regret of the old members of the company, did not return to them. He was promoted to the grade of Captain and transferred to the 110th Machine Gun Battalion. Lieutenant Elliotte V. Peaco, of Staunton, Virginia, was assigned to the company, and also Lieutenant A. Foster King, both of whom were promoted from the ranks of Company I, 1st Virginia Infantry, of Staunton. Shortly thereafter, Second Lieutenant Wilson was assigned to the company, but on account of ill health resigned.

A vigorous course of training was inaugurated and, although the weather was most inclement, the schedule was rigidly enforced thereby weeding out all incompetents and the physically unfit.

Christmas, 1917, found the company fairly comfortable in pyramidal tents and the dinner which Mess Sergeant Oliver prepared will long be remembered by those who remained at the camp on Christmas day. Many relatives and friends of the men spent the holiday season at the camp, and comfort kits, donated by the Red Cross, were distributed, Mrs. Elliotte V. Peaco, Miss Edith Kupperbusch, of Palatka, Florida, and Mrs. Howard W. Raines, the wife of the company commander, assisted.

The new year found the company fairly well organized and disciplined but, owing to the heavy demand on the Service of Supplies, it was impossible to secure a sufficient amount of proper clothing and shoes, and not a little discomfort was cheerfully endured by the men throughout the bitter winter.

With the approach of spring, Lieutenant Harry Reagan's health became impaired and he was relieved from duty with the company as the highest degree of efficiency was required. Second Lieutenant J. F. Kelly was assigned to the company. Just about the time the company had attained considerable efficiency and was working smoothly, orders came periodically transferring specialty men for oversea duty, thereby disrupting the organization to an alarming extent. For instance, a corporal who had one of the best disciplined squads in the company and who was a railway brakeman in civil life, was transferred to the Engineering Corps, and a private who had attended a cobblers school for ninety days, was transferred as a mule skinner and left the company, while fifty pairs of shoes were in a bad state of repair. Lieutenant A. Foster King was transferred to the Aviation Service and was graduated as Aerial Observer. Lieutenant Ewell was assigned to the company.

Orders having been received that the division would sail some time in June for oversea duty, feverish preparations were made. Specially prepared boxes of uniform size were requisitioned and marked as prescribed, and on June 1st the packing began. Captain Raines was relieved from

duty and Lieutenant Elliotte V. Peaco assumed command. Lieutenant James F. Phillips was transferred from F to Company C, 116th Infantry.

Replacements having been received from time to time, the company left Camp McClellan, Alabama, on June 11, 1918, with four officers and two hundred and forty-two men. The trip to the port of embarkation proved uneventful except for the enthusiastic welcome accorded our troop train in every city and town through which we passed. The ladies of Rome, Ga.; Bristol, Va.-Tenn.; Roanoke and Lynchburg, Va., and Washington, D. C., were particularly nice, refreshments in abundance being generally distributed among the men and officers.

Upon arriving at Hoboken on the morning of the 14th of June, 1918, the hopes of the men who anticipated seeing New York were shattered by the order to board ship, and the company was marched immediately on board the S.S. *Finland*, where the men were assigned to their quarters and spent the remainder of the day writing farewell cards to friends and relatives. The night of the 14th was spent on board, although the ship was tied up at the dock.

On the morning of June 15th, we weighed anchor and were towed far out into the harbor and passed Sandy Hook, "full steam ahead." The men, coming mostly from the interior, found the accommodations on board little to their liking and there was some sea sickness and a little good natured grumbling which was soon forgotten in the enjoyment of the ideal weather and tranquil sea. Most of the men found the voyage a most pleasant diversion from the daily grind of "squads right" and, with an excellent band playing popular airs daily and healthful sports consisting chiefly of boxing and quoits, the voyage was altogether a real pleasure trip. The danger from U. boats was not forgotten, however, and each morning at daylight and every afternoon at twilight "stand to" was held at a designated point near the ship's rail, and a constant vigil was kept for lurking undersea craft. Fortunately, none were sighted, although the men were treated to a remarkable demonstration of target practice by the blue jacket gunners who unlimbered their pieces with lightning-like rapidity and sunk several imaginary submarines. After thirteen days of sea-faring the soldiers were only too glad to land at the port of St. Nazaire, France, on the morning of June 28, 1918.

Marching to the camp about three miles from the city the men were billeted in Adrian Barracks and two days were spent in recovering land legs, cleaning equipment and preparing for early departure for the front. On July 1, 1918, we boarded a French train and passing through Nantes, Angiers, Tours, Orleans and Dijon, detrained at the little town of Champ-litte, Haute Saone, from which town Company C marched three kilometers to the smaller village of Pierrecourt where they were billeted in barns, stables and other outhouses. Intensive training for trench and open war fare was immediately begun on the 5th of July, after a pleasant Fourth had been celebrated, and proceeded uninterruptedly until the 14th of July when the company was given a holiday to celebrate, with the French people, the National Independence Day.

The commanding officer, Lieutenant Peaco, was compelled to leave the company on account of severe kidney trouble and the men saw him go with deep regret. They had known for some time that his health was bad and felt that he would not come back to them. By his impartial treatment of all he had endeared himself to the men and his separation from the company was a sad blow.

First Lieutenant Ewell succeeded to the command and the vigorous training was resumed. The company marched from Pierrecourt to Auxelles Bas and after remaining at that point for one week marched to Fousmagne, where the intensive training was continued and advance parties were sent forward to study the nature of the trenches, etc., which the company was scheduled to occupy. Lieutenant Ewell was ordered to the United States for duty and Lieutenant James F. Phillips took command of the company.

At 9 A. M., on August 17, 1918, the company, which was provided with steel helmets and gas masks and fully equipped with ammunition,



marched from Fousmagne en route to the trenches, arriving at the little village of Brechaumont about midnight. The men were billeted for the night, and just as the sun was rising next morning the first heavy bombardment was heard. The company rested throughout the day and marched at 9 P. M. from Brechaumont to Falkenweiler, arriving there about 11 o'clock and our battalion relieved the 1st Battalion, 115th Infantry.

C Company went immediately into the reserve occupying the second line which ran through the village. D Company was also in reserve to our left at the village of Haeken and A and B took over the front line trenches. For some reason it was found that neither A nor B Company had sufficient men to effect the relief and C Company furnished four squads (32 men) to A Company and our entire fourth platoon was furnished to B Company, leaving us only two platoons in reserve. On the night of the 19th C Company was called on for three more squads which were sent drawing two from the first and one from the third platoon. Company C remained in reserve until the 25th of August, 1918, when it relieved A Company, retaining only one squad of their men to assist in holding the line. We did not ask for men from B Company but retained the men who had assisted A and B and who were furnished by C Company.

It will, therefore, be seen that a large part of C Company was in the front lines all the time and the entire company remained in the front lines nine days, during which time we furnished special details for raiding parties. We were constantly under artillery fire and were frequently peppered by the machine guns of low flying German planes. Snipers were very active and one private was shot in the arm on the 1st day of September. One private was accidentally shot in the arm and another was accidentally shot through the heart and killed by one of his best friends, a private in the same squad. Three members of the company went over the top in broad daylight and gathered apples from a tree. They were not fired upon. The P. C. and company kitchen were struck by German shells but fortunately no one was injured. We were gassed on several occasions, both while holding the line and in reserve. We were relieved by the 3rd Battalion of the 115th Infantry, on the 5th of September and returned to our billets at Fousmagne. Lieutenant Raymond S. Jones and Second Lieutenant Johnson were assigned to the company while it was in reserve at Falkenweiler and returned with it to Fousmagne where training was continued and special attention was given to the problems developed by the trench experience.

From Fousmagne we marched to Reppe, near Belfort, and after a short time spent in replenishing our stock of equipment and clothing, we marched to Belfort and entrained for the Verdun Sector under the command of Captain James Frank Dunn, who had been assigned to the company and who had taken command at Fousmagne.

Captain Dunn came to the company, enjoying the distinction of being the youngest captain in the regiment, having been promoted through all grades from private to captain and attaining his present rank at the age of twenty-four years. He was formerly a member of Company C, of the Richmond, Virginia, Grays. The company began to show marked improvement from the moment he assumed command and, upon arrival at the point of operations in the Verdun Sector, was a well organized fighting machine.

The weather during the early October days was very inclement and several of the men succumbed to influenza and pneumonia on the long marches through ankle deep mud and murky air. Captain Dunn fell a victim of the dread influenza and although urged to go to the hospital remained with his men until it was necessary to evacuate him on October 7th. Lieutenant Phillips, the second in command, was also stricken and ordered to the hospital on the following day, leaving the company in command of First Lieutenant Jones, with only one other officer, Second Lieutenant Johnson.

After marching 36 kilometers C Company, 116th Infantry, eager to grapple with the best that the Central Powers could offer and absolutely confident of the outcome, sprang "over the top" at the foot of Malbrouck Hill on the morning of October 8, 1918, and advanced 7 kilometers through

a heavy machine gun fire and a terrific artillery barrage. Lieutenant Johnson, in command of the first platoon, captured 110 prisoners, the very first taken by the battalion and claimed by the members of the company to be the first taken by the regiment. Several men were wounded and two were killed. The company bivouacked that night in the open, taking advantage of a few captured dugouts.

October 9th—The enemy counter-attacked in force but we resisted successfully and advanced through a heavy barrage and, after reaching our objective, were exposed to considerable machine gun fire. Some casualties were reported. We bivouacked that night in the open and in shell holes.

October 10th—Throughout the morning the company entrenched and reorganized the lines and during the night we changed our positions.

October 11th—We advanced on Molleville Farm and upon starting across an open field were caught in a heavy barrage augmented by intense machine gun fire and, due to lack of artillery support, it was found impossible to continue the advance, so, taking advantage of the freshly made shell holes, we remained in that position until the night when we took shelter in the woods at the edge of the field.

October 12th—Early in the morning the company was relieved by the 3rd Battalion and went into reserve. We remained in reserve until the morning of the 15th.

October 15th—We advanced, as the supporting battalion to the assaulting troops which were the units of the 3rd Battalion, through dense woods which made our advance most difficult, and the heavy artillery and machine gun fire of the enemy caused some casualties, but we had the satisfaction of seeing hundreds of enemy dead and wounded left in our wake. On the night of the 15th we took a position on the edge of Molleville Farm, bivouacking comfortably in captured enemy dugouts.

October 16th—Due to delayed orders Company C was caught in a heavy barrage laid down on the road leading to Bois de Ormont, which checked our advance. We sought shelter in the woods on the edge of Molleville Farm.

October 17th—About 1 o'clock in the morning we advanced and took a position at Bois de Ormont and held same until relieved during the night of the 17th, when we went into support of the 2nd Battalion.

October 18-19-20-21—The company remained in support of the 2nd Battalion.

October 22nd—The company marched to the Bois de la Montagne where the battalion assembled for the advance on Etrayes Ridge. This move was executed at midnight. The 2nd Battalion was chosen for the assault, the 1st Battalion filling in the gap and occupying the front line as they made the drive. We were harassed by a heavy barrage throughout this movement which resulted in some casualties, but as the ridge was captured the losses were amply justified.

October 23rd—On the morning of the 23rd the commanding officer, Lieutenant Jones, was gassed and the command fell to Second Lieutenant Johnson whose conduct throughout the operations had marked him as a natural leader of men.

From October 23rd to 29th, the company was engaged in intrenching and organizing the lines which was accomplished with extreme difficulty owing to the activity of the German artillery and machine guns. On the morning of the 29th of October the company was relieved by the 114th Infantry, which in turn was relieved that night by a unit of the 79th Division. The company then marched to Belleville a small village near Verdun. From Belleville the short distance to Verdun was traversed and the company was transported to Hironville, Haute Marne, in automobile trucks. At Hironville new clothing and shoes were issued and the men were given the first real rest they had enjoyed since reaching the shores of France. It was there that the news came of the signing of the Armistice and it was there too, that the captain, restored to health, returned to the company. After a period of rest and recuperation the company resumed training and marched to Danmarie where we remained for one week after



which we entrained for Vitrey, from which village we marched to Serqueux, Haute Marne, on the 24th of November. Second Lieutenant John G. Neal was assigned to the company and was immediately appointed Acting Town Mayor, which position he held with credit to himself and the company throughout our stay at Serqueux. After the battalion was moved to Parnot he remained in that office. Lieutenant John C. Green was assigned to the company. The company was comfortably billeted in the homes and outhouses of the villagers who proved to be among the most amiable people we had met in France. The women of the town repaired the clothing and did washing for the soldiers, while the black-eyed red-lipped mademoiselles sang to them in the evening and taught them the tune of Madelon. If the men expected any cessation of drill schedules they were very quickly disappointed, as a vigorous program of training and weekly inspections was inaugurated.

Captain Dunn was sent to school and Lieutenant Cunningham was placed in command of the company. He brought the company up to a creditable morale and, when Captain Dunn was relieved upon his return from school, Captain Herbert D. May was assigned to the command. Captain May, by his courteous but military methods, quickly endeared himself to every man in the organization and when the regiment was chosen, as the best in the 29th Division, to be reviewed by the English Commander-in-Chief, Field Marshal Sir Douglas Haig, Company C, with Captain May at the head of the column, passed the reviewing stand confident in their ability and when, after the review, the great Field Marshal grasped Captain May's hand and congratulated him upon leading such a magnificent body of soldiers, the men were happy, indeed.

Lieutenant Alexander H. Stone, of Company K, 116th Infantry, was assigned to the company since Lieutenant Johns had been transferred, and when Captain May was unfortunate enough to sprain his knee (upon returning from the review at Chaumont) in an auto truck accident, Lieutenant Stone assumed command.

The 1st Battalion was moved to Parnot about 9 kilometers from Serqueux, the 3rd Battalion moving from Parnot to Serqueux. This was quite a blow to both battalions, as well as the inhabitants of both of the villages, as all had formed friendships and were billeted satisfactorily. The chagrin occasioned by this moved was soon forgotten, however, when the order to prepare for the return to the United States came. Said preparation was most cheerfully begun and the company moved without friction in auto trucks from Parnot to Jussey where we entrained for the American Embarkation Center at Le Mans, detraining at Beaumont and marching twenty kilometers to Monce-En-Saosine, Sarthe, where we were billeted.

Lieutenant John C. Green was appointed Acting Town Mayor and Sergeant Hugh T. Williams, assistant. This was the cleanest little village we had encountered and the men were permitted plenty of time to clean up and prepare for the inspection of the A. E. C. officers which took place on the 23rd of April, 1919.

Company C, 116th Infantry, numbers today on its rolls 214 men and 6 officers. In the battles and engagements we lost 12 killed, 2 dying from wounds, 66 wounded, and two dying from pneumonia. The company sent 6 men to the Officers' Training School who were promoted to the grade of Lieutenant. Private Thomas A. Simpson was sent to the American E. F. University at Bordeaux as Instructor, and Sergeant Hugh T. Williams established the chair in Spanish at the A. E. F. University at Beaune. The company leaves France with some regret as the natives in nearly every place we stopped have extended to us a uniform hospitality, similar to that of Virginia, from whence the majority of its members came.



## Summary of Activities—Company D, One Hundred and Sixteenth Infantry, Twenty-Ninth Division

Organized at Camp McClellan, Anniston, Alabama, October 4, 1917, from Companies C and D, 2nd Virginia Infantry. Trained at Camp McClellan until June, 1918, leaving on the 11th of that month for port of embarkation. Sailed from Hoboken, N. J., June 15th, on the *Finland* and arrived St. Nazaire, France on the 27th. Entrained July 2nd for Champlitte, marching on the 4th to Larrett. Left latter point July 18th, entraining that night and reaching Plancher the 19th, thence marched to Auxelles Haute. Left July 27th and reached Anjouey on 29th. Proceeded to Foussemagne August 7th, remaining there until the 21st. Marched to Traubach le Haute on the 22nd. Relieved Company B, 116th Infantry in trenches August 30th. Relieved September 8th, returning to Foussemagne. Departed September 18th for Reppe, thence marched to Belfort and entrained. Detrained at Mussey September 24th, marching to Chardogne, thence to Genicourt. Left for Regnancourt on the 30th and moved to Souhesme-les-Grande October 1st. Left on the 4th for Bois Bouchet. Proceeded night of October 7th to base of departure near Samogneux-Brabant road. Company fought through engagements of Malbrouck Hill, Molleville Farm, Bois de Consenvoye, Bois de Grande Montagne, Etrayes Ridge. Relieved night of October 28th and marched to Belleville, thence to Haironville by truck. Moved to Danmarie November 17th, thence to Ligny to entrain on 22nd. Detrained next day at Vitrey and marched to Serqueux.

# History of Company D

By First Lieutenant Robert Redyke

Company D, 116th Infantry, was formed on the 4th day of October, 1917, by the consolidation of Companies C and D of the 2nd Virginia Infantry, at Camp McClellan, Anniston, Alabama. The company was (at the time of its formation), under the command of Captain S. G. Waller, formerly of Company D, 2nd Virginia Infantry. Upon the promotion of Captain Waller to Major sometime in March, 1918, Lieutenant Franklin Edwards assumed command of the company. About the 5th day of April, 1918, Captain M. M. Goodwin was assigned to the company and assumed command. About the 9th day of June, 1918, Captain Goodwin was relieved and Lieutenant Franklin Edwards again took command.

On the 11th day of June, 1918, the company entrained at Camp McClellan, Alabama, for the port of embarkation and arrived at Hoboken, N. J., on the 14th day of June, 1918. The company boarded the *Finland* the same day, which left Hoboken June 16, 1918. After a calm and uneventful trip it arrived at St. Nazaire, France, on June 28, 1918.

After a short stay there, the company entrained on July 2nd and arrived at Champlitte two days later. From Champlitte it marched to Larrett, arriving there the same day and leaving on July 18th, marched about fourteen miles, entraining that night. On the morning of July 19th, the company arrived at Plancher, where it detrained and marched to Auxelle Haute, arriving there in the afternoon of the 19th. After a short stay, the company left Auxelle Haute on the night of July 27th, and arrived in Grosmagny the following morning.

On the night of July 28th, it left Grosmagny and arrived in Anjoutey the morning of the 29th of July. After remaining here for several days the company left for Foussemagne the night of August the 7th and arrived there the next morning. On the night of August 21st, it left Foussemagne and arrived at Traubach-le-Haute early the following morning, then leaving Traubach-le-Haute on the night of August 22nd, arrived at Hecken the same night. The company left Hecken late in the afternoon of August 30th, and relieved Company B in the trenches. During the tour of duty there the company suffered two gas casualties. D Company was relieved by Company L, 115th Infantry, on the 8th of September, and marched to the woods on the outskirts of Stemenberg, where it remained all day.

On the night of September 8th the company left the woods and marched to Foussemagne, arriving there the following morning. Captain James B. Conkling was assigned to D Company on the 9th of September. The company left Foussemagne on September 18th, and marched to Reppe, arriving there the same day. Then leaving Reppe, it marched to Belfort, where it entrained, and arriving at Mussey on September 24th, detrained and marched to Chardogne, leaving said place the following day (September 25th), and arriving at Genicourt the same day. The company left Genicourt on the evening of September 30th, and marched to Regnancourt, arriving there in the early morning of the following day.

In the evening of October 1st, the company marched to Souhesme-la-Grande, arriving there early in the morning of October 2nd, and on the night of the 4th, left Souhesme-la-Grand, marching to Bouchet Woods, about a mile from Germonville, arriving there the morning of October 5th.

On the night of October 7th, the company left the woods and during the night marched fourteen miles to a point on the Samogneux-Brabant road, arriving there early in the morning of October 8th, and prepared to attack the enemy on the heights of the Meuse River, with French troops on our right. In the attack, which lasted twenty-one days (and in which this company took a prominent part), the enemy was driven back about five miles in a northeastern direction. The final objective reached was Hill 301, on Etrayes Ridge, overlooking the town of Etrayes and the valley in which it stood. During the attack the enemy used eight different divisions against the attacking troops of the 29th Division (of which company D

was a part), but without success. The fighting was exceedingly difficult, owing to the nature of the ground, the inclement weather, thick woods and underbrush, which was admirably suited for defence.

This company, with other units of the 29th Division, was at times compelled to fight step by step, owing to the stubborn resistance offered by a determined enemy. The enemy's resistance, however, was without avail, for upon reaching the final objective, the ground was prepared to enable troops about to relieve the company, to launch a fresh drive. The casualties suffered by this company in action were fourteen killed, two missing and eighty-six wounded.

The company was relieved on the night of October 28th, and marched to Belleville, arriving there on the morning of October 29th. Leaving Belleville the afternoon of the 29th, it marched through Verdun, taking motor transportation on the outskirts of the city that night, and arrived in Haironville early in the morning of October 30th.

Captain Conkling was transferred on November 16th, and Lieutenant Robt. M. Redyke then assumed command of the company, which left Haironville on the morning of November 17th, marching to Dammarie and arriving there the same day.

The company left Danmarie in the early morning of November 22nd, and marching to Ligny en Barrois, entrained, and on the following day detrained at Vitrey and marched to Serqueux, arriving there on the afternoon of November 23rd. Captain William McAndrews was assigned to the company on November 24th, and assumed command immediately.



## Summary of Activities—Company E, One Hundred and Sixteenth Infantry, Twenty-Ninth Division

Formed October 4, 1917, at Camp McClellan, Anniston, Alabama, from Company G and members of Companies B and F, 4th Virginia Infantry. Trained at Camp McClellan until June 11, 1918, leaving on that date for port of embarkation. Sailed on the *Finland* from Hoboken, N. J., June 15th and arrived St. Nazaire, France, on the 27th. Entrained July 2nd for Champlitte, reaching there on the 4th. Proceeded to Larrett and billeted. Training was started at once. Marched to La Ferte sur Amance, entraining there for Grosmagny. Left latter point July 24th, for Soppe le Haute. Relieved company of French infantry in front line trenches July 27th/28th at Dieffmatten in Alsace. Company relieved August 1st, returning to Soppe le Haute. Left for Vauthiermont August 7th, thence to Traubach le Haute on the 11th. Moved to Balschwiller sector in Alsace August 20th, relieving Company E, 115th Infantry. Relieved August 27th and returned to Traubach le Haute. September 5th company marched to Reppe where training was resumed. Proceeded to Offemont on 17th, thence to Belfort on 22nd, and entrained for Revigny. Detrained there on 24th and marched to Seigneulles. Left September 29th for Samogneux. Participated in engagements of Malbrouck Hill, Molleville Farm, Bois de Consenvoye, Bois de Grande Montagne, Etrayes Ridge. Relieved October 29th, marched to Verdun thence proceeded by truck to Combles. Moved to Brillon November 13th, thence to Foucheres on 17th. Entrained at Ligny on the 22nd, reaching Jussey next day and marching to Aigremont same day. Entrained for Le Mans area 12th of April, 1919.

# History of Company E

By First Lieutenant Benjamin R. Brown and Second Lieutenant  
Paul R. Hanenman,

The 1st, 2nd and 4th Virginia Infantry Regiments ceased to exist as state units on October 4, 1917, at Camp McClellan, Alabama, having been consolidated in the War Department's re-organization plans into the 116th Infantry of the 58th Brigade, 29th Division, otherwise known as the "Blue and Gray."

On October 3, 1917, Company G, 4th Virginia Infantry, commanded by Captain Roland Thorp, of Norfolk, Va., was designated as a base unit for the formation of Company E, 116th Infantry, with a maximum strength of six officers and 250 men. This result was obtained by the transfer of the members of the Companies B and F, 4th Virginia Infantry, to the base unit on October 3, 1917, and by the transfer of the members of the consolidated company to Company E, 116th Infantry, on the 4th of October, 1917, under the provisions of General Order No. 7, Headquarters, 58th Infantry Brigade. Other officers designated for duty with this company were First Lieutenant James D. Twitty, Suffolk, Va.; First Lieutenant Lawrence A. Porter, Norfolk, Va.; First Lieutenants Barry Wetzler, Waverly, Va.; Second Lieutenant Elmer W. Brinkley, Suffolk, Va., and Second Lieutenant Walter E. Morrison.

During the period from October 4, 1917, to June 10, 1918, inclusive, the company engaged in intensive training at Camp McClellan, Alabama, in accordance with the prescribed schedules of the 29th Division.

On the 11th of June, 1918, the company entrained for Port of Embarkation, Hoboken, N. J., arriving at that point on the 14th of June, 1918, where it promptly embarked on the *Finland* and sailed on the 15th of June, 1918, for its destination overseas. On the 27th of June, 1918, the *Finland* dropped anchor in the harbor of St. Nazaire, and on the morning of the 28th of June, 1918, the company debarked at this point, remaining in rest camp there until the afternoon of the 2nd of July, 1918, when it entrained for Champlitte, arriving at that point and marching approximately eight kilometers to its billets in Larret on the afternoon of the 4th of July, 1918. A schedule of instruction was promptly issued and training vigorously renewed.

At eight o'clock on the morning of the 17th of July, 1918, the company left Larret, marching approximately thirty kilometers to La Ferte sur Amance, where it entrained for Grosmaigny, arriving at its destination at five o'clock on the afternoon of the 18th of July, 1918, and again taking up the training schedule. On the 24th of July, 1918, the company left Grosmaigny, marching to Soppe le Haute and arriving at that point on the morning of the 26th of July, 1918.

During the night of the 27th and 28th of July, 1918, the company relieved a company of the 205th French Infantry in the front line trenches at Dieffmatten, a "quiet" sector in Alsace. The sector proved true to its description, and during the night of the 1st and 2nd of August, 1918, this company was relieved by Company G of this regiment, having reaped much experience, but without a single casualty or other incident of record.

The company returned to Soppe le Haute, where it remained until the 7th of August, 1918, when it marched to Vauthiermont, remaining at that point three days and resuming the march on the 11th of August, 1918, when it proceeded to Traubach le Haute, arriving at that point on the 12th of August, 1918. The company remained in this town until the night of the 20th of August, 1918, when it moved to the Balschwiller sector in Alsace and relieved Company E, 115th Infantry. Its occupation of these trenches was marked by an enemy barrage lasting over one hour, on the morning of the 26th of August, 1918, which did considerable damage to this company's trenches, killed Private Reubin P. Gardner, and injured several other members of the company. The enemy raiding party which followed the barrage

was repulsed with losses and this was looked upon by the boys as their first fight. During the night of the 27th and 28th of August, 1918, the company was relieved by Company K of this regiment and marched back to Traubach le Haute, where it remained until the 5th of September, 1918. During the night of the 5th, the company marched to Reppe, where it was assigned billets and again began training, equipping and replacing losses in its personnel. Its stay in these rest billets was marked by a nightly shelling of the nearby railhead at Fontaine, and the death of Private Francis E. Brown and serious injury to Private James C. Thomas, as a result of shells falling short.

On the morning of the 17th, the company marched to Offemont, remaining in that town until the morning of the 23rd, when it proceeded to Belfort, and entrained for Revigny. The company detrained at Revigny on the morning of the 24th, and marched to Seigneulles, where the division went into reserve. The company left this point on the 29th of September and marched to Samogneux, arriving there on the 8th of October, 1918, at 3:00 A. M. On this day the company went into support until the 10th of October, when it was ordered to the left to fill a gap in the front line between the 115th and 116th Infantry. On the 11th of October, Company E moved to the right of Boissois Bois to fill the gap between the 113th and 116th Infantry, in support of the 3rd Battalion, 116th Infantry. This position was held until the morning of the 13th of October, 1918, when it was withdrawn into support in Boissois Bois, where it "dug in" and remained until the night of the 14th of October, when it returned to Bois de Brabant-sur-Meuse. On the morning of the 15th of October, the company crossed the Molleville Farm clearing in support of the 1st Battalion, 116th Infantry, becoming a part of the front line, and "digging" in the Bois de la Grande Montagne. On the 16th of October, the company being relieved, returned to Bois de Brabant-sur-Meuse, and on the same day moved forward in support of the 115th Infantry.

On the 17th of October, the company relieved a company of the 115th Infantry in the Bois de la Grande Montagne, and on the 19th, returned to reserve, where it remained until the 23rd of October, when it entered the Bois de la Grande Montagne and constituted a part of the assault wave in the direction of Bois d' Etrayes. The objective having been reached, the company remained in line, organizing and consolidating, until the morning of the 25th of October, when it was relieved by the 3rd Battalion of the 116th Infantry. This company then returned to reserve area and remained until the division was relieved, on the 29th of October, 1918. During the twenty-one days' action north of Verdun, 8th to the 29th of October, 1918, twelve members of the company were killed and sixty wounded, as shown below.

**Killed in Action**—Corp. Lawnis L. Lee, Private John E. Heaney, Corporal Dennis E. Twiford, Corporal Claude D. Daughtrey, Corporal George R. Evans, Private Cassius P. Parsons, Private Levi Miller, Private Harvey F. Tatum, Sergeant Lee B. Magner, Private Sidney T. Norfleet, Private Bernard Radford, Private Howard Higham, Sergeant John H. Whedbee.

**Wounded in Action**—Corporal John W. Rollison, Private Martin E. Queva, Private Vernon A. Moore, Corporal Harry L. Hart, Bugler Henry S. Hurst, Corporal Paul J. Fowler, Private Jesse H. Musgrove, Private Daniel J. Byrum, Sergeant Johnnie H. Whedbee, Private Johnston O. Shorter, Private Abe Goldstein, Private Lindfrey A. Grammar, Private Lofton C. C. Ford, Corporal Albert C. Herbert, Sergeant Jesse T. Ewell, Private Hobson C. Dillard, Private Alex J. I. Bartley, Private Vernon L. Gregory, Corporal Carroll T. Hobbs, Private Raleigh A. Mizell, Private Joshua M. Pierce, Private Horace T. Rogers, Private Tobe G. Vaughters, Private Edward L. Crockett, Sergeant George Jankovasky, Private Leslie F. Nelms, Private Edwin F. Sawyer, Private Jacob Stein, Sergeant George W. Bullock, Private Henry M. Banger, Private Albert L. Bennett, Mechanic James M. Turner, Private Daniel W. Vaughan, Private Joseph S. May, Private Charlie C. Taylor, Corporal Bonnie F. Byrd, Private Thomas W. Kennedy, Private John W. Jones, Private Herbert C. Liverman, Private Julian F. Rountree, Private Godwin R. Vaughan, Private Oscar B. Martin, Private John W. Ellzey, Private Lee Gardner, Private Herbert J. Hart, Private William C.



Harrell, Private Chester O'N Haughton, Private Joe H. Maher, Private David L. Neal, Private Charles Sarlo, Private Colin H. Hallowell, Sergeant Flagg P. Corner, Sergeant Frank Chaloupka, Private Percy L. Dowell, Private Earl M. Harris, Private Arnold H. Lovestead, Sergeant James O. H. Reeves, Private Charlie L. Scott, Private Edwin F. Wrenn.

Bugler Woodie E. Byrd, on October 15, 1918, was awarded the Distinguished Service Cross for gallantry in action and meritorious service.

The company left Verdun in trucks on the afternoon of the 29th of October, 1918, moving to Combles, where it arrived at 3:00 o'clock on the morning of the 30th. At this point the work of re-equipping, replacing of personnel, and training was again rigorously pursued.

The company remained in Combles until the morning of the 13th of November, when it moved to Brillon. On the morning of the 17th, the company left Brillon and marched to Foucheres, arriving at that point on the afternoon of the same day. At 5:00 o'clock on the morning of the 22nd of November, the company left Foucheres, marching to Ligny, arriving at that point at 8:00 A. M., and entraining for Jussey, where it arrived at 5:00 o'clock on the morning of the 23rd. The company then marched from Jussey to Aigremont, its present station, arriving at this point on the afternoon of the 23rd of November.

The stay at Aigremont was notable chiefly for bad weather, but through it all the men preserved a cheerful and willing spirit and the drills were all executed with snap and vim. It was here that the regiment received a two-fold honor, being reviewed by the Commander-in-Chief of the A. E. F. at Senaide, on the 24th of March, 1919, and by General Pershing and Field Marshal Sir Douglas Haig, near Chaumont, on the 4th of April, 1919.

At last the longed for orders to prepare to embark for the United States arrived, and on the 12th of April, 1919, the company started on its long journey to America. After several days on trains, the company arrived at Beaumont, and then hiked to Meurse in the Le Mans' area, arriving on the 15th of April, 1919.

Now all is in readiness to proceed. Papers have been inspected and last but not least, each man has been searched for the elusive "cootie" and declared to be a member of the "Cleanest Outfit in France."

## Summary of Activities—Company E, One Hundred and Sixteenth Infantry, Twenty-Ninth Division

Organized at Camp McClellan, Anniston, Alabama, October 4, 1917, from Companies E and F, 2nd Virginia Infantry. Trained there until June, 1918, entraining the 11th of that month for Hoboken, N. J. Sailed on the *Finland* June 15th and arrived St. Nazaire, France, on the 27th. Left for Champlitte July 2nd, detraining there on the 4th and marching to Frettes where training was commenced. Moved to La Ferte-sur-Amance, July 17th, and entrained. Detrained Bas Evette and marched to Gros-magny. Left latter point July 24th for Soppe le Haut. Went into trenches July 27th and remained until August 2nd. Marched to Lariviere August 7th and to Traubach le Haute on 17th. Entered trenches and remained until the 27th, returning then to Traubach le Haute. Marched to Reppe September 4th, and resumed training. Proceeded to Offemont on the 17th, thence to Belfort on the 23rd. Entrained for Ligny, from which point marched to Seigneulles and billeted. Moved to Souhesme-le-Grande October 1st, thence to Bois Bouchet on the 3rd. Took part in operations of 116th Infantry October 8th to 29th, Malbrouck Hill, Molleville Farm, Bois de Consenvoye, Bois de Grande Montagne, Etrayes Ridge. Relieved October 29th, and moved to Verdun, proceeding on 30th to Combles. Moved to Foucheres November 17th, thence to Ligny on 22nd and entrained for Jussey. Marched thence to Lariviere, where training was resumed. Left for Le Mans area April 11th.

# History of Company F

By First Lieutenant James V. Sanderson

On October 4, 1917, at Camp McClellan, Ala., the old historic 1st, 2nd and 4th regiments of Virginia Infantry, were consolidated to form the 116th Infantry and, in the course of re-organization, Companies E and F of the 2nd Virginia Infantry, were formed into Company F, 116th Infantry. Captain Linwood G. Figgatt, formerly commanding Company F, 2nd Virginia Infantry, was retained as Commanding Officer. First Lieutenants Charles F. Krause, of the 4th Virginia Infantry, Vernon M. Speece and James C. Jessup, of the 2nd Virginia Infantry, and 2nd Lieutenants John H. Phillips and Harry F. Powell, of the 2nd Virginia Infantry, were the officers with the organization after the consolidation was effected. Walter C. Stevens was the first sergeant. The Supply Sergeant was William H. Kindevater, the Mess Sergeant Lloyd F. Glenn and other sergeants were Edward H. Wilmoth, Gustav Cruger, Eligh C. Austin, Edward D. Lemon, Cecil A. Compton, Owen H. Gooch, Henry D. Brown, Albert F. Hazelwood, Wm. F. Tickle, and Edwin F. Jackson.

Having slightly over the maximum strength, a small number of men were transferred to various units within the regiment. The company, after being thoroughly organized, took up intensive training, which lasted until the 18th of November, when it was ordered to the rifle range for special duty. Here it remained for a period of about three weeks. Upon return to camp the course of training was resumed.

About this time the Third Officers' Training Camp was opened and Sergeants Gustav A. Cruger, William F. Tickle, Cecil A. Compton, Henry D. Brown and Corporal James K. St. Clair were selected to attend, all of whom, excepting Sergeant Tickle, have since been commissioned. Sergeant David H. Matson was transferred to the Kelly Field, Aviation School.

During the month of February the company did guard duty at the division stockade and upon completion of this tour of duty the course of training was resumed. About this time Lieutenant Charles F. Krause was transferred to Company E and Lieutenant James D. Twitty was transferred from Company E to Company F, also Second Lieutenant James H. Phillips was promoted to First Lieutenant and transferred to Company C, and Second Lieutenant Harry F. Powell was promoted to First Lieutenant and transferred to Company G, First Lieutent Vernon M. Speece having been discharged under S. C. D., First Lieutenant Robert C. Kent, Jr., was transferred to Company F, also Second Lieutenants John H. Coulter and James V. Anderson, graduates of the Third O. T. C., were assigned to replace Lieutenants Powell and Phillips, transferred.

The Fourth O. T. C. opened about the first of June, and First Sergeant Walter C. Stevens and Corporal Norman J. Inge were selected to attend. Sergeant Eligh C. Austin was appointed First Sergeant.

During the nine months' training at Camp McClellan, numerous hikes, night problems and tours of forty-eight hours in trench area, and intensive training in open warfare were a few of the things that kept us busy. During a five-day maneuver the company hiked twenty-six miles to Piedmont, Ala., established a camp, maneuvered for two days and returned by forced march the night of the fifth day. Field inspections, regimental parades and divisional reviews also took up considerable time. Special attention was paid to sanitary conditions in the camp.

On the 11th of June, 1918, the company entrained for the point of embarkation, arrived at Hoboken, N. J., the 14th, and embarked on the U. S. S. *Finland* immediately. At 12:30 P. M. of the 15th, we were on our way to St. Nazaire, France, and after a very uneventful voyage, reached port on the 28th of June. There was very little sickness among the men on board.

After a stay of a few days in a rest camp in St. Nazaire, we entrained on July 2nd, detrained at Champlitte, the evening of the 4th, and, after a short hike, occupied billets at Frette, remaining there about two weeks, during which time we paid special attention to the mechanism of the



Chauchat rifle. We left Frette on the evening of July 17th and hiked twenty-five kilometers to the railhead at La Ferte sur Amance. After remaining to the train one night, we detrained at Bas Evette and hiked from there to Grosmaigny, a distance of about eighteen kilometers. We left Grosmaigny, July 24th and, after hiking for two nights and resting during the day, arrived at Soppe le Haut, where the company had its first experience with the Huns, receiving slight shell fire that night. We took over the sector of Buckwold Woods on the night of the 27th and were relieved on August 2nd by Company H, 116th Infantry. From July 12th to August 3rd, Captain Figgatt commanded the 2nd Battalion and Lieutenant Twitty commanded Company F.

The company returned to billets on August 3rd and remained in training until August 7, when we marched about eight kilometers to Lariviere. On August 17th we marched to Traubach le Haut and, after staying there two days, we took over the front line P. A. 2 Balschwiller, Center Sector, Haute Alsace, and held them until the night of August 27th. At 4 o'clock on the morning of August 26th, after an unusually quiet night, the Boche put down a heavy barrage of high explosives, shrapnel and a few gas shells. For one hour and a half this lasted, during which time they attempted a raid on our sector. The raid was unsuccessful and quite a few of the Boche never went back to their former station.

The first casualties of Company F occurred at this time, Corporal Herbert W. Fowlkes being killed in the first few minutes of the fight and Sergeant Edwin F. Jackson and Privates Henry S. Wells, John W. Anderson and Charles T. Bates were severely wounded by shrapnel. Captain Figgatt was knocked down several times by the concussion of shells and was gassed in a desperate attempt to make his way to the post of command. On the night of the 27th we were relieved by a company of the 115th Infantry and again occupied billets at Traubach le Haute, remaining in this town until the night of September 4th, when we moved to Reppe. Training was continued at Reppe until the company moved, September 17th, to Offemont. We left Offemont on September 23rd, and entrained at Belfort the same day and, after traveling by rail all day and night, detrained on the morning of the 24th at Vigny and from that town marched to Seigneulles the same day, remaining there until the morning of the 30th. At 3:00 A. M., we proceeded to Siercourt and after marching a considerable distance, went into bivouac on hills near Souhesme-le-Grande on the morning of October 1, 1918. We covered in all about thirty-six kilometers. We left bivouac on the night of the 3rd of October and marched to Bouchet Woods, where we again went into bivouac, remaining there until the night of October 7th. Captain Figgatt was ordered to school on September 30th and Lieutenant Twitty took command until October 6th, when he was taken sick and sent to the hospital. Lieutenant Powell was transferred back to Company F on October 6th, and took command of the company. Lieutenant Jessup, being Battalion Gas Officer, Lieutenant Coulter, Battalion Liaison Officer, and Lieutenant Mott, Regimental Liaison Officer, there were only two officers, namely, Lieutenant Harry F. Powell and Lieutenant James V. Sanderson with the company when it went over the top on the morning of October 8th at 5:30 o'clock, after a march of twenty-five kilometers.

During the first day we advanced under heavy shell fire, but finally reached our objective on the night of the 8th, after establishing outposts and keeping a sharp lookout for the enemy. On the morning of the 9th, owing to a counter attack by the enemy, we were forced to fall back to the line of resistance. During this action Mechanic George K. Tate, Private Edward Powers and Private Ralph E. Allen were killed. The night of the 10th, while moving to a new position, practically the entire company was gassed. The remainder of the company was attached to Company E, Sergeant William C. Price being in command. From that time on, the company was actively engaged either in support or in the front line until relieved on the morning of the 16th by a company of the 115th Infantry. We were in support until the evening of the 17th, when we went back into the front line and repulsed the counter attack, remaining in the front line until the night of the 18th, when we went into the reserve and remained until the morning of the 23rd. Sergeant Price was ordered to the O. T. C.

on the morning of the 20th. Sergeant Owen H. Gooch was placed in command. On the morning of the 23rd Private Crockett I. Wright was killed, also Private Carl A. Link and Private Eloï Morin. We held this position until midnight of the 24th, when we were relieved by a company of the 3rd Battalion. The company was then placed in reserve and remained there until the night of the 29th, when the division was relieved and we marched to the outskirts of Verdun, where we occupied billets the remainder of the night. Private Albert L. Ratell was killed some time during the campaign, also Supply Sergeant Clifton O. Burks. Private Owen Fay was severely wounded and died before he could be taken to the hospital. About one hundred and thirty-five men of this company have authority to wear wound chevrons. On the evening of the 30th, the company embussed and went to Combles, where they rested for two days and received new clothing and took advantage of the baths. The company received fifty-two replacements, and on the 17th it marched to Foucheres, where Captain Figgatt rejoined it and took command. After it returned from the front the following officers commanded the company: First Lieutenant John H. Coulter, Second Lieutenant Wesley H. Mott, and Second Lieutenant Lofton H. Wells. On the morning of the 22nd, the company marched to Ligny, where it entrained in the afternoon and traveled until early the next morning, when it detrained at Jussey and marched to Lariviere, Marne, where it took up a course of intensive close-order as well as extended-order training. In the course of this training we took part in a divisional maneuver, which lasted one day. We left Lariviere the morning of the 19th, and marched to Senaïde, where we shared the barracks of Company F, 115th Infantry, and went into the divisional maneuver reserve on the morning of the 20th of December. We remained here until 1:30 P. M., and returned to the 115th Infantry barracks and spent the night, returning to Lariviere the morning of the 21st. During the months of January, February and March the company was in training at Lariviere, Haute, Marne, a great deal of attention being paid to maneuver and rifle range work. On the 12th of January, Lieutenant Twitty was transferred to the 80th Division and on the 12th of February Captain Figgatt was sent to the hospital.

On the 7th of March, the company took part in a competitive maneuver between three battalions of the 116th Infantry, which was won by the 2nd Battalion, and on the 13th of March we took part in a competitive maneuver between the 2nd Battalion, 116th Infantry, and the 3rd Battalion, 115th Infantry. The 3rd Battalion, 115th Infantry, won the maneuver by a very small margin. Lieutenant Jessup was in command from the 12th of February until the 20th of March, when he went on leave to Nice, leaving Lieutenant Sanderson in command until his return on the 7th of April, when he again took command.

On the 24th of March the Division was reviewed and inspected by General Pershing. About two weeks later we took part in an inspection and review of the 116th Infantry by the Commanders-in-Chief of the American and British Armies, General Pershing and Sir Douglas Haig, near Chaumont. On the 11th of April we embussed at Lariviere and proceeded to Jussey, where we entrained for the Le Mans Area. On the 15th we arrived at Beaumont and hiked to Nouans, where we have been ever since. The regiment is under orders to sail for home within a very short time and all of the men of Company F are looking forward to the day when they will be on American soil once more.

## Summary of Activities—Company G, One Hundred and Sixteenth Infantry, Twenty-Ninth Division

Organized October 4, 1917, at Camp McClellan, Anniston, Alabama, from Companies A and G, 2nd Virginia Infantry. Trained at Camp McClellan until June, 1918. Entrained for Hoboken, N. J., June 11th and sailed for France June 15th, on the *Finland*. Arrived St. Nazaire on the 27th. Left for Champlitte July 3rd. Detrained on the 4th and marched to Frettes and billeted. Commenced training. Entrained July 17th for Valdois, and from there marched to Grosmagny and resumed training. Moved to Soppe le Haute July 23rd. Company entered front line trenches July 27th. Relieved after six days and marched to Vauthiermont and billeted. Moved to Traubach le Haute August 17th. Left for Offemont September 18th, thence to Belfort on the 23rd and entrained for Revigny. Marched from there to Seigneulles and billeted. Moved to Souhesme-le-Grande September 30th and to Bois Bouchet. Participated in engagements of Malbrouck Hill, Molleville Farm, Bois de Consenvoye, Bois de Grande Montagne, Etrayes Ridge. Relieved October 28th and marched to Belleville, thence to Combles, remaining there two weeks. Proceeded to Brillon and then to Lariviere where the company spent the winter. Moved to the Le Mans area the second week in April, 1919.



# History of Company G

By First Lieutenant Barry Wetzler

Company G, 116th Infantry, was formed on October 4, 1917, when the three Virginia regiments were merged into one at Camp McClellan. The company was made up from members of Companies A and G, 2nd Virginia Infantry, and commanded by Captain Winston B. Davis, First Lieutenants, Crowder, Kline and Cox, and Second Lieutenants Smith and Leavell were assigned to the new company.

Intensive training was started upon our arrival at Camp McClellan, which is situated about nine miles from Anniston, Ala., in the Choloocco Mountains. The camp site covered a piece of flat country of forty acres. The men worked hard, even during the cold and snowy weather, to fit themselves for the battles they knew were ahead of them. During the week they drilled with the rifles, also bayonet and hand grenades, and completed their gas training. Every Friday we had a problem in strategy, which usually involved a hike to one of the neighboring towns. During the month of November, the company was stationed at the rifle range, remaining there three weeks and returning to camp.

In the latter part of December and part of January we were quarantined because of measles. During February we were on guard at the Divisional Stockade. In May we took a long hike to Piedmont, Ala., which we now know was the only real hike we had while in camp. Discipline was excellent and G Company like the rest was in top notch condition. All the men made the trip and enjoyed it except for a few blisters. We traveled twenty-nine miles.

We left camp on June 11th, for the port of embarkation, arriving at Hoboken on June 14th.

The company sailed from Hoboken on the 15th of June, 1918, on the U. S. transport *Finland*. The sea was quite calm and very few were seasick, but the Hun U boats which were paying our coast a visit, kept us doing life-boat drills every day. Our soldiers were used at lookouts and many climbed to the crow's-nest for the first time. "Safety First" seemed to be the motto and at 4:30 A. M. and 7:00 P. M. the 3,000 soldiers aboard stood by the life boats and rafts for two hours or more. However, after an uneventful voyage of thirteen days, we arrived at St. Nazaire, France, on June 27, 1918, and disembarked the next day. Here we rested in barracks on the outskirts of the city. It was called a "rest camp," but there was much work to be done. The men cleaned their equipment, worked on various details, and got rid of their sea-legs. The officers on duty with the company at this time were Captain Winston B. Davis, commanding, Lieutenants Crowder and Wetzler, and Second Lieutenants Smith and Leavell.

On July 3rd, the company boarded a train for Champlitte, the men in box cars and the officers in second-class coaches, six to a compartment. Two days travel-rations were carried and coffee was served at different stations en route. We arrived at Champlitte on the afternoon of July 4th, detrained and marched to Frettes, where we were placed in very comfortable billets. For two weeks we engaged in intensive training and new equipment. The company turned out for the first time in steel helmets and as one man remarked, we were beginning to be real soldiers. Chauchat rifles were issued and our organization perfected. Captain Davis left us on the 12th of July, being ordered to school for one month at Chatillon sur Seine, and on the 17th, Lieutenant Crowder was detailed on special duty at Division Headquarters leaving Lieutenant Wetzler in command.

On the 17th, the company left Frettes, wearing the heavy pack for the first time. Barrack bags and officers' lockers were left in storage. The day was excessively hot and after a few kilometers the heavy packs began to tell. The men were game but some were recruits and could not stand the heat, and began to straggle. Sur Amance was reached on the

afternoon of the 17th of July, and here the company boarded a train for Valdois near Belfort. Gas masks were issued as we boarded the train. After a halt of two hours at Valdois the journey was continued and we marched through the outskirts of Belfort and seven kilometers beyond to Grosmaigny.

Training was again taken up, practical range work with automatic rifle grenades made our work quite interesting and time passed very quickly. The weather was ideal for any kind of outdoor work, but enemy planes kept us seeking shelter and interrupted us quite often. Our own planes gave battle occasionally but the Boche usually seemed to be boss. Lieutenant Crowder rejoined us and took command of the company.

On the 23rd of July, we left Grosmaigny and arrived at Leval after three hours march. Here we rested the entire day and about 9:00 P. M. resumed the march. About 2:00 A. M. we entered Soppe le Haut, which is about four kilometers behind the lines. That morning the Boche dropped about fifteen high explosive shells in our locality but no casualties resulted. Our schedule of instruction was carried out as far as possible. There were frequent artillery duels, but apart from a few gas alarms the infantry was quite at ease.

On the 27th of July the company officers were ordered to the trenches to look over the system of defenses. The following night the company went into the front line, Lieutenant Crowder in command, and Lieutenants Wetzler, Smith, Leavell and Fuller on duty with their platoons. It was raining and pitch dark and once in the woods the men could only find their way by following a guide wire. There was little excitement and the relief was made with great caution and hardly any noise. The night passed quietly.

This center of resistance was known as Buchwald and was a so-called quiet sector, but Fritz seemed to know that it was our first time in and decided to give us a warm welcome. During the day he usually treated us to a little shrapnel and at night paraded in No Man's Land with a great display of pyrotechnics for our benefit and threw a few grenades into our trenches. From our trenches we gave them a little more than they sent and our patrols soon showed the Boche that he did not own the land between the wire. After a stay of six days we were relieved by the French who made a great deal of noise and used lights to get their kitchen in place, much to our annoyance. However, they paid for this indiscretion the next day.

From the trenches we marched to Vauthiermont, about ten kilometers distant, and all made the hike with ease. Here we had comfortable billets, plenty to eat and a day's rest before resuming our training which consisted mostly of open warfare, reducing machine-gun nests, etc. Vauthiermont was on the main line of resistance in case of a general push in Alsace by the Boche, and the company occupied its sector and made ready for defense if necessary. Each man knew his place and could go quickly to it from his billet in case the alarm was given. Nothing of special importance happened. The Boche threw over a few high explosive shells and observed from planes quite often. Aerial battles were not infrequent and anti-aircraft guns located in Vauthiermont were kept busy. About this time Captain Davis rejoined us, taking command of the company. Lieutenant Fuller was transferred and Lieutenant Leavell went to school.

On the 17th of August we left Vauthiermont and marched to Traubach le Haute, where we were in reserve with our battalion. Training was continued in places hidden from aerial observation. The civilian population apparently did not like us and we noticed many suspicious things; church bells rang at all hours, lights flashed during the night, and civilians prowled about late at night with no business. At this period Lieutenant Smith was returned to the United States as an instructor in a new division.

A few days later the company went into support of E and F Companies of our battalion which were in the front line. Our position was at Ueberkumen, six kilometers from Traubach le Haute and a kilometer from the front line. We occupied billets and our kitchen was well hidden from aerial observation, so we were quite comfortable. Every day Jerry dropped



a few high explosive shells around and his planes occasionally sprinkled the roads with machine gun bullets.

On the morning of the 26th of August, about 4:00 o'clock, the enemy opened a murderous barrage on our battalion sector. The batteries in our rear were bombarded with gas and high explosive shells and failed to make a reply. F Company was boxed in, and the Germans came over seeking prisoners and information but they received such a warm reception that they made off, carrying most of their dead and wounded with them. Two platoons of G Company, commanded by Lieutenant Wetzler, had come in as support and mopped up the observation trench, killing one German who was slow getting away and wounding another who escaped. The line of observation was relieved by the first platoon of G Company.

All day the Germans kept up an harassing fire from 77's, 105's and 155's and one pounders. Their one pounders had the range on all of our automatic rifle positions and the heavier shells tore up our wire and sought out machine gun placements. They were evidently quite peeved at the failure of the raid. The next morning about 2:00 o'clock a large enemy patrol stole through our wire and attacked us with grenades and automatic rifles. One German, with a flamenwerfer, started playing the flame on part of our trench but it did not last long. Our men made a vigorous reply and our machine guns opened up, so Fritz departed. The following day our battalion was relieved, having marched to Traubach le Haut and a little later to Vauthiermont, where most of the battalion practiced for a raid on Jerry, and the rest drilled. The place was shelled quite often but little damage was done.

On the 18th of September we were ordered to another sector, so our raid was off. We marched to Offemont, near Belfort, where we rested a few days, and on the 23rd of September, marched to Belfort and entrained for Revigny, in the department of the Meuse. After a ride of twenty-four hours we detrained and marched to a nearby woods, where we rested. At 1:00 o'clock we started for Seigneulles, a distance of twenty-six kilometers. On arrival we went into billets.

Our battalion was in army reserve when the final drive which forced the Germans back to Sedan started on the 26th of September. For two days and nights we were on the road just outside of Seigneulles ready to board trucks, which were waiting for us in case of need. However, we were not needed at that time so went back to billets in Seigneulles. The weather was cold and it rained continuously. Lieutenant Wetzler and some of our men caught influenza and were sent to the hospital.

On the night of the 30th of September, the company moved forward with the 2nd Battalion at 3:30 A. M., and marched twenty-one kilometers to Souhesme le Grande, arriving at 10:00 A. M. Here we remained till 7:30 P. M. the same day, a hot meal being served. We then departed, marching twenty-two kilometers to a wood, arriving at 3:00 A. M., and rested five days in bivouac. It rained continuously. On the 5th of October we hiked fifteen kilometers to a wood, leaving at 7:30 P. M. and arriving at 12 P. M. and bivouacked in a field, moving to a nearby wood at daybreak. For two days we rested in these woods as Corps Reserve.

On the night of the 7th of October, the battalion moved forward to take up its position for attack. Men carried full packs and extra ammunition. Our position was in a dry canal course where we rested twenty minutes after our twenty-one kilometer hike, the men being very much fatigued, having marched over extremely muddy roads.

On the morning of the 8th of October, at 5:00 o'clock, which was the zero hour, the troops advanced. The 3rd Battalion being in attack, the 1st in support and the 2nd in reserve. We advanced along the basin of the canal, observing the devastation wrought by artillery and passing wounded of our assaulting battalion. The enemy artillery had not obtained the range in our company during the first hour's advance. We then left the basin of the canal and advanced across a long hill in line of combat groups over old enemy trenches and barbed wire entanglements which had been severely torn up by our artillery. After advancing for three kilometers we were caught in a violent trench mortar barrage thrown down by the



enemy to prevent our supporting our assaulting battalion. Here Captain Davis was wounded and several of our men, including Sergeant Procise, were killed.

Lieutenant Crowder took command and we advanced through the barrage into a valley and up another hill, being shelled all the while. On the reverse slope of this hill was our intermediate objective. We passed this objective and advanced up to the crest of the next hill, meeting severe machine gun and artillery fire, which caused us to halt until the machine gun nest was taken by a platoon from our company. Many prisoners were passed by our assaulting battalion, most of whom were Austrians and all very happy and anxious to get out of artillery range. From here we pushed forward to the main enemy trench line, arriving at 4:30 o'clock, and after mopping up we consolidated the line and established outposts on the densely wooded hill in front of our position. On the morning of the 9th, we successfully resisted a counter-attack and next morning moved forward in support of the 1st Battalion, to our objective, where we dug in and held our position until the 12th of October. Lieutenant Crowder was gassed on the 11th, and Lieutenant Leavell was killed on the night of the 9th by an enemy shell. Sergeant Wiltshire C. Davis took command, there being no officers with the company.

On the 12th of October we went back in reserve, being relieved by the 3rd Battalion. Here we remained through the night of the 14th. At 8:00 o'clock on the morning of the 15th of October we moved forward with the 2nd Battalion in support of the 3rd. The final objective of the day was Molleville Farm and the Bois de Grand Montagne. The objective being located at the crest of a steep hill, caused the troops to advance with no protection, except shell holes, from machine-gun fire, which was severe and caused many casualties. The objective was taken about 6:00 o'clock and the line consolidated. This company was then sent to fill the gap between the 113th Infantry and the 3rd Battalion of our regiment, whose right flank was in the air. During the night we were twice counter-attacked, both attacks being repulsed without loss to ourselves.

Early on the morning of the 16th, we went back in reserve, rested twenty-four hours, and then returned to the front line. About 8:00 P. M., on the 17th, the enemy launched a strong counter-attack but failed in the attempt. On the afternoon of the 18th, Lieutenant Charles F. Krause took command, being transferred from E Company, and on the 19th, we went back in reserve, where we rested in dugouts until the night of the 22nd. Sergeant Davis went to school, and we thus lost a man who held our company together during a most trying time. On the night of the 22nd, we received orders to go over the top for the third time. It was a surprise to us, as we expected to be relieved, but it had to be done. We left the dugouts at 4:00 P. M. on the 23rd of October, marching to our position in Bois de Grand Montagne, with G and H Companies in support. We arrived at our position shortly before 6:00 o'clock, which was the zero hour. As soon as our artillery barrage lifted we advanced towards our objective, which was due east about 1,650 meters in a ravine between two hills on the ridge known as Bois d'Etrayes. After going downhill and through woods, an open field was crossed where we encountered violent machine gun fire. This necessitated slow movement and we received our first losses here. The advance was made from shell hole to shell hole, until we reached the woods. On reaching the edge of the woods we captured twenty prisoners who were in dugouts. From there on the woods were very thick, and we advanced slowly with few casualties, although enemy snipers were working in the trees and artillery fire was quite severe. We arrived at the final objective at 12:00 o'clock, and found that we were the first company on the line and our flanks were exposed. A few H Company men had joined our company and were with us on the objective. In all there were thirty-eight men on the line. Shortly after arriving on the objective, the enemy counter-attacked, but were driven off with losses. About an hour before dark we received a terrible shelling from trench mortars, which fortunately caused few losses. We held the line until dark, having beaten off three counter-attacks with the assistance of two machine gun

crews who had joined us. Just at nightfall we were reinforced by Company B and later by Company C of our regiment. Company F of the 114th Infantry connected up with our right the next day. We remained on the objective from the 22rd to the 26th of October, when we were relieved at 2:30 A. M. by Company M of the 114th Infantry.

Private Isaac B. Davis, of this company, supplied the only contact we had with Battalion Headquarters during these three days on the line. On the 26th, we marched back to dug-outs in reserve and remained there two days, and on the night of the 28th of October, we were relieved and marched back with the regiment to Belleville, and the next day continued through Verdun to Combles. We rested at Combles for two weeks and were preparing to move to the front line when the good news came that the Armistice had been signed and the war was over. Here the first men came to us as replacements to fill in the vacancies by casualties. These men were from the 31st, 39th and 81st Divisions. Captain Mitchell was assigned to command until the company moved to Brillon. After a short stay at Brillon the company moved with the division to winter quarters at Lariviere. Here we continued the regular infantry drills. Bad weather was no excuse for remaining indoors, and some of the most extensive maneuvers were carried on during exceedingly inclement weather and over very bad ground. During our stay at Lariviere about fifty of our men who had been wounded on the front, were returned from hospitals.

On the 24th of March, General Pershing reviewed our division, and our colors were decorated by him. After the review he talked to the boys for about half an hour, complimenting them on their superb discipline and morale. He also recounted their achievements on the front and paid tribute to our fallen heroes. On the 5th of April, our regiment had the honor of being selected by our Commanding General for a review and inspection by Sir Douglas Haig, Commander-in-Chief of the British Expeditionary Forces. We went from Lariviere to Chaumont in motor trucks, leaving early in the morning and arriving at Chaumont at about noon. About 3:00 o'clock in the afternoon Marshal Haig and General Pershing arrived on the field. Notwithstanding the long ride, the regiment made a most creditable appearance, and was highly complimented by Sir Douglas Haig and General Pershing.

With the exception of a few weeks during our stay in winter quarters, Captain James L. Mitchell has been in command of our company. Due to his personal efficiency and interest in the welfare of the men, our organization is now in the best possible condition, both from a physical and military standpoint. Lieutenant Charles F. Krause, who was in command of the company for a time at the front, has accepted a very promising offer to remain as a member of the American Expeditionary Forces. He is now assigned to the 1st Provincial Guard Company at Antwerp, Belgium.

We are now in the Embarkation Center, and looking forward to the day of our arrival back in our land, but feel a deep sorrow for the comrades who will be left to occupy heroes' graves in France. The loss of these soldiers will always be regretted by us, but their example will ever be an inspiration. Some of these men are Supply Sergeant John Garland, Sergeant Joe Procise, Corporal Willie Hillsman, Private Faysitt Saxton, Corporal Menzel, Private Horace Kennedy, Private Corby P. Weatherford, Private Dennis Chafin.

During the offensive of October 8th to 28th, G Company suffered seventy-four casualties; seventy-five per cent of the wounded later returning to the company.

## Summary of Activities—Company H, One Hundred and Sixteenth Infantry, Twenty-Ninth Division

Organized Camp McClellan, Anniston, Alabama, October 4, 1917, from Companies H and D of the 1st Virginia Infantry. Trained there until June, 1918, entraining the 11th of the month for Hoboken, N. J. Sailed on the *Finland* for France June 15th and arrived St. Nazaire on the 27th. Left for Champlitte July 2nd, marching from there to Frettes, where training was commenced. Left Frettes July 17th, reached Valdois on the 18th, marched thence to Petit Magny and thence to Soppe le Haut. Entered trenches in Buchwold sector, August 2nd, and remained until the 8th. Moved back to Vauthiermont, thence to Traubach le Haut on the 9th and to Buechwiller on the 10th. Returned to Traubach le Haut August 20th, moving thence to Vauthiermont September 4th. Left for Offemont on the 17th. Remained there six days and marched to Belfort and entrained. Detrained at Revigny on the 24th, and marched to Seigneulles. Moved to Souhesme le Grande September 30th, thence to Bois Bouchet on October 3rd, remaining there until the 7th. Participated in the engagements of Malbrouck Hill, Molleville Farm, Bois de Consenvoye, Bois de Grande Montagne, Etrayes Ridge. Relieved October 28th and marched to Faubourg de Pave. Moved to Glorieux on the 29th, thence to Combles by truck. Proceeded to Brillon November 13th. Marched to Ligny on the 22nd and entrained for Jussey, thence proceeded to Lariviere. Training schedule followed through the winter. Entrained for the Le Mans area April 12, 1919, and reached Marolles les Braults on the 15th.



# History of Company H

By Second Lieutenant Clyde W. Tallman

This company was organized at Camp McClellan, Ala., on the 4th day of October, 1917, when the National Guard ceased to exist and the three regiments of Virginia Infantry were consolidated into one regiment. Company H, 1st Virginia Infantry, and ninety-three men from Company D, 1st Virginia Infantry, were merged into one company and transferred as a unit to the 116th Infantry Regiment, retaining the company letter.

Captain Albert S. Burnham, formerly First Lieutenant and Adjutant of the 1st Battalion Virginia Infantry, was assigned to command of the organization. The other company officers were First Lieutenants Nathaniel McG. Ewell, Samuel A. McKinney and H. Foster King; Second Lieutenants Reese T. Grubert and F. Clinton Knight. Lieutenant Crubert was transferred to the 110th Machine Gun Battalion, and Lieutenant King was transferred to Company C, 116th Infantry. Second Lieutenant A. B. Carter was also a member of this organization.

The First Sergeant at this time was Joseph F. Terry and the other sergeants were George D. Brinkley, Swepson J. Richter, Berlin A. Tyree, Claude W. Breeded, Edwin Kinkaid, Mead Arbogast, Hansford H. Hughes, George L. Durham, Albert C. Oliver, Alvey R. Leffel, Ernest L. Harlow, Benton K. Campbell, Mess Sergeant Morris J. Dunlap, Jr., and Supply Sergeant Bedford C. Lam. After the organization was completed the company took up a daily schedule of intensive training in Camp McClellan and numerous maneuvers in the vicinity of Anniston, Ala.

The company, with other units of the 58th Brigade, went on an extended maneuver in the vicinity of Piedmont, Ala., in the spring of 1918, which lasted five days. Battle maneuvers occupied the whole of five days and the regiment was forced to march at night to Camp McClellan, covering a distance of twenty-six miles in eight hours and twenty minutes.

During the stay at Camp McClellan all men were instructed in the different modes of trench and open warfare as taught by different instructors from European war zones. Schools were conducted throughout the division, which men from each company were required to attend for purpose of instructions along different lines.

Sergeants Terry, Kincaid and Arbogast, of this company, attended the Third Officers' Training Camp held at Camp McClellan from January 5, 1918, to the 19th day of April, 1918, when they were awarded commissions. Sergeant Richter was appointed First Sergeant and Corporals Milton D. Lawrence, Thomas D. Heyl, John H. Lowman and Malcolm H. Markwood were appointed Sergeants in place of men who had been commissioned.

Company H entrained at Camp McClellan for the port of embarkation and arrived at Hoboken, N. J., on the 14th of June, 1918, immediately going aboard the transport *Finland*, which weighed anchor at noon on the 15th. After an unusually pleasant trip the organization arrived at St. Nazaire, France, on the 28th day of June, 1918. After staying in rest camp in the vicinity of St. Nazaire for four days, we entrained on the 2nd day of July, 1918, and arrived at Champlitte, France, on the 4th, where the organization started another course of training preparatory to going into the forward area. Especial attention was paid to the organization of liaison sections and the use of the Chauchat rifles. Frettes, which was about three kilometers from Champlitte, where the organization detrained, was our station. Helmets were issued at Frettes and the men were required to wear them in order to get accustomed to the additional weight.

From this place the Supply Sergeant, Bedford C. Lam, was sent to the hospital and later died of appendicitis. The organization left Frettes on the 17th day of July, 1918, and made a march of twenty-five kilometers to Le Ferte Amance, where the battalion entrained on a French military train and, after being aboard all night, detrained at Valdois on the 18th day of July, 1918, and marched about ten kilometers to Petit Magny. In this

area the company was stationed by itself and took up training. It left Petit Magny and arrived at Soppe Haut after marching two nights in succession, the days being occupied in resting en route.

We relieved Company F, 116th Infantry, on the night of the 2nd of August, 1918, and took over the trenches in C. R. Bachwald. Occupied trench area till August 8th, when we were relieved by a company from the 305th French Infantry. The organization gained much knowledge of reconnoitering while in this sector.

From these trenches the company marched to Vauthiermont, where it was billeted until the 9th of August, 1918, when it moved to Traubach le Haut, and moved again on the 10th day of August, to Buechwiller, where the company remained while two companies from the battalion occupied the trenches C. R. Balschwiller. The company did not go into the trenches at this place but sent in several working and covering parties under Second Lieutenant Falconer, also sent in ammunition parties at different times under M. H. Markwood. Several reconnoitering patrols were sent out under Lieutenant McGarvey, Sergeants Brinkley, C. G. Campbell, B. K. and Tyree, B. A.

We left Buechwiller on the 20th of August, 1918, and went back to Traubach le Haut and on the 4th day of September, marched to Vauthiermont. While at this place the company had its first experience with shell fire. The Boche started shelling on the 13th day of September, 1918, and kept it up at intervals for three days. During this stay at Vauthiermont the company did much patrolling, reconnoitering and training for a contemplated raid on the enemy trenches. This raid was later called off, when orders came to move to the Meuse-Argonne.

Company H left Vauthiermont on the 17th of September and marched to Offemont, near Belfort, where it remained six days, then marched to Belfort and entrained. It detrained at Revigny on the 24th of September, 1918, and marched to Seigneulles, where the company went into army reserve and bivouacked for forty-eight hours beside a truck train, ready to move at a moment's notice. The call did not come, however, and the company returned to billets at Seigneulles.

It left Seigneulles on the 30th of September, 1918, and marched via Siercourt to Souhesme le Grande, where it went into bivouac on a hill on the outskirts of the town and remained till the 3rd of October, 1918. On this date, Sergeant Berlin A. Tyree left the company for the O. T. C., at Langres, France. The organization started another march to the front, went into bivouac in the Bouchet Woods, and remained until the 7th of October, 1918. Ammunition was issued here and during the stay in bivouac in this woods the outfit was bombarded by enemy bombing planes. The organization again started marching to the trenches, and went over the top on the morning of the 8th of October. It attacked the Austrians east of the Meuse River and drove them back about four kilometers. This company acted as support. No prisoners were taken. Our lines were harassed the entire day by artillery and machine-gun fire. Taking part in the attack and the capture of Dead Man's Hill, we advanced to the Consenvoye Woods and, after being checked by nightfall, occupied the Gotha dugouts near the edge of the woods. During the day's advance two of our men were killed and five wounded. The company was called out at 3:30 in the morning of the 9th of October, 1918, to repel the first counter attack against us by the Austrians. Having repelled it, we remained in position until 12:00 o'clock noon, then moved forward about one kilometer, taking up a new position in the Consenvoye Woods. During this day's advance one man was wounded.

On the 10th of October, which was the third day out, we made no advance except that of a flank movement to the left, taking another position and re-establishing our line of support. During this advance five men were wounded. On October 11th, a short move was made in the morning, making an attack on the Molleville Farm, which was repulsed by direct enemy fire, that compelled us to dig in for the night. Casualties for this day were fourteen wounded.

On the morning of the 12th of October, the trenches were prepared for defense and about 4:00 o'clock were attacked by shell gas. One casualty



was the result of this attack. About 5:00 o'clock we were relieved by Company I, 116th Infantry, and went into reserve. On the 15th of October, we were again called into support of Company K, 116th Infantry, and through dense fog, attacked and captured Molleville Farm, taking up a new position in the Bois de Ormont. During this advance we reinforced the assaulting company, which had been checked on their normal objective, and held the foremost line of resistance during the night. The number of casualties were one killed and one wounded. On the morning of the 16th of October the company was relieved and went into reserve but, in falling back, our casualties numbered three killed and four wounded. On the evening of October 18th, we relieved Company G, 115th Infantry and dug in. Second Lieutenant A. F. Peters being sick, was succeeded by Sergeant B. K. Campbell, who immediately took command of the company. Having repulsed the counter attack delivered by the Prussians, the guard held the same position until the evening of October 20th, and was relieved by Company M, 116th Infantry. During this operation one man was killed.

On October 21st, Sergeant B. K. Campbell, M. H. Markwood, and L. F. Johnson left to attend the Officers' Training Camp. On the morning of the 23rd of October, we relieved the front line company and made an advance of two kilometers and held firm our objective until relieved on the morning of the 25th of October. Seven prisoners were taken during the operations of the day. One man was killed and eleven wounded. The organization remained in reserve until the 28th of October, when the division was relieved by the 79th Division. On the second day of the Meuse-Argonne offensive, Captain Albert S. Burnham, better known as "Old Iron Sides," who had commanded the company through the operation, was wounded.

Lieutenant Peters took command until the 12th of November, 1918, when he was succeeded by Lieutenant Gibson. The company continued to move from one area to another until the 15th of November, when they moved back to the training area. Division headquarters were at Bourbonne le Bains, where we remained in training until the 12th of April, 1919. The company attended a Divisional Review by the Commander-in-Chief on the 24th of March, 1919, at Senaide, France, and later attended Regimental Review by our Commander-in-Chief and Sir Douglas Haig, Commander-in-Chief of the British Army, near Chaumont, France, on April 4, 1919. We left Lariviere, France, on the 12th of April, 1919, and arrived at Marolles les Braults on the 15th of April, 1919.

The casualty list of the company is as follows:

Men Killed in Action—A. R. Leffel, Hobson D. Byers, D. L. Watts, C. E. Marshall, C. A. Coleman, J. A. Byers, G. D. Edwards, B. Reisen, A. M. Donahue, B. Martin, William King, W. M. Walecka.

Men Wounded in Action—G. G. Brinkley, C. A. Richards, A. D. Seldomridge, A. A. Deeds, C. P. Bryant, G. D. Leffel, J. U. Lindsey, J. Thompson, C. L. Corron, B. L. Winchester, F. J. Jefferies, C. F. Meadows, C. P. Scott, F. T. Wilkins, C. L. Bunch, J. J. Barrett, H. P. Conrad, W. K. Daniels, P. L. Gianiny, A. C. Holtz, D. S. Johnson, R. R. Mooney, G. E. Roberts, J. W. Simpson, N. B. Traft, G. L. Durham, E. F. Dyers, C. W. Hudlow, N. Brisdendine, R. H. Lea, R. D. Mackrith, W. L. Adams, L. M. Clifford, A. Van Horn, A. M. Ferrill, J. E. Loving, C. Q. Newcomb, A. M. Smith, C. W. Withrow, Henry D. Byers, E. Bevers, W. J. Clark, A. Eldridge, J. Haley, R. J. Hoy, J. B. Lushbaugh, F. Martin, H. Reed, R. Smith, E. L. Harlow, F. J. Lugar, H. D. Stone, W. D. Shellhoss, R. E. Bibb, C. L. Seldomridge, T. R. Bass, A. Vonner, G. C. Durham, G. F. Styron, V. W. Loving, W. L. Obenshain, G. C. Sweet, L. J. Blake, F. Backus, G. F. Corron, E. C. F. Carney, A. Fuchs, H. W. Helmintoller, G. P. Johnson, C. E. Marshall, A. Brevetti, B. I. Shackelford, H. P. Schmidt.



## Summary of Activities—Company I, One Hundred and Sixteenth Infantry, Twenty-Ninth Division

Organized Camp McClellan, Anniston, Alabama, October 4, 1917, from Companies D and I, 2nd Virginia Infantry. Trained there until June, 1918, entraining the 12th of that month for Hoboken, N. J. Sailed on the *Finland* July 15th for France, and arrived St. Nazaire on the 27th. Left for Champ-litte July 3rd and from there marched to Genevrières. Moved to Vesemont July 14th and to Rougemont the 24th, thence to Geuvenheim on the 26th. Entered trenches July 29th in Doller sector. Relieved August 4th. Left Geuvenheim on the 8th for St. Comes. Entered trenches there. Moved from St. Comes August 27th to Bachwiller. Relieved September 6th and returned to St. Comes. Entrained at Belfort September 22nd for Revigny, marching thence to Seigneulles. Marched to Souhesme-le-Grande October 1st, and remained until the 4th. Proceeded next to Fort Du Chana near Verdun and remained until the 7th. Moved to the front line that night. Took part in engagements of Malbrouck Hill, Molleville Farm, Bois de Ormont, Bois de Grande Montagne, Etrayes Ridge, Bois de Belleau. Relieved October 28th and marched to Verdun, proceeding by truck the next day to Brillon, thence marching to Saudrupt. Moved to Lisle-en-Rigault November 2nd and remained until the 15th, leaving that date for Haironville. Moved to Morley on the 18th, thence to Parnot and went into billets. Followed training program until March 15, 1919. Moved to Serqueux. Left for Le Mans area April 12th.

# History of Company I

[EDITOR'S NOTE:—The author of this story is not known.]

The present Company I, 116th Infantry, formerly Company E, 2nd Virginia Infantry, returned from the Mexican Border to Winchester, Virginia, and remained there for twenty-five days. It was then called out for bridge guard duty in Virginia, on the Southern, Baltimore and Ohio, and Norfolk and Western Railroads, for a period of four months. On the 8th of August, 1917, the company proceeded to Riverton, Virginia, where it was reunited. It remained at Riverton until August 15, 1917, and then proceeded to Roanoke, Virginia, and remained there until the 5th of September, 1917. At this place I Company joined the regiment, and on September 5, 1917, proceeded to Camp McClellan, near Anniston, Alabama. It arrived there on the eve of September 6, 1917, and detrained the following morning. In a few days a drill and parade ground was prepared. On October 2, 1917, Special Order No. 16, Headquarters, 2nd Virginia Infantry, brought about the breaking up of the 2nd Virginia Infantry.

Company I was formed by the consolidation of Company D and Company I of the 2nd Virginia Infantry, into Company I, 116th Infantry, with the addition of twenty-three enlisted men transferred from the 4th Virginia Infantry. This consolidation was completed on October 4, 1917, Camp McClellan, Alabama, with the following officers and enlisted men: Robert Y. Conrad, Captain, commanding; Harold R. Dinges, First Lieutenant; Herbert D. May, First Lieutenant; Harry A. Mason, First Lieutenant; George H. Grim, Second Lieutenant; Joseph W. Bennett, Second Lieutenant. Total enlisted strength, 251.

The first eight months after the consolidation consisted of a schedule of very intensive training at Camp McClellan, including classes in the different foreign methods of modern warfare which had developed in the great war, which were taught by English and French instructors. This schedule consisted of eight hours per day of hard training, with maneuvers, hikes and parades several times per week. In the meantime, the physically unfit and undesirables were weeded out, and the end of the eight months found the company one of the best disciplined and physically fit in the regiment. On the 12th day of June the company entrained at Camp McClellan, Alabama, for Hoboken, New Jersey. The first lap was completed, and the company detrained at Hoboken, New Jersey, and immediately was transferred to the transport *Finland* on the afternoon of June 14, 1918.

At 12:00 o'clock noon, on June 15, 1918, the *Finland* steamed out of the harbor and put to sea. On account of the danger of submarines, a zigzag course was pursued across the Atlantic. The voyage was uneventful except that on one occasion an object was sighted and fired upon by one of the ship's guns, but it is not known positively whether or not the object was the periscope of a submarine. On the morning of June 27, 1918, land could be seen in the distance, and every one hastened up on the deck to get a glimpse of it. The scene was magnificent. Tall promontories of the Belle Islands jutted out into the sea, and quaint farm houses with their Dutch windmills and green pastures were in the background. As the evening drew near the faint outline of the coast of sunny France could be discerned, and at dusk the U. S. S. *Finland* dropped anchor in the harbor of St. Nazaire, with every one in great spirits. On the following morning the company debarked and marched to Base Section No. 1, Camp No. 1.

The first four days were spent in cleaning up and getting equipment which had not been drawn in the United States. On July 3, 1918, the company entrained at St. Nazaire, spending the 4th on a French train on our way to Champlitte, which was reached the morning of July 5th. The company marched to Genevrières and was billeted in this town for several weeks. On July the 17th, we started hiking through France, billeting in various towns. Arrived at Vesemont on July 18, 1918. It was in this town that the first aeroplane battles were observed, and after this troops were constantly on the lookout for shelter, that they might not be

observed by enemy planes. On July 19th, Second Lieutenant Wallace W. Batchelor was made Regimental Liaison Officer. On July 24th, the company moved from Vesemont and rested one day at Rougemont and arrived at Geuvenheim on July 26th. On the 29th, I Company was ordered into the front lines for the first time, relieving a battalion of the 205th Infantry, in the Doller Sector. The company was relieved on the night of August 4, 1918, by Company M, 116th Infantry. We then left Geuvenheim on August 8th, for St. Comes. At this place we were again put in the third line of resistance. On August 27th, we left St. Comes and marched to Bachwiller. We were relieved on September 6th, and again marched to St. Comes. On September the 18th, we hiked nine kilometers to Roppe, leaving there on the 22nd of September for Belfort, where we entrained, arriving and detraining at Revigny, and hiking to Seigneulles the next day. On September 22nd, while at this place, Second Lieutenant Harry A. Douglas received orders to proceed to the Corps School. On the night of September 30th, we bivouacked in a forest near Piety and the next morning hiked seventeen kilometers to Souhesme-les-Grand, remaining there until October the 4th. On this day Sergeant Robert C. Johnson received orders to proceed to the Army Candidate School near Langres. We then marched to Fort Du Chana near Verdun, and halted until October 7th. The march was here started for the front lines in the vicinity of Verdun, arriving there on the morning of October 8th. I Company was the assaulting company of the 3rd Battalion and it was in this attack that Captain Robert Y. Conrad was wounded and later died. Lieutenant Harold R. Dinges assumed command and led the company through the remaining engagements. We were held in reserve until October 15th, when we were again the assaulting company. In this attack very stiff resistance was met, mostly from machine guns. Casualties were much greater than in the former attack, but the objectives were reached and held. We were held in brigade reserve for several days, when we again took over a part of the front lines. On October 28, 1918, we were relieved and marched to Verdun, leaving there the next day in trucks for Brillon. From there we hiked three kilometers to Sandrupt, leaving there November 2nd and hiking to Lisle-en-Rigault, where we billeted until November 15th and then moved to Haironville, arriving on November 16th. It was here the Second Lieutenant J. H. Grummer joined the company and Lieutenant Harry A. Douglas returned from school. On November the 18th, we moved to Morley, leaving there the 22nd of November for Ligny, where we entrained for Vilrey-ver-nois. We hiked thirty kilometers to Parnot, went into billets again and started training as upon our first arrival in France. Captain James E. Peters was assigned to the company and took command. We remained at Parnot until March 16th, when we moved to Serqueux. First Sergeant Robert C. Johnson was promoted to Second Lieutenant with orders to report to Gondrecourt. On April the 12th, we moved in trucks to the railhead on our way to the Le Mans area and reached there April 14th. We were billeted in a small village named Conge-sur-orne, twenty-five kilometers from Le Mans. Inspections were held frequently looking toward the preparation and departure for the United States.

This company took an active part in the following battles: Malbrouck Hill, October 8, 1918; Grand Montagne, October 16, 1918; Molleville Farm, October 10, 1918; Capture of Etraye Ridge, October 23, 1918; attack on the Bois de Ormont, October 11, 1918; attack on Bois Belleau, October 26, 1918.

Total casualties up to date: Killed and died, one officer and fifteen men; wounded, two officers and seventy-two men.

Citations—Captain R. Y. Conrad (deceased), First Lieutenant Harold R. Dinges, Sergeant Milton Bolner (deceased), Sergeant Louis E. Snapp, Sergeant Joseph W. Reed, Corporal Isaac F. Allamong, Corporal Isaac Ingram.



## Summary of Activities—Company K, One Hundred and Sixteenth Infantry, Twenty-Ninth Division

Organized October 4, 1917, at Camp McClellan, Anniston, Alabama, from Companies H and K, 2nd Virginia Infantry. Trained there until June, 1918. Left the 12th of that month for Hoboken, N. J. Sailed for France June 15th on the *Finland* and arrived St. Nazaire on the 27th. Left for Champlitte July 3rd and marched to Genevrières. Entrained on the 18th for Vescemont. Started for front lines on the 24th via Rougemont and Geuwenheim and entered trenches. Relieved August 3rd and returned to Geuwenheim. Left on August 8th for Bellegny. Moved to trenches at Balschwiller on the 29th. Relieved September 7th and marched to St. Cosmes. Left for Reppe September 20th. Moved to Belfort on the 25th and entrained for Revigny, marching thence to Seigneulles. Left on the 30th for Souhesme-le-Grande and remained there until the 4th, moving then to Fort du Chana outside of Verdun. Proceeded to the line of attack October 7th. Took part in engagements of Malbrouck Hill, Molleville Farm, Bois de Ormont, Bois de Grande Montagne, Etrayes Ridge. Relieved October 29th and marched to Verdun. Moved across the Meuse River the following day and boarded trucks for Saudrupt. Proceeded to Lisle-en-Rigault November 3rd, and on the 14th moved to Haironville, thence on the 16th to Morley. Entrained for Vitrey on the 22nd and marched thence to Parnot. Remained there in training until March 16, 1919, then moved to Serqueux. Left for the Le Mans area April 12th, and went into billets at Conge-sur-Orne.

# History of Company K

By First Sergeant Wirt J. McDaniels

On October the 4th, 1917, at Camp McClellan, Anniston, Ala., the 1st, 2nd and 4th Regiments of Virginia were consolidated, forming the 116th Infantry of the 29th Division. Companies H, from Big Stone Gap, Va., and K, from Fredericksburg, Va., 2nd Virginia Infantry, were consolidated, with about twenty enlisted men and two officers, Captain James L. Mitchell and First Lieutenant LeRoy F. Vaughan. The night of the 4th found many strange faces in Company K's street, which was unimproved and in a very bad condition. Work had begun, however, on the streets in the early hours of the 4th and was completed soon after. The organization had the following officers: Captain, James L. Mitchell; First Lieutenant, LeRoy F. Vaughan, First Lieutenant, Alexander H. Stone; First Lieutenant, Henry Billit; Second Lieutenant, Thurston Lonning; Second Lieutenant, William McChesney.

The strength of the organization, less officers and non-commissioned officers, was 195 men.

On October 8th this company began its training, which consisted of the various methods of fighting, such as bayonet, grenades, musketry, close and extended drill. The company continued its training throughout the winter months and in the early spring it took up the French and British methods of warfare, under instructors who were direct from the front lines. Since October 4th, the company had lost at least fifteen per cent of its personnel, thus making it very small. Being on the verge of sailing for France, the organization was in need of replacements. Company K, being a strictly National Guard Organization, was looking forward to the replacements for their units from the National Army with a lot of interest. There is no doubt but that most of the men were curious to see just what their new replacements would be like. It must be remembered that none of the men from the National Army were overseas at this time, so no one knew just what they could do. Finally, the first lot of replacements arrived from Fort Slocum, New York. Most of these men were from New York City and the balance were from England. There was not a man of the lot who knew enough about military life to do right face correctly. The 15th of October, the new men were distributed in small lots to each company in the division. K Company received thirty-five replacements, making a total of about 234 men. The division, expecting orders every day to leave for France, did not check its training, owing to the fact that replacements were only recruits and the company, as a whole, had no desire to be held back by any man or group of men. In the meantime we received other replacements from Camp Gordon who were also National Army men, who had seen a little more service than the others. It was hard work for the company to get these men into condition for overseas service in a short time. It might be mentioned that the new personnel of the company took a lot of interest in everything that was being taught to them and progressed much better than was really expected of them.

Finishing its training in the latter part of May, this company was ready for foreign service. The intensive training had resulted in 250 men working as one man. After various inspections of the strictest nature, orders were received for the division to proceed to France. About noon, the 12th day of June, we entrained at Camp McClellan for some embarkation port. None of the enlisted personnel knew at this time just what port this would be. Being Virginia boys, they naturally wished to embark at Newport News. Two days and two nights were required for the trip, our train passing through Virginia in the night. After arriving at Jersey City, we detrained and marched to a pier, where a small boat was waiting for us. We went aboard and passed a physical examination, after which the boat swung out in the North river and plowed her way to a transport at Hoboken. We were unloaded and loaded again on the U. S. S. *Finland*.



Our regiment of about 4,000 soldiers used up the capacity of the boat. We stayed on board the night of the 14th, and about 12:30 P. M., on the 15th, we started out of New York harbor and joined the convoy of thirteen ships. Soldiers were ordered below deck and we stayed out of sight until the entrance to the harbor was passed. After that we were allowed on deck at any time with orders to wear our life preservers constantly. Having so many men on board it was a very difficult task to get to mess, men having to wait five or six hours before having a chance to eat on their first day at sea, but we soon established a system which made eating much easier and quicker. When the bugle would blow "mess call" it was always followed by the number of the hatch that was supposed to eat. After that hatch got through the bugle would blow again and sound the number of the hatch to come next, etc., until every hatch had been fed. There were only two meals served each day, so most of us managed to keep hungry the greater part of the time. We expected to see submariners on the voyage, but were disappointed, for none appeared. The trip was made in a little more than twelve days and nothing of importance occurred. We reached St. Nazaire, France, on the 27th, but we did not dock and unload until the morning of the 28th. After disembarking, we marched about three kilometers outside of St. Nazaire to a rest camp for the incoming soldiers. We remained at this rest camp until the 30th of June, during which time there was not much for us to do but take things easy and exercise by unloading several hundred carloads of Army supplies, and help run about ten miles of pipe line. The 3rd of July we left camp, and loaded on a train made up of third-class French coaches. We journeyed for two days and two nights and finally arrived at Champlitte, Haute Marne, which was a training area. We unloaded at Champlitte in the morning and marched about eight kilometers to the small village of Genevrieres. We arrived here late in the afternoon and were billeted. We lost one of our officers at this place, First Lieutenant Milton Kohne, who was transferred to the 116th Intelligence Department. We all hated to see him go, for he was very popular with the men. We also had a regimental review here which was the last one for some time to come. We were fully outfitted with the exception of automatic rifles and some entrenching tools, which soon came and we were then entirely equipped, including the Chauchat automatic rifle. We did not stay at Genevrieres very long. On the 18th, we marched eight kilometers to the railroad and boarded a train made up of box cars. We traveled all that day until we arrived at the rail head near Vescemont, where we detrained and marched to Vescemont, a distance of about eight kilometers. Before we entrained gas masks were issued. There seems to be a great difference in the heavy marching order, as it is called in France and what we used to call heavy marching orders at the camps in the U. S. A. This being our first march under heavy marching orders, we certainly found out the difference.

After arriving at Vescemont, the training we received consisted mainly of gas drills and the automatic rifle practice, with target firing on the range and hand grenade throwing. At this place transportation was very scarce and we could not get supplies as we wanted them, having to go hungry many times, and we were always short of tobacco. It took more than fifty francs to buy a sack of tobacco. After several days in this village we received orders on the 24th, to move to the front lines. Leaving about 7:30 P. M., this date, we marched until 1 A. M., this being our first night hike in France. Rougemont was reached and we billeted in barracks just outside of the village. We remained there waiting further orders until the following night, when we again started on our march towards the front. We next came to the village of Geuvenheim, being a distance of ten kilometers from Rougemont, and located in the Center Sector of Haute Alsace, about three kilometers from the German front line. We stayed at this village four days with nothing to do but answer mess call. On the 29th we started to the front lines, relieving a unit of French troops, who were then holding these lines and remained in the trenches until August 3rd, half of our company being in the front line while the balance was in support. First Lieutenant A. H. Stone was in command at this time, Cap-



tain Mitchell having left for school. We also had received three new officers before leaving Vescemont, namely, Lieutenant Harold Wood, Lieutenant McRay and Lieutenant Alfonso McCormick. The night of the 3rd of August we were relieved by companies L and M.

We left the trenches on August 3rd in one of the worst storms experienced in France. When we returned to Guvenheim we remained there about a week, and during the time we were relieved of the drudgery of drilling by being given more drilling, this time under the observation of German aeroplanes, which were more frequent than welcome. Many times we would have to stop drilling and run to cover to keep the aeroplanes from getting a view of us from above. Many a hard fight was witnessed between the Allied planes and the Germans. We left Guwenheim on the night of the 8th and marched a distance of about seventeen kilometers to the village of Eteimbs, where we billeted the rest of that night and the next day. The following night we started out again and marched about four kilometers, to some barracks in Bellegny. We stayed here for about a week with nothing more than the usual camp activities. To keep us in the habit of moving, we were shifted from one group of barracks to another during this time, taking up the remainder of the time in rifle range work, specializing on the automatic rifle. About this time our company commander, Captain James L. Mitchell, returned from school.

On the night of the 29th, we left this village for the trenches at Balschwiller. We marched ten kilometers, arriving there in the morning. We relieved Company F. This sector, which was part of the Center Sector, Haute Alsace, was considered a little more lively than the preceding sector which we had been in. Here we had more patrol work to do. In fact, every company sent out company patrols, in addition to the patrols from the battalion, and it was here that we received our first real baptism of fire. The Germans had a way of sending "them" over, especially around daybreak and twilight and in between times, to keep you in touch with the world.

The brigade, having planned a raid on the German lines one morning at break of day to reciprocate for a stunt which the Germans had tried on the preceding battalion, we were greatly surprised to see our artillery open up a barrage, but the Germans immediately started a counter barrage almost as heavy as ours. It was our first hit at a barrage, which lasted a little better than an hour. As a whole, it was a surprise to the men, because they had not been told what was coming off, and we all expected to see "Fritzie" coming over most any time, so we crouched in the trenches to keep out of the way of the flying shrapnel, but ready to give Fritz a hearty welcome. With the exception of a few slight gas cases there were no casualties in our company. Private Joe Hall accidentally discharged a rifle grenade, which blew off his left hand.

At midnight on the 7th of September we were relieved and marched back to St. Cosme, where we were again in barracks outside of the village. The first few days after we came here Major Opie placed guards all around the village and we were not allowed to leave the barracks area, but after a few days we were allowed in town, but not in any other village in the vicinity. We stayed here until the 20th of September, during which time we were thoroughly drilled in all forms of assault formations. We also had considerable practice throwing live grenades, and it was during this time that Captain Mitchell, while instructing some of the men how to throw the grenades, failed to throw over the parapet a primed grenade, which rolled back and went off, injuring him badly but not seriously. Lieutenant Stone again took command of the company while Captain Mitchell was in the hospital.

We left St. Cosme on the morning of September 20th, hiking fifteen kilometers to a place called Roppe, six kilometers from Belfort. We stayed here until the 25th, with the usual camp activities to help us along and a pay day thrown in for good measure.

Our battalion neither saw nor heard of a Y. M. C. A. until a short time before leaving St. Cosme, where Mr. Walker was assigned as Y. M. C. A. Secretary to the 3rd Battalion.

We left Roppe on the morning of the 25th, and marched to Belfort,

where we entrained on a train made up of typical French box cars. On account of shortage of transportation at this time we were forced to have as many as fifty-five men in most of the cars, so it was no joy-ride, being cramped up all the time we were on our way to Revigny. We arrived at Revigny on the morning of the 26th. After unloading we marched about fifteen kilometers to the village of Seigneulles, where we were held in reserve for the St. Mihiel offensive. Three days of our time there we stayed in shelter tents, close beside the trucks which were to take us to the front if it became necessary. The rest of the time we spent in the village, billeted until the morning of the 30th of September. On that morning, at 2:30 A. M., we were called to arms and marched out of the village of Seigneulles, the march lasting all day and until 9:00 A. M., the next morning.

On the morning of the first of October, after marching about twenty kilometers, we stopped in some woods not far from Clermont; we stayed there until 6:00 P. M. that day, and started on the march again. We marched the best part of that night, a distance of twenty-two kilometers, and arrived at Souhesme-le-Grand in Bauvau on the morning of the 2nd. We pitched tents here and rested until the night of the 4th. On this night we marched about eighteen kilometers to Fort du Chana, just outside of Verdun. We stayed there until the night of October 7th. While here we were issued our reserve rations and fully equipped. We were all anxious for the time to come to show what we could do. On the night of the 7th of October we started on the march to the Argonne-Meuse front. We marched about nineteen kilometers and it rained about all night. After we arrived at our destination we spent the rest of the night in "No Man's Land." At dawn we quickly got into formation, preparatory to "going over the top." K Company was placed in the supporting wave, in line of combat groups. Very soon after, the horizon in the rear of us seemed to light up all of a sudden, as if a mighty charge of dynamite had been set off, and we knew that the barrage had started. We soon started behind the rolling barrage and followed it the rest of the day through the Battle of Malbrouck Hill. Our company, being in the support most of the time, was frequently split up and thrown into the assaulting wave to help overcome strong resistance. The barrage was a great success, but some few shells did fall short. We suffered hardly any casualties at all in our own organization. We met with strong resistance on our two flanks in the afternoon, and K Company was thrown in to help overcome this. On our right flank, part of the company with Lieutenant A. H. Stone at the head of his men, went in to help the assaulting wave. There were several machine guns that were hindering our advance and it seemed very hard to locate them, but after about two hour's maneuver, we got a good idea as to their location, and finally, after some exchange of fire, Lieutenant Stone, with the assistance of a few of his men, caused a surrender, taking many prisoners. After all the machine guns were put out of commission, we took up our advance again and reached our immediate objective. At the end of that day we established our line in the trenches we had just captured from the Austrians.

On the next day the assault was again taken up by a fresh unit of our regiment and our company was placed in the reserve. The only casualties our company suffered on this day, were two men killed by machine gun fire. We stayed in reserve for two days, during all of which time we were subject to heavy enemy artillery fire, suffering a few casualties on the second day. On the night of the second day of our reserve and the third day of our campaign, we were again called into the assaulting wave. Our 3rd platoon, under the command of Sergeant Baker, was ordered in for combat liaison work near Malbrouck Farm, at the edge of Bois de Ormont, while the remaining part of our company stayed in support. The artillery fire at this point was very heavy and we suffered a few casualties while on this hazardous work. We stayed on the liaison work until the following afternoon, when we were ordered back to join our company. On the night of the 11th, we were ordered to relieve the unit which was then holding the front line. It seemed the enemy knew all about the move we were about to make, because as soon as we started they sent over almost as



heavy fire directed on the road we were to march over, as an ordinary barrage would require. We suffered several casualties on this night. After taking over the lines, we started to dig in a little better, as we were receiving a heavy bombardment from the enemy almost continuously. We continued to hold the ground here until the morning of the 16th of October. All this time we were going through real hardships of war. We were lucky if we got two meals per day, and sometimes could not get even that much, as heavy enemy fire prevented the food carriers from coming into our positions.

On the morning of the 16th, we received orders to attack on Grand Montagne. A terrific barrage was to be laid down on what was considered the enemy lines, after which we made our attack. We were progressing fine until we encountered some machine gun opposition from the enemy, at the edge of the woods of the Grand Montagne. After overcoming this opposition, killing many and forcing others to retreat, we resumed our advance very slowly and encountered, in the afternoon, a very strong machine gun opposition. It seemed as if a line of machine guns was established. We fought very hard, but we suffered our heaviest casualties at this point, some being killed and others wounded. We were also short of rifle grenades, automatic rifle ammunition and hand grenades. Having been in action for more than eleven days our men were very tired, so there was nothing for us to do except establish a line and hold what we had gained until ammunition and stronger forces could be gotten. We established our line and held off an enemy counter attack that evening. On the morning of the 17th, about two o'clock, we were relieved and fell back to the reserve line, marching back under heavy artillery fire, and suffering no casualties on the return march. We were kept in reserve until the night of the 19th, when we were again ordered to the front line. On this night we started up and arrived there, with nothing to worry about other than the gas in the area we had to pass through. It rained the most of this time and the mud in the roads where troops had moved from line to rear was from six to eight inches deep. Our feet were swollen and some of them even started bleeding. There was but little chance to attend to the feet, however, for we had dropped our packs long before this and had no stockings to change.

Getting very little to eat while in the front line made us feel weak. We could always get plenty when in reserve, but when we were in the front line, it was frequently difficult to get food to the troops. More than once when a food detail started up from the rear, they could only get to the lines with a part of what they started with, the rest of it being blown up.

After we arrived in the front line position on the night of the 19th, and had established our line, we were told that we would be in this position for forty-eight hours, this being the length of time that the unit we relieved held the line, but we stayed there from the night of the 19th until the morning of the 23rd, when we received orders to fall back in order to clear space for fire of other troops who were going to attack Etraye Ridge. We were glad to be relieved, even it was effected forty-eight hours late. Now that we were relieved we supposed we could be put in reserve, but such was not the case, so we just fell back to the support and about noon the next day we were again put in the front line. As we were relieved on the morning of the 23rd and started back, the enemy seemed to have one of their "shelling spells." It seemed as if it was raining shells all around us, anything from the size of a rifle ball to that of a man. This caused our company to be separated. We were under the impression that we would return to reserve and eventually most of the men took up that position, but orders were received to go into the front line and the company was scattered to such an extent that but a very small percentage could be found to take up this position. Word to that effect was sent to the battalion commander. The next morning (the 24th), a messenger was sent out to try to assemble the scattered company. He succeeded, and the company immediately proceeded to the front line, where we were engaged in clearing about two hundred yards of territory of enemy machine guns,



after which we established a line and stayed there until late in the afternoon of the 25th, when we were ordered to go in support of two companies of our battalion who were holding the lines to our left. We held the support position until the night of the 27th, when we were relieved and the entire regiment was sent to reserve.

On the 28th there was not much of anything done except to send out a few burying details, the rest of our company taking advantage of all the rest they could get.

The spirits and morale of the men were very commendable and more could not have been expected of any troops. We had reached all our objectives and held them against the enemy's best, and we had much to be proud of. Upon being relieved on the night of the 29th of October, we marched about twenty-two kilometers to Verdun, where we were billeted in a fort (name unknown), where we had bunks to sleep on, but no covers. The following afternoon we marched across the Meuse River to motor trucks, which were waiting for us to take us to our rest area, which was in the vicinity of Bar le-Duc, in the department of the Meuse.

At this time our command was very small, though there were other units in this regiment that were much smaller. Our personnel consisted of 111 enlisted men and one officer, First Lieutenant A. H. Stone, in command of the company.

We traveled in motor trucks for about eight hours, when we finally passed through Bar-le-duc and arrived at a small village named Sandrupt. This was the morning of the 30th. We billeted in a French barrack, situated on a small hill, just outside of the village, and our field kitchen was located in the village. There were very few of the men who brought any blankets with them, for most of us had dropped our packs in action. Those who did have any at all had picked them up in German dugouts and carried them back when we left the lines. We stayed at Sandrupt until the 3rd of November, during which time we had very little to do. All of us were very tired but could not rest very much on account of not having any blankets. In fact, a great deal of our equipment was missing.

On the 3rd of November we received orders to move to another nearby billet, marching to the village of Lisle-en-Rigault, which had better accommodations than our former place. We were again billeted in a French barrack. There were no other activities this day. On the 5th several promotions were announced to the company by Lieutenant Stone and at the same time we commenced to receive our equipment. Two officers joined us on the 7th, namely: Second Lieutenants S. A. Warren and Alfred J. Zickert and also twenty-one enlisted men as replacements. We were hearing numerous rumors about the armistice but nothing official.

On the 10th we received orders to move up again to the line, starting the following day. All preparations had been made for the hike up and everything was in readiness for a hard campaign. On the 11th, while we were awaiting the hour to start back to the lines, an order came in, cancelling all moves, and one-half hour later it was officially announced that the Armistice had been signed. The signing of the Armistice brought joy to everyone and the news was received enthusiastically, the French population doing their share of the celebrating.

A regimental maneuver was held in the vicinity of Saudrupt on the 12th. We moved from Lisle-en-Rigault on the 14th of Haironville. These three villages were in a radius of six kilometers, so it was just the matter of an hour or two to move from one to the other. On the 16th we moved from Haironville to Morley, a distance of twenty-one kilometers. We did not lose a single man on the march and though we were all very tired we were in the best of spirits. The next four days we spent in Morley, resting, taking only enough exercise to keep us in good health. We left Morley on the morning of the 22nd, and marched seventeen kilometers to an entraining point, where we entrained in box cars.

Our field kitchen, having left the night before we did, was ready with our breakfast. It may be mentioned here that we left Morley at break of day and by this time we were in almost as good a physical condition as ever, so a march of seventeen kilometers was a short distance to us. We left the railhead early in the afternoon and traveled all the rest of

that day and all night. We arrived at Vitry on the morning of the 23rd. After detraining, we marched for a distance of about seventeen kilometers, where we finally stopped for dinner, and after eating our dinner we started on our march again.

We passed through Bourbonne Les Bains in the Department of Haute Marne, continuing our march for the rest of the afternoon for a distance of twelve more kilometers, which made a total distance of twenty-nine kilometers at least, if not more, under heavy marching order. We arrived at Parnot in Haute Marne at about 6:30 P. M.

There is no doubt that this was as hard a hike as we ever had with the exception of one other. But nevertheless, we came in with a full command, and did not leave any stragglers along the road. The 24th was a day of rest and, although it was Saturday, we did not go through the usual Saturday morning inspection, and from the manner in which the most of us walked up and down the streets of the village we were badly in need of the same. The 25th of November was also a rest day, and on this day we received a new company commander. Captain Paul Hevener, also another officer, First Lieutenant Douglas M. Goodwillie. On the 26th we needed a little limbering up exercise, so we went to the drill field for five hours.

The rest of the month of November was devoted mainly to camp activities. Of course we had a lot to be thankful for, so we had a real Thanksgiving dinner. Thanks to our mess sergeant, it was a great success. It was almost as good as we could have had at home.

The greater part of December was devoted to maneuvers of either small or large importance. There is not a hill within a radius of several kilometers of Parnot that has not been taken from the assumed enemy. Sometimes K Company was placed in the assaulting wave, at other times in the support. From the 1st to the 16th, we engaged mostly in these maneuvers and close order drills. In the meantime, we received some replacements and some of our old men which placed our company at almost full strength. We also received orders for a brigade review at Serqueux, France, a small village where the Headquarters of the 116th Infantry were located, also our Brigade Headquarters. We marched to Serqueux, a distance of about eight kilometers. It started to rain about the time we arrived there and continued to rain throughout the ceremonies which followed. We had to stand at attention for a considerably long time while the decoration ceremony was taking place. One officer and thirteen enlisted men from various units of the 58th Brigade were decorated on that date. There were lots of other decorations that followed, but they were not bestowed by the Brigade Commander, so that was the only brigade ceremony we had at the time. About the 17th, we received orders for a divisional maneuver which was to take place in the area of the 115th Infantry. On the 19th, we marched from Parnot to Ainsville, a distance of about twenty kilometers, where we billeted with K Company of the 115th Infantry that night.

On the 20th, the grand maneuver was held, K Company being placed in the assaulting wave almost on the extreme left flank of the division. After recall, we marched back to where we were billeted, a distance of about eight kilometers, where we spent the night. On the following morning we marched from Ainsville to Parnot. The remainder of the month of December was devoted to camp activities. During that time, Lieutenant A. H. Stone received the D. S. C. and Private John Marsh, the French Croix de Guerre.

Christmas Day was a great day, thanks again to our hard working mess sergeant. Of course, there were lots of rumors in regard to the 29th Division sailing very soon, for no one realized that we would stay in France as long as we did, and we were all very anxious to go home, the sunshine being a very rare thing to see in Parnot at that time. The weather was fierce. It rained about all the time and it made the maneuvers and all the other drills almost unbearable. It was very hard for one to keep clean.

The weather for the month of January was almost identical with December, except for about two weeks in which we had two or three inches of snow and very cold weather. For the most part, we had camp activities



with a little decrease in maneuvers and an increase in close order drills. Our maneuvers changed from offensive to defensive warfare. Instead of attacking hill so and so, we established a line of defense around the village of Parnot, with orders to hold the enemy at all cost. Everything we did on these maneuvers was done exactly as under actual conditions with the exception of service ammunition. Besides these maneuvers we were undergoing a course of preliminary training for rifle range work. We also had built a rifle target, situated in the center of our regimental area, so that it would be an equal distance between units who were to use it. Speaking for the men of this command, their morale was a wonderful thing to see. They took everything with as good grace as could be expected under the best of peace-time conditions to say nothing of those actually existing. All of us could see the mistakes that were made once in a while. About the hardest thing to make the men believe is that it was necessary for them to drill when it was raining. The greater part of the time during the months of December and January we were drilling in mud that was up to our ankles. It certainly made one proud to be an American to see the way the men behaved under these conditions. Whether or not they were necessary to the welfare of the United States Army is unknown to the most of us. After finishing our preliminary training we went to the rifle range the latter part of the month, half of the company going one day, the other half the next. Our scores were very good, considering the weather. It rained one day and snowed the next. We were relieved of our commander, Captain Hevener, the latter part of the month. He went to headquarters as regimental Adjutant, Lieutenant A. H. Stone, went away to school, leaving Lieutenant M. Goodwillie in command.

The month of February was spent in nearly the same way as January. We had a little more fair weather than we had been used to.

From the 1st to the 21st, there was nothing more than camp activities. We were confined to our drill field more closely than in January, the new I. D. R. having just reached us, we were absorbed in the new change in formation from platoon to section, etc.

On the 22nd of February, which was supposed to be a legal holiday, we were expecting a rest. We had a personal inspection in the morning, and about noon we received orders that there would be a formation in the afternoon. We were marched out to the woods, just outside of Parnot, and told to fix bayonets, after which order we were formed in a single skirmish line and swung through the woods and over the hills for a distance of about three kilometers. At first we thought it was a maneuver, but we saw that it was a strange formation to us. We soon learned that we were supposed to cover all that territory and chase out all the wild boars that were in the vicinity. Finally, recall sounded, and we assembled and were marched back to Parnot, but we had not seen a single boar.

The weather conditions in the early part of March were somewhat better. In fact, we had hardly any rainy weather at all. From the 1st to the 16th, there was nothing accomplished other than camp activities and our Regimental Review at Arnoncourt, France. On the morning of the 16th, we moved to Serqueux, changing places with the 1st Battalion, that had been billeted there throughout our stay at Parnot. After arriving, there was nothing of special importance that happened until the 24th of March. On this date we marched a distance of about twelve kilometers, where we were reviewed and inspected by the commander in chief of the A. E. F., General John J. Pershing. We started on our march as a battalion at 6:30 A. M., returning to Serqueux about 7:30 P. M. The rest of this month was devoted to camp activities, a little change being made by which we never had to drill in bad weather.

On the 3rd of April, the 116th Regiment, as a whole, proceeded in trucks to Chaumont, France, to be reviewed by Field Marshal Sir Douglas Haig, General John J. Pershing and four other generals of the American Army. Between the 3rd and the 12th there, nothing more than camp activities was undertaken.

On the morning of the 12th we proceeded to Vichy, where we entrained for Le Mans. After arriving in the Le Mans area we were billeted at a small village, namely, the Conge-sur-Orne.



## Summary of Activities—Company L, One Hundred and Sixteenth Infantry, Twenty-Ninth Division

Organized October 4, 1917, at Camp McClellan, Anniston, Alabama, from Companies E, G and L, 1st Virginia Infantry. Trained there until June, 1918. Left Camp McClellan for Hoboken, N. J. June 14th. Sailed on the *Finland* for France June 15th, and arrived St. Nazaire on the 27th. Left for Champlitte July 3rd, marching thence to Gilley. Entrained on the 17th for Champigny and marched to Oisemont and billeted. Moved to Rougemont on the 24th and on the next day to Geuvenheim. Company ordered into trenches in C. R. Balschwiller on August 3rd. Relieved after five days and marched to Bellmagny, thence to Reppe and resumed training. Moved from Reppe to St. Cosme and on August 20th marched to Traubach-le-Haute. Company proceeded to Ueberkumen and entered lines again. Relieved September 9th and returned to St. Cosmes. Company proceeded to Belfort September 23rd and entrained for Revigny, marching thence to Seigneulles. Moved to Souhesme-le-Grande October 1st. Moved into woods near Verdun October 3rd, and took up attack position night of October 7th. Took part in the engagements of Malbrouck Hill, Molleville Farm, Boise de Ormont, Bois de Grande Montagne, Etrayes Ridge. Relieved October 28th and moved to Verdun. Proceeded by trucks to Saudrupt on the 30th. Six days later marched to Lisle-en-Rigault and on the 15th proceeded to Haironville, thence to Morley two days later. Entrained at Ligny November 22nd for Vitrey, marching thence to Parnot. Remained there in training through the winter. Moved to Serqueux March 16, 1919. Entrained for the Le Mans area April 12th. Detrained at Beaumont and marched to St. Aignam and billeted.

# History of Company L

[EDITOR'S NOTE:—The author of this story is not known.]

The history of Company L, 116th Infantry, properly begins at the period of its transition from a National Guard footing to the status of a Federalized unit. The nucleus of the original company was derived from Companies E, G, and L of the 1st Virginia Regiment, National Guard. These troops were called into active service on July 25, 1917. The next two months were devoted to training in Lynchburg, Va. The troops were then ordered to Camp McClellan, Anniston, Alabama, and arrived there on September 25, 1917. Nine days later, on October 4th, the unit was first officially designated by its present title—Company L, 116th Infantry.

The officers of the original company were all former members of the 1st Virginia Regiment. These comprised Captain G. M. Alexander, First Lieutenants R. C. McGhee, G. M. Bell, J. P. Murrell, and Second Lieutenants A. G. Phillips and S. A. Johnson. Changes in officer personnel before leaving America were as follows: Lieutenant Phillips was transferred from the company in December. First Sergeant W. C. Gannaway was commissioned and assigned to the company on January 11, 1918; Lieutenants G. M. Bell and J. P. Murrell were discharged on account of physical disability. On May 3rd, Lieutenants S. A. Johnson and W. C. Gannaway were transferred from the company, and on the same date First Lieutenants S. P. Serrett and W. D. Cunningham were assigned to the company. On May 10th, Second Lieutenants E. J. Dashiell and F. P. Isensee, who had been cartied as candidate officers attached, were commissioned and assigned to the company.

During the month of May approximately one hundred enlisted men from Camp Gordon were received as replacements to bring the company up to full strength in anticipation of overseas service.

After nearly eight months of intensive training at Camp McClellan, the 29th Division was ordered to proceed overseas. Company L entrained on June 14th, and proceeded to Hoboken as the designated port of embarkation. The company arrived at the port on June 15th, and that night the process of embarkation was completed. The vessel was the U. S. S. *Finland*, accompanied by a convoy of twelve other ships. The boat sailed the following day.

The twelve day voyage was uneventful, and a landing was made at St. Nazaire on June 28, 1918. The company remained in a rest camp at St. Nazaire until July 3rd, when it entrained. On July 5th, it detrained at Champlitte, from whence it marched to Gilley, where billets were provided. There the company experienced its first training on French soil. On July 17th, Company L marched to an entraining point, and after a six-hour ride, arrived at Champagny. From there a hike was made to Oisemont, in which town the company was billeted and renewed its training activities.

On the 24th of July a march from Oisemont to Rougemont was made, and the remainder of the day was devoted to rest in the latter village. The march was resumed the following morning until the Alsatian town Geuvenheim was reached. There the finishing touches were put on the training, and final preparations made for the first encounter with the Boche.

On August 3rd, after slightly more than a month spent in France, the company received the welcome news that it would have its first opportunity of holding a section of the actual fighting front. A march was made to C. R. Balschwiller sector, where the 305th French Infantry was relieved. This first tour of duty was limited to five days, when the company marched to Bellmagny. The following day a march was made to Reppe, where training was resumed. While stationed at Reppe, Lieutenant McGhee left the company and returned to the United States in the capacity of instructor. At this town Captain Alexander returned from school and rejoined the company.

Shortly afterwards the company moved from Reppe to St. Cosme. The

next move came on August 20th, when a march to Traubach-le-Haute was made. A week later Company L hiked to Ueberkumen and went into the lines as a part of a reserve battalion. It was on this tour of duty that the company suffered its first casualties. Three men were wounded by machine guns. On September 9th, the company was relieved and marched to its billets in St. Cosmes. There Captain Ewart Johnston assumed command of the company.

On September 18th a hike was made from St. Cosmes to Reppe and the following five days were given over to training. By this time the experience gained in the comparatively quiet Alsace Sector added to the training received in rest areas had brought the fighting qualities of the men to a high pitch. Company L, in common with the other units of the 29th Division, was considered worthy of assuming a responsible part in the fierce struggle then going on on the Meuse Sector.

On the 23rd of September the company marched from Reppe to Belfort, where it entrained. After a fifteen-hour ride, it detrained at Revigny. From there it hiked to Seigneulles, in which town the company was billeted in reserve for the St. Quentin drive. On September 30th, an all night march was completed and the following day the company bivouacked in a woods. The march was resumed early on the morning of October 1st and was maintained until the village of Souhesme-la-Grande was reached. This town was left on October 3rd and a six-hour hike ensued. The night was spent in a wood near Verdun. On the night of the seventh a march was made from there to the trenches, where a position for attack was taken up. The zero hour was 5:00 o'clock the following morning, and at that time the company went over the top to its first major offensive. Every effort met with success; all objectives were reached, and always within the time allotted. In this first advance the company captured 273 prisoners and numerous machine guns.

The position at the normal objective was consolidated, organized and held as a front line. This line was maintained for three days by Company L. On the 11th, two of the company's platoons were moved to fill a gap between the 113th and 116th Infantry. They were relieved on October 12th, when the whole company was assembled and moved back into the regimental support. After remaining in support for two days, the company again attacked on October 15th. In spite of desperate resistance, the company was again successful in reaching its objective and the ground was held throughout the night of the 15th. The next morning the company was relieved and placed in brigade reserve.

On the morning of October 18th, the company relieved Company F, 116th Infantry, in the front line sector occupied by them, and maintained this position until the morning of the twenty-third. After that the company was in regimental reserve for eleven hours. At 5:30 P. M. on the 23rd, the company moved back to the Bois-de-la Grand Montagne and spent the night of the twenty-fourth. This position was maintained until the company was relieved by a company of the 115th Infantry on the night of the twenty-seventh. Thereupon the company again went into regimental reserve.

On the following day, October 28th, the company withdrew to Verdun. Leaving Verdun on the 30th, motor transports were furnished to Saudrupt. After a six days' stay in Saudrupt, the company marched to Lisle-en-Regault, where training was resumed. There the first replacements received in France, eighty-one in number, were absorbed by the company. On November 15th a hike to Haironville was taken, and two days were spent there.

The next march took the company to Morley, where a five-day stay ensued. At the expiration of the time there was a hike to Ligny, where the company entrained on November 22nd. Detraining at Vitry-sur-Montigny, the company marched to Bourbonne-les-Bains, where it passed in review before the Commanding General of the Division.

After passing in review before the Commanding General of the Division the company hiked to the town of Parnot, arriving there on November 23rd. Little did the company think that this (would be) city was to be their home during the winter months.



Immediately after locating our billets, getting thoroughly policed up and having a few days rest after the rather strenuous trip to this area, we began with the old familiar precision drills. But due to the fact that we had rain practically every day, we should probably have derived more benefit from swimming classes than from hard hours of drill. About December 13th the company received twenty-one additional men as replacements.

Remaining days of the month were taken up with the training and endeavors to equip the men against the rigors of the French winter. The months of January, February and March were merely repetitions of the month of December and they were taken up with intensive training accompanied with a very general supply of rain. During these months at approximately ten day intervals, the company sent leave details to Southern France.

The one change of the monotony of our stay in this area was a move from Parnot to Serqueux, which took place on March 16, 1919. It was quite a red letter day in our history, in that it did not rain. On the 4th day of April this company accompanied the regiment on the trip to Chaumont, when the regiment was reviewed and inspected by the Commanders in Chief of the British and American Expeditionary Forces.

On the 6th of April long expected orders to move to the embarkation area were received and until the 12th everyone was busy preparing records, property and everything in general to expedite our move to the States when we should arrive in the embarkation area. On the 12th, we embussed on trucks and rode to Jussy, where we were entrained for Le Mans. After two days' ride we detrained at Beaumont and hiked twenty kilometers to our present station at St. Aignan.

On April 20th this company accompanied the 3rd battalion to Le Mans to act as an escort of honor for some American soldiers who were killed in the railway accident. This company was held over until the following Monday to act as an escort of honor at a French funeral for French soldiers who were killed in the same railway accident.

The company is stationed at St. Aignan at this writing, with everyone working hard to obtain the proper standard required for home-going troops. The work is tedious, but no one objects, because he sees at the end of the work that goal to which he has looked forward since landing in France—HOME.

In conclusion, it may fairly be said that Company L played a most praiseworthy part in the campaigns and final victory of the A. E. F. and the Allies. In the final battles in the Meuse Sector, which later proved to be one of the most decisive engagements of the entire war, Company L was able to furnish, not only a successful but even a spectacular contribution, to the ultimate glorious result.

It is a matter of pride to every man of the organization, that Company L was never assigned an objective that it did not win, and never entrusted with a line that it did not hold.

## Summary of Activities—Company M, One Hundred and Sixteenth Infantry, Twenty-Ninth Division

Organized October 4, 1917, at Camp McClellan, Anniston, Alabama, from Companies L and M, 2nd Virginia Infantry. Trained there until June, 1918. Entrained for Hoboken, N. J., June 12, 1918. Sailed on the *Finland* for France, June 15th, and arrived St. Nazaire on the 27th. Left for Champlitte July 3rd, marching thence to Gilley. After training there for two weeks, company marched to Vaux and entrained for Bas-Euthe, marching thence to Vescemont. Proceeded to Geuvenheim and entered trenches in Haute Alsace sector on July 25th. Relieved July 30th and marched to Reppe. Continued in Alsace sector until September 23rd. Marched to Belfort and entrained for Revigny, proceeding thence to Seigneulles. Left on the 28th and reached woods near Fort du Chana outside of Verdun October 3rd. Remained there until the 7th, then moved into attack position. Took part in the engagements of Malbrouck Hill, Molleville Farm, Bois de Ormont, Bois de Grande Montagne, Etrayes Ridge. Relieved October 28th, and marched to Verdun, thence proceeded by trucks to Saudrupt. Two days later moved to Lisle-en-Rigault and on November 15th, marched to Hairenville. Left for Morley on the 17th and on the 22nd entrained at Ligny for Vitrey, marching thence to Parnot and billeting. Spent winter in training at Parnot. Moved to Serqueux March 16, 1919. Entrained for the Le Mans area April 12th, and went into billets at Luce-sons Ballon.

# History of Company M

[EDITOR'S NOTE:—The author of this story is not known.]

Companies L and M, of the 2nd Virginia Infantry, were formed into Company M, 116th Infantry, on October 4, 1917, at Camp McClellan, Alabama, with Captain James W. Wright in command and the following officers: First Lieutenant Elliott H. Howe, First Lieutenant James E. John, Second Lieutenant Will P. Nye and Second Lieutenant Joseph R. Moss, and a total strength of 248 enlisted men. Captain James W. Wright was relieved from duty with Company M, 116th Infantry, on May 7, 1918, and First Lieutenant James E. John assumed command and remained in command until May 29, 1918, when he was transferred to the Dental Reserve Corps and First Lieutenant James F. Dunn assumed command of the company.

After nine months of training this organization departed from Camp McClellan, Alabama, June 12, 1918, arrived at port of embarkation, Hoboken, N. J., on June 14th, sailed from the United States on June 15th on the U. S. S. *Finland* and arrived at St. Nazaire, France, on June 27th, and disembarked on June 28th and went into rest camp at St. Nazaire, France. The organization entrained at St. Nazaire on July 3, 1918, for Champlitte, France, and arrived July 5th, detrained and marched to Gilley, France, and there went into billets, remaining there until July 17, 1918.

Lieutenant James F. Dunn was relieved from command of the company by assignment of Captain Alfred D. Barksdale, on July 12, 1918. After two weeks of intensive training at Gilley, the command marched to Vaux, France, and entrained for Bas-Euethé, France, detrained and marched to Vescemont on July 17th. About ten days later the company left for Geuvenheim, France, going into trenches there in the Haute Alsace center about July 25th. Continuing in defense in various sectors of the Alsace Front until September 23rd. After leaving this sector the company marched to Belfort, and entrained for Revigny, detrained there and marching to Seigneulles, France, where the company went into billets for a few days. Marched from there to woods near Verdun, where the company bivouacked for several days, leaving there on the evening of October 7, 1918. On the morning of October 8th, it took up its position on the Meuse River, northeast of Verdun, and took part in the following battles: Battle of Malbrouck Hill, October 8, 1918; Molleville Farm, October 10, 1918; attack on Bois-de'Ormont, October 11, 1918; Grand Montagne, October 16, 1918; capture of Etrayés Ridge, October 23, 1918; attack on Bo's Belleau, October 26, 1918.

The company losses during these operations were: First Lieutenant Elliott H. Howe, killed in action on October 11, 1918, and Second Lieutenant James M. Malcomb, seriously wounded on October 12, 1918, and thirteen enlisted men killed and seventy-four wounded. The company was relieved from the front on the night of October 28, 1918, and marched to Verdun and moved by trucks from Verdun to Saudrupt. It was in Saudrupt two days and then marched to Lisle-en-Rigault and was in training there for several days. It then marched to Ligny and entrained for Vitry and marched from there to Parnot, France, where the company resumed training. The present strength of the organization was six officers and 218 enlisted men. The company left Parnot, France, on the 24th of December, 1918, to represent the 116th Infantry in a parade before the President of the United States, near Langres, France.

When the United States declared war on Germany, on April 6, 1917, the military elements which later fused into the organization known as Company M, 116th Infantry, 29th Division, had but recently returned from service on the Mexican Border, had been mustered out for a period of a little over a month, and had been called into service again to do guard duty on a railroad bridge in Virginia. These elements were Company M, of Radford, Va., and Company L, of Pulaski, Va., State guard troops in the old 2nd Virginia.

Railroad guarding was a duty faithfully rendered, but the men were all eager for service overseas, and it was with relief and joy they got the order in September to go South to Camp McClellan, Alabama, for they knew



that meant their coming chance in the big "scrap." At Camp McClellan, on October 4th, the home troops of the two sister towns in Virginia were incorporated in one modern battlesize Company M of the 116th Infantry, 29th Division, later to become famous along the Alsace Sector and in the Meuse Argonne fighting as the "Blue and Gray" division. The officers of the company were Captain James W. Wright, First Lieutenants Elliott H. Howe and James E. John; Second Lieutenants Will P. Nye and James R. Moss, Russell L. Stone, of the former Company L, was appointed First Sergeant. The roster of the company was as given in the appendix of this history.

Nine long months were put in at Camp McClellan, mastering the advanced points of soldiering, a harder discipline, and the latest tactics of the war overseas. Every man was anxious to get to France and prove the mettle of himself and the Division, but for a time the opportunity was to be denied the old warrior blood of Virginia. But at last the order came, the final flurry of physical examination and equipping was gotten over, and the division entrained for Hoboken, N. J. On June 12th, the 116th Infantry filed aboard the transport *Finland*, a White Star Liner of tourist days, and we were fairly set for the voyage across the ocean and what lay beyond.

Mal-der-Mer took the toll of casualties in Company M, as might have been expected. A stout heart cannot always guarantee the performance of a weak stomach. Yet in a few days the men were up again "rarin' to go," and eating everything above board and below. Submarine spotting was the next diversion, being the first taste of war excitement itself. However, everything passed quietly along the Atlantic, as far as the *Finland* was concerned, and on the 27th of June land was sighted. The transport docked that evening at St. Nazaire.

Here the regiment went for five days into a rest camp to get its land legs again. On July 3rd, camp was broken early for the purpose of an introduction to the "Hommes 40-Chevaux," which were to transport the troops to the front. It was an introduction the men did not clamor for and would have declined gladly, for as one private drawled out after taking a good look at the dinky shacks on wheels, "Lawdy Gawd, they sure are hard on horses here." But at the word of command, all piled in and the peanut roaster engine, with a toot of its tin whistle, jerked the train off eastward. Two days of bully beef, canned tomatoes, hard tack, and coffee, with nights that grew corns on all parts of the anatomy, brought the regiment to Champ-litte. Here the troops detrained and Companies M and L marched by themselves to Gilley, where they went into billets for a training period of two weeks. "De luxing" with "Chevaux 8's" had prepared the boys for these billets, which were most often former abodes of the same animals that had rated the cars. However, the boys didn't weaken. They were after the Hun and would have slept in pigstyes if necessary.

At Gilley, Captain A. D. Barksdale was assigned to the company, relieving Lieutenant Dunn, who had been in charge since Camp McClellan days, after the transfer of Captain Wright. The training now was very rigorous and intensive, for it was virtually in a reserve line position, almost in sound of the guns. Chauchat rifles were issued to the company here; those little iron mules which spit death out of their teeth and kick h—l out of the man who shoots them. But it all looked like stern work ahead.

Two weeks at Gilley—then the two companies marched up to Vaux and entrained there for Bas Euthe, still nearer the front. At eight o'clock on the night of July 17th, Bas Euthe was reached; the troops got off, and started for Vescemont, led by a French guide, whose knowledge of the terrain was evidently not gauged for darkness. At any rate, he took six hours to lead the companies the seven kilometers of actual distance, and when he finally got them to Vescemont he had strewn half the two companies over the byways of Eastern France. Speaking of this march, Lieutenant Nye said: "We got to some town at 2:00 o'clock in the morning. I was beat out but decided to try one more hitch. Then the word came along we were at Vescemont and should make ourselves comfortable until morning. I was sitting on a stone wall when I heard that, and I simply fell over into an apple orchard and went to sleep."

Ten days passed in training at Vescemont, after which the company marched to Geuvenheim, and on the 25th of July went into the trenches for the first time in what was known as the Haute Alsace Sector, relieving French troops who had been holding them.

Though almost on the battle line, the war was not very serious here. The campaigns had pivoted north of Verdun, and both lines near this Alsace frontier were static. The rumble of guns could be heard far to the north, occasionally a Boche plane came over, and a French antique battle plane would chase it warily back. Sometimes there were patrols, working parties and night wiring jobs. Only one casualty was suffered: Private Hider Fair had a hole bored in his left arm by a bullet from the rifle of a comrade who was presumably engaged in the peaceful occupation of cleaning the gun.

On the evening of July 30th, Company M was relieved by French troops and marched back to rest billets at Reppe. The hike this time was even longer than the one which had brought them up to Vescemont, but the boys were hardened and in good spirits, proud of having been in a front line trench and done their first bit of active service.

Several days were spent in hard training and maneuvers, synonyms for rest, and then companies M and L, the Headquarters and Supply Companies, which had likewise been doing their resting at Reppe, moved up to Traubach-le-Haute as a reserve for troops in the front line at that sector. The hard drilling and maneuvers continued, and one night things were made interesting by an assortment of G. I. cans which the Hun artillery sent over as a special present to a battery of French "75's", located near Company M's kitchen. Fritz's aim was bad and the only thing he didn't hit was the battery itself. After the kitchen had been liberally peppered by bursting shell, the "corps de cuisine" double-timed to some dugouts close by. Sergeant Walker C. Anderson in the general excitement over Jerry's indiscriminate shooting, came in contact with a barbed wire entanglement and was so earnest in his desire to get to a dugout that he apparently bit the wire in two with his teeth. At any rate he appeared in the dugout with a bad wound in his lip. When the question of a wound stripe came up for this later, it was ruled that although Fritz was indirectly responsible for the wound, no award could be given as Sergeant Anderson had made use of an authorized practice in destroying barbed wire. That same evening Mechanic Painter was robbed of his night's rest by shell splinters which made nightmares of his dreams.

After Reppe came Beuthweilen, where the company went into support of the units on the line. During this period many working parties were sent out to put up barbed wire and build trenches in No Man's land. Special diversion was afforded by Boche aeroplanes which would drift down out of the sky with silent engines and suddenly shoot up the company street. One private, doing observation work in the top of a tree, tumbled "toot sweet" out of there as a great plane came roaring over, spitting fire and lead. And now and then the Hun shelled the area and seemed to take particular delight in blistering doughboy epidermis with mustard gas. The only casualty, however, was accidental: Private George J. Galligan shot himself in the foot while on guard duty.

The company was relieved from the Haute Alsace sector on September 23rd and with the united battalion it marched to Belfort, joined the company and entrained for Revigny, southwest of Verdun. Here the company detrained and hiked to Seigneulles for a rest, but really were in reserve for the forces then fighting in the Argonne. The thunder of the guns could be heard there as a portent of the hard fighting now before the 29th Division.

On the morning of the 28th, the battalion left Seigneulles and marched to the northeast. Hard hikes and short bivouacks brought it on the evening of the 3rd of October to a small wood in the shadow of one of Verdun's forts, du Chana. Here camp was made and lasted until the night of the 7th when extra bandoleers of ammunition were issued and a full supply of cartridges for the 45's with plenty of sag paste. Then the battalion set out for somewhere up front.

There was no mistake about it. Twenty kilometers through rain and the dark, with camions rushing by, and towards midnight an occasional



"G. I." wobbling and whooping over and flashing into explosion somewhere beyond. But not until later was the full significance of this realized for we were actually registered on the French line, and where the 29th Division was marching at that time was virtually in No Man's Land. About one o'clock on the morning of the 8th, the 3rd Battalion passed through a razed village, found afterwards to be Samogneux, and pushed out beyond to a slope where the order was given for a halt and the men dropped to a quick slumber in the open.

At 5:30 hell broke loose with a barrage from our own lines and shortly the order came to go "over the top." The first platoon, under Lieutenant Howe, and the second platoon under Lieutenant Malcolm, were the assault platoons; the third and fourth platoons led by Sergeants Krueger and Alley were in support. Captain Barksdale commanded the company and led the attack as coolly as if he had been on parade. A shell struck near him. "Fallin' short," he drawled critically, thinking it was a shot from his own barrage. But it soon turned out to be an answering Hun shell, and thereafter hell was considerably aggravated.

Lieutenant Howe's platoon on the right was the first to come in contact with the enemy. An Austrian major ran out of a dugout, hell bent for Vienna, but Sergeant W. J. Price opened up on him with an automatic and dropped him far short. Others were seen breaking for the rear. Private Sam Price, who had done all his previous hunting in the backwoods of Virginia, wanted to know, "May you shoot 'em settin', or must you jump 'em first?" Most of the enemy in front that first day or two were Austrians and they covered a lot of ground in the get-away, which brought Private Mercer Caldwell to remark: "Gee, if they are going to keep up at this rate, we'll have to get motorcycles to keep up with them." Corporal R. A. Camper in charge of a squad of "moppers up" showed plenty of speed himself, for he actually got ahead of the first wave. When asked about his hurry he said he "wanted to finish the war and get back home."

Naturally some prisoners were annexed. Private Norman Dickerson passed by a dugout and yelled, "come out of there." He was surprised when ten Boche came running out with their hands up and offered him cigars and souvenirs of all kinds. Others were taken; the men passed them back and kept on going. In fact on that first day "over the top" the men seemed absolutely fearless. Sergeant Farmer commented, "The boys went over like they were going to a circus and the only trouble we had was keeping them from killing the prisoners. They sure were looking for gore."

The objective was reached at 11 o'clock and the company halted and took cover while the supporting lines "leap-frogged ahead." The assault line then was on Malbrouck Hill which gave its name to the battle. Here the first death occurred. Private James Pirto was killed by the concussion of a shell and later that same day Corporal R. S. Hawks fell, a victim of a machine gun bullet. The men began to realize that they were in a battle. Towards evening Sergeant Crockett was shot in the hand. At the dressing station he said, "I ought to have known better than try to stop 'em' without a big mitt."

During the night the men got what sleep they could in the shell holes where they lay. The shelling persisted; sometimes violent, sometimes dying away. A "77" struck on the edge of the hole occupied by Sergeants Price and A. J. Bradley, but did not explode. "Wonder why it didn't go off?" puzzled Bradley. "It shows God is with us," Sergeant Price thankfully replied.

Early the next morning Corporal Levere Kyle was killed by a piece of shrapnel. The company advanced and took up a position in the abandoned trenches of the enemy, holding them until the evening of the 10th. Shrapnel killed Private Romano as he was starting on a ration detail and Privates Sam Allen and Hattendorf were wounded by the same shell.

Late on the evening of the 10th, Company M moved farther front into some woods, the Bois de Consenvoye, with the intention of passing the night there, but the shell fire was so heavy that a withdrawal was



ordered to some dugouts a short distance back. Just after dawn the next morning an advance was again made and position taken up in the woods.

Here an event occurred which brought regret and a sense of bereavement to the entire company. A shell burst at the side of Lieutenant Howe as he was momentarily resting, and a great fragment tore the life from his gallant body. He lived long enough to exclaim, "I believe I'm hit," and sank to the ground, dying almost immediately after. Sergeant Farmer took up the leadership of the first platoon.

All that day the company was under shell fire, but suffered no further casualties. About dark the line was advanced nearer the enemy and the night spent in seeking sleep to the melody of "G. I. cans," which wobbled overhead and dropped all about. Corporal H. R. French was on guard this night. He remarked to a comrade; "I wish they would hit me in the head with a chocolate cake." Just then a shell, one size smaller than a field kitchen, landed within ten feet of the guard but did not explode. "That was a hell of a chocolate cake," exclaimed Private Roy Shartezer, "don't wish for any more of them." The same night Private Earnest Woolwine was gone for a few minutes up in the woods. When he returned Corporal French said, "I thought you had left me, Wooly." "No, boy," he replied "I'll be with you when you get to Berlin." But the poor lad met his fate the next morning. Speaking of this night in the woods "Top" Sergeant Stone, said: "they remind me of Keystone, W. Va. on a pay day night more than any place I have seen for a long time." Which was some commentary on Keystone, W. Va. During the same night it was reported that Sergeant Farmer, with a small patrol, had been captured by the enemy; but it proved to be a mistake.

At dawn on the morning of the 12th the company advanced the line still farther along towards the enemy, and were on the edge of the Bois de Boissos when the Hun opened up with everything he possessed in the way of a gun. Hell sounded like a summer haven in comparison with that neck of the woods just then, and as some of the boys afterwards remarked: "Sherman may have said war was hell, but he sure owes hell an apology."

Shell were falling everywhere, in addition, machine gun bullets were whining and ripping through the cover. Corporals G. C. Richmond and Walter Kelly, Privates Woolwine, McCormack, Carnesi, Beasley Windham and Santucci were killed; Corporal Sam Vanover wounded by a machine gun bullet; and gas put out of action the following men—Corporal French, Privates Caldwell, O'Steen, Dale, Covey, Geter, Good and Reed.

The wounded men were carried into dugouts and the dead subsequently taken back and buried near the road in the Bois de Consenvoye. Lieutenant Howe's grave was put a little apart with a hasty fence enclosure. Then what was left of the company was reorganized and a front line established in the edge of the woods.

That night Sergeant Bienkampen, Corporals Manning Perdue, and Horton and twelve privates were sent out on the left as a patrol to establish liaison with the 115th Infantry. They had to go through rain and shell fire and wire entanglements, fell into shell holes and ditches, but performed their mission with unflinching courage.

Further casualties were suffered in the fighting of the 13th; Privates Leone Introe and John Barazotta received mortal wounds dying later in the hospital; Lieutenant James Malcomb, Privates Herman Palmer, Alma Maxwell, Charles Tilson, Francis Monaghan, George Chrisman, George Meadows, William Brady and Charles Brady were severely wounded by shrapnel, high explosive, and machine gun fire; Corporal Ratcliffe and Privates Allen Ayres, James Thomas, Roy Patrick, Harvey Mentinck, John Haithcoot, Sam Henderson, William Davis, Fred Scheerhoorn, Rufus Kiser, and George Sibley were slightly wounded by gun fire; Privates Claudius Albin and Carson Thompson were gassed; and Corporal Willie Albert. Privates Roy Shartzer, Frank Moore, William Slight, Lee Collins, and Albert Hawkes suffered shell shock. It was war in earnest, but though the soldiers of Company M were but boys, they fought and died like men.

The lines established in the Bois de Boissois were held courageously by the few men available until the 15th of October. While in these trenches Corporal Manning told Sergeant Farmer there was an enemy machine gun on top of Company P. C. "To hell with it," said Sergeant Farmer. "They've got to have a 6 inch machine gun to get me." Later in the same day he was shot in the foot with a machine gun bullet.

On the night of the 14th Captain Barksdale came into the P. C. with a queer grin on his face. "Men, I've got some good dope," he said "we're going over the top again in the morning." Next morning, sure enough, the order came. The men did not hesitate, but set out determinedly on what had become a grim business. Corporal M. V. Perdue and Private Windham were hit almost instantly by machine gun bullets. Still the company pressed ahead, crossed Molleville Farm, and gained the objectives on the hill leading to the Grand Montagne.

While making this advance, German patrols were discovered in the woods on the right flank. Another company had failed to come up to protect it. Captain Barksdale, Sergeants Bienkampen and Alley and Private Horton went into the woods after them with automatics and rifles and drove them off with considerable losses. Private Horton, later corporal, said, "Captain Barksdale sure did make that 45 talk."

The company held the new position at the foot of the slope of the Grand Montagne during the night of the 15th and until the evening of the 16th. Captain Barksdale took charge of the battalion, the major being wounded, and Lieutenant Serret, of Company L, assumed command of the company. About this time Lieutenant Will P. Nye performed an exploit which won for him the D. S. C. He was with the major's staff as intelligence officer and when the battalion was stopped by machine gun fire from the Bois de la Grand Montagne, which wounded the major himself, he was ordered by the latter to find the gun wherever it was and put it out of action. Armed only with an automatic he started out. He was repeatedly fired on as he dodged from cover to cover through the woods, but luckily was unhit and finally succeeded in getting to the rear of the gun. At that point he discovered an unfinished dugout with a heap of "potato mashers" grenades in it. With these he attacked the gun position, killed or drove off the defenders and captured the weapon itself. This fact enabled the battalion to advance. Before he rejoined the staff, he fought a pistol duel with a German captain and killed him. His citation reads: "For extraordinary heroism in action near Samogneux, France, October 15, 1918. Lieutenant Nye advanced without assistance upon a machine nest and drove the crew from the gun."

In these same October battles of the company Sergeant Arville Alley and Private Everett Cooper—later corporal—both won the D. S. C. and subsequently had the good fortune and additional honor of being awarded the French Croix de Guerre. Sergeant Alley's citation for the D. S. C. reads: "On the 12th of October Sergeant Alley repeatedly exposed himself while aiding wounded comrades under terrific bombardment. On the 15th of October, he fearlessly entered the wood and drove back enemy detachments before they could place machine guns on the flank of his battalion. His Croix de Guerre states: "La 12 Octobre 1918, dans l'attaque du Bois de Bossois, S'eat exposee durant un violent bombardment, pour secourir des blesses et rallier sa section."

Cooper's general account of how he won his decoration is as follows: "Shelling got pretty hot north of Samogneux, on October 12th, and some of 'em were bursting terrible close to me. I saw Private Abner Maxwell fall and when he called for help I went over and bound his wounds up. Then I started to carry him to a safe place. The Germans saw me and tried to get me with a machine gun, and I was the only thing about they didn't hit. After that I carried a lot of messages for Barksdale. I didn't think I was doing much, but if I'd a thought I was a-going to get a D. S. C. for it I'd a swapped it right then for a good shot of cognac." His D. S. C. citation reads: "For extraordinary heroism in action near Samogneux, France, 12th October, 1918. Private Cooper left a safe place, went through a terrific barrage to help a wounded comrade, and brought him back under heavy machine gun fire. Private Cooper also carried important mes-



sages through the barrage." Croix de Guerre citation: "Le 12th October 1918, dans l'attaque du Bois de Bossois, au nord de Samogneux a, durant un violent barrage, quitte un abri pour secourir un camarade blesse. A port e a travars un violent barrage des messages importants."

From the 17th to the 28th the company moved back and forth between the Bois de Bossois and the Bois de la Grand Montagne, sometimes in support, sometimes in reserve, and again on the front line, while a battle was being waged on the right for possession of the Bois de Ormont, then a Hun strong point. At length on the afternoon of the 28th, the company pulled out on the main road, and that night at 8 o'clock started for Verdun, 20 kilometers distant.

The 3rd Battalion was united for this march which was done under the light of the stars and no other lights showing, a very necessary condition, for at a point an hour short of Verdun, Hun aeroplanes could be heard overhead, shutting their engines off now and then while they drifted down in search of the battalion. Verdun—that silent and desolated city—was reached shortly after midnight. Only a solitary M. P. or two could be seen, and once a "frog" kitchen. Shells were bursting about every fifteen minutes, a group of them, as they had been doing since the war began. A throbbing whistle and whine and then a blo-ho-o-om! Camp was made in the citadel over night—that great underground city—and the next evening at dusk the battalion left across the Meuse and were passing over a bridge above a railway when a great shell struck close which, had it been a little nearer, might have wrecked a company. The blinding flash and concussion reminded all that they were still near the front, though as it turned out this was virtually the Hun's farewell to the 3rd Battalion and M Company.

Just outside of Verdun camions were waiting, which took the battalion 60 kilometers to Saurupt, passing through Bar-le-Duc, home of world famous preserves. Saurupt was reached early on the morning of the 31st, where the troops went into barracks with real wire cots and no reveille. Two days were spent there, then came a march to Lisle-en-Rigault for another barrack stay. Here replacements came to the companies and two weeks were put in, close order and inspections. Some much needed clothing was issued; also war was waged on cooties. Sergeant Stone took a bath in the river Saulx in order to get rid of the cooties, but he lost out in the game of freeze-out, for the hardy pests thawed out with him when he got back to barracks and he had his painful bath for nothing.

While at Lisle-en-Rigault orders came in for a movement back to the front on the 11th of November, but during the night before, a counter-manding order reached the battalion. There was a rumor of an armistice, and the boys woke up in the morning to the sound of tooting horns and shouting and singing of the "Marseilles" by parading French soldiers and citizens, wild with ecstasy. Close order prevailed however for American soldiers.

On the morning of the fifteenth of November the battalion marched to Haironville, reached there in the afternoon, and stayed till the 17th for an inspection and muster. On the 17th came a "hell of a hell" of a hike to Morley, where camp was made until the 22nd. That day the battalion march to Ligny, entrained there late in the afternoon for Vitry, arrived at Vitry on the morning of the 23rd and march to Parnot, getting to this latter place just before dark.

Home was made in Parnot for a period which stretched into months. Horses and cows were routed out of their billets by doughboys, floors swept, corners manicured, and street gutters running with manurial richness policed of every fertile drop. The front yard manure piles, however, being hallowed by century old tradition and peasant farm economics, could not be touched. They had to be endured.

Two days before Christmas a signal honor unexpectedly came to the company. It was chosen to represent the regiment in the presidential review of the First Army to be held at Langres on Christmas Day. It sounded "Fair," and the boys trucked out of Parnot on December 24th, in good spirits. But as one of the boys said later, "we might have known it." The company debussed in the rain at old Fort de Pagny, outside of



Langres, on Christmas eve and Christmas morning—"the one morning of the year" did a 4:45 reveille. This was to enable the troops to get on the field three hours before the review and become acquainted with the terrain.

However, after it was over the boys were glad to have been there. It was the first and perhaps the last presidential review ever held in France. The president made a good speech and General Pershing was there. There were aeroplanes and tanks to keep up the excitement. And besides there was the exquisite fascination of trying to keeping a straight company line while passing in review, with the ends of the company alternating terra firma and mud. It no doubt gave the president a good idea of campaigning in France.

Parnot was "home" to company M after this trip. A training schedule was taken up, and the boys developed duck feet on the wet drill fields. Then came maneuvers of which the division maneuver on January 18th near Goudricourt was the chief. M Company hiked to Fouchecourt for this purpose and spent two nights there with Company M, 115th Infantry. Rain and a bent compass-bearing featured the maneuver.

Manure and maneuver correlated for some succeeding weeks with intervallic war on cootie and gonococcus. Washington's Birthday was made unique by a boar hunt. With bayonets fixed the battalion attacked all the bois from Aigremont to Serqueux. But every boar was in its dugout and the dugouts could not be located. The boar hunt proved a bore.

Leave areas having been opened up for the A. E. F. many from the company got trips to Aix-les-Bains and points as far south as Nice. The great game was "find the femmes and finish francs." All returning reported good times, except one or two who loved not wisely but too promiscuously.

Sunday night, March 9th, there was a big hobnail dance at Fresnoy. Some company Lotharios attended and enjoyed themselves hugely, but were picked up by M. P.'s, Fresnoy being out of the division area. Military punishment was dealt out to stop this toe tickling, and as a further inhibitive measure the 3rd Battalion, in which there were other unfortunate Lotharios, was moved to Serqueux, while the 1st Battalion which had done nothing worse than attempt to shoot up a town was put in Parnot.

General Pershing reviewed the division near Fresnes on March 24th. A nice wet meadow was picked out as appropriate to the purpose and proved not as boggy as it first looked for it held the division up over six hours without any more than wetting the doughboys' feet. A few clouds fell out of the sky and contributed the customary moisture. The commander-in-chief, however, made "good" by getting off his horse and in his fine shiny boots taking the whole staff up and down the sloppy fields between the open ranked platoons. This was "nuts" to the doughboys. Afterwards the general made a congratulatory speech.

Field Marshal Haig, of the British Army, with General Pershing and other prominent allied generals reviewed the 116th Infantry on the aviation field near Chaumont, April 4th. This was the best review held from the doughboy standpoint and it seemed to have merited high commendation from the distinguished general present. The G. H. Q. band played splendid music, to which company led the regiment in review, line of platoons, closemassed; in perfect alignment, swing and step. All came home with a good taste in the mouth.

On April 12th, the 116th Infantry pulled out of the manure villages of Haute Marne and entrained for the Le Mans area. The boys were sardined into American box cars but got to the new area on April 14th in good shape. M Company struck its own private village Luce-sons-Ballon about midnight, and found there amid the blooming hawthorn hedges a welcome relief from manure.

## Summary of Activities—One Hundred and Eleventh Field Artillery, Twenty-Ninth Division

Organized Camp McClellan, Anniston, Ala., in September, 1917, and trained there until June, 1918. Batteries A, B, C and D, and the Supply Company, left Camp McClellan, June 19, 1918, for Camp Mills, Long Island. Batteries E and F left for Camp Mills June 20th. Batteries D, E and F entrained June 28th for Philadelphia, and embarked on *City of Exeter*. Battery A and the Supply Company sailed on the *Demosthenes* June 29th. Batteries B and C sailed July 5th from New York, on *Aquitania*, and reached Liverpool July 11th. The other batteries reached Halifax July 3rd, left the next day and arrived at Liverpool July 15th. They entrained for Southampton at once. Batteries B and C had proceeded to Winchester from Liverpool. They entrained July 14th for Southampton and left on the 15th for France, reaching Cherbourg on the 16th and entraining for Poitiers on the 17th, arriving the following day. The rest of the regiment left Southampton July 17th and reached Havre the next day, entraining on the 20th for Poitiers, the Supply Company and Battery A preceding the others by one day. Batteries B and C and the Supply Company moved to Migne and Auxannes, Battery D to Chassaneul and Batteries E and F to Grand Pont. The regiment was ordered to Camp de Meucon August 24th and all units reached there by the 28th. Trained with French "75" until ordered to advanced zone, November 4th. Batteries A, B and C, and the Supply Company proceeded to Aillianville and Batteries D, E and F to Brechainville. No change of stations occurred until December 5th, when Battery D left for Voisey and E for Neuville-les-Voisey. Battery A and the Supply Company proceeded to Vernois-sur-Mance December 6th, while Battery C moved to Cemboisy and F to Neuville-les-Voisey. The regiment remained quartered as above until April, 1919, when it moved to the Le Mans area to prepare for embarkation.

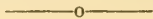
# History of the One Hundred and Eleventh Field Artillery

[From Date of Organization to June, 1918]

By Colonel T. M. Wortham

**Sources**—History of the 111th Field Artillery, by Colonel T. M. Wortham. History of Battery A, by Lieutenant C. H. McCurdy, Corporal V. S. Perkins and Private H. X. Thacker. History of Battery B, submitted by Colonel T. M. Wortham. History of Battery C, author not known. History of Battery D, author not known. History of Battery E, by First Lieutenant Charles T. Marrew and Sergeant John R. Mallery. History of Battery F, author not known. History of the Supply Company, by First Lieutenant Harry M. Hughes.

**Publications and Records Used for Reference and Corroboration.**  
Station Reports, Morning Reports, Returns, War Diaries, Regimental D. R. C., Operations Reports, Orders, Situation Maps, Training Reports, Medical Reports, Miscellaneous Section A. G. D., Camp Records, Organization Records, Militia Bureau Records, Overseas and G. H. Q. Records.



The 111th Field Artillery accepted by the Government August 5, 1917, for the war with Germany and Austria, based its organization upon the 1st Battalion of Virginia Field Artillery and Battery D, unattached (of Hampton, Va.), which had been in the United States service since the first call to the colors, the preceding June; the 1st Battalion in turn based its organization upon and consisted of the Richmond Howitzers, the Norfolk Light Artillery Blues and the Grimes Battery, of Portsmouth, Va., Batteries A, B, and C, respectively: Speaking in reverse order these were organized as follows, viz: The Grimes Battery dates its organization prior to the war of 1812 in which it achieved an enviable record. It was then known as the Portsmouth Light Artillery and the principal engagement in which it took part was the battle of Craney Island in 1814, where under the command of Captain Arthur Emmerson it aided materially in the repulse of the British. On the 20th of April, 1861, the beginning of the Civil War, it entered the service of the Confederate States, equipped with four smooth bore iron guns, under command of Captain Cary F. Grimes, First Lieutenant John H. Thompson and Second Lieutenant, Bernard Fauth. Grimes was killed at Sharpsburg and was succeeded by Lieutenant Thompson as Captain. This organization and those graduating from it in the Army of Northern Virginia rendered distinguished service until the surrender at Appomattox, and the records contain frequent mentions of the same.

The Norfolk Light Artillery Blues Battery was organized February 22, 1828, with Captain Miles King as Captain. He died many years before the Civil War, but his work survived and in April, 1861, the battery reported with full ranks under Jacob Vickery, Captain; W. J. Nimmo, First Lieutenant, and John Barnham and S. P. Moore, Second Lieutenants, respectively. Barnham and Moore did not go into service with it however, and the officers until the close of the first year were Captain Vickery, First Lieutenant Nimmo, Second Lieutenant W. T. Peet, Second Lieutenant R. B. Banks, and First Sergeant Thos. Nash, Jr. The battery reported on April 19, 1861, removed the powder from Fort Norfolk, and on the morning of the 20th with two field pieces, proceeded down the harbor towards Craney Island, with orders to intercept the Baltimore boat and make prisoners a detachment of marines supposed to be on board. The steamer was stopped but the marines were not on board. The battery was armed with four brass howitzers which were soon turned over, however, to the Huger Bat-



tery, and the Blues were attached to the 16th Virginia Infantry as Company H until March 26th following, when they were detached and again reorganized as a battery of light artillery, with Charles R. Grandy, Captain and James W. Gumer, Second Lieutenant, *vice* Nimmo deceased. The battery as a part of the Army of Northern Virginia was conspicuous from 1861-65 for gallantry and was frequently mentioned in reports. Towards the close of the war around Petersburg it was divided into two sections, one of which fought their guns unsupported and checked the Federal advance. This section was captured, but not until the enemy fell over the muzzles of the guns; the other section stationed at the mortar battery to which it was attached for the engagement, followed the Army in its retreat and surrendered at Appomattox. Sewell's Point, '61 and '62, Fredericksburg, Cold Harbor, Chancellorsville, Gettysburg, Wilderness, Spotsylvania C. H., Petersburg, Appomattox, were some of the battles in which it was engaged.

The Richmond Howitzers were organized November 9, 1859, by George W. Randolph, subsequently Secretary of War for the Confederacy, and equipped with four howitzer guns. Pending the receipt of these the new organization was drilled as an infantry company. Its first service was in the John Brown raid, the company being on duty when General Robert E. Lee, then a Federal Officer of Engineers, arrived at Harpers' Ferry and directed Brown's capture. When Fort Sumpter was fired on the battery had its headquarters under the Spottswood Hotel which stood on the site now occupied by the Allison Building, at 8th and Main Streets, in Richmond; the personnel was striving day and night to prepare for service before the call should come from the Governor. Pending this they stood by the defense of the city that memorable and laughable Pawnee Sunday, prior to Secession. They were called by Governor Letcher a few days after and on April 21, 1861, the entire command was marched to the State's military headquarters, the old Bell House, now standing in the Capitol Square where Franklin Street intersects 9th, and the mustering-in ceremonies took place, presided over by Colonel W. H. Richardson, long Adjutant General of Virginia. So popular was the organization and the artillery arm of the service, that soon the extra strength permitted the forming of two additional batteries (companies as they were then called) and the organization of a battalion under Major Randolph's command, followed. The first officers of the battery after this division, were J. C. Shields, Captain, with Dr. William Palmer and Edward S. McCarthy, First and Second Lieutenants, respectively, and R. M. Anderson, Orderly Sergeant. It was the very nucleus of the Artillery Corps that was to contribute so effectively to the building up of the undying fame of the Army of Northern Virginia. It began at Bethel under General Magruder, a West Pointer, of Mexican War fame, it continued throughout untiringly, gallantly always, with the Army of Northern Virginia and surrendered with Robert E. Lee, at Appomattox. Three months after the paroled men returned to Richmond they organized in the State service and the battery has served continuously since.

The Rockbridge Artillery, another old organization, is perpetuated in the regiment in Battery F, but there was no reorganization or service after the War Between the States until this regiment was formed.

The Rockbridge Artillery came into being early in the spring of '61, in Lexington, located in the county from which it takes its name, under the watchful eye of Thomas J. Jackson, afterwards "Stonewall" Jackson, who was then a professor at the Virginia Military Institute and on the 29th of April, 1861, it was sworn in with John McCausland, a graduate of V. M. I., as captain. A few days afterwards McCausland was commissioned a colonel of cavalry and sent to West Virginia where he served with distinction, becoming a brigadier general. He is one of two living Confederate Generals, 1926, the other is General Robertson, of Texas, 86 years of age. He was succeeded in command of the battery by the Reverend William N. Pendleton, then Rector of the local Episcopal Church, a graduate of West Point, where he was the fellow-student of Generals Joseph E. Johnston and Robert E. Lee, and the newly elected President of the Confederacy, Jefferson Davis. Pendleton was soon promoted, becoming Chief of Artillery of the Army of Northern Virginia. He was succeeded in the Rockbridge

Artillery by Captains Wm. McLaughlin, William T. Poague, and Archibald Graham, Jr. Graham living, 1926, in Greenbrier County, W. Va. The battery was with Jackson, at Manassas, during the Valley Campaigns and at Romney. After Chancellorsville, it saw service in all the great battles of the war and surrendered under Graham, at Appomattox. Dr. James Power Smith, who assisted in bringing General Jackson off the field at Chancellorsville, and who, when the men bearing the stretcher, were killed lay down placing his body as a protection to the General, was the Chaplain of the 1st Battalion of this regiment until it left for the Mexican border in 1916.

Reference to these organizations is made by the Virginia Historical Society, the "Rebellion Records" and numerous other histories.

"Once an artilleryman always an artilleryman" is very true of him, who with the rumble of the wheels in his ears and joy in his heart, has followed the red guidon through the silent night. And so Virginia has always been an artillery state. One has only to refer to histories of the Revolution, the War of 1812, and the War Between the States, to be reminded that in every engagement of consequence some Virginia battery took an active and essential part. Names of those who led these batteries, those who taught artillery science to the world, are household words here, and few of us who love the old state and what her sons have done, are not moved at the mention of Pendleton, Randolph, Granby, Grimes, McCarthy, Cutshaw, Chew, Otey, Pelham, Pegram, Carter, Crozet, and, of "Stonewall" Jackson. There were fourteen hundred battles fought on Virginia's soil alone from 1861-1865; few of these fields are not enriched with the blood of our own volunteers, our own Virginia artillerymen. In fact, the artillery is so woven into Virginia history and its romance that the Virginia girl, as late as 1890, would have considered herself unlucky, indeed, had she not stolen alone in the early summer morning to the Water Battery, at Fortress Monroe, and whispered her sweet girlish secret into the muzzle of old No. 40.

As stated, some of these historic old batteries have never lost their identity and organization since birth: on their armory walls is written 1776, Craney Island—From Bethel to Appomattox. Those old batteries now may add to this proud record, "The Mexican Border" and "France," while the War Department records their one hundred per cent willingness for the American War with Spain.

When the National Guard was called out for service on the Mexican Border in 1916, the Richmond Howitzers, the Norfolk Light Artillery Blues, and the Grimes Battery of Portsmouth, constituted the 1st Battalion, commanded by Major T. M. Wortham, and the Hampton Battery, but recently organized, commanded by Captain F. H. Couch. These reported to the concentration point at Richmond, Camp Stuart, for training. In September of that year they were sent to Camp Wilson, San Antonio, Texas, and there with the New Hampshire Battery, and the "Limousine" Battery, of Baltimore (which, however, was mustered out and never reported), were organized into the Provisional Regiment of Field Artillery, under the command of Lieutenant-Colonel Manus McCloskey, of the Regular Army.

War makes strange bed-fellows. The New Hampshire Battery had served through the Civil War, a part of the Army of the Potomac, and had continued its organization unbroken from father to son, as we had done here in Virginia. From 1861 to 1865 it met the old Virginia battalion on seventeen great battle fields, tested its mettle, and here on the Rio Grande in 1916 was in the same regiment serving the United States against Mexico.

The training on the border was intensive. Lieutenant-Colonel McCloskey was a driver and a good soldier. He had been one of the three lieutenants who saw their Captain, Riley, killed on the walls of Peking, during the Boxer uprising. Major General C. P. Summerall, to whom the Virginia Battalion had previously reported at Tobyhanna, Pa., a few years before for maneuvers, was another of those lieutenants. Lieutenant-Colonel McCloskey, true to his teaching, promptly organized the Provisional Regiment in October, 1916. The regiment was back in its permanent camp at Wilson before Christmas, having in this time drawn and broken its horses,



spent six weeks at Leon Springs reservation, some thirty miles from San Antonio, fired its quota of target ammunition, and was reported by Lieutenant-Colonel McCloskey fit for service anywhere. No regiment during the border trouble is known to have done so much in such a short period of time, but it must be remembered that these men were all volunteers with state traditions behind them. On the 6th of March, 1917, the Provisional Regiment of Field Artillery was disbanded; the batteries left for their home stations and were mustered out, with the exception of the Hampton Battery (D), which was halted in this procedure, and retained in the Government service for duty at the Newport News shipyard, and from which duty it proceeded to Camp McClellan, Anniston, Alabama, attached to the Virginia regiment of artillery.

Immediately after war with Germany was declared, the 1st Battalion (Richmond, Norfolk and Portsmouth) was ordered to ship its materiel and horses to the Reserve Officers Training Camp, at Fort Oglethorpe, Georgia, and in June, 1917, the personnel commanded by Major T. M. Wortham, followed. This duty at Fort Oglethorpe with the R. O. T. C. was one in name only, as the horses and materiel were retained by the School and the battalion was left to its own devices, and such training as was possible without horses, or materiel. Here the 1st Battalion remained until nearly Christmas, 1917, when it moved to Camp McClellan, joining the regiment of which it now formed a part.

Prior to the declaration of war with Germany, after the return from the border and muster out, the War Department Tables of Organization authorized a regiment of field artillery in this State. There were already four batteries which had seen border service, so the Governor directed Major T. M. Wortham to raise the necessary Headquarters and Supply Companies with the two other required batteries and complete the organization of a regiment. Notwithstanding the program in Washington contemplated a regiment, the request for organization and recognition met with refusal at first, but thanks to the senior senator from Virginia, permission was finally reluctantly granted, and the raising of the batteries began. First Lieutenant E. J. Keegan, the Battalion Supply Officer, recruited in Richmond for the Headquarters and Supply Companies and enlisted the majority of the men. Greenlee D. Letcher, an honor graduate of Virginia Military Institute, a son of Virginia's Civil War Governor, was recruiting in Rockbridge County to perpetuate the famous Rockbridge Battery which had never reorganized after Appomattox, and Dr. Henry A. Wiseman, in Danville, was raising the other battery necessary. When war was declared with Germany, Lieutenant Keegan being the Battalion Supply Officer was mustered in with the Battalion Headquarters and Supply detachments as contemplated by the Tables of Organization. Soon after, Headquarters Eastern Department, suddenly, without assigning a reason or listening to one, decided the Supply Company, including Keegan, could not be accepted, and notwithstanding a voluminous correspondence, offered no remedy, leaving Keegan and his men who had complied with every legal requirement, and had been formally mustered in by the designated officer, stranded in Richmond without status. In the face of this, and the fact that the War Department stopped recruiting for the National Guard several times, assigning the reason that it interfered with recruiting for the Regular Army and Navy, Keegan gamely continued his campaign of recruiting for the Regimental Headquarters and Supply Companies, in Richmond, as did Letcher and Wiseman for the batteries in Rockbridge and Danville. The War Department had decided that on the 5th day of August, 1917, all enlisted and accepted National Guard units would be formally *drafted* into the service of the Government. They were already in the service, but *drafting* them took from the State any and all appointments of officers, or power under the law to create new units, vesting this power in the War Department alone. Hence, in order that Virginia might comply with the ruling and yet have a complete regiment, it was necessary for these new units to be inspected by the officer designated by the War Department, approved by him, and accepted by the War Department before 12:00 P. M. the night of August 4, 1917, or there would be no regiment of volunteer field artillery from Virginia. Major T. M. Wortham, who, by the Governor's



order prior to entering Federal service had begun the organization had left it to be continued and completed in his absence by Keegan, Letcher and Wiseman. On his arrival in Richmond on the morning of the 4th of August, he found that the Danville battery had been accepted by the War Department, the Headquarters and Supply Companies recruited to strength, but the Rockbridge Battery, which had arrived a day or so before, had been reduced by the physical examination to forty odd men. Lieutenant Keegan generously came forward and unselfishly offered himself, and the two companies he had recruited, under so many difficulties, to fill up the gap in the Rockbridge Battery, believing when he did so that the regimental organization and his promotion to Captain of the Supply Company was lost, but by doing this he would insure Virginia supplying six full batteries of field artillery. Keegan and his men were transferred to the Rockbridge Battery, inspected and passed. The mustering officer was so much impressed with the unselfish action of Keegan and others, that he recommended that the regiment be accepted as a whole immediately, and time be allowed after the 5th of August to fill up the depleted Headquarters and Supply Companies. This was granted and before midnight of August 4th the War Department accepted the regiment and approved the following officers (see Special Orders No. 365.)

August 4, 1917.

#### SPECIAL ORDERS,

No. 365.

The following appointments of Officers 1st Regiment, Virginia Field Artillery, National Guard, are announced with rank of this date subject to examination by a board of officers to be appointed by the Secretary of War:

Major Thomas M. Wortham, 1st Battalion Va., F. A., to be Colonel, to fill original vacancy. Honorably discharged January 13, 1918.

Captain William M. Myers, 1st Battalion Va., F. A., to be Lieutenant Colonel, to fill original vacancy. Honorably discharged January, 1918.

Captain Frank H. Couch, Battery D, 2nd Battalion Va., F. A., to be Major, to fill original vacancy. Honorably discharged January, 1918.

Captain William W. LaPrade, 1st Battalion Va., F. A., to be Major, vice Wortham promoted.

First Lieutenant Edward C. Rees, Battery A, 1st Battalion Va., F. A., to be Captain, vice Myers, promoted. Honorably discharged January, 1918.

First Lieutenant Thornton F. Jones, Battery D, 2nd Battalion Va., F. A., to be Captain, vice Couch promoted. Honorably discharged January, 1918.

First Lieutenant McChesney H. Jeffries, Battery B, 1st Battalion Va., F. A., to be Captain, to fill original vacancy.

Calvin Satterfield, Jr., to be Captain, vice LaPrade promoted.

First Lieutenant Edward J. Keegan, Battery F, 2nd Battalion Va., F. A., to be Captain, to fill original vacancy.

First Sergeant Joseph H. Bonneville, Battery D, 2nd Battalion Va., F. A., to be Captain, to fill original vacancy.

Sergeant William Morgan, U. S. A., Sergeant-Instructor on duty with 1st Battalion Va., F. A., to be Captain, to fill original vacancy. Never confirmed.

Second Lieutenant John T. Wood, Battery A, 1st Battalion Va., F. A., to be First Lieutenant, vice Pollard discharged. Honorably discharged May, 1918.

Second Lieutenant George H. Myers, Battery A, 1st Battalion Va., F. A., to be First Lieutenant, vice Rees promoted. Honorably discharged January, 1918.

Second Lieutenant John D. Thomas, Battery B, 1st Battalion Va., F. A., to be First Lieutenant, vice Jeffries promoted.

Second Lieutenant Irving L. Leafe, Battery C, 1st Battalion Va., F. A., to be First Lieutenant, to fill existing vacancy.

Second Lieutenant Roland D. Cock, Battery D, 2nd Battalion Va., F. A., to be First Lieutenant, vice Jones promoted. Transferred to 104th Ammunition Train April, 1918.

Sergeant Harry M. Hughes, Battery F, 2nd Battalion Va., F. A., to be First Lieutenant, to fill original vacancy.

Private Carl C. Walker, Jr., Headquarters, Detachment, 1st Battalion Va., F. A., to be First Lieutenant, to fill original vacancy. Transferred to Air Service.

First Sergeant John T. Seay, Battery A, 1st Va., F. A., to be Second Lieutenant, vice Wood promoted. Honorably discharged May, 1918.

First Sergeant Dustin W. Armstrong, Battery B, 1st Va., F. A., to be Second Lieutenant, vice Thomas promoted.

First Sergeant Elton L. Hoffer, Battery C, 1st Battalion Va., F. A., to be Second Lieutenant, vice Leafé promoted. Honorably discharged May, 1918.

Sergeant Frederick W. Kucheman, Battery A, 1st Battalion Va., F. A., to be Second Lieutenant, vice Myers promoted. Honorably discharged January or February, 1918.

Sergeant Augustus E. Shipley, Battery D, 2nd Battalion Va., F. A., to be Second Lieutenant, vice Cock promoted.

August 4, 1917.

#### SPECIAL ORDERS, No. 365.

2. The following appointments of officers are hereby made as of this date subject to examination by a board of examiners to be appointed by the Secretary of War:

Captain Francis K. T. Warwick, Va. Medical Corps, to be Major, Va. Medical Corps, National Guard.

Reverend George W. M. Taylor, Richmond, Va., to be First Lieutenant and Chaplain, Va. National Guard.

Dr. Edwin A. Robinson, Petersburg, Va., to be Second Lieutenant Veterinary Corps, Va. National Guard. Never qualified.

3 Major Francis K. T., Medical Corps.

First Lieutenant George W. M. Taylor, Chaplain.

Second Lieutenants, William H. Ellett and Edwin A. Robinson, Veterinary Corps, are hereby assigned to duty with 1st Regiment Va., Field Artillery National Guard and will report to the Commanding Officer of that Regiment for orders.

By Order of H. C. Stuart,  
Governor and Commander in Chief.

(Signed) W. W. SALE,  
The Adjutant General.

The 111th Field Artillery Regiment is unique in this respect. It is probably one of the few National Guard Regiments ever raised where those raising and organizing it neither expected profit or promotion. It was Major Wortham's idea that an Army officer of tried ability, who had served with the Virginia organizations and who knew the splendid personnel should command. Captain R. C. Burleston, Regular Army Field Artillery, who had commanded the 2nd Battalion of the Provisional Regiment on the border, in reply to Major Wortham's telegram asking if he would accept a commission in the regiment to be formed, accepted by wire, without knowing that the Colonelcy was to be offered him. The Governor consented to appoint Burleston, but the War Department suddenly refused to allow an Army officer to accept a commission in a National Guard regiment, neither first or second in command, or, in any capacity. This being reported to the Governor at a late hour, he appointed Wortham, Colonel, and appointed the other regimental officers whom he had nominated. During Major Wortham's absence with the 1st Battalion at Fort Oglethorpe, the final success of the organization of the regiment was due to the co-operation of the Adjutant General of Virginia, but was most especially due to the Assistant Inspector-General of Virginia, now Brigadier General Jo. Lane Stern, whose untiring, loyal, and active work so aided Letcher and especially Keegan, that splendid final results were obtained.

But while organized and accepted the regiment was badly scattered and most deficient in equipment. The 1st Battalion under the new Lieu-



tenant-Colonel, William M. Myers, was at Oglethorpe, Georgia; the Hampton Battery (D) with its newly promoted Battalion Commander, at Anniston, Alabama; the Danville Battery (E) at its home station, and Regimental Headquarters, Headquarters and Supply Companies, and the Rockbridge Battery (F) at Richmond, Virginia. This condition continued until late in September, when the organizations in Danville and Richmond were ordered to Camp McClellan, Anniston, Alabama, joining the Hampton Battery and reporting to Brigadier General W. C. Rafferty, commanding the 54th Artillery Brigade, 29th Division. Even after reporting, it was not possible to have the newly promoted officers and the detachment of the Headquarters Company with all its property, then at Fort Oglethorpe, Georgia, transferred to Camp McClellan, and these did not report until the month of December, with the 1st Battalion. The situation at Anniston, in September, was a travesty upon discipline, organization and efficiency. The Division Commander, Major General C. G. Morton, was in France, and Brigadier-General W. C. Rafferty, in addition to commanding the 54th Artillery Brigade, was in command of the Division also. It was impossible to secure supplies, the drill schedules were incomprehensible, and constantly interrupted by unnecessary manual labor incident to camp construction.

Brigadier General Rafferty was a Colonel of Coast Artillery, his temporary rank of Brigadier General being in the National Army, and his knowledge of a mounted organization was nil, his continual insistence all during the regiment's stay at Camp McClellan that a battery stable sergeant could water and feed all of the animals of a battery unassisted, is proof of this assertion.

Colonel T. M. Wortham, the regimental commander, was ordered to the School of Fire at Fort Sill, Oklahoma, a few days after reporting to Camp McClellan with the newly raised organizations, and reported there on October 1, 1917, for the three months' course, leaving that part of the regiment at Camp McClellan under command of Major F. H. Couch. The same helpless condition continued during his absence. Officers were transferred and discharged, enlisted men drawn from the regiment on any pretext, both men and their officers used to fill up other regiments and detachments, and none were ever sent to take their places, except the left-overs following the butchering of the three Virginia regiments of infantry when they were merged into the 116th. Those transferred to the 111th soon evaporated. In December of 1917, the battalion from Fort Oglethorpe arrived. Brigadier General W. C. Rafferty, ordered the regiment to move its camp to another site. The weather was bad, the country covered with snow and ice. Horses, materiel and men were moved a mile and a half, then the moving was stopped by order, leaving headquarters and all officers separated from the men, horses and materiel. This condition lasted for days, and further handicapped the administration of affairs already demoralized more or less by the approach of Christmas. When Major General C. G. Morton returned he rescinded the moving order, and men, materiel and horses were moved back to the original site just before the holidays. Men and officers were in old tents that were not new even prior to the border service, tents that while framed and floored had done duty, at Camp Wilson and Leon Springs, Texas, for nearly a year, and while red hot Sibley stoves did all that Sibley stoves could do, it was practically impossible to keep the tents either dry or warm. Numbers of men from every unit of the regiment were continually in the woods cutting and hauling wood to piece out the meager allowance of fuel furnished by the Division Quartermaster. During the bitter weather in December and January, General Rafferty continually ordered numerous fire drills, sometimes two or three a night, turning the men out poorly clad to shiver in winter winds. The fact that the 2nd Battalion officers' mess had been destroyed by fire (the only fire the regiment ever had) did not justify the risk and punishment. When Colonel T. M. Wortham having graduated at the School of Fire reported on the 3rd of January, 1918, he found the personnel, both commissioned and enlisted, worn out, sick at heart by having constantly been discriminated against, lack of adequate training (impossible because of the unnecessary work required) with nothing to look forward to but a repetition of the black months passed. Lieutenant-Colonel William M. Myers was discharged early



in January, 1918, and the regimental commander ordered on the 10th of January, 1918, to the Brigade and Field Officers' School, Fort Sam Houston, San Antonio, Texas, leaving Lieutenant-Colonel E. B. Martindale, a Coast Artillery Major, with a National Army commission of Lieutenant-Colonel, in command of the regiment.

Colonel Wortham reported at the Brigade and Field Officers' School at Fort Sam Houston about the 10th of January, and completing the school course successfully, returned to the regiment about the 10th of March and took command; Lieutenant-Colonel Martindale being relieved a few days after his arrival.

The regiment had suffered much from the transfer and loss of officers and men, overwork and lack of adequate training. It was some 400 men short, and had lost all but 12 or 14 officers, which shortage continued until just before sailing. The work since the war complement of horses and mules had been received was harder than ever, but the splendid personnel held together. If these men had not been the very flower of Virginia, if they had not been volunteers actuated by the most unselfish and patriotic motives to serve their state and country, the regiment would have disintegrated, or worse. And the extra work mentioned was made all the harder by the actions of the Brigade Commander, Brigadier General W. C. Rafferty, who seemed to take a fiendish delight in breaking officers. Being incompetent himself, he fancied that he was acquiring merit with his superiors, by forcing officers to quit the regiment and service. This really seemed an obsession with him. His manner of procedure generally was as follows: The Regimental Commander would be sent for nearly every morning; when he reported, the General licking his lips, would ask which of the officers of the 111th were deemed inefficient. Since this question had almost always been asked the preceding day, there was nothing to report. The General would then comment on someone and order him to report to him. When this officer reported, the General would ask rapidly a number of questions in geography, reference to latitude and longitude of various cities and places; for instance that of New Orleans; a problem in Trigonometry or Algebra to be worked out on paper. Ancient History: "Name the last five Kings of Babylon?" Mental Mathematics: "What is  $\frac{3}{8}$ 's of  $\frac{1}{8}$ 's?" etc. Sometimes he would venture a question about Coast Artillery firing, but he never trusted himself to ask questions bordering on *Field Artillery regulations*, or upon warfare; for he knew he would *get into deep water himself*. The officer would do his best while the General would hurry and banter him, would attempt to work out his written problems usually standing, on a very small slip of paper, and generally would, due to fright and embarrassment make a poor showing, exactly what the General desired. The officer would be sent back, and the regimental commander informed that the officer did not have mentality enough to be an officer, and he would be ordered before an Efficiency Board. In April, forty-two and one-half per cent of the officers available for duty were under the shadow of these Efficiency Boards, due to this method of General Rafferty. At times, this percentage was even higher, and the dread of Rafferty's methods hung like a pall over the heads of all from the 1st of March to the 15th of June, 1918. This treatment of the 111th most certainly had the endorsement of those higher up at Division Headquarters, and Rafferty was known there to be inefficient. They had knowledge of his methods, and yet, he was allowed a free hand "to revamp this rotten regiment" as the Division Commander once expressed it to Rafferty in my presence.

Rafferty's inefficiency would have been pitiable and laughable, but when it is remembered how vital it was to the regiment and brigade, it was tragic. For instance, he was once told that the fire discipline was poor in the Brigade. He replied he knew it was, and immediately ordered three fire drills with buckets and ladders a week. The most embryo artilleryman is familiar with the term "Fire Discipline" as connected with the service of the guns in action. Rafferty was relieved from the command of the 54th Artillery Brigade in June, 1918, reduced to his Army rank of Colonel and sent away, but much too late.

Late in April, 1918, the 111th Regiment was ordered to report to

Brigadier General Barber, commanding the 57th Infantry Brigade (reinforced) for a ten days' march and maneuvers to Gadsden, Alabama, and return to Camp McClellan. From the moment the regiment reported (and it had only about one officer per battery), until its return it *blossomed* out as flowers will when receiving sun and water after being long deprived of them. The men shook off their depression, and the greatest change was noticeable. General Barber was so much impressed with the organization and its work that he voluntarily wrote the following letter with the request that it be published to the organization, viz:

"Headquarters 57th Infantry Brigade,  
Camp McClellan.

Anniston, Alabama, May 2, 1918.

Colonel T. M. Wortham,  
Commanding 111th Field Artillery,  
Camp McClellan, Alabama.

My dear Colonel:

Allow me to express to you and through you to your officers and men, my satisfaction at the performance of duty during the march and field exercises recently held by the 57th Infantry Brigade. (Reinforced.)

The discipline and training was good and showed results of the months of effort. Individual conduct and behavior was excellent and was the subject of very favorable comment by the citizens of Gadsden.

Sincerely yours,

(Signed) C. W. BARBER,  
Brigadier General."

Colonel T. M. Wortham, Captain Ed. Rees, Battery "A," Captain I. Branch Johnson, Battery "C," and other officers were honorably discharged early in June, 1918, leaving Lieutenant-Colonel E. C. James, a New Jersey National Guardsman, to take the regiment to France late in June, 1918, when Colonel W. F. Jones, of the Regular Army, was appointed commander. The history of the service abroad must be written by other hands. It is certain the splendid personnel would have, if given opportunity, distinguished itself.

During the border service mentioned and for the period up to date of sailing for France the regiment furnished from its enlisted personnel between 300 and 400 officers. Of this number who entered the R. O. T. C., only three failed to get their commissions. There may have been a few more, but no information concerning them is available. These with one or two exceptions went to other organizations and there were no replacements until shortly before the regiment sailed for France. Lieutenant Cleary was one who came back to the regiment, and later died of pneumonia in France.

# History of the One Hundred and Eleventh Field Artillery

[From June, 1918 to April, 1919]

By Russell B. De Vine

Batteries A, B, C and D, accompanied by the Supply Company, left Camp McClellan at Anniston, Alabama, June 19, 1918, for Camp Mills, N. Y., where they arrived on the 21st. Batteries E and F left on the 20th, and reached Camp Mills on the 23rd.

On the 28th, Batteries D, E and F entrained for Philadelphia where they embarked on the *City of Exeter* which sailed for Halifax the next day. Battery A and the Supply Company went on board the *Demosthenes* which sailed with the *City of Exeter*. The two ships arrived at Halifax the 3rd of July, where a day was spent waiting for the convoy.

Batteries B and C remained at Camp Mills until July 4th, when they boarded the *Aquitania*, which sailed the next day. This ship being one of the fastest in the world no convoy was regarded as necessary until the coast of Ireland was reached, when four American destroyers appeared to act as escort. The *Aquitania* docked at Liverpool July 11th, and Batteries B and C disembarked that afternoon and entrained for Winchester.

The convoy with the other batteries on board was met by eight destroyers on July 12th. That evening submarines attacked, but were beaten off, one being reported as sunk. Liverpool was reached on the 15th, and the batteries disembarked and boarded trains for Southampton the same night, reaching that city the next morning. Batteries B and C had left Winchester on the evening of July 14th for Southampton. They embarked the next day for Cherbourg, France, which was reached on July 16th. The following day they boarded train for Poitiers, arriving on the 18th.

The remainder of the 111th left Southampton July 17th, and reached Havre on the 18th, where two days were spent in a rest camp. Leaving Havre, they proceeded to Poitiers, arriving there on the 22nd, Battery A and the Supply Company preceding the others by one day. From Poitiers, Batteries B and C, and the Supply Company went to Migne-Auxances, Battery D to Chassaneul, and Batteries E and F to Grand Pont.

The various elements of the 111th remained in billets at the above points until the 24th of August, when orders were received to move to Camp de Meucon for instruction in the School of Fire. The Supply Company arrived here on August 26th, Battery D on the 27th, and Batteries A, C, E and F on the 28th.

At Meucon the regiment entered on what was expected to be the last phase of its training. This training was seriously interrupted, however, by the influenza epidemic, which became so severe that it was necessary to place the entire department of Vannes in which Meucon was located under quarantine. Training came to a complete standstill. The 111th lost twenty men altogether in the epidemic. Training was resumed as soon as the wave of influenza receded somewhat, but five very valuable weeks had already been lost. Training with the "75's" was pushed and by October 11th, the regiment had completed its final tests.

Two days later came the news that Germany had surrendered and the whole camp went wild for the time being. The men indulged in every known variety of celebration, even serenading the general who responded with a speech. Many letters were sent home regarding extra plates to be put on the tables as the boys would soon be returning. The next morning it was discovered that the rumors were without foundation, so the regiment settled back to work. The 111th was in readiness to go up to the front but no transportation was available. To assist in keeping the men from going "stale," practice marches and hikes were inaugurated.

On the 4th of November, 1918, the long expected orders to move up



to the front line area were received. The Supply Company arrived at Aillianville on November 7th, Battery C on November 8th, and Batteries A and B on the 9th. Battery E went to Brechainville on November 7th, followed by D and F on the 8th. The regiment was quartered in these billets when the Armistice was signed on November 11th.

The 111th was stationed at Aillianville and Brechainville until early December. On the 5th of that month Batteries D and E left the latter village. Four days later they arrived at their new stations, D at Voisey and E at Nouvelle-les-Voisey. The rest of the regiment left their stations on December 6th, the Supply Company and Battery A going to Vernois-sur-Mance, Battery C to Cemboisy, and Battery F to Neuville-le-Voisey. The different units of the 111th remained at these posts until April, 1919. Little happened during that time except the Divisional Review by General Pershing on March 24th. The Commander-in-Chief stated at the time that the transportation of the Supply Company was the best he had seen in the American Expeditionary Forces. That this praise was not without foundation was borne out in the Divisional Competitive Transportation Inspection which took place April 8, 1919, when the Supply Company was awarded the prize for the best transportation in the 29th Division.

In April, 1919, orders came to move into the Le Mans area as the first step preparatory to returning to the United States. The Supply Company reached Coulumbriers on the 14th of April, Battery C arrived at Grand Champs, and Batteries D and E at La Hutte and Cherance respectively on the same day. Battery F moved to Coulumbriers and on April 23rd Battery A moved to Le Marne.

## Summary of Activities—Battery A, One Hundred and Eleventh Field Artillery, Twenty-Ninth Division

Organized December, 1917, at Camp McClellan, Anniston, Ala., from former Richmond Howitzers. Trained at Camp McClellan until June, 1918. Entrained for Camp Mills, Long Island, June 11th. Embarked June 29th, on transport *Demosthenes*. Reached Halifax July 3rd. Sailed on the 4th and reached Liverpool July 15th. Entrained at once for Southampton. Left for France on the 17th, and the following day entrained for Poitiers. Engaged in training there until August 26th, leaving on that date for Camp Meucon. Trained there with the French "75." Ordered to the advanced zone November 4th. Reached Aillianville November 9th. Moved to Vernois-sur-Mance December 6th. Remained there through the winter. Left for Le Mans area April 21, 1919.

# History of Battery A

By Lieutenant C. H. McCurdy, Corporal V. S. Perkins and  
Private H. X. Thacker

This battery was ordered into Federal service by the President, in June, 1916, and was mobilized at Camp Stuart, Richmond, Virginia, where it trained until September, 1916, when the battery was ordered to the Mexican border.

After arriving at Camp Wilson, San Antonio, Texas, Battery A, of Richmond; Battery B, of Norfolk; Battery C, of Portsmouth; Battery D, of Hampton, and Battery A, of New Hampshire, were organized into a provisional regiment of Field Artillery, commanded by Colonel McClosky.

Battery A, of the Richmond Howitzers, was commanded at this time by Captain William M. Myers, First Lieutenant E. C. Rees, First Lieutenant James Pollard, Second Lieutenant John Wood and Second Lieutenant George Myers, were the other officers of the battery. The battery, after receiving three months training at Camp Wilson, was ordered to Leon Springs, Texas, for a period of firing practice on the artillery range, where it made a splendid record. After spending six weeks on the range, it was ordered to return to Camp Wilson, and engaged in various maneuvers there until it entrained for home.

The trip back home lasted for five days. The battery paraded through the principal streets of the city the day it arrived, and the men were greeted by their mothers, wives, and sweethearts. This parade of a complete battery of artillery, with full equipment, was the first to pass through the city since the Civil War. The parade was led by Governor Stuart, who made a short speech after returning to the armory. Upon arriving at the armory, the men were greeted by an elaborate banquet given by the Richmond Howitzers' Association. Short speeches were made by prominent men of the city, after which the battery was mustered out of Federal service. This marked the end of the Mexican campaign for the Richmond Howitzers.

Three months later, our country having entered into the World War with the Allies against Germany, the Richmond Howitzers were again called into Federal service by Secretary of War Baker. The battery was the first unit of the National Guard in the United States to be called for this emergency. The call came on June 22, 1917, and the battery left Richmond on July 7, 1917, for Fort Oglethorpe, Ga.

On the night of their departure a dance was given for the boys which continued until the bugle sounded assembly. Then the battery marched through the crowded streets on its way to the train. Fort Oglethorpe, Georgia, was reached on July 9th, where they received their first training for the struggle that was before them. The drill grounds were the same battlefields that their forefathers had fought on during the Civil War, around Lookout Mountain and Chickamauga Park.

The battery at that time was commanded by Captain W. M. Myers, who was later made Lieutenant-Colonel of the regiment organized at Camp McClellan, Alabama. Before Colonel Myers left, the battery presented him with a loving cup in appreciation of his service while Captain.

After the promotion of Captain Myers, First Lieutenant Rees was elevated to captaincy and made commanding officer of the battery. The other officers were First Lieutenant Wood, First Lieutenant Myers, Second Lieutenant Seay and Second Lieutenant Kuchemann. After six months training at Fort Oglethorpe, the battery was ordered on December 18, 1918, to proceed to Camp McClellan, Alabama, where it became Battery A of the 11th Field Artillery, which was part of the 54th Field Artillery Brigade in the 29th (Blue and Gray) Division. Lieutenants Seay and Kuchemann were transferred here, and Second Lieutenant Baylor and Second Lieutenant McCurdy were appointed in their places. The 29th Division was commanded



by Major-General Morton, who made the division one of the most efficient units in the United States Army.

The battery received six months of hard training on the range in the mountains of Alabama, and on June 11, 1918, under the command of First Lieutenant Jones, left for Camp Mills, New York. Here at Camp Mills the battery received its full equipment, and on June 29, 1918, embarked for overseas. At 5:00 P. M. of that day the battery was filing into the transport *Demosthenes* at the 55th Street pier, New York City. (This ship, on her return trip, was sunk by a German submarine off the coast of Ireland). At 6:00 o'clock sharp, the big ship lifted her anchor and put to sea. The sun was disappearing over the Statue of Liberty, as the shores of the United States receded into the dark.

On July 3rd, the ship reached Halifax Harbor, where it joined a convoy of fifteen other vessels. The following day, July 4th, the whole fleet departed for the high seas. The ship, on the starboard, sighted a German submarine on July 13th, and after firing seven depth bombs the submarine was reported to have been sunk.

Early in the morning of July 15th, the ship came into Liverpool harbor, where we unloaded and entrained for Southampton, arriving there the following day. Here we were sent to a rest camp for the night. The following day, the 17th of July, we embarked on the French steamer *La Marguretta*, and left about dark to cross the English Channel. The battery landed on the soil of France at Le Havre, and entrained the following day for Poitiers, to wait their turn in an artillery training camp. On August 26th, the battery entrained for Camp De Meucon, Vannes, France, to take of their training with the French 75 mm. gun. At this time the battery was commanded by Captain Shipley, assisted by First Lieutenant Burrage and Second Lieutenants McCurdy and Blankenship.

After finishing our course of training with the "75's," we were ordered to entrain for Vannes, for the advanced zone, where we heard our first reports from the big guns on the front. Here we were stationed in the little village named Aillianville. After two weeks here waiting for orders to proceed to the front, the Armistice was signed on November 11, 1918.

On December 6th, the battery, with the rest of the regiment, was ordered to join the Division at Vernois sur Mance, France. Here First Lieutenant McMinnimun was attached to the battery, and we went through various Divisional and Corp maneuvers in an area of one hundred kilometers, until April 21, 1919, when we made our start for home, arriving at Le Mans on April 23, 1919.

## Summary of Activities—Battery B, One Hundred and Eleventh Field Artillery, Twenty-Ninth Division

Organized at Camp McClellan, Anniston, Ala., in December, 1917, from Battery B, 1st Virginia Field Artillery (formerly Norfolk Light Artillery Blues). Trained there until June 19, 1918, leaving on that date for Camp Mills, Long Island. Embarked on the *Aquitania* July 4th and docked at Liverpool, England, July 12th. Entrained at once for Winchester and went into a rest camp. Entrained for Southampton on July 14th. Embarked for France night of July 15th, docking at Cherbourg the following day. Entrained on the 17th for Poitiers, marching thence to Migne and Auxannces. Moved to Camp de Meucon August 24th and started training with French "75." Ordered to advanced zone November 4th and reached Aillianville on the 9th. Remained there until December 6th.

[EDITOR'S NOTE:—No record of the movements of Battery B after this date is available.]

# History of Battery B

Submitted by Colonel T. M. Wortham

As early as June 23, 1917, Battery B, 1st Virginia Field Artillery, commanded by Captain Paul W. Kear, was ordered held in readiness, and on June 26th, a month before the specified day, this battery was called into the service. There was a good deal of speculation at that time as to what this early summons meant and it was rumored by a good many that the battery with the two others comprising the battalion, were to be a part of the Rainbow Division, in which it was planned to include the best National Guard troops in the states. Later these rumors were proven to be without foundation. Battery B remained in its quarters at the Blues' Armory in Norfolk for nearly two weeks, moving to Fort Oglethorpe, Georgia, on July the 7th. The wheeled equipment left one week previous to this under the direction and care of First Lieutenant McChesney H. Jeffries and a detail of enlisted men. The strength of the organization at the time of its initial movement was approximately five officers and one hundred and ninety men.

As soon as Fort Oglethorpe was reached, the battery settled down to work—work of a kind never before attempted at once important and necessary. It consisted partly in the training of college men, business men and professional men to hold down successfully the responsibilities of army officers. These same men later on proved their worth by training the drafted army and otherwise contributing largely to the success of the American armies in France.

The location of the battery at Fort Oglethorpe, or rather in historical Chickamauga Park, made famous by the battles fought therein during the Civil War, was not a good one, but under the circumstances was as good as could be expected. The best part of the Park was reserved for the use of the Reserve Officers' Training Camp and the Regular Army regiments sent there to build and train. This, however, was as it should be, and the guardsmen prospered and made a good impression amongst the other soldiers in the camp. Their appearance was always perfect, their conduct excellent, and in athletics a record of superiority was made never to be forgotten.

Battery B played an important part in the training of the men sent to the R. O. T. C. Nearly every member of this organization had seen border service during the crisis with Mexico, had been well trained in artillery work for nine months, had practiced on the range in Texas under one of the foremost artillery commanders in America, Lieutenant-Colonel Manus McCloskey, had devoted a good deal of their spare time while at home to the study of artillery work, and were otherwise in a state of preparedness for the duties outlined by the government. Every opportunity was seized upon to assist these new men in their work, every courtesy was shown them and the officers responsible for their training were aided in every material way. Often the equipment was used by the officer candidates taken out on the muddy roads and dirtied—and then brought in to be cleaned and put in shape by the artillerymen. Both the first and second of these camps were brought to an end while the battery was quartered at Oglethorpe, and the Colonel commanding the schools was loud in his praise of the Virginians, often pointing them out to the officer candidates as soldiers worthy of emulation.

But the battery had other work to do. A good deal of time was given over to guarding property at the R. O. T. C. and it was no uncommon thing for the men to stand tours of duty every other day. This released students and made for their efficiency. A schedule of drill was systematically prepared and followed. Horses were requisitioned, but the order could not be filled at once owing to the demand for animals in France and England. Later, however, a sufficient number of horses were received to draw all equipment.

Two regiments of cavalry—Regulars—were also stationed at Oglethorpe.



To follow out the plans laid in the War Department at Washington, these regiments, like many others, were converted into field artillery units. It must be remembered that cavalry, at that stage, could play no part in the fighting in Europe. It was wholly and entirely a war of breastworks and trenches. No equipment was sent to these new artillery regiments; no ordnance could be had—ordnance stores were as scarce as were other necessities; but they still retained their cavalry mounts. These they furnished and the battery supplied the guns and other equipment; and twice weekly it was made possible for each organization to carry on and have mounted maneuvers. Thus the government secured the greatest possible service from the equipment and horses. On days that mounted drill would not be indulged in, other subjects were taken up; and in this way all concerned were benefited. When the battery was ordered, on December 15, 1917, to join the regiment at Anniston, Alabama, it was fit and capable of taking up the more intricate and important work of firing on the range.

Battery B, up to its movement to Anniston, was still one of the units of the 1st Virginia Field Artillery and it was not until the divisional training camp at Anniston was reached that this designation was changed. It then became a part of the 111th Field Artillery of the 54th Artillery Brigade, under General Rafferty, of the 29th Division, under General Morton. The 29th Division was composed of National Guard troops from Virginia, Maryland, New Jersey and the District of Columbia, and was known throughout the United States as the Blue and Gray Division. It must be remembered that the battalion, while stationed at Oglethorpe, was a separate and distinct organization under direct orders of the War Department.

The first few days, as has always been the custom and rule, were devoted to getting the quarters into proper shape, making the area habitable, and otherwise cleaning up the space allotted. Tents were erected, the battery street ditched and drained, and the stables, the kitchen and the mess hall thoroughly cleaned and policed. Requisitions for badly needed equipment were also submitted, and on January 5, 1918, the first O. D. woolen clothing was issued. Winter clothing, too, was hard to obtain, which increased the sufferings of the men very greatly. At this time Lieutenant-Colonel Myers, of Richmond, was relieved and returned to civil life. Lieutenant-Colonel Martindale, of the Regular Army, was sent to take charge of the regiment and relieve Colonel Myers. Colonel Wortham, commander of the regiment, was at that time attending the School of Fire, at Fort Sill, Oklahoma.

Colonel Martindale was an excellent soldier and strict disciplinarian. He insisted that the training schedule and regular camp routine be followed to the letter. He was unusually strict on inspections, making his examinations with the greatest of care. As a result of this early training, Battery B had fewer men than any other organization to go A. W. O. L., not while at Anniston, but during its entire period of service.

General Morton, on February 5th, went to the firing range to see for himself to just what extent Battery B had progressed under Colonel Martindale's instruction. It was General Morton's habit, to the discomfiture of the officers, to inspect when least expected, but on this occasion, as on many others, he found the organization fit and capable. They fired well and made a good record. Both the discipline and conduct were excellent; it was the day that Captain Kear razed a chimney that had been standing for months and had served as a target for other batteries since the site was chosen for a range.

During the month of February, several inspections of various kinds were made, and in close order, which gave rise to the rumor that these inspections were preliminary to an early departure for the port of embarkation. The battery, mounted, was inspected; the regiment, mounted, was inspected; the personal and wheeled equipment of the organization was examined; and on Monday, February 18th, Generals Morton, Rafferty and Barber, with their staffs, inspected the entire Division in the field and on the march. The sight was very impressive and the representatives of the Allied armies were greatly pleased. No less a personage than Colonel

Applyn, of the British Army, said prior to this review, in his address to the non-commissioned officers of the Division, that the division was superior to any he had seen in the United States. On Thursday, February 21st, all divisional schools were closed, a sure and unmistakable sign that the division would move shortly, it was thought, but this impression was erroneous.

The entire month of March was devoted to field problems and firing, barrage fire being used on the range for the first time. It was a new thing under the sun for the officers and proved wonderful training and practice for both officers and men. On several occasions, night problems were given and these were also worked out successfully. While this training was going on, the Germans were storming the Allied positions, were driving the Allied troops back and were making successive gains all along the lines in their last great drive for victory and supremacy. Captain Joseph H. Bonneville took command of Battery B on March 29th. Colonel T. M. Wortham had returned from Fort Sill a short time before this and had taken charge of the regiment.

During April, the 57th Brigade of Infantry and the 111th Field Artillery were ordered out for maneuvers, and on the morning of April 22nd, these troops, with full field equipment, left Camp McClellan. The problem carried them as far as Gadsden, a little town about thirty miles distant. Actual conditions of modern warfare were simulated. Forced marches were made, hurried advances and retreats executed, the town of Gadsden was evacuated, batteries and companies were put out of action; the Signal Corps, Engineer, and Field Hospital detachments had their share of work to perform, their duty to render. The problem came from higher authority and was delivered to General Barber and the commanding officers of the regiments participating for solution. The result of training was evidenced in the masterful way in which all the officers and men conducted themselves. General Barber and the officers and men were highly complimented on the character of their performance. The maneuvers lasted for five days and a half and Battery B was selected as an advance battery because of its fitness and because of the reliance that could be placed on it for any service.

May 28th, General Morton personally addressed all the officers and non-commissioned officers of the Division, before him assembled, and thanked them for the work done at Anniston and prepared them by sound advice for the work to be done in France. He intimated in his remarks that the division would move shortly. On June 4th, the first troops of the 113th Infantry pulled away from the camp, and on June 19th, Batteries A and B left Anniston for Camp Mills, N. Y., which place was reached on June the 21st. Batteries B and C boarded a transport on July 4th and left American shores the following day. These were the only two batteries to go on board the steamer, and because of their knowledge of large rifles were picked to help the British sailors man the guns on board the steamer as a protection against submarine attacks.

After an uneventful trip across the Atlantic Ocean in which no enemy submarines were encountered, H. M. S. *Aquitania* arrived and docked at Liverpool about three o'clock the afternoon of July the 12th. Immediately the lines were made fast, the gang planks were run ashore and the troops began to file through the openings on the lower decks to the docks below. An English band, made up entirely of boys, was on hand to welcome the new arrivals and with much gusto they played an old favorite—"Where the Black-Eyed Susans Grow." The effort was well made, they did their very best, but the music delivered was of the "tin-panny" variety and exceedingly poor. England at this stage of the game was badly in need of men and had use for her musicians in the trenches. Late in the evening, Battery B, which had been held on the upper deck, disembarked and marched a short distance to the railroad station, where they were received and welcomed to the shores of England by a Colonel, who represented his King—George V—and the people of the Empire.

With no undue loss of time the train left the station and proceeded through the country at a fast clip to Winchester, going via Birmingham. At 4 o'clock the next morning the train pulled into the station, the men detrained, and were marched to the "rest camp" a short distance outside



of the old city. In England, the first rigors of war were encountered; the men were doubly crowded on the trains, it was impossible to buy food, candy was scarcer than gold; and the bunks furnished at Winchester were very plain. Bed sacks also formed part of the equipment but they were filthy and it was strictly against the laws of sanitation to sleep on them. The food furnished by the commissary was only fair.

At 11:30 July 14th, the troops were marched away from the "rest" camp and again loaded on trains, but the ride this time was not of great duration, and the troops were soon detraining at the docks at Southampton. It was at first thought that the men would board one of the Channel steamers and go to France, but for some reason they were turned about and marched to the camp on the Commons for another "rest."

A very enjoyable day and a half were spent at the Southampton camp and many new friends were made amongst the civilian population. The American soldiers were made to feel the welcome in these British hearts by many generous deeds. Close by was an immense hospital. The convalescing "Tommies" were about in the park enjoying the fresh air and came over to the American camp to chat. They talked too much and gave bad advice. Their Medical Corps, their own Allies, were their worst enemies, and they advised the men to "get it" as soon as they went up. In consequence, a bad impression was obtained of the English soldier. The sojourn here was brief and after a march to the docks, the troops boarded a small steamer, and in a downpour of rain on the night of July 15th, left England for France.

At four o'clock the next morning anchor was dropped off Cherbourg but it was not possible to dock until midday owing to the lowness of the tide, but when finally the steamer was made fast, no time was lost in getting the men ashore. Another march was made from this point to a combination British-American rest camp about twelve kilometers out of town, where troops from these two nations were quartered on their way to the different fronts. Rumors followed even here and it was certain that the battery was bound for Italy as all troops sent to Cherbourg were destined for that country. This rumor was confidently thought to be true because that same evening troops came through, on their way to England, that had been in Italy and Mesopotamia. The troops from Mesopotamia were Australians and New Zealanders and were as splendid a lot of soldiers as man would ever want to see. At 6:45 in the evening, July 17th, the battery left camp and marched to the train, which steamed out of the city about nine o'clock. New difficulties were encountered. For the first time in its history, the men of Battery B were packed into box cars—thirty-four men to the car—in which the dung of its late occupants—horses—was still fresh.

All that night, the next day, and a good part of the next night was spent in travel. The train proceeded through France at as fast a clip as possible. No one knew the destination, no one cared—destinations were not announced in those days. The secret agents of Germany knew too much about the train schedules as it was. Quite a great deal of France was seen from the side doors of these cars and the men delighted in their novel experience. At 11 o'clock, Thursday night, July 18th, the train stopped at the station of Poitiers, a very interesting city to tourists, large and fairly respectable, and as soon as the men could be gotten off a guide attached himself to the officers in charge and conducted the Americans to the towns of Migne-Auxannes, in the province of Vienne. The march was hard, the men almost completely worn out, the packs heavy, and the "bully" beef and "hard tack" issued at Cherbourg had not been enough to sustain the men fully. Auxannes, the first village reached, was eight kilometers from Poitiers, Migne only a short distance to the right of Auxannes. A small detachment of half a hundred men was left in the first town to billet and the rest were cared for temporarily in Migne. A few of the townspeople, in night attire, witnessed the arrival of the Americans—the first to come to that section. The next day the permanent assignment to billets was made and the quarters gotten in proper shape. Battery B was quartered in Auxannes, while C went to Migne.

The rations had been left in the car at the station and because there



was no transportation available it was impossible to get them out until late that evening. This delay caused many men to suffer the pangs of hunger as it was impossible to buy anything in the villages but wine and a little bread.

The regiment was reunited on July 21st, when the four other batteries, Supply Company, and Headquarters Company arrived at Migne early in the morning. Lieutenant-Colonel James took command and established his headquarters in one of the finest old homes in the town, close by the little stream that almost circled the village. Battery A was sent to Auxannes, while the entire 2nd Battalion was marched on through to Grand Pont and quartered there. It was almost an assured fact that these billets were to be held for only a short time, as troops were badly needed up front to "carry on" the splendid achievements of the Americans at Chateau Thierry.

Colonel James settled down to work and immediately prepared a suitable drill schedule, which he endeavored to make as interesting as possible. Guards were put on, old prisoners confined, picket lines stretched, and provisions made for mess quarters. The first few days were given to close-order drill, hikes of definite duration, gas drills, lectures by the doctors on cleanliness and sanitation, games and exercises. The stream afforded an excellent place for aquatic sports and these were indulged in between the hours of two and four. As soon as the affairs of the organizations were satisfactorily straightened out, details were picked and sent to all parts of France for the performance of certain duties. Quite a number of the men on these details were sent to Tours and Paris to round up and convoy horses to the front to units that had lost animals in battle.

July 25th about three hundred horses were received by the regiment, brought to Migne, and corralled. Some of these mounts were very beautiful to look upon but the majority had long since spent their forces and could hardly walk. Quite a few had been gassed, all had been under fire, and had been overworked, and they were sent to the regiment for conditioning. This necessitated the preparation of a new schedule which would enable the drivers to care for the teams and mounts, but it was impossible to engage in maneuvers because of the lack of wheeled equipment.

French and American "75" instructors were assigned while at Migne and as soon as possible courses were started in the various phases of the work. The village school was used by the instructors. Problems of fire were considered, explanations were made as to the use of the firing tables, French maps and systems were studied, and all information necessary was set forth in detail. To the officers and non-commissioned officers, this instruction and study was very beneficial and interesting. There was a good deal of satisfaction in knowing that it was possible to bring the fire of a battery to bear on a small target—even a target two feet square.

On August 7th, two "75's" and caissons were delivered to the regiment from the French artillery barracks in Poitiers. One was sent to Grand Pont and the other was placed in the school yard at Migne. A French sergeant was assigned to instruct the gun squads and certain periods each day were allotted to the different batteries for work on the pieces. The new equipment was thoroughly explained; the new sight, the disk range, the fuse puncher, were all studied in detail and each man was given a chance to manipulate the different instruments. So, when the regiment left for the training camp at Meucon, the men and officers were not entirely ignorant of the weapon they were to use. Before moving, the details that had been sent out returned and the organization's personnel was reunited.

Camp de Meucon was situated approximately ten kilometers from the City of Vannes, the province of Morbihan. The ranges were admirably adapted to artillery work, wooded and very hilly. It was possible to fire an entire Brigade of Field Artillery and several Trench Mortar Batteries at one and the same time. Before America entered the war Meucon was used by the French Government for the training of its artillery units. No doubt, several discoveries of importance were made while experimenting on the fields. During the war a prison camp was established there by the French and hundreds of Germans sent back from the front lines for

safekeeping and to work on the roads and in the quarries of the province. When America entered the war, the entire camp, except the prison camp, was turned over to the United States Government for the training of its artillery brigades. An immense base hospital was built on the reserve by our government and towards the end of the war the authorities representing the United States established a prison camp, and almost before its completion Prussians were sent back under guard from the front for confinement.

On August 28th, the French harness, just received, was adjusted and drivers were picked to go to the French barracks at Vannes to haul out the wheeled equipment. It was brought back that evening and parked. The next day new American and French instructors were assigned to the different organizations and the training started. The schedule was divided into periods but the majority of the time was devoted to work on the guns and to gas drill. Nine hours each day was given to this work, and at first it was hard going but interesting nevertheless, and the men took to their tasks willingly.

Almost as soon as the training commenced, an epidemic of influenza swept down on the camp, the 11th Regiment being especially hard hit. Battery B suffered heavily; at one time during this epidemic, no less than fifty men of the battery were confined to the hospital, and a score or more were laid up in the barracks. It affected the strength and vitality of every man in the organization at one time or another, and it became necessary to halt all training for the period of the emergency. Finally, when it seemed as if the sickness had been gotten under control and no new cases were being reported, eight men of Battery B fell victims to the disease and were buried in the camp cemetery. A fitting tribute was paid these men in a memorial service before the regiment left. The malady spread to other regiments, broke out in the French homes, and it was necessary to put the entire province in quarantine. No trains were allowed in or out and things were at a standstill.

As soon as the medical authorities had succeeded in controlling the sickness and matters had righted themselves, training was vigorously renewed in order to make up for lost time. Men were selected to specialize in certain work and sent to the many schools in the camp. The new phases of artillery work—radio, camouflage, gas, telephone, material, firing by table, and machine gun—were all taken up. The courses in these schools lasted from three to six weeks. Officers were also sent to classes of this nature to study the higher points and perfect themselves in these important subjects. The machine gun squads from Battery B were among the best ever turned out at the Hotchkiss School, receiving commendation from the General; the signal and instrument detail was considered the best in the regiment, consequently the best in the brigade; the radio men were excellent in their specialty; and the students in the new art of camouflage passed with good marks and were sent away from the school with enough confidence in themselves to satisfy the instructors that the battery would be concealed from "enemy eyes" when the front should be reached. Because of the excellence attained by these specialists, the battery made an unsurpassed record on the firing range.

On September 6, 1918, Captain Bonneville was transferred to Headquarters Company as Adjutant and Lieutenant John Bentley, a young man of advanced artillery experience, was assigned to the battery as temporary commander. He received his assignment when the epidemic was at its height and he immediately set to work to right matters. A decided change was soon noted, the personnel became more willing and put forth the best that was in them. Lieutenant Bentley, by his fair treatment of everyone won the hearts of the men in his command.

Monday, September 9th, the guns were hauled to the nearby range and at sunrise data was sent over the phone for the first problem. This was handled so admirably that no officer, no matter how strict or exacting could criticize or find fault. The work was smooth, accurate, well-timed, and was done according to the principles set forth in the little red book.

During the stay at Meucon no more horses were received, though not a day passed that a new shipment was not expected. Nearly half of those



brought in at Migne had either died or were sick in the hospital. Of course, this held up to a degree the training as it rendered it impossible for all the batteries to fire at the same time, but on occasions the guns and caissons were drawn to the ranges and left there and the horses returned to the parks for other equipment. Three batteries were fired in the mornings and three in the afternoons. This shortage of animals was a very serious handicap, as artillery is not at its best without its full quota, and it was very seldom that even an officer was seen mounted.

During September there was a great deal of firing. All the brigade participated and not a moment was lost in order to perfect the organization. General Holbrook, assigned to the brigade at Meucon, made inspections of various kinds and was very much pleased with the results that had been obtained. He was also delighted with the high standard of efficiency, the personnel, the care of equipment, and the way in which the men and officers mastered their tasks. During this month, the American had wiped out the St. Mihiel salient and the Allies were turning into victory what at one time seemed almost certain defeat. On September 30th, a radiogram was received imparting the knowledge that the Bulgarians had been defeated and were out of it for good, and thus the powerful Teuton machine started to crumble and fall to pieces.

On the 1st of October, the first night problem was worked out and in a very creditable manner. Our regiment was sent in to relieve the 110th. The carriages were moved up after dark and quietly placed in the same positions as those occupied by the batteries from the 110th and registered on the same target with the same data. This was one of the tests of high efficiency. To go in, take up old positions, register on targets, and see the other batteries out, with no hitch or hold up, and in record time, was considered the acme of perfection.

The next morning the gun and ammunition squads were gotten up before daylight, fed and marched to the range; and promptly at 7:30, the appointed time, the first shot was fired. The entire morning was devoted to firing problems by different officers and the first barrages were worked out. The guns were left in position and again at night various problems were fired. Early the following morning the squads were marched to the position, and, on this particular day, as on many others, the fire was conducted and observed from aeroplanes, and was consequently not rapid. That night the regiment was relieved by the 110th Field Artillery.

On Friday, October 4th, the battery was taken out for maneuvers, but maneuvers were difficult on account of the shortage of horses. The battery was placed in a position in a clump of woods and camouflaged, lines of communication with other batteries and with headquarters were established, which was all that was necessary to complete the problem. The limbers were called up and the carriages moved to another position on the far range to relieve the 110th, which had been on duty all night. The next day several barrages and an O. C. P. were sent over and it was thought that this at last completed the training. The brigade would move as soon as the transportation could be provided. With this in view, the materiel was cleaned and gotten in good shape for moving.

But it was impossible to obtain transportation and Colonel Jones, commander of the regiment, lost no time in ordering more ammunition for practice. Maneuvers were also resorted to in order to complete the schedule, and new problems were taken up. One was the moving into position out on "No Man's Land" in the shell furrowed fields, taking up positions and firing. Only a platoon for each battery was used, and it was on one of these problems on October 9th, that Battery B made an enviable record. The guns were all adjusted for an O. C. P. and a normal barrage. The gunners were laid for the O. C. P. The executive officer was called to the telephone and instantly gave the command—"normal barrage!" The guns were relaid and without a second's loss of time, the guns of Battery B broke out with a resounding crash. The chiefs of sections stood by their guns with timepieces in their hands and gave the order to fire when the hands told that the intervals had elapsed. The problem was completed in three minutes and the report—"Rounds complete"—sent over the phone. "Repeat normal barrage!" came in almost before the



executive had completed his report and again, the ammunition was slapped in the breeches, the lanyards pulled, and the projectiles sent through the air to the target over the hill. In the same manner, this problem was completed. For seven consecutive times, this problem was worked out and it was with great delight that Lieutenant Bentley announced over his telephone to headquarters from his forward O. P. that B battery's seventh barrage had been completed. None of the other batteries had succeeded in finishing their tasks and C Battery was just working out its second. When the outcome was learned on the return to quarters it caused great satisfaction.

On October 11th, exactly one month before the Armistice was signed, the regiment and brigade participated in the greatest barrage problem ever undertaken at Meucon. The guns were drawn to the ranges in the morning and adjusted, and the time, corrections, and changes, figured out by the officers. Some batteries were selected for the "roll" some for the "box," while others were to play all along the "enemy" lines with shrapnel. The Trench Mortar batteries were in the forward trenches and were acting as our infantry. They were to follow our barrages over and bring in prisoners. At noon, the rolling kitchens arrived from camp with hot soup and coffee and it was well that they did, because it had been raining all the morning and the men were wringing wet.

At 2:00 o'clock the "big show" commenced. The fire of the O. C. P. was directed on the cross roads in the rear of the "enemy" lines. This lasted for exactly fifty minutes. The bombardment of the roads was to prevent ammunition, reserves, and supplies being brought up to the "enemy." As soon as this problem was completed, the first shots were gotten off the barrage; and for more than an hour the gun crews remained at their posts making the corrections, cutting and screwing in fuses, moving the trails to correspond with the changes in direction, and otherwise serving the guns—until they became almost red hot. They were fired so rapidly and often that it became necessary to rest the guns at periods and throw buckets of muddy water over the tubes to cool them off. This fire was kept up at the extreme range until the infantry sent up the rocket from the forward trenches, the signals that they had gone over, had taken prisoners, and had accomplished their mission. Immediately the fire dropped back and played in front of our troops to prevent a counter-attack. Again that night, the same barrage was put down but it was impossible to "carry on" for as long a time because the ammunition supply became exhausted. It is estimated that approximately two hundred and eighty-eight rounds were fired by each gun during the day, expending ammunition valued at \$100,000. Thus the brigade faced and successfully passed its highest test and was "raring" to go, but still no transportation could be provided.

There was hardly a day while at Meucon that it did not rain and the firing was often delivered in the hardest kind of a downpour. Not a day passed without a certain amount of gas drill. It made no difference what a man was doing at the appointed time, he was required to wear his gas mask. Thousands of men had lost their lives at the front in gas attacks, and it was in an endeavor to prevent greater loss from this menace that the higher authorities deemed it important to have these drills.

At 8:00 o'clock Sunday evening, October 13th, newspapers were received and by the wording there could be no doubt about the war being ended: at last Germany had submitted. With this news at hand, the men of the camp cast aside their duties, and marched around the streets, with the bands leading, singing and rejoicing. Helmets and gas masks were thrown from one end of the quarters to another. The crowds marched to the General's Headquarters and sang for him. He came to the window and made his acknowledgements. That night hundreds of letters were written home, proclaiming the good news, and telling families to put more plates on the table as the boys were coming home. But the next morning the rumor was discovered to be unfounded and without truth, so once more the men settled down to their tasks, more determined than ever to put on the final touches when they should be sent up.

And still no transportation, but there was a chance, and with this in

view the wheeled equipment was hauled into Vannes and left close to the station, as the necessary orders to load were momentarily expected.

One day passed, and another, and still no orders. And still more days were wasted away. The men were suffering a relapse and were undoing all the good that had been done. It was impossible even to engage in gun drill as the materiel was in Vannes. Something must be done in order to keep the men in shape and fit for the fray, so hikes were inaugurated. These marches were taken during the mornings and all equipment was carried. They were lengthened and lasted from two to four days. The news was received that Turkey and Austria had signed separate armistices and our hopes of ever seeing the front began to fade away. But finally on the 6th of November, the rest of the equipment—personal, baggage, and office supplies—was carried in, the men marched to the tramcars, which carried them into Vannes, where they boarded the trains. That afternoon, promptly at 5:17 o'clock, C Battery pulled away from the station, followed by B early the next morning with destination unknown. Machine guns were mounted on flat cars in front and rear of the train with the crews standing by as we were going up into the advanced zone.

Early in the morning, November 9th, the organization detrained at the station of Liffol-le-Grand, near Toul, and hiked to their new temporary quarters at Aillianville. On November 11th, the Armistice was signed by the Germans, ending a war that had drained the resources of nations, had caused the loss of many millions of lives, and resulted in the destruction of billions of dollars worth of property.

## Summary of Activities—Battery C, One Hundred and Eleventh Field Artillery, Twenty-Ninth Division

Organized at Camp McClellan, Anniston, Ala., December, 1917, from Battery C, 1st Virginia Field Artillery (formerly Grimes Battery, of Portsmouth). Trained there until June 19, 1918, entraining on that date for Camp Mills, Long Island. Entrained July 4th for New York and boarded the *Aquitania*. Sailed on the 5th and reached Liverpool July 12th. Entrained for Winchester and went into rest camp. Left for Southampton July 14th and embarked for France on the 15th. Disembarked at Cherbourg July 16th. Entrained the following day for Poitiers, marching thence to Migne. Left for Camp Meucon August 27th and started training with the French "75." Ordered to the advanced zone November 4th and reached Aillianville on the 8th. Remained there until December 6th, proceeding on that date to Cemboisy, where the battery spent the winter. Left for Grand Champ, the Le Mans area, April 12, 1919.



# History of Battery C

[EDITOR'S NOTE:—The author of this story is not known.]

Battery C 1st Virginia Field Artillery is the oldest artillery organization in the United States. Founded August 9, 1807, in Portsmouth, Virginia, by Captain Arthur Emmerson and called The Portsmouth Light Artillery, it has participated in every war in which the United States has engaged since that time. In the War of 1812 it successfully defended the towns of Norfolk and Portsmouth, Virginia, against an attacking British fleet. In 1861 it entered the service of the State of Virginia and in the Seven Days fighting around Richmond, for two hours it held a position at Malvern Hill against a hundred guns. In Lee's advance into Maryland, 1862, it was engaged at Sharpsburg and its gallant commander, Cary Grimes, was killed and his battery annihilated. From that date it ceased to exist as a separate organization for the rest of the war.

In Portsmouth, Virginia, a monument has been erected to this battery and the brave men who served it. On each of the polished sides appear the names of the men who participated in the wars in which it was engaged and in raised letters are the names "Malvern Hill", "Second Manassas", "Sharpsburg" and "Craney Island." The reverse sides bear the Stars and Stripes and the Stars and Bars of the Confederacy. In this respect it is probably the most unusual monument of its kind in America.

On June 26, 1917, the 1st Battalion, Virginia Field Artillery was called to the colors and Grimes Battery, as it was then called in honor of its heroic Civil War Commander, was assembled at the battery rendezvous under Captain I. Branch Johnson. Physical examinations were given by Major Little of the Medical Corps, and an officer of the Coast Artillery Corps then mustered the battery into Federal service on June 30, 1917. The wheeled material of the battery left on July 1st under Lieutenant Walter Tennant for Fort Oglethorpe, Georgia. On Saturday, July 7, 1917, at 10:00 o'clock the battery pulled out of Portsmouth. An immense crowd stood in the pouring rain to bid farewell to Portsmouth's volunteer organization. As the armory of the 4th Virginia Infantry was passed the infantry buglers sounded a farewell to the battery and Portsmouth's first contribution to the World War was on its way.

If there is anything in the way of inspiration to be drawn from locality or environment, surely Chickamauga Park in the shadow of historic Lookout Mountain is an ideal location for the training of embryo soldiers. Here was fought one of the bloodiest battles of the Civil War and hundreds of monuments erected by the Federal Government and states to the brave men who fell there dot the park. During the Spanish-American War, it was the rendezvous for the troops bound for Cuba. Here under the same flag and in the same cause came together men from North, East, South and West, now the third generation, on the scene of activity of their fathers and grandsires.

The 1st Battalion, Virginia Field Artillery was well fitted for the difficult task now devolving upon it. Nine months service on the Mexican border under such experts as Colonel McCloskey, Major Burleson and Lieutenant Cain, all officers of the Regular Army, men who later made a name for themselves on the field of Europe, had whipped the battalion into a first-class organization. The battalion arrived at Oglethorpe on July 9th, detraining at Lytle, Georgia, and was assigned to duty at the Reserve Officers Training Camp, "Warden McClean."

From the batteries were now drawn sergeant-majors, mess sergeants, orderlies and military police. They were also called on to furnish a camp guard of thirty men each night. The horses and materiel were to be used jointly with the officer candidates.

The relations between the officer candidates and the enlisted men were most cordial. The former were anxious to learn those practical elements of soldiering not to be gained from books and in their limited time of recreation could be seen with soldier instructors dismounting and assem-

bling the 3 inch pieces, executing gun drill, and always taking a multitude of notes.

During our stay at Oglethorpe two regiments of cavalry were converted into light artillery. The wheeled material of the battery was loaned to these outfits and upon our officers and non-commissioned officers devolved the role of instructors in the mysteries of indirect fire. Excessive guard duty was the most disagreeable feature of the stay at Oglethorpe. Three guards were maintained here, camp, battalion and battery guard. With large numbers of men it was not unusual for men to stand tours of guard every other night. The football season found excellent material in the battery and under the coaching of such enthusiasts as Captain Johnson, crack football teams were developed and the playing of such stars as Oast and Skutt will be long remembered in the battery.

The people of Chattanooga proved delightful hosts and their hospitality to the men of the 1st Virginia Field Artillery will never be forgotten. At the Signal Mountain Country Club and in private homes the men were made to feel that they were welcome guests, and it was with regret that we bade goodbye to the friends made in Chattanooga.

At the conclusion of the Second Training Camp, Colonel Slocum, Commandant of the training camp, sent to Major LaPrade commanding the battalion, a letter in which he expressed his appreciation of the services rendered and his admiration for the conduct and discipline of the men of the battalion.

This battalion entrained at Lytle, Georgia, on Sunday, December 19, 1917, for Anniston, Alabama, arriving there the next morning. With the departure of the Virginia Field Artillery from Oglethorpe its identity as a Virginia outfit was lost. It now became officially the 1st Battalion of the 111th Field Artillery. The personnel of the battery underwent great changes and with the transfer of men from the infantry and the National Army and the transfer of many of the old men to the training camps and others outfits the old battery ceased to exist as a Portsmouth organization.

Camp McClellan was the training camp for the 29th Division commanded by Major-General Morton, consisting of National Guard troops from Virginia, Maryland, New Jersey and the District of Columbia. Major-General Morton was an officer of the Regular Army, a graduate of West Point and several service schools and one of the foremost military administrators in the country. The 111th Field Artillery was attached to the 54th Brigade Artillery commanded by Brigadier-General Rafferty, an officer of the Coast Artillery Corps and one of the first officers in our service to advocate the use of indirect fire.

Colonel Wortham commanding the 111th was ordered to the School of Fire shortly after our arrival at McClellan and Lieutenant-Colonel Myers was relieved of his command, Lieutenant-Colonel Martindale of the Coast Artillery Corps taking his place. Under the able direction of this officer a high state of discipline was attained.

The first Christmas was spent at Camp McClellan with Lieutenant Leafé acting battery commander. Very little time was lost in getting the gun crews into shape and standing gun drills. The school of the 3-inch piece was the order of the day, along with drivers equitation and the care of horses, while the battery commanders details were instructed in visual signaling, and the use of fire control instruments.

In the month of March a divisional review was held on a plain north of the camp. The entire division, twenty-five thousand men took part, every branch of service being represented. The entire division then marched past Generals Morton, Rafferty, and Barber, and officers of the allied nations. In March firing was begun on the range and each battery and sometimes the entire regiment fired. Night firing and maneuvers were also given. Camp discipline, police, pitching of shelter tents, care of animals, and equitation were part of the program.

In April the 57th Brigade of Infantry and the 111th Field Artillery hiked to Gadsden, Alabama, a distance of thirty miles. Maneuvers, sham battles and kindred problems were given. The town of Gadsden was captured and lost, the evacuation taking place at three in the morning



the infantry holding the town until the artillery had retreated after which the bridges were burned and the batteries galloped out of the city.

On May 18th General Morton addressing the officers and the non-commissioned officers declared the 29th Division prepared for foreign service and announced its early departure for port of embarkation. On June 4th, the Infantry Brigade started moving and on June 19th, batteries C and B left for Camp Mills where they arrived on the early morning of the 21st. At this camp the battery was fully equipped for foreign service and Captain Ferdinand Wildhaber took charge as commanding officer.

On July 4, 1918, the battery entrained leaving Camp Mills for Jersey City, there taking ferry across to New York City. In the afternoon of the same day it boarded the transport *Aquitania*, the latter being one of the largest boats used for transporting troops to Europe. At 3:00 o'clock A. M. the next day, July 5th, she pulled out of the dock carrying about 8,000 soldiers and 200 Red Cross nurses. Being a speedy ship no convoy was considered necessary, and the gun crews for the 6-inch guns aboard her were furnished by picked gunners from B and C Batteries of the 111th Field Artillery.

The trip across the Atlantic was rather uneventful, although there were many rumors concerning submarines. On July 11th while off the coast of Ireland the convoy of four American destroyers, joined the *Aquitania* and escorted her into the harbor of Liverpool, where she docked the next day at 3:00 P. M. Here, after disembarking Battery C boarded a train going to a rest camp at Winchester, England, remaining there until July 14th, on which day it left for Southampton, England, arriving at the latter place the same day. On the next day another transport was boarded and that night the English Channel was crossed, and Cherbourg, France, was reached on July 16th. After spending a day and a night at a rest camp the battery left Cherbourg, having its first experience riding in the "Chevaux 8 Hommes 40," which method of traveling will never be forgotten by the members of the A. E. F.

Poitiers, France, was reached on July 18th and here the battery disembarked, hiking to Migne, a small village, and in this village was billeted until August 27th. Here at Migne the time was spent by the men, in close order drill, care of horses, and lectures in assimilated firing with the French 75 mm. guns.

On August 28th the 54th Artillery Brigade arrived at the Artillery Camp of Fire at Meucon. The Ecole de Tir of the French is one of the largest camps in France. Here the American artillery educated in the school of the 3-inch gun and the open methods of warfare, learned for the first time the wonderful accuracy of position warfare. Here also, was studied the wonderful little "75" of the French Army.

At Meucon, are located various schools for officers and enlisted men. Schools of the 75 and 155 mm. guns, radio and telephone reconnaissance. Here the officers studied meteorological data and ballistics, effect of fire, and all those elements that are necessary to the firing battery, in position warfare. The work at Meucon was retarded by the dreadful epidemic of influenza that ravaged the brigade. The regiment lost twenty men but Battery C was fortunate in suffering no loss of life from this dreadful plague. The batteries were firing every day, and on the night of October 1st at 10:00 o'clock the 11th Field Artillery relieved the 110th on the range. The work closely simulated the conditions surrounding one regiment relieving another on the front. Not a light was seen nor a voice heard. The guns of the 110th were run out from camouflaged positions and dugouts and our guns run in. The relieved gunners transferred their data and the pieces were quickly layed and the chiefs of sections, stop watches in hand, awaited orders for a barrage.

Night firing was now given several nights a week and in going into position and firing data and laying communications, conditions were identical with those which would be found on the front. On October 4th maneuvers were held and an advance of several kilometers was ordered. This was quickly effected and communications were established to an O.P. several kilometers in advance. C Battery established communication before any other organizations. On October 11th the 54th Brigade fired a barrage



which instructors pronounced the best ever fired at Meucon. This was repeated at night. For hours the eighteen batteries fired and when "cease firing end of problem" was given, the 54th Brigade had completed its training.

At Camp Meucon, Captain Wildhaber was detached from the battery and Lieutenant E. A. Sullivan assigned as commanding officer. Lieutenant Sullivan was commissioned Captain, shortly afterwards and left Meucon on November 6th with the battery on its way to the front. On the 8th of November, the battery arrived at Aillainville which was in the advanced zone, in fact it was so close to the front that this village experienced an aerial attack just before our arrival there, and the flash and the noise of the big guns at the front could be plainly seen and heard by the men. It was in this little village of the Vosges, which for three years faced the constant danger of German invasion that we learned of the Armistice. The joyous pealing of the church bells and cheering of the French told us it was the end. The 11th Field Artillery advanced no further.

The battery left Aillainville on December 6th going to the village of Cemboing. At Cemboing the men of the battery by their good conduct and soldierly bearing made many warm friends, as was evidenced by the number of villagers who turned out at 2 A. M. on the morning of April 12th to wish them "bon voyage", when they were leaving for Grand Champ in the Le Mans Area.—The first lap on our return journey to the United States. At Grand Champ, the battery was quartered in a large and ancient castle overlooking the beautiful valley of the Sarthe.

Although Battery C, 11th Field Artillery never saw action in the recent great war, it was through no fault of the officers and men of the outfit, for all were ready and anxious to get to the front and do their part. And do their part they did, being a cog in the wheel, as it were. During its ten months stay in France many hardships and discomforts were necessarily endured by the men, but they were borne cheerfully by them.

## Summary of Activities—Battery D, One Hundred and Eleventh Field Artillery, Twenty-Ninth Division

Organized at Camp McClellan, Anniston, Ala., August 25, 1917, from Battery D, 1st Virginia Field Artillery (formerly Battery D, of Hampton). Trained there until June 19, 1918, entraining on that date for Camp Mills, Long Island. Entrained for Philadelphia June 28th and embarked that date on the *City of Exeter*. Reached Halifax July 3rd. Sailed on the 4th and reached Liverpool, England, July 15th. Entrained for Southampton, arriving there on the 16th. Embarked for France July 17th, reaching Havre the 18th. Left for Poitiers on the 20th, arriving on the 22nd and marching thence to Chassaneul. Ordered to Camp de Meucon August 24th. Reached there on the 27th and started training with the French "75." Ordered to the advanced zone November 4th and reached Brechainville on the 8th. Left there December 5th for Voisey, where the winter was spent. Departed from Voisey April 11, 1919 and entrained at Jussey on the 12th for Le Hutte in the Le Mans area.

# History of Battery D

[EDITOR'S NOTE:—The author of this story is not known.]

Owing to the fact that nearly all battery records were lost in coming overseas this brief history, is liable to contain a number of slight errors, especially regarding dates connected with the personnel. The historians have done their best, getting all data possible in the time given.

Previous to the organization of "Dynamite D" a name given after a very creditable exhibition in Anniston, Alabama, at a Red Cross fete in 1918, Hampton had been without a military organization for several years. The old "game-cock" town had always been represented in all military affairs and the new generation wished to keep up the good work. Trouble with Mexico was brewing and Germany was hinting at future possibilities, which stirred the boys to greater enthusiasm. To place a strong organization in the field, was the ambition of everyone. Hampton's previous military company was the old Peninsula Guards of the 4th Virginia Regiment of Infantry—this had ceased to exist several years before and it was decided to organize a battery of light field artillery which proved to be the beginning of Battery D.

At a meeting in the Court House of Elizabeth City, County of Hampton, Virginia, in the late summer of 1915, many people of Hampton, gathered for the purpose of organizing a battery of field artillery. Having secured permission from the Adjutant General of the State to organize, it was decided to secure members for the proposed organization. Very few meetings were held until an armory was secured. A vacated car and power plant having been obtained through the courtesy of the Newport News and Hampton Railway, Gas and Electric Company, an armory was soon established. The armory located on Sunset Creek, was in as suitable a place as could be located in the vicinity of Hampton, and after remodeling to a small extent it proved ideal for keeping the horses, material and instructing the personnel. It may be said that during the time after the organization of a body and before recognition by the State, the men were getting their first instructions in military tactics so as to present a military appearance before the mustering officer.

On November 19, 1915, having secured the signatures of five officers and 133 enlisted men, the battery was inspected and mustered into the State service by Colonel Jo Lane Stern and Captain Churchill, thus becoming a unit in the State militia with the official designation of Battery D, 1st Virginia Field Artillery. The officers elected and commissioned were Harry H. Holt, Captain, Frank H. Couch, First Lieutenant, Thornton F. Jones, First Lieutenant, Robert G. Sudgen, Second Lieutenant, and Charles G. Powell, Second Lieutenant. The personnel as a whole represented the highest standard obtainable in Hampton and surrounding vicinity.

The drilling period for the battery was Tuesday evening of every week and during that period a great deal of interest was shown as well as a good attendance by the members, who were eager to learn, it being practically a new game to most of them. Rapid preliminary methods of artillery were materialized with the horses, guns, caissons and material requisitioned from the War Department.

On June 19, 1916, orders came from the Adjutant General of the State calling on the battery, to recruit to full war strength and to be prepared to move on arrival of orders. Trouble with Mexico was now brewing.

Rapid progress was made in recruiting the battery to full war strength and in less than six days the roster contained five officers and 197 enlisted men.

Prior to the departure of the battery Captain H. H. Holt resigned owing to state and county positions requiring his attention at that time. First Lieutenant Frank H. Couch was appointed Commanding Officer and First Sergeant Robert F. Taylor was elected Second Lieutenant, upon the advancement of the battery officers.

On June 26, 1916, orders were received to proceed at once to the



State Mobilization Camp in Richmond, then known as Camp Stuart, Virginia. Practically none of the men were uniformed, the battery having never received their issue of clothing, but nevertheless they were ready for service.

On the morning of June 27th, after having loaded all artillery material the battery marched through Hampton with a royal send off given by the people of the Peninsula and entrained for Richmond, arriving on the evening of the same day.

The command was quartered in the camp which was located in Sherwood Park, adjoining the old State Fair Grounds.

After equipping the battery with clothing and other necessary supplies the usual drills and military duties were taken up, and the personnel started acquiring their first real field experience preliminary to the muster into Federal service.

Next came a strict physical examination which only twenty-two out of the original two hundred passed.

On the morning of July 5th the battery was mustered into Federal service and became a unit in the United States Army retaining the name of Battery D, 1st Virginia Field Artillery.

Usual camp duties and training with the materiel and horses occupied the days of the men, the members rapidly getting accustomed to camp life in the field.

The men soon became restless as they were eager either to proceed to the trouble zone or back to civil life and on account of the delay in moving orders many were discharged for government work, dependent relatives and various other reasons until the battery was cut down to five officers and a hundred and twenty-eight enlisted men.

After three months of impatient waiting the moving orders finally came and on October 2nd the battery entrained at Richmond, Virginia, for the concentration camp in San Antonio, Texas, then known as Camp Wilson. Five days of traveling found the battery at its new destination October 7th. Temporary camp was made awaiting the moving of the Illinois artillery of whose camp site the battery was to occupy.

Shortly after arrival the battery was equipped with a full war quota of animals and artillery materiel. Despite the impediments of the climatic conditions of Texas the men trained daily in the care of the horse, handling the guns and reconnaissance tactics.

Previous to the leaving for the firing drill grounds at Leon Springs, Texas, Colonel M. McCloskey was commanding and instructing the 1st Provisional Regiment of Virginia Field Artillery and Lieutenant J. H. Brabson of the Third Field Artillery, United States Army, was the instructor for Battery D.

November 2, 1916, the battery broke camp and started a twenty-five mile road march towards Leon Springs. The men, although new at the game of horse artillery, proved themselves worthy and capable of handling the horses and materiel on this march. The end of the first day of travel found them half way so camp was pitched for the night at Blumels, familiarly known as "Nine Mile Hill."

The early part of the next day found the battery on the march and doing exceptionally well under the Texas sun and alkali dust for which that region is famous. Arriving at the camp on the evening of November 3rd they quickly made the site habitable.

Usual camp duties as well as firing practice and equitation were now being studied in the war game. Much interest and enthusiasm were displayed as the firing practice proved very interesting, and maneuvers day and night rapidly developed the men, despite the climatic conditions, into hardened soldiers.

Six weeks of intensive, training found the battery on a war footing and ready to do its part in the Mexican struggle and on December 15th, camp was broken and the battery started back to Camp Wilson to await further orders. The night of the 15th the battery camped at Blumels. Having spent a cold and disagreeable night, on the morning of the 16th the journey was resumed. At this time the horses were hardened and

the personnel also, so the march was easily made and both were in very good condition when Camp Wilson was reached.

Having made camp, the regular duties and military tactics were carried out, a great deal of stress in particular being laid on the drilling of the battery mounted.

The climate here was exceedingly trying on the men, as the Texas "northers" and excessive rain threatened day by day to make the camp a veritable mass of mud.

During this time the battery lost very few of its members and these last were discharged or transferred to the Air Service.

The Mexican trouble having quieted considerably, and Pershing returning from Mexico, the boys became desirous of returning to civilian life. The men having done all they were called to do were now anxiously awaiting moving orders. These came at last and leaving behind all animals with the exception of thirty-two the battery loaded, and on March 6, 1917, entrained at Camp Wilson, Texas, and started for Hampton, Virginia, to be mustered out of Federal service.

On March 11, 1917, at an early hour in the morning the battery was greeted enthusiastically by the citizens of its home community. Requests being received to parade the battery fully mounted, horses were secured and the command paraded through the streets of Hampton, to its own armory on Sunset Creek where the men were dismissed to greet their loved ones who had gathered from far and near. March 14th Captain L. D. Booth accompanied by the Battery Commander, mustered the personnel out with the exception of two officers and ten men from Federal to State service. The two officers and ten men, who were retained to complete the muster out, were discharged from Federal service, on March 19th. The men returned to civilian life but reported each Tuesday night in the week for drill.

Upon the breaking of diplomatic relations with the German Government, on April 2, 1917, Battery D was one of the first units to be called out for guard duty. It reported at Newport News, Virginia, to protect the harbor and the Newport News Shipbuilding and Drydock Company, against German hostilities and alien enemies who were particularly active at that time.

On April 2nd, acting upon orders from the Eastern Department, the battery, under command of Captain F. H. Couch, was called upon to recruit to war strength and to await orders for emergencies. Many men, being away at this time, had to be located, but this was soon accomplished and on April 3, 1917, the battery was once more mustered into Federal service by Captain L. D. Booth, Coast Artillery Corps, and on April 6th proceeded to Newport News, Virginia, and made camp on a site adjoining the shipyard on the north.

Unlimited guard duty was the order of the day as well as manning the guns on the piers of the local shipyard for protection against submarines. Care of the horses in addition to the above mentioned duties had to be given the attention of the men which made the army task a very difficult one.

Recruits were coming in so rapidly that the battery was fast regaining its war strength. The men were needed at this time because a full strength of animals had been received from the government which necessitated constant care.

Due to the fact the local shipyard required the camp site then occupied, Battery D moved to a location north of the previous one, which was named Camp Brabson, after the battery instructor in Texas.

The middle of May found the battery without the services of two of its popular officers, Second Lieutenant Powell and Second Lieutenant Taylor, both having resigned to accept positions in the local shipbuilding plant. Sergeants Roland D. Cock and James McMenamin were elected and appointed to fill these vacancies and were commissioned Second Lieutenants May 10, 1917.

The battery at this period was losing a considerable number of men, who were getting out because of dependency and relatives, government



work and applications to enter the Officers Training Camps which were starting at that time throughout the country.

Guard duty became very monotonous at times, and the men were eager to obtain other knowledge of artillery tactics. On the morning of August 17th great activity was displayed and horses were loaded and prepared to move at once. Having loaded the above on trains they left at once with a small detail, the battery following later, the two detachments uniting at Norfolk, Virginia.

In the late afternoon of August 17, 1917, the battery, now dismounted, bade farewell to their old camp site and marched through the city of Newport News to the steamer and proceeded to Norfolk where trains were awaiting to carry the battery to its new destination.

Midday of August 19th the battery arrived in Camp McClellan which made a very unfavorable impression upon the men. The unloading of equipment was started immediately and night of the same day found the battery in its temporary camp site.

After a week of hard work the camp presented a slightly appearance. Settled once more, but not for long, the usual camp duties were performed. The battery which had retained the name of Battery D, 1st Virginia Field Artillery now became a unit in the Provisional Regiment of Field Artillery under Major Frank H. Couch.

Prior to leaving Newport News on August 4th Captain F. H. Couch was promoted to Major and First Lieutenant Thornton F. Jones thereby became Commanding Officer of the Battery with First Lieutenants Robert G. Sudgen, Roland D. Cock, Second Lieutenants James McMenamin and Augustus E. Shipley as officers, the latter promoted and commissioned from Sergeant to Second Lieutenant, August 4, 1917.

At this time the battery was busily engaged in cleaning away brushwood, building up, filling in, and preparing the camp for the Provisional Regiment of Artillery. The battery being one of the first of the units to arrive in this locality, naturally found a difficult task awaiting.

On August 25, 1917, Battery D became a unit of the 29th Division under command of Major-General Charles G. Morton and was designated Battery D, 111th Field Artillery, 54th Artillery Brigade of the 29th Division. Shortly after being joined by E and F Batteries it became a part of the 2nd Battalion of the 111th Regiment.

Troops coming into the camp at this time were quickly filling the Division and a general distribution of men from one unit to another began with respect to their qualifications in the various branches of the service. The battery lost heavily by transfers to different organizations within the Division and without.

Captain Thornton F. Jones was now commanding Battery D and the usual artillery maneuvers were soon begun. Battery D was at this time employed to instruct the new organizations in gunnery and horsemanship. Firing and range practice proved most interesting and exciting for the new members. A great deal of stress was being laid on discipline.

Many officers were transferred—others were promoted at this time. Among those affecting D Battery were Second Lieutenant A. E. Shipley transferred to Battery F, November 11, 1917, Sergeant John B. Bentley commissioned as Second Lieutenant and assigned to his battery on the same date, Chester B. Kontz returned to D Battery, December 22nd, as Lieutenant and Lieutenant John B. Bentley transferring to F. A little previous to this time several officers were attached to this battery for instruction purposes but were later transferred to other organizations of the Division.

Upon physical examination Captain T. J. Jones was found unfit for overseas duty and relieved of his command January 21, 1918, so First Lieutenant R. D. Cock became Commanding Officer.

During the month of February the battery lost part of its firing equipment as two guns and caissons were transferred to Battery F for practice purposes.

On April 8th, Lieutenant R. C. Sudgen, an officer of the battery and attached to the Officers Training School as an instructor was promoted



and commissioned as Captain, and Second Lieutenant James McMenamin was promoted to First Lieutenant. Lieutenant R. D. Cock, who was now commanding, was transferred to the 104th Trench Mortar Battery April 13th and Captain Daniel Runkle was assigned as Commanding Officer of D Battery April 18th, but was relieved within a month by Captain Sudgen who returned as Commanding Officer on May 3rd. First Lieutenant John B. Bentley was assigned back to his organization on May 23rd and Second Lieutenant Rupert F. Mills, a recent graduate of the Officers Training Camp was assigned to Battery D on May 13, 1918. The officers of D Battery then were Captain R. G. Sudgen, commanding, Lieutenants McMenamin, Bentley, Kontz and Mills.

After long waiting and drilling under difficult conditions the boys became anxious to depart for France to help their comrades already in the fray. Many of the men, however, were fortunate in securing furloughs and returned for short visits to their relatives before their departure.

The battery which was proceeding under difficulties because of a great shortage of men caused by the transformation, gladly welcomed the recruits who came to the organization May 24th from the National Army at Camp Gordon, to fill the ranks to war quota.

After a speech by General Morton to the Division, assuring the men that they would soon depart for the other side, on June 18th all artillery material was turned in to the Ordnance Officer and animals to the Remount Depot which relieved the soldiers of a heavy burden for a while.

On June 19th the battery with five officers and a hundred and ninety-two men, boarded trains and quietly departed, with orders against profanity or sarcastic remarks as they journeyed on, after spending ten months to the hour on the soil of Alabama.

The evening of June 22nd the battery pulled into Jersey City and there unloaded and reloaded on the ferry, crossing to Long Island City, and there boarded cars for Camp Mills, Long Island, New York. The boys now tired and weary, marched through a driving rain, arriving in camp after midnight of June 22nd.

In this camp many inspections such as physical, equipment and personnel were conducted and the men were quickly equipped for overseas service. During this time limited numbers of passes were being issued so the boys could visit New York City.

At 1:00 A. M. June 28th loaded in cars, the battery left for Philadelphia, with strict orders against loud talking, lights of any nature, and all identifications concealed. After a quiet journey Philadelphia was reached about 10:00 A. M. of the same day and after a few selections by the 111th Field Artillery Band and refreshments from the Red Cross boarded the transport *City of Exeter*. Five o'clock of the same evening found the boat steaming down the waters of the Delaware.

Everyone was equipped with life preservers at once. Halifax, the assembling point for the convoy, was reached on July 1st in an exceptionally heavy fog. Several accidents due to the density of the fog, were narrowly averted.

On the evening of July 4, 1918, the *City of Exeter* in convoy with a fleet of eighteen transports left the harbor of Halifax, accompanied by H. M. S. *Debonshire*, the protecting cruiser. "Fire," "Abandon Ship," and "Call to Arms" drills, with numerous and various inspections filled up the days. Life preservers were worn day and night.

The British marine system of cooking food was disliked exceedingly. The meat served consisted mostly of mutton or goat and was seldom changed.

On the morning of July 12th the convoy was met by eight submarine destroyers. The evening of the same day the convoy was attacked by hostile submarines but the destroyers immediately gave chase and forced the submarines to retire.

About 6:00 o'clock on the evening of July 15th, land was sighted and shortly thereafter the *City of Exeter* glided into the harbor of Liverpool. After seventeen days without touching land the men disembarked and marched from the docks of Liverpool through the city to the station,

where they boarded trains and started towards the English rest camp at Southampton, England.

Prior to boarding the train in Liverpool the battery was greeted by a representative of King George V of England who welcomed the Americans in behalf of his Majesty and presented each man with a card of greeting from the King.

After an all night journey on small crowded cars, Southampton was reached and the men marched to the rest camp on the outskirts of that city arriving there about 9:00 A. M. on the morning of July 16th.

The men now tired and fatigued from the traveling they had been doing the past weeks, were fed lightly, as rations were scarce at that time. After stopping over forty-eight hours, the battery marched to the docks of Southampton bidding farewell to England and proceeded to board the Channel steamer *Margueritte* for the trip to Le Havre, accompanied by a few submarine chasers.

Landing at Le Havre on the morning of July 19th the battery marched about ten kilometers to the American rest camp. The following day saw the command en route to its training area in Vienne, France.

After a miserable journey in French box cars marked 40 hommes or 8 chevaux with thirty-five to forty men per car, Poitiers was reached on July 21st. From there the battery marched straightway to Chassaneul—a distance of eight kilometers with heavy packs.

Upon reaching the village the command was billeted in French barns. Settled once more the battery resumed its usual drills on foot, road marches and practice with gas masks.

Practice with the French 75, map reading, and reconnaissance were in progress, and the battery was getting the preliminary methods of modern warfare.

About this time various details were dispatched on missions of one sort or another. A number of men left with Lieutenant Mills for Fort Vincennes, Paris, for the purpose of convoying horses to the American units at the front, this detail returning three or four weeks later.

On August 2nd, Lieutenants McMenamin, Bentley and Kontz were detached and sent to the Artillery School of Instruction at Camp de Meucon, France.

Leaving the village of Chassaneul on August 25, 1918, the battery marched to Lessant, where they entrained for Camp de Meucon, France, arriving on the evening of August 27th.

Upon arriving at the camp, the battery with a strength at that time of five officers and one hundred and eighty-seven men, went into barracks, Lieutenants McMenamin, Bentley and Kontz rejoining their organization on arrival. The battery then began intensive training and various schools were attended by many of the members to obtain instructions in modern war tactics. Day and night firing was started and the battery rapidly advanced in the new methods of artillery warfare.

Instructions were given on the manning of the French 75 and liaison work. On September 6th, First Lieutenant John B. Bentley was transferred to Battery B and First Lieutenant Frank H. Rowe was assigned to Battery D on September 16th, Second Lieutenant C. B. Kontz was transferred to Battery C and Second Lieutenant Chauncey D. Parker was transferred to Battery D. An epidemic of influenza having invaded the camp, the battery, as well as the Brigade, was quarantined for an unlimited period. A good many of the personnel suffered from the infection but only one death resulted, Private W. J. Thomas.

The battery was now losing a few men such as officers, training candidates, hospital patients, transfers and A. W. O. L's but gained practically an equal number of recruits.

Captain W. J. Tennant was attached to Battery D for duty October 1st but later on November 11th, he was assigned to the Ordnance Department Service of Supplies.

On November 5th despite heavy rains the battery loaded materiel and equipment and entrained at Vannes, for the front. Having long since



completed the full course of firing instructions, the battery started for the advanced zone to join the 29th Division which was already in action. On November 7th, Liffol-le-Grande in the Vosges was reached at midnight. Daylight found the battery ready to march to the billets at Brechainville, a distance of twenty-four kilometers, where it arrived the night of November 8th.

The Armistice between the hostile nations was signed on November 11th and thus ended Battery D's chance for real action against the Huns.

On November 22nd First Lieutenant A. D. McLean was attached to the battery but remained only a short time, as on December 5th prior to the departure of the battery was transferred to the Base Hospital. At this time the battery gained a small number of recruits.

On December 5th the battery left Brechainville, dismounted and in heavy marching order, proceeded to the billeting area of the 29th Division at Visey, Haute-Marne. After covering approximately ninety kilometers on foot and stopping over nights in various villages the battery arrived in Visey on December 9th, and went into billets, which consisted of vacated French houses and barns.

Settled once more, the battery began the usual drills with numerous maneuvers and army problems also a little firing practice, and considerable road work, which consisted of repairing and cleaning the French roads.

On December 16th First Lieutenant H. A. Gittleman was attached to Battery D for duty and remained until January 15, 1919, then returning to his organization in the 116th Infantry and on February 11th, Second Lieutenant C. D. Parker was transferred to Headquarters Company, 111th Field Artillery, and on the same date Second Lieutenants Seibert and Riter were attached to Battery D for duty.

The boys then patiently awaited the final order but nevertheless the usual drills were carried out. More horses were required which necessitated added work.

During this period the battery lost a good many men, some being transferred to the hospitals for minor physical troubles, which later resulted in their not returning to their organization. At this time schools of various kinds were started in the A. E. F. and quite a few of the boys applied for and attended the institutions before returning home.

On March 25, 1919, Second Lieutenant C. B. Kontz returned to the battery and Second Lieutenant R. F. Mills was transferred to Headquarters Company of the 111th Field Artillery. On April 10th, First Sergeant G. C. Guy having completed the course of instruction in the O. T. C. was now appointed and commissioned Second Lieutenant and temporarily assigned to Battery D.

After many months of waiting the orders for turning in guns, caissons, horses and equipment came and by noon of April 11th the battery was ready to move at a moment's notice. Having turned in all horses and equipment by midnight of April 11th, the battery, under orders, left Visey in heavy marching order, being joined by the other units of the 111th Regiment at various points on the route to Jussey. On arriving there in the early morning before dawn, the command entrained in American box cars with forty-five men to the car for Le Hutte in the Le Mans area.

After two days and nights of tiresome travel with no rations other than tomatoes, beans and hard tack, the battery arrived at Le Hutte, Sarthe, France, the morning of April 14th and billeted in vacated French houses and barns.



## Summary of Activities—Battery E, One Hundred and Eleventh Field Artillery, Twenty-Ninth Division

Organized at Camp McClellan, Anniston, Ala., in September, 1917, from Battery E, 1st Virginia Field Artillery (formerly Battery E, of Danville). Trained there until June 20, 1918, leaving on that date for Camp Mills, Long Island. Entrained for Philadelphia June 28th and embarked the same date on the *City of Exeter*. Reached Halifax July 3rd, leaving the following day and arriving Liverpool, England, on the 15th. Entrained for Southampton, which was reached on the 16th. Embarked July 17th for France and arrived at Havre on the 18th. Entrained for Poitiers, reaching there on the 22nd and marching thence to Grand Pont. Moved to Camp de Meucon August 28th and started training with the French "75." Ordered to the advanced zone November 4th and reached Brechainville on the 7th. Remained there until December 5th, leaving on that date for Neuville-les-Voisey, which was reached on the 9th. Spent the winter there, leaving April 11, 1919, for Jussey. Entrained there for the Le Mans area, detraining at La Hutte and marching to Chaurance.

# History of Battery E

By First Lieutenant Charles T. Marrew, Jr., and First Sergeant  
John R. Mallery

One month after the declaration of war on Germany, the people of Danville, Virginia, became interested in organizing a battery of Field Artillery, but plans were not formulated for a recruiting campaign until Captain Henry A. Wiseman, Jr., a well known practicing physician of the city, became interested in the project. With the assistance of several young business men of the city the battery was recruited to full war strength. After the inspection by Colonel Jo Lane Stern and Lieutenant Minor, of the United States Army, the battery was accepted by the War Department and then mustered into Federal Service by Major K. Parson, on July 29, 1917. After six weeks' drilling the command was ordered to Camp McClellan, Alabama, arriving there September 17, 1917, where they immediately began intensive training for overseas service.

During the month of January, 1918, several of the men were assigned to the Third Officers' Training Camp, and were later granted commissions.

The battery left Camp McClellan on June 20, 1918, arriving at Camp Mills, Long Island, N. Y., on June 22, 1918, and during the early hours of the morning of June 28, 1918, entrained for Philadelphia, arriving there about noon of the same day, embarking from that port on the British transport *City of Exeter*, for foreign service, arriving in Liverpool, England, July 15, 1918, taking the train for Southampton, England, the same day, and arriving there the following day, July 16, 1918, embarking from there the following day on the *Marguerite*, for France, arriving in Le Havre, France, July 18, 1918.

Taking the train at Le Havre, the battery proceeded to Poitiers, France, arriving there July 22, 1918, from which place they hiked to Grand Pont, about six kilometers distant, where they remained six weeks. While there the battery received its first instruction in the famous French 75 mm. gun.

After a period of instruction lasting up to and including August 26, 1918, the battery entrained for Camp de Meucou (near Vannes), France, where it was quartered in barracks and upon arrival immediately received training with the seventy-five, completing and finishing up some six weeks later. The most unfortunate event transpired after their period of instruction was completed, namely, the confinement of the regiment to its own immediate area, due to the influenza epidemic, which at that time was at its height. The quarantine was at last lifted and the battery then entrained for the fourth zone of operation. After three days spent on the train, the battery arrived at Liffol le Grand, detraining there and going to Breechainville, France, in trucks. The battery arrived at Breechainville on the 7th of November, and while there awaiting orders to proceed to the long looked for front, the Armistice was signed, putting an end to the hopes that all the officers and men in the battery entertained in the way of doing their bit to rout the Hun.

Breechainville, where the battery remained in billets until December 5, 1918, was left on that day and a hike of seventy kilometers was then begun to a small village known as Neuville-les-Voisey, Haute Marne, France.

On the march to Neuville-les-Voisey, which took the battery four days of hiking, several small villages were passed and some other units of the 29th Division. On December 9, 1918, the battery arrived at Neuville-les-Voisey.

After remaining there from the 9th of December, 1918, to April, 1919, the regiment received the welcome news that at last the long looked for homeward bound trip would soon be a reality. On the 9th of April, the welcome order was received to turn in our ordnance equipment as well as horses, etc., and at midnight of the 11th of April, the battery marched from Neuville-les-Voisey to Jussey, the railhead, where they entrained for the Le Mans area and on the morning of the 14th the battery arrived at l'Hutte, Columbia. After a short wait they proceeded to hike to Chaurance, Sarthe, France, awaiting orders to proceed to the port of embarkation, Saint Nazaire, France.

## Summary of Activities—Battery F, One Hundred and Eleventh Field Artillery, Twenty-Ninth Division

Organized at Camp McClellan, Anniston, Ala., in September, 1917, from Battery F, 1st Virginia Field Artillery (formerly Rockbridge Artillery, of Lexington). Trained there until June 20, 1918, entraining on that date for Camp Mills, Long Island. Left for Philadelphia June 28th and embarked on the *City of Exeter*. Reached Halifax July 3rd. Sailed on the 4th and arrived at Liverpool July 15th. Entrained for Southampton and on the 17th, embarked for France, arriving at Havre the following day. Entrained July 20th for Poitiers, which was reached on the 22nd. Marched to Grand Pont and billeted. Proceeded to Camp de Meucon on August 28th and started training with the French "75." Ordered to the advanced zone November 4th and arrived at Brechainville on the 8th. Left on December 6th for Neuville-les-Voisey, where the battery spent the winter. Left in April, 1919, for the Le Mans area and went into billets at Columbières.



# History of Battery F

[EDITOR'S NOTE:—The author of this story is not known.]

The country was at war, the call had gone forth to the manhood of the land to take up arms in defense of her rights and honor. Ten million young men of military age had enrolled for service under the Selective Service act. Volunteer organizations were springing up over night. The scales of lethargy had fallen from the eyes of a nation that had looked with heedless indifference upon the death grapple in Europe, and June, 1917, found our country, once more a nation, wide awake, dynamic. The same forces that had awakened in the nation at large, the spirit of action, also moved the State of Virginia, which from the very inception of the nation, has been among the first to arise in defense of liberty, justice and honor.

In June, 1917, there were various military organizations in Virginia, among which were four light field artillery batteries—the Howitzers, of Richmond; the Light Artillery Blues, of Norfolk; Grimes' Battery, of Portsmouth, and the Hampton Battery, recruited in Hampton and Portsmouth. A fifth battery was ready to organize in Danville, thus just one more battery was required to complete a Virginia Artillery Regiment. General Jo Lane Stern, the Inspector General for the National Guard in Virginia conceived the idea of having this remaining battery raised and offered to their common cause and country, by Confederate veterans, as a token of their loyalty and patriotism to the Union, the battery to bear the name of some famous Confederate battery. He presented the project to the Honorable William A. Anderson, of Lexington, Virginia, a brave Confederate soldier, whose knee was shattered at the First Battle of Manassas, causing him to limp through life, but who in the paths of honor and accomplishment, in which his force and genius led him, walked with firm tread, his bent limb being a badge of distinction. Among his many honors he was twice Attorney General of Virginia, successfully conducting through the United States Supreme Court, the famous Virginia and West Virginia "debt case"—a member of the Virginia State Senate, and is now Rector of Washington and Lee University.

Major Anderson responded at once and earnestly to General Stern's suggestion. Calling upon Greenlee D. Letcher, of Lexington, Virginia, to assist him, plans were formulated about June 27th for organizing the battery. Mr. Letcher graduated from Virginia Military Institute in 1886, at the head of his class. His father was "Honest John" Letcher, the War Governor of Virginia, and thus by education, birth, tradition and temperament, he was a worthy assistant in this worthy cause. The battery when organized was to be called the "Rockbridge Artillery," after a famous battery that fought from First Manassas to Appomattox, and which was originally recruited in Rockbridge County, where the famous Natural Bridge is situated, and where Lee and Jackson, the great Confederate leaders, lived and where their tombs and monuments now are. There was only a month left in which to organize the battery, and quick action was necessary. A committee, of which Major Anderson was chairman, was organized, some members of which were Samuel R. Moore, a member of the Old Rockbridge Artillery; Hon. Frank T. Glasgow, Paul M. Penick and Frank Moore. An active canvass of Rockbridge County was started, the original purpose being to raise the battery in Rockbridge, but it was soon found that this was impossible, and the movement was widened to cover the State. Recruiting was extremely difficult, the country at that time being stirred, and to a certain extent bewildered by the National Draft, and as the time limit for raising the battery grew shorter and shorter, it was realized that not enough recruits could be obtained to organize under that table of organizations. Captain Letcher, however, knew no hazards. At the suggestion of General W. W. Sale, he visited the War Department at Washington, and with the assistance of Senators Martin and Swanson, Congressman Flood and Solicitor General John W. Davis (later Ambassador to England), consent was obtained to organize on the peace basis. So, on August 4, 1917, Battery F, 1st Virginia Field Artillery, now Battery F, 111th Field Artillery was organized and mustered into the National Guard of Virginia, and into the Federal service on August 5, 1917, Captain Letcher was mustered in as Captain under a telegram direct from the War Department, he

being at that time just past fifty years of age. Never having been in the National Guard, therefore, Captain Letcher is probably the oldest man ever to enlist in the United States Army. Battery F itself has the distinction of being probably the last unit of the old National Guard made in the U. S. A., as it was late Sunday night of the last day, August 5, 1917, that its organization was accomplished. The services of three surgeons, working almost the entire Saturday night, was necessary to complete the physical examinations. The men ultimately destined for the Supply Company went in to complete the number required, being afterwards transferred back to the Supply Company, as expected recruits came in at Richmond, Virginia. The original officers were Captain Greenlee D. Letcher, of Lexington, Virginia; First Lieutenant Edward J. Keegan and First Lieutenant Frank H. Rowe, both of Richmond, Virginia; Second Lieutenant William A. Andrews, of Roanoke, Virginia, and Second Lieutenant Milton Herman, of Danville, Virginia. Each of the lieutenants contributed to the ultimate success of the battery by their individual efforts in the localities from which they came.

Battery F having now become a part of the nation's large and rapidly developing military organization, efforts were immediately begun to prepare its members for the ultimate task ahead of them. With few exceptions most of the recruits were new to the military life and had little conception of military affairs. The battery was uniformed and a strict military routine was established. What with Captain Letcher "lockstepping" the battery around the monument in the Capitol Square in Richmond, what with the daily instructions in military manners and courtesies, what with Lieutenant Herman "scattering" his platoons over the Boulevard on Monument Avenue, what with "Box Car" Charlie dodging the compulsory shower bath as a thing at once to be feared and despised, what with Lieutenant Andrews busying himself with his elaborate wardrobe and his large and unique collection of boots, what with the despairing efforts of Acting Supply Sergeant Harry Hughes, now Lieutenant Hughes to prevail upon "Greasy" Wolfe to swap his flower bedecked wall paper shirt for a flannel O. D., what with the "solar plexus" shots so magnanimously contributed by our friend Major Warwick, what with Bob Lee, Miles McCracken, Bill Howard, Pat Proffitt, Byrd Breeden, Kester, Clinton Shuman squads "righting" and "lefting" us down Richmond's main thoroughfares, what with all these things and many more, our days at the Howitzers' Armory, in Richmond, were full indeed. Time passed rapidly. Captain Letcher was continually telling us that we would be sent to the front any day and we knew not one day but what the next would find us bound for "over there." We were not surprised completely, therefore, when on September 15, 1917, we received orders to entrain for Anniston, Alabama, to continue our training at Camp McClellan. Of course we took it for granted that Camp McClellan was just a milestone in our journey to the front. We would dally there merely long enough to pick up a few cannon and then we would be prepared to do our part in the firing line.

None of us will hardly forget the sight that greeted us when we arrived at Camp McClellan on the morning of September 17, 1917. Nothing but a mere hall surrounded by a dense, uncharted forest. Henry Jennelle thought we were in "No Man's Land" and none of us could blame him for that. Very little time was lost in contemplating our dismal surroundings. All hands set to work on making a clearing and by nightfall there was a little tented hamlet where before there was a tangled wilderness. All during the day Captain Letcher walked to and fro among his men exhorting, lending a helping hand and enthusiastically giving vent now and then to—"It's a great life, a great life." When the Captain thus opined "Red" Stevens and Beau Brummel Hargrave, the jolly Corporals would gaze upon their blistered hands which all day long had held an axe or shovel or pick handle, they would then look at the Captain and then at each other. Two minds with but a single thought.

For quite a while on training at Camp McClellan, was of an imaginary nature. We imagined we had guns, we imagined we had horses and we imagined we were soldiers until Colonel Blinkem, known in military circles as Colonel Martindale, took us in hand and showed us what real soldiering



was. The writer feels that he expresses the sentiment of his organization and he is reasonably sure that he expresses the sentiment of the entire regiment in saying that Colonel Martindale was the most feared, respected and admired officer that has ever been in command of the regiment. At Camp McClellan we spent eight long weary months being put through a course of discipline that brought to the surface the soldier in every man of us. Often did we think that it would not be our privilege to play our little role in the great drama over here. We had enlisted to fight and it was beginning to look as if we were to be left in the States to twiddle our thumbs while others reaped the honor and glory of the battle. It was a day of joy, therefore, when Major General Charles Morton assembled the officers and non-commissioned officers of the 29th Division to tell them that the Division was soon to leave for service overseas and as far as F Battery was concerned it was a still more joyful day when on June 20, 1918, we bade farewell to Camp McClellan, which we at that time thought was the most God forsaken spot in the world, but which we now think is a paradise as compared to some of the camps we have seen since leaving there.

From Camp McClellan we journeyed to Camp Mills, meeting with many warm welcomes en route. We remained at Camp Mills almost a week leaving there on June 27th for Philadelphia where the British transport "*City of Exeter*" was awaiting us. We lost no time getting aboard and the morning of June 29th found us at sea. As the receding shores of our homeland were left behind many were the thoughts that were upon us. A feeling of awe predominated. For months and months we had been engaged in preparing ourselves for the ultimate task. Now we were headed directly for it. What did the future hold in store for us?

The first day it was not so bad. The novelty of sailing, the elation over the feeling that we were at last on our way "over there," the Hindu crew with their eating a la Squat, the "bloody" English crew, the cook whom everyone wanted to throw overboard, the boat drills, the hammocks and last but not least the everlasting goat, were sufficiently diverting to satisfy the most fastidious. About the second or third day, however, things began to assume a somber hue. Captain Letcher got us out of our hammocks about three in the morning to announce that we were in the danger zone and that the life belts were to be worn constantly. Seasickness began to rage. There was a steady stream of going up on deck and an equally steady stream going overboard. Some of the young men actually thought they were going to "cash in their chips" then and there, but of course, they managed to survive those hours of storm and stress.

On July 1st, we arrived at Halifax and anchored in the harbor there awaiting the remainder of our convoy. On July 4th it was assembled and amid lusty cheering and many fluttering flags we again put out to sea. The days dragged monotonously by until we were met by our protecting destroyers. Interest was revived. The submarines were on our trail so it was rumored, and we could expect to take a dive into the briny deep almost any moment. Our expectations were raised to the highest degree when suddenly without a second's warning three roaring booms—followed each other in rapid succession, the ship trembled from stem to stem. John L. Page rushed to the hurricane deck in three leaps with eyes as big as two moons. Bill Walker had reached the upper deck when—"My God! he had forgotten his life preserver." There wasn't any question about it. We had been submarined and everybody was working for the life boats as rapidly as possible. Fortunately, however, we hadn't been submarined and the boom-booms were merely depth charges which had sent the submarine to the bottom as we found out later.

All told we were at sea for seventeen days. We were becoming mighty weary of the ocean and were hungering for a sight of land. Our delight can, therefore, be imagined when we made port at Liverpool, England, July 15, 1918. We spent three days at Southampton, England, recuperating from the effects of our sea voyage, we crossed the English Channel and spent two weary days in a rest camp at Le Havre, France, and from there we went to our first stop on the way to the front—Grand Pont—



a small village about eight kilometers from Poitiers in South Central France. Here we were introduced to France. "Sunny France." Amateur's *parlez vous* came to light. We were instructed in the complexities of the "Soissons Kans," we were told what was expected of us at the front. The Battles of Vin Blanc and Bin Rouge began to rage and the sentiment at that time was "If this is war, let's have more of it."

We were billeted with the kindly folk of Grand Pont until August 26, 1918, when we received order to move into Camp Meucon, near Vannes. Here we were to receive our final training before being given our baptism of fire. At Meucon we established an enviable record as soldiers and artillerymen. We became experts in handling the famous French 75 mm. We learned to establish all kinds of communications under adverse conditions in record time, how to fire every known sort of barrage and how to do everything that an artilleryman preparing himself for the front ought to know. We were determined to be fit when the call came for us to put our shoulders to the wheel. Despite the fact that our training had been slightly retarded by an epidemic of Spanish influenza which caused twenty deaths in the regiment, but none in F Battery, we felt that we were prepared to do our duty well when we received orders to move into the zone of advance on November 6, 1918. November 8th, found us in barracks at Breechainville in the Vosges. We could hear the booming of the guns there and at night we could see the flashes. Forty more kilometers and we would actually be at the front. Everyone was on tiptoe eagerly awaiting the call that would send us at a double in the direction of these booming guns. But the call never came. On November 11, 1918, the news reached us that the Armistice had been signed and that "la guerre" was "finis." Naturally we were glad that the war was over, but we could not but feel keenly disappointed over the fact that we had been denied the honor and privilege of taking our place among those who had made the world "safe for democracy." So near, yet so far. Forty kilometers between us and the realization of an end towards which we had worked faithfully for months and months. Had the war lasted three more days F Battery—so we learned later—would have seen the action it was looking forward to so eagerly, in the prepared great "All American Drive" between Verdun and Metz.

Now that the war was over we began to think about going home. Our task over here was finished and we wished to resume the many unfinished tasks back home.

On December 6, 1918, we left Breechainville to join the division which was being assembled in the vicinity of Bourbonne-les-Bains. We were billeted at Neuville le Voisey. There we remained until April 10th when the news suddenly came that the division had been ordered home. The battery itself received orders to proceed to the Le Mans Area. At the present writing we are billeted at Columbières, a small village about forty kilometers from Le Mans. We expect to leave here for St. Nazaire, our port of embarkation Tuesday, April 28th, and by June 1, 1919, we hope to be civilians once more.

## Summary of Activities—The Supply Company, One Hundred and Eleventh Field Artillery, Twenty-Ninth Division

Organized at Camp McClellan, Anniston, Ala., in September, 1917, from the Supply Company of the 1st Virginia Field Artillery. Trained there until June 19, 1918, leaving on that date for Camp Mills, Long Island. Sailed from New York June 29th, on the *Demosthenes*, and reached Halifax July 3rd. Left on the 4th for England and arrived at Liverpool July 15th. Entrained for Southampton, reaching there on the 16th. Embarked for France July 17th and landed at Havre the next day. Left for Poitiers on the 19th and arrived on the 21st. Marched to Migne and billeted. Moved to Camp de Meucon August 27th, and started training with the French "75." Ordered to the advanced zone November 4th and arrived at Aillianville on the 7th. Left Aillianville for Vernois sur Amance, December 6th., arriving on the 10th. Spent the winter there. Left in April, 1919, for the Le Mans area and billeted at Columbières.

# History of the Supply Company

By First Lieutenant Harry M. Hughes

This company of the 111th, Field Artillery was organized at Richmond, Virginia, by Captain Edward J. Keegan, on May 23, 1917. Recruiting was finished and the unit was mustered into Federal service as the Supply Detachment 1st Virginia Field Artillery.

On September 8, 1917, pursuant to telegraphic instructions, received from Headquarters Eastern Department, on September 7, 1917, First Lieutenant Harry M. Hughes and a detachment of men left for Fort Oglethorpe, Georgia, where the 1st Battalion and Headquarters Detachment of the 1st Virginia Field Artillery were stationed for the second R. O. T. C., arriving at this place on September 9, 1917.

The remaining part of the detachment, also Headquarters Company, Detachment with Captain Edward J. Keegan in charge, left Richmond, Virginia, on September 15, 1917, for Camp McClellan, Anniston, Alabama, where the 2nd Battalion, 1st Virginia Field Artillery was stationed, arriving there on September 17, 1917. It was on this date that the Supply Detachment was transferred to the 111th Field Artillery.

On October 10, 1917, following instructions from the War Department the company was raised to war strength of one hundred and twenty (120) men, including the Ordnance Detachment of twelve (12) men, sixty-two of whom were transferred from Company M, 4th Virginia Infantry, sixteen (16) from the batteries of the regiment.

On December 8, 1917, the detachment on detached service at Fort Oglethorpe, Georgia, reported to the Supply Company, 111th Field Artillery stationed at Camp McClellan, Anniston, Alabama, as per Special Order No. 193, Headquarters, Southeastern Department.

Through disability and transfer the company decreased twenty-four (24) in number, which was filled in by replacements from Camp Gordon, Georgia, and Kelly Field, Texas, on May 24, 1918.

After nine months of camp training and hard work with inspections and drilling, and after completely equipping the regiment they were then ready for overseas service. It was here the company won the name of "Keegans hard rocks."

On July 19, 1918, the company left Camp McClellan for port of embarkation which was Camp Mills, Long Island, arriving there on the 21st of June. Left West 57th Street on the 29th of June on the H. M. S. *Demosthenes* by the way of Halifax, N. S., arriving there on the 3rd of July, 1918, waiting there one day for convoy.

Arriving in Liverpool, England, on the 15th of July we left the same day by rail for Southampton, England, arriving there on the 16th, remaining two days in a rest camp. Left Southampton, England, by boat, crossing the English Channel and arriving at Le Havre, France, on the 18th day of July and remained in rest camp there one day. Left Le Havre on the 19th of July for Poitiers, France, by rail, arriving there on the 21st of July, for a period of six weeks. Departed from Migne the 24th of August, entrained at Lessarts, France, and left the same day. Arriving at Camp de Meucon, Vannes, France, on the 27th of August for an extended period of training. Left Camp de Meucon, on November 4th, by rail and arrived at Aillianville, France, in the advance zone on November 7, 1918, where we were stationed at the signing of the Armistice.

Left Aillianville, December 6, 1918, on a cross country hike to Vernois sur Mance, France, to join our division for the first time since leaving Camp McClellan, arriving at Vernois sur Mance, on the 10th of December, 1918. While billeted here we were subject to numerous inspections such as billets, kitchens, area, and appearance in general, on all of which we were commended by the Brigade Commander.

On March 24, 1919, the division was reviewed by General John J. Pershing, and the Regimental Commander was highly complimented on the appearance in general of his command and especially the transporta-



tion of this company, which the general said was the best he had seen in the A. E. F. In the Divisional Competitive Transportation Inspection on April the 8th the company again carried off the high honor of having the best transportation in the Division, and was commended highly by all inspecting officers.

After turning in all equipment, preparatory to returning to the United States, the command left Vernois sur Mance and entrained at Jussey, France, on April 12, 1919, for the Le Mans Area. Couloubiers, France, was reached on April 14, 1919. Duties there consisted of drills and inspections for the forenoons and athletics for the afternoon.

The company will remain in this area until the time for embarkation to the United States which would be in the neighborhood of May 1, 1919, thus ending the services of the Supply Company, 111th Field Artillery in the World War of 1914-1918.

## Summary of Activities—One Hundred and Fourth Ammunition Train (Horse Battalion), Twenty-Ninth Division

Organized December 6, 1917, at Camp McClellan, Anniston, Ala., by merging D Company of the 1st Squadron of Virginia Cavalry (formerly Richmond Light Infantry Blues), with A, B and C Companies of the same squadron. Battalion trained at Camp McClellan until June, 1918. Left for Camp Mills, Long Island, June 18th, and sailed on the *Medic* June 29th. Reached Halifax July 3rd. Left for France July 11th. Arrived Tilbury Docks, England, July 22nd, and entrained for Southampton. Embarked for France July 24th, reaching Cherbourg following morning. Marched to British rest camp at Toulaville. Returned to Cherbourg on the 26th and entrained for Poitiers. Marched to Jaulnay Clan and started training. Left on August 27th for Camp Meucon. Engaged in training there until November 10th, entraining that date for the front. Detrained two days later at Longeville. Horse Battalion proceeded the next day to Savonniere and billeted. Marched to Tronville November 21st and entrained for Bourbonne les Bains area. Detrained at Vitry, November 22nd, proceeding thence to Jussey and going into billets. Battalion moved to Villars St. Marcellin January 2, 1919, and resumed training. Left for Jussey April 15th and entrained for Le Mans area. Detrained at Columbieres April 17th and marched to St. Remy les Monts. Moved to Beaumont April 28th, and entrained at Beaumont for St. Nazaire. Embarked May 11th on *Orizaba*. Disembarked at Newport News May 22nd. Split into detachments there and entrained for various camps to be mustered out. Largest part of battalion left Newport News on the *Berkley* May 29th and reached Richmond May 30th. Mustered out at Camp Lee June 1st, 2nd and 3rd.

# History of the One Hundred and Fourth Ammunition Train (Horse Battalion)

By Russell B. De Vine

**Sources:** History of Horse Battalion, 104th Ammunition Train, by Major Mathew F. James. History of 104th Ammunition Train, by Captain C. Frey. History of Detachment, 104th Ammunition Train, by Captain Thomas J. Flynn. Historical Sketch A and C Companies, by Captain Ward. History of Headquarters, Horse Battalion, by Major Mathew F. James.

---

Few military organizations in the United States have a more distinguished record than the Richmond Light Infantry Blues. Organized in Richmond, Va., on May 10, 1789, the command has been in continuous service since that time and has participated with credit in all of the wars the nation has been involved in, except the war with Mexico, as well as serving the State in times of trouble and in peace.

In June, 1916, the National Guard was mustered into Federal service for duty on the Mexican border. Because of the fact that Virginia's infantry quota had been fixed by the War Department at two complete regiments the Blues Battalion was not included. Although petitioned to include the Blues the request was refused; however, the War Department offered to call the command into service as a squadron of cavalry. This proposition was accepted and the Blues were mustered into the United States army as the First Squadron of Virginia Cavalry on the 21st of June, 1916. The squadron remained in Camp Stuart, at Richmond, until October, 1916, when it entrained for Brownsville, Texas. There it was designated as the First Squadron, First Provisional Regiment of Cavalry, and immediately commenced training under Regular Army cavalry officers. Excellent progress was made along this line and from January to March, 1917, the squadron did border patrol duty along the Rio Grande.

The command entrained for Richmond, on March 13, 1917, and arrived there on the 18th. Preparations for demobilization were started but before this could be completed a state of war was declared with Germany and the Blues were ordered held in service.

At this time the commissioned personnel comprised the following:

**Commanding Officer,** Major, Edgar W. Bowles; **Adjutant,** First Lieutenant, James G. Earnest; **Supply Officer,** First Lieutenant, L. H. Gates; **Medical Officer,** Second Lieutenant, W. N. Mercer; **Veterinarian,** Second Lieutenant, P. H. Hudgins; **Troop A,** Captain, James B. Puller; **Troop A, First Lieutenant,** James J. Burke, Jr.; **Troop A, Second Lieutenant,** Maurice J. Sweeney; **Troop B,** Captain, Mathew F. James; **Troop B, First Lieutenant,** John A. Augustine; **Troop B, Second Lieutenant,** Herbert E. Featherstone; **Troop C,** Captain, Marion S. Hewitt; **Troop C, First Lieutenant,** Charles P. Bigger; **Troop C, Second Lieutenant,** Sheppard Crump; **Troop D,** Captain, John A. Cutchins; **Troop D, First Lieutenant,** Bradley J. Boissieux; **Troop D, Second Lieutenant,** George L. Parsons.

The squadron was split up into troops and sent to various sections of the state to guard bridges, railroads, public works and munition plants. From April 5th to April 18th, Troop A was at Roanoke, guarding the Norfolk and Western shops at that point, and from April 18th the headquarters of Troop A were at Danville with guard outposts stationed at Evington, Alta Vista, Hurt, and Dry Fork along the Southern Railway, and at Leesville and Huddleston along the Virginian. Troop B remained in Richmond guarding the plant of the American Locomotive Company. Troop C was stationed at Lynchburg from April 5th to 15th guarding the Southern, Norfolk and Western, and Chesapeake and Ohio Railroad yards and shops, at Richmond from April 16th to June 15th guarding the Tredegar plant, and at Alta Vista from June 15th on, with outposts along the Virginian railroad at Brookneal, Mansion, Cullen and Phenix. Headquarters of Troop D were at Crewe, Va., with one platoon there and an outpost at High



Bridge, while another platoon was stationed at Clarksville guarding Southern Railway bridges.

Squadron headquarters were maintained in Richmond. Recruiting was pressed with vigor, the new men being organized into a Casual Company under Lieutenant Crump for training purposes. A considerable number of men from the Blues went to Officers' Training Camps during the summer, all of whom won commissions.

In the latter part of August, 1917, the various units of the squadron were assembled in Richmond, and on the 5th day of September entrained for Camp McClellan at Anniston, Ala. Upon arrival there the squadron was assigned to the 54th Field Artillery Brigade, then in process of formation. Major Bowles was made acting Adjutant of the Brigade and Captain Cutchins was transferred to Division headquarters. Just when it seemed as if the squadron would be broken up and merged with other units orders were received on September 21st transferring it to Auxiliary Remount Depot No. 309, at Anniston. Cavalry training was resumed and the command soon reached a high state of efficiency. On November 26th orders were received to report at Camp McClellan to the Commanding Officer of the 104th Ammunition Train which was being organized at that time. Major Bowles was detached from the squadron by the same order—later being assigned to command a squadron of National Army Cavalry. By a divisional order on December 6, 1917, the Blues were formed into three companies, D Company being merged with A, B, and C, and designated the Horse Battalion of the 104th Ammunition Train. At the same time Lieutenant Gates was transferred to the 114th Infantry, Lieutenant Featherstone to the Trench mortar Battery, Lieutenant Boissieux to the Headquarters Troop, and Lieutenant Bigger to Division Headquarters. The three last named were subsequently transferred to the National Army Cavalry. Major Hugh Riley, of the Maryland National Guard, was appointed Commander of the Battalion and Lieutenant Burke was named as Adjutant. Company Officers were as follows: E Company, Captain Puller and Lieutenant Sweeney; F Company, Captain James and Lieutenants Parsons and Augustine; G Company, Captain Hewitt and Lieutenants Crump and Earnest; and Medical Detachment, Lieutenant Mercer. Lieutenant Earnest was shortly transferred to Division Headquarters and subsequently detailed to the National Army Cavalry. Between this time and the departure for overseas, Major Riley was succeeded by Major Harvey L. Jones, of the Maryland National Guard; Captain Hewitt was discharged because of physical disability; Lieutenant Parsons was made First Lieutenant and assigned to Company G, Lieutenant Crump was promoted to First Lieutenant and made Battalion Supply Officer, Lieutenants Burke and Mercer were promoted to Captains; Lieutenant Sweeney was promoted to First Lieutenant of E Company, First Sergeant Herbert B. Lee was promoted to Second Lieutenant of Company F, Second Lieutenant E. Granger Ancarrow, of old D. Troop and Second Lieutenant P. C. Spillman, both graduates of the Divisional Officers' Training Camp were assigned, respectively, to G and E Companies. Captain Mercer was transferred to the 115th Infantry. Captain M. M. Goodwyn, of the Virginia National Guard, succeeded to the command of Company G, to be subsequently succeeded himself by Captain E. C. Feigenspan, of the New Jersey National Guard.

The battalion supplied a large number of successful candidates to the Divisional Officers' Training Schools conducted in the winter and spring and a number of enlisted men received commissions in various branches of the service outside of the division. Approximately one hundred replacements were received in May, 1918, the majority of these being transferred from aviation camps in Texas.

The latter part of May the battalion turned in its horses to the Remount Depot. This was a most unpleasant duty for these animals had been cared for by the same men since October, 1916, and strong attachments had developed.

The command left Camp McClellan on June 18, 1918, and arrived at Camp Mills, Long Island three days later. Here, inspections of equipment were held and all unserviceable articles ordered turned in: New rifles

and equipment were issued. Passes to visit New York were issued to all the men and many of them were permitted to go home for a few days.

Everyone was ordered to be in camp on the evening of June 28th and the next morning the organization entrained for Long Island City. Boarding a waiting ferryboat the trip was quickly made down the East River and up the Hudson to the pier of the Royal Mail Steam Packet Company. After disembarking the men were given coffee and buns by the Red Cross and then went aboard *H. M. S. Medic*. This ship had at one time been a freighter in the Australian service and before being converted into a transport had been used as a cattle boat. That afternoon the *Medic* accompanied by two other vessels and escorted by a converted yacht passed out of New York harbor. The men had been ordered below as soon as they got aboard and were not allowed on deck until land had been left behind. Dense fogs were encountered after getting out to sea necessitating a very slow rate of speed, so it was July 3rd before anchor was dropped outside of Halifax harbor. The next morning the *Medic* entered the harbor to take on munitions and wait for convoy. Everybody remained on board that day but on July 5th were taken ashore, where setting-up exercises were indulged in. The following day the Canadian Y. M. C. A. was visited where hot baths were enjoyed. The men also had an opportunity to stage contests of one sort or another on the city athletic fields.

On July 11th the *Medic* left Halifax, as one of a convoy of twenty transports escorted by the *Kildonan Castle*—a former passenger liner which had recently been converted into a cruiser. Perfect weather prevailed and the trip down the river between the rocky coasts with their background of green hills was very pleasant. The voyage was in the main uneventful. Life preservers had to be worn at all times, no smoking was allowed on deck after 8:30 P. M. and all lights in the hold had to be out at 9:30. Life-boat drill was held every morning at 10:30. Cards and checkers constituted the chief amusements. A canteen afforded the opportunity to purchase various small necessities and luxuries. Galleys, as kitchens are known on board ship, were located in various parts of the ship, the food being prepared by English cooks. A submarine scare livened things up on the evening of July 16th when one of the ships on the flank of the *Medic* opened fire at dusk upon a suspected submarine. Other ships joined in and about thirty rounds were fired. The escort of destroyers met the convoy two days from the English coast and remained until the danger zone was passed. The convoy passed through the Straits of Dover and up the Thames receiving loud signals of welcome from the many vessels lining the banks. The command disembarked at Tilbury Docks, the port of London, July 22nd, where a short speech of welcome was made by an English officer and a little pamphlet containing a letter of welcome from King George V was given each soldier. Boarding the train which was waiting at the pier the suburbs of London were quickly left behind. Southampton was reached at 2:00 A. M. on the morning of July 23rd. Most of the men were sound asleep when aroused by the whistles of the non-coms. Packs were hurriedly gotten together and the outfit marched to a rest camp on the outskirts of the city and spent the remainder of the night in tents. Everyone was permitted to sleep as long as desired the next day. After retreat on the 23rd all soldiers were given passes to visit Southampton until 10:30 P. M.

The next morning the outfit marched down to the pier and after a short rest there boarded the transport for France. That trip across the Channel was a never-to-be-forgotten one. The entire Ammunition Train was on board and space was at a premium. Officers and men fared alike, sleeping wherever a spot to lie down could be found. About 7:00 A. M. the morning of July 25th, the ship made its way into the harbor of Cherbourg. Disembarking the command marched fifteen kilometers to the British rest camp near Toulaville. There, a considerable number of the soldiers managed to secure baths. No one was permitted to leave camp. Marching back to Cherbourg the following morning the organization received its first introduction to the "doughboy Pullmans" as someone aptly described the French box cars with forty hommes—eight chevaux painted on the sides. It might be said in passing that the American soldier adapted



himself to this mode of travel as to all the other unusual conditions with which he came in contact with remarkable facility. He soon learned too that the capacity of the box car as indicated by the figures painted on its side meant less than nothing as the *real* capacity was always determined by dividing the number of men to be carried by the number of cars in the train. Leaving Cherbourg on the morning of the 26th, the train proceeded through Alençon and Angers to Poitiers, where the men detrained and marched twenty kilometers to Jaulnay Clan in the Department of Vienne where they billeted. Two companies of the Motor Battalion were ordered en route to join the 29th Division Infantry in Alsace while the remainder joined the Artillery Brigade then at Poitiers. A few dropped out on the march, but on the whole everybody held up remarkably well. Housing conditions were somewhat unfavorable here, but the townspeople were very hospitable and did what they could to make things agreeable. Headquarters were located in a very pretty chateau on the Avenue de Bordeaux while the other offices were scattered in various sections of the town. The command had no horses or caissons but engaged in strenuous dismounted training. Schools for officers and non-coms were conducted under the supervision of an experienced officer from the Ammunition Train of the First Division.

Lieutenant Augustine was detailed to organize a provisional company of Military Police from the battalion for the city. Lieutenants Read, Walsh and Weiman, O. R. C., joined Companies F, G and E, respectively, during the stay here.

Drilling and hiking were part of the daily routine, as was bayonet instruction. A school for gas instruction was established where hiking with masks on was taught. Quite a few members of the battalion were sent to the various schools throughout France. Wine was abundant here—tobacco being the only article that was really scarce. The different units of the command were scattered through the town. The Personnel Office was located in a small bakery opposite the railroad station, the Medical Detachment was quartered in the center of the town, Company D at the south end, and Companies E, F and G on the west side.

The organization left Jaulnay Clan, on August 27th, as a unit of the 54th Artillery Brigade bound for Camp Meucon where it arrived the following day. Meucon, a very large camp, holding 20,000 men easily, was beautifully situated among the hills in that part of France known as Bretagne. Many old customs of dress which are very interesting still obtain in this section. From Meucon details were dispatched to different French ports to receive trucks and drive them to the front. Drills, gas instruction, and rifle practice were part of the daily schedule. Here a small number of animals and vehicles were issued and the men got their first experience in the actual handling of ammunition. The men were given passes on Saturdays and Sundays to visit Vannes.

About the first of September the influenza epidemic hit the Ammunition Train and practically paralyzed it for nearly a month. Approximately sixty per cent of the men were out of commission and sixteen deaths resulted.

Major Jones had been promoted to Division Inspector on September 5th, so Captain Matthew F. James, of Company F, was promoted to Major and took command of the battalion on September 17th, Captain Feigenspan was transferred to the Service of Supply and Captain Burke was designated to command Company G. Lieutenants Sweeney and Parsons were transferred to the Aviation, Lieutenant Crump was assigned to G Company, and Lieutenant Read was made Battalion Supply Officer. To fill vacancies caused by these changes Second Lieutenants Robert R. Lee, of Virginia, and Edward L. Duer, III, of Maryland, were transferred from the Artillery to E and F Companies respectively. Lieutenant H. B. Lee was promoted to First Lieutenant and assigned to F Company. Later on, Lieutenants Weiman and Walsh were transferred back to the Artillery.

On November 10th the command received orders to proceed to the front and on the morning of the 11th the men were on board train on the way to Vannes. At this point the change from the narrow gauge railway had to be made and it became necessary to spend the night in box



cars. While awaiting transportation at the station news that the Armistice had been signed was received. Celebrations of every conceivable sort were staged in Vannes, and the men were allowed to go into town, with orders to be back at 11:30 P. M. At 5:30 the next morning the train moved out of Vannes. After two days and nights of traveling the command detrained and marched to Longeville. The next day the Horse Battalion proceeded to Savonniere, three kilometers east of Bar-le-Duc and went into billets. The Motor Battalion remained at Longeville. The work now was of an altogether different nature, consisting largely of transporting divisional units and of hauling salvage. The two companies which had been left at Cherbourg rejoined the outfit here. On November 21st the battalion marched ten kilometers to Tronville and entrained there along with other units of the division for the Bourbonne les Bains area. Detraining at Vitry, Vernois, late on the 22nd the battalion made camp for the night, leaving early the next morning for Jussey, Haute Soane, twenty kilometers away, where it went into billets. F Company was detailed very soon thereafter for railhead work at Bourbonne les Bains, where it remained until December 28th, when it was relieved by E Company, and returned to Jussey. While there Captain Burke was transferred to the Military Police Corps and Captain C. F. Dittmar of the Motor Battalion appointed to command G Company. Captain N. L. Cassibry, of Mississippi, was assigned to the command as Battalion Adjutant. Members of the Horse Battalion were transferred to the 114th Infantry. Members of the Horse Battalion were used on labor details, hauling forage, wood, etc.

On January 2, 1919, the battalion was ordered to Villars St. Marcellin, Haute Marne, where it arrived after a hard march of twenty-five kilometers over very bad roads. Train headquarters were located here as well as the headquarters of the Horse Battalion. The Medical Detachment and Companies F and G were also quartered in this village. A negro battalion was stationed here and remained for six weeks. Motor Battalion headquarters were at Jussey, in which town the enlisted Ordnance personnel were billeted, also Companies B and C. Company A was at Serqueux, Company D at Beaucharmey and Company E at Bourbonne les Bains. Training was energetically carried forward, especially pistol and rifle practice. A number of men were awarded marksmens medals. All sorts of athletic contests were staged. A splendid theatrical troupe was organized which won commendation not only for its initial performance at Fresnes, but also on subsequent performances both within and without the divisional area. As spring wore on all other work was put aside for road repairing, hauling wood, supplies, and ammunition for the division. Two hundred horses suffering from the last stages of mange were sent to the organization for care and treatment in March, 1919.

Captain Dittmar and Lieutenant Duer were sent to French universities the first of March, and Lieutenant Sheppard Crump was appointed commanding officer of G Company. Company E remained at Bourbonne les Bains carrying on the railhead work of the division. Orders had been received, however, announcing the early return to the United States of the organization so Captain Puller asked to be relieved because of private business reasons. Lieutenant Crump was designated to command Company E, on April 1st, being promoted to Captain very soon thereafter; Lieutenant R. R. Lee was detailed to Company E and Captain Cassibry given command of Company G, while Lieutenant Spillman was detached from the division altogether. Lieutenant Ancarrow was promoted to First Lieutenant, and Second Lieutenant E. T. Mutersbaugh, of Virginia, was assigned to Company G.

All of the men were given liberal leaves during the winter and spring. Most of them went to resorts in Southern France where arrangements had been made for their entertainment. A great many former members of the Blues paid visits to the outfit.

It had not been contemplated that the 29th Division should sail until July, so the surprise was general when orders were received early in April to prepare for departure. All property was turned in and the battalion left Villars St. Marcellin in trucks on April 15th for Jussey, where it entrained

at 4:00 o'clock the next morning for the Le Mans area. It detrained at Columbiers at 8:00 P. M., April 17th, and after fourteen hours of the hardest marching in the history of the command reached St. Remy les Monts on the 18th. The next ten days were busy ones, but on April 28th the organization left on foot and in trucks for Beaumont where it entrained and arrived at St. Nazaire on the 29th and went into barracks at Camp No. L. Company E remained at Bourbonne les Bains closing out the railhead until April 24th when it entrained for St. Nazaire, reaching there on the 26th. E Company was quartered at Camp Guthrie and did not rejoin the battalion for six days. On the 11th of May the command with the exception of Company E went aboard the U. S. S. *Orizaba* and after a satisfactory voyage passed through the Virginia capes on May 21st and anchored at Newport News. The next morning the battalion disembarked and marched to Camp Hill, just outside of the city. Company E left St. Nazaire on the U. S. S. *Virginia* and docked on May 25th at Newport News, where it rejoined the battalion. At Camp Hill the men were segregated into detachments with respect to the localities where they were to be discharged and these groups left separately for the camps where they were to be mustered out of service. The Camp Lee detachment, composing by far the largest part of the battalion left Newport News on the evening of May 29th on the Old Dominion Steamship *Berkeley* and arrived in Richmond the morning of May 30th. After parading there the men entrained for Camp Lee and were discharged on June 1st, 2nd, and 3rd, three years lacking two weeks from the time the organization was mustered into Federal service.

There were approximately 350 members of the Blues commissioned during the war—a record which in all probability was unequalled by any command in the country. Every member of the battalion is proud of this record—and deservedly so.

## Summary of Activities—One Hundred and Fifteenth Field Hospital Company, One Hundred and Fourth Sanitary Train, Twenty-Ninth Division

Organized at Camp McClellan, Anniston, Ala., in September, 1917, from Field Hospital No. 1 of the Virginia National Guard. Trained there until June 21, 1918, leaving on that date for Camp Mills, Long Island. Sailed July 5th on the *Aquitania* and arrived at Liverpool on the 12th. Entrained for Winchester at once. Remained there twenty-four hours, then entrained for Southampton. Embarked for France July 14th and reached Cherbourg the following day. Entrained on July 17th and arrived at Fontaine in Alsace the 19th, marching to Revescemont the next day and going into billets. Marched to Massevaux July 26th and took over operation of hospital there. Moved to Montreux-Jeune, August 9th. Proceeded to Conde-en-Barrios August 25th. Left for Ippecourt September 30th. Reached Rampont October 2nd, and on the 12th moved to Charny. Moved to Glorieux October 27th, proceeding thence to Combles on the 29th. Left for Tronville on the 17th and on the 21st entrained for Vitrey, reaching that point the next day, marching thence to Voisey. Established contagious hospital there November 26th and operated same until April 10, 1919. Company left Voisey April 14th for Jussey and entrained for Beaumont in the Le Mans area. Entrained for St. Nazaire April 30th. Embarked May 11th on the *Manchuria* for America, reaching Hoboken on the 22nd. Finally mustered out of service at Camp Meade, Md., June 2, 1919.



# History of the One Hundred and Fifteenth Field Hospital Company

By Rufus Bradley Scott

During the summer of 1915, Captain Jacob Carroll Bowman, who was at that time in command of Company M, 2nd Virginia Infantry, was designated by the Adjutant General of Virginia to organize a Field Hospital Company. The company was made up almost entirely of young men from Radford, East Radford and vicinity, and the first members enlisted between the 1st and 10th day of August, 1915.

Captain Bowman was re-commissioned Major in the Medical Corps and placed in command of the company. He was eminently fitted for this post, as in addition to being a successful practicing physician, he was a soldier, having participated in the Spanish-American War with the South Carolina state troops, and having later served an enlistment in the Coast Artillery Corps of the Regular Army, where he became a non-commissioned officer.

Dr. Guy B. Denit, of Salem, a graduate of V. P. I., was commissioned First Lieutenant. The old joke, that must date back to the days of Julius Caesar, "that a Medical Officer was not a soldier," could not apply to these two officers of this company, because both were soldiers and excellent officers. Sergeant C. E. Mizell, of the Regular Army Medical Corps and a veteran of some twenty-five years service in many parts of the world, was detailed as instructor.

After establishing headquarters in its new armory on the second floor of the Epperly Building, in East Radford, the company started training vigorously and made noteworthy progress during the winter of 1915 and spring of 1916. Foot drill, first aid, and the rudiments of soldiering were taken up in the armory when the weather did not permit outdoor exercises, and when weather permitted, litter drill and tent drills were practiced intensively.

The entire personnel showed great interest in the training, an interest that endured throughout the life of the company and made it an exceptional organization throughout its military career.

Pleasure was mixed with the work of preparing for a war that no one knew was brewing. Dances and other social affairs were given in the armory, which gradually became the gathering place of a large number of the young people of the city.

Then came that momentous day, the 19th of June, 1916, when everybody awakened in the morning to find scare headlines in the newspapers, stating that the entire National Guard of the United States had been ordered mobilized for duty on the Mexican border. Field Hospital No. 1 responded to the call with promptness and energy. The out-of-town members came in by train, automobile and on horseback, and everyone at once got down to business. Recruiting parties were sent out and a number of new members were secured.

The equipment of the company, which consisted of everything from four-mule escort wagons and fifty-foot ward tents to surgical needles and gauze bandages, to say nothing of field ranges, iodine and C. C. pills, was packed and marked and put in readiness for loading at a moment's notice. Additional non-commissioned officers were appointed. All spare time was devoted to intensive training, and Lieutenant Denit gave daily talks on camp sanitation, personal hygiene and other subjects invaluable to new soldiers about to go into field service. Everyone was expectant and wondering what would happen next, where they would go and when. Finally, on June 24th, when everyone had begun to think maybe nothing would happen after all and the company had settled down to a regular routine, a telegram came to Major Bowman ordering Field Hospital No. 1 to en-train at once for the mobilization camp at Richmond. The wagons, already

loaded with other equipment, were quickly loaded on flat cars and spiked down.

Very nearly the entire population turned out to say farewell. The departure was a sad one. Who could know that these gallant souls were to do "cot fatigue" in the cool shades of Sherwood Park, in Richmond, two thousand miles from the Mexican border for the next four months, and after that not see any Mexicans except the "tame ones" in San Antonio, Texas, some ninety miles from the "front."

The special train, consisting of one day coach and three flat cars steamed out of East Radford at 9:45 o'clock, the night of June 24th, and arrived in Richmond at 7 o'clock the following morning. A more tired and hungry bunch would have been hard to find.

The equipment was unloaded and preparations made to pitch camp at once. With the aid of one team of horses the men of the company rolled the wagons to the camp site, which was a quarter of a mile from the railroad siding. Tents were pitched and quarters provided for the company. Due to the fact that no rations were available at camp the company had to go into the city for meals. However, on Monday, the 26th, the carpenters had completed the mess hall and the cooks solved the mysteries involved in setting up the field range; a supply of rations was obtained, and the men had their first army meal for dinner that day.

Field Hospital No. 1 was designated as the Camp Hospital for the mobilization camp and admitted its first patient on June 27th. The entire hospital equipment was set up and preparations for operation at full capacity made. This capacity, however, was never needed at any one time. The total number of patients treated at this camp was slightly over three hundred, of which number not a single patient died.

In addition to caring for the sick of the camp, the task of administering antityphoid serum to each of the 3,200 soldiers, and of vaccinating each against smallpox, was assigned to this hospital, and carried out in an efficient manner.

The company was mustered into Federal service on July 1st, by Captain A. M. Shipp, United States Army. At Camp H. C. Stuart, as the mobilization camp was known, additional officers were assigned to the company, First Lieutenant Walter A. Warfield being the first. He resigned while the company was on the border. First Lieutenant James B. Anderson, accompanied the company to the border and remained with it until the day of leaving for home, when he was detached for the purpose of accompanying the Virginia Signal Corps to Richmond. He was later re-commissioned in the Regular Army. First Lieutenant Wm. H. Whitmore accompanied the organization to the border. Resigned early in 1917 for purpose of accepting a commission in the Navy. First Lieutenant Waller N. Mercer was with the company only a short time when he was designated surgeon of the First Squadron of Virginia Cavalry. First Lieutenant Robertson had been with the company but a few days when he was transferred to the 1st Virginia Infantry.

The company went to Richmond with a strength of about fifty-one enlisted men. The rigid physical requirements resulted in many of these being rejected and discharged. A number of men enlisted while at Richmond, but the strength of the company was never above forty-eight until after its return from the border.

Camp was broken at 10 o'clock Wednesday morning, October 18th, and on a special train, which also carried the Virginia Signal Corps, the long journey to the border was commenced. The route taken carried the company through Radford and a considerable crowd gathered at the station to speak to the boys. Many boxes of provisions had been prepared and everything possible was done to contribute to the comfort of the detachment on its long journey. The train arrived at the East Radford station at 8:20, but the boys barely had time to exchange greetings before the bugle sounded and they were on their way again. The route passed through Chattanooga, Memphis, Little Rock, Oklahoma City and Fort Worth, finally arriving at San Antonio early Sunday morning, October 22nd, where the train was switched to Camp Wilson, near Fort San Houston, and the troops detrained about 9 A. M.



After a few days spent putting the camp in shape, training was again taken up. Thirty-three mules and sixteen horses were drawn from the Quartermaster and work began. Hikes were taken daily with full field equipment. On these hikes all hospital equipment was carried and a complete hospital, consisting of six ward tents, operating, dispensary, office and other accessory tents, was established, mess prepared, camp struck and the return march begun. All operations were timed and everybody did their part in the spirit of a competitive game. The company reached such proficiency in establishing a field hospital that it was later used as a demonstration company on a number of occasions.

Along with the Wisconsin Field Hospital, Florida Field Hospital, United States Field Hospital No. 6, Wisconsin Ambulance Company, Virginia Field Hospital No. 1 made up the First Provisional Sanitary Train, and left Camp Wilson at 7 A. M., November 12th, to march to the Military Reservation at Leon Springs, Texas, for extensive maneuvers. The trip was made in two days, one night being spent at "Nine Mile Hill," arriving at Leon Springs about 3 P. M., Sunday, November 13th. Maneuvers were participated in every day under assumed battle conditions and some operations were carried on at night. The entire train was handled so as to be of greatest aid to the wounded and at the same time be protected as much as possible from the fire of the assumed enemy. Field hospitals were established, patients secured, treated and evacuated; the hospital taken down and moved forward, or to the rear, according to the tide of battle. The rugged landscape of the large reservation made rather rough going, but in all projects Virginia Field Hospital No. 1 held up its end. A number of enlisted men of the Sanitary Detachment 2nd West Virginia Infantry, were attached for temporary duty during the maneuvers, because of this company being short of full war strength. The return march to Camp Wilson was made November 29th, and was completed in one day.

With the approach of Christmas plans were made for a big celebration. The dining-room was decorated in Texas holly, mistletoe and cedar and the occasion was a memorable one in every respect.

After the holidays instruction was again taken up, but not so intensively as before, more time being permitted for recreation. A number of men were detailed for periods of training in nursing, etc., at the Base Hospital at Fort San Houston. This, together with the experience acquired in operating the camp hospital at Richmond and the field training at Richmond, Camp Wilson and Leon Springs, developed the company into a highly efficient field hospital organization.

San Antonio was an ideal city, and the soldiers at Camp Wilson had many privileges, but, like every other organization on the border, the men were anxious to return home. However, moving orders came at last and we departed from Camp Wilson at one P. M., Tuesday, March 13, 1917. The train was routed through Houston, Texas, Baton Rouge, La., New Orleans, Meridian, Birmingham and Chattanooga. East Radford was reached on the 16th, at 7 P. M., and the men detrained at once. The company was mustered out at eight o'clock Monday night, March 19th, after nine months and one day of service.

After the return from the border a number of men were discharged on account of dependent relatives and for various reasons, and it was with some effort that those who remained kept up interest in the company. A recruiting campaign was launched and the gaps in the ranks were rapidly filled, so before being called into service again, the company was at full war strength.

A detachment of one officer and nine enlisted men was ordered to the Medical Training Camp, at Fort Oglethorpe, Georgia, for instruction. This detachment, with First Lieutenant, Guy B. Denit in command, left East Radford, June 18th.

The company was called into service on July 25th and was mustered into Federal service on July 30th. On August 17th a special train from Richmond, carrying Company B 1st Virginia Infantry and Company F 2nd Virginia Infantry, picked up Field Hospital No. 1 at East Radford about 7:30 P. M., arriving at Camp McClellan, about seven miles from Anniston,



Alabama, on August 18th. These three companies were the first troops to pitch their tents in Camp McClellan.

The Anniston Sunday *Star*, of August 19, 1917, commenting on the arrival, said: "The vanguard of the soldiers, the first of forty thousand or so that will populate Camp McClellan, arrived at the camp shortly before four o'clock Saturday afternoon. They are all F. F. V.'s (First Fighters of Virginia) and number 312 men and seven officers, as follows:

"Company B, 1st Virginia Infantry, 103 men, with Captain W. A. Stack in command.

"Company F, 2nd Virginia Infantry, 143 men, with Captain F. H. Figgatt in command.

"1st Virginia Field Hospital, 62 men, Major J. C. Bowman in charge, Lieutenants Edgar C. Harper and Wm. O. Poindexter accompanying."

There was a great deal of work to be done in the new camp. Company streets and tent sites had to be graded, stumps grubbed and many ditches dug. The company changed camp sites three times before reaching its final and permanent location.

A field hospital of two ward tents was established on August 24th, to care for the sick of the camp. The hospital was moved to another site after about two weeks and additional wards were added day by day until it reached a total of nine wards, seven in tents and two in frame buildings. This hospital cared for the sick of the entire divisional camp, and in addition, administered anti-typhoid prophylaxis and anti-smallpox vaccine to a majority of the men in camp.

The base hospital had not been completed, so its personnel was attached to the 1st Virginia Field Hospital for duty. Major Bowman was appointed Acting Camp Surgeon, pending the arrival of Lieutenant Colonel C. R. Snyder, who had been assigned to that post.

A total of three hundred and thirty-six patients were handled during this period without a single death, and on September 28th, those remaining under treatment were transferred to the base hospital, which was then sufficiently complete to accommodate them.

Lieutenant Denit, Sergeants First Class, Sharpe, Giesen and Kemp, Sergeant Simon, Privates, First Class, Bond, Howard, Morgan, Wilson and Martin, returned from the Medical Training Camp at Fort Oglethorpe, on September 14th, in time to be of valuable assistance in operating the hospital.

After closing the hospital, the company took up its field training with energy and enthusiasm. On maneuvers, inspections and other occasions, the 1st Virginia (Field Hospital No. 115, as it came to be known after October 4, 1917), always attracted favorable attention.

On October 6th, ten enlisted men were transferred to Field Hospital No. 116, a new organization. Captain J. Warren Knepp was transferred to the company from the Hospital Corps, 2nd Virginia Infantry, October 10th. Lieutenant Denit was transferred to Division Headquarters about this time, as Assistant Division Surgeon, which post he held throughout the war. Four enlisted men were transferred from the company to the Field Hospitals' Headquarters detachment. Sergeant, First Class, William E. Kemp, was transferred to the Division Surgeon's office. Sergeant, First Class, John J. Giesen, was discharged in order that he might complete his medical studies. Private John E. Walters was transferred to the Aviation Corps and commissioned Lieutenant. Four men were transferred to Sanitary Squad No. 1 (later known as Sanitary Squad No. 41). These transfers left the company short of personnel, but a number of men were transferred from the various infantry units in camp, including several men from the 2nd Virginia Infantry Hospital Corps, so the company was soon practically filled up to full strength again. During Christmas week two additional officers were assigned: First Lieutenants Joseph C. Denney, of Miles City, Montana, and Edward D. McAdory, of Birmingham, Alabama.

Christmas passed quietly in Camp McClellan, much more quietly than the previous one had in Texas. Several of the men and officers received short leaves to visit home, but the majority had to be content with such amusement as Camp McClellan and Anniston afforded. There were boxes from home to cheer every one up.

Soon after the holidays motor transport equipment was issued to the company, consisting of eleven heavy trucks, one light truck and a touring car. A new phase of training was then taken up, in which all members of the company took a great interest and a high state of efficiency was reached. Road and field maneuvers were participated in by the company, both alone and in conjunction with other units of the 104th Sanitary Train.

On March 20, 1918, Field Hospital No. 115 was ordered by the Division Commander to take over the operation of the Detention Camp for Contagious Diseases, relieving Field Hospital No. 113. The company operated the Detention Camp with entire success, until June 5th, when orders were received to prepare for embarkation for overseas. During this period of operation some five hundred contagious disease suspects, principally spinal meningitis carriers, and more than fifteen hundred new recruits were handled.

Lieutenant Edgar C. Harper was transferred to Field Hospital during the month of May, and at the same time Lieutenant William C. Poindexter was transferred to Ambulance Company No. 115, and Captain Waller N. Mercer and Lieutenant Charles R. Edwards were assigned to Field Hospital No. 115. Sergeant George W. Bond and Private Martin Williams, Jr., were transferred from the company to be commissioned lieutenants. Six other enlisted men were transferred to the Fourth Officers Training School at the same time. This left the company's ranks depleted again so shortly before departure from Camp McClellan fourteen new men were assigned and six were transferred from the Aviation Corps. When the company was mustered into service in July, 1917, it was made up almost entirely of sons of old Virginia, but in June, 1918, its membership included representatives of seventeen states and four nations.

Leaving Camp McClellan June 21, 1918, the company arrived at Camp Mills, Long Island, the 24th, where new and complete outfits of equipment and clothing were issued, and, on July 4th His Majesty, King George's ship, the *Aquitania*, was boarded in New York harbor. The *Aquitania* sailed at four o'clock on the afternoon of the 5th, and after an uneventful voyage, docked at Liverpool, England, the 12th.

After disembarking the company marched through the city and boarded a train for Winchester. At the railway station each man received the following message in facsimile hand writing of King George:

#### WINDSOR CASTLE.

"Soldiers of the United States, the people of the British Isles welcome you on your way to take your stand beside the Armies of many Nations now fighting in the Old World the great battle for human freedom.

"The Armies will gain new heart and spirit in your company.

"I wish that I could shake the hand of each one of you and bid you God speed on your mission."

"GEORGE R. I."

"April, 1918."

After an all-night ride the train arrived at Winchester and the company marched to Camp Morn Hill, where twenty-four hours were spent mostly in slumber. Hiking back to the station on the morning of the 14th, another train was boarded which, after an hour's ride, brought the detachment to the docks in Southampton. There a small boat was boarded about five o'clock that afternoon, which, as dark approached, crept out by the *Isle of Wight* and, in company with a number of other vessels, crossed the submarine infested English Channel, disembarking at the port of Cherbourg at seven o'clock the morning of July 15th. The water front of Cherbourg was not especially prepossessing, so the first impressions of France were somewhat unfavorable. The company hiked to a rest camp outside Cherbourg, where a few days were spent by the men in getting the kinks out of their legs after the long sea voyage.

Field Hospital No. 115, along with the other organizations of the 104th Sanitary Train, boarded its first "Hommes 40, Chevaux 8, limited (limited



space, if any one should like to know), and left Cherbourg at 7 A. M., July 17th, bound for no one knew where, but everyone thought it was somewhere up front. Dame Rumor had the company going to Italy, Paris, and everywhere except China.

After a ride of sixty-five hours, Fontaine, Alsace, was reached at midnight, the 19th. Immediately after unloading, guns were heard booming in the distance and some of the boys scouting around found shell holes less than fifty feet away. It sent a thrill, and for some a shiver, up and down the spine, to realize that the war zone had really been reached. Having unloaded the equipment, those who were not too excited, lay down on the ground and slept till daybreak. Then, without breakfast, the march to the town where the detachment was to be billeted was begun without waiting for a guide. Only a short distance had been covered when a "boche" plane was sighted overhead and immediately the anti-aircraft guns opened up on him. This was quite exciting at the time to the entire company. About noon it was found that the outfit was on the wrong road, and it was with much pondering, arguing and "cussing" that the men backtracked quite a distance and took a path over a mountain that was straight up one side and straighter down the other side, finally arriving at Revescemont about three o'clock in the afternoon, as tired and hungry a lot as could be found.

The company had been on British rations ever since boarding the *Aquitania*, and for travel rations on the trains and in rest camps, the diet had been entirely of hard-tack, corned beef, canned jam and sometimes coffee. Pitching a pup tent camp, everybody began to wonder when and what they would eat. A supply train truck drove up and began to unload real baked bread, United States bacon and corn syrup, and in a short time Mess Sergeant Steagall and his disciples of grease had prepared a meal that would tempt an angel.

The principal occupation at Revescemont was taking to the woods every time a plane was sighted, but everyone soon grew tame and used to them. On the 22nd a detachment of eight enlisted men, commanded by First Lieutenant, Joseph C. Denney, was dispatched to Massevaux to take over a hospital and operate it until the rest of the company arrived. On the 26th First Lieutenant, Charles R. Edwards, with a detachment of four men, was sent to the city of Belfort to take charge of American patients in the French military hospital at that place. The company hiked over the mountain to Massevaux on the night of July 26th and took up the operation of the hospital the following day. The hospital was located in a large building that in peace time had been a school for girls. A detachment of twenty-seven men, commanded by Captain Waller N. Mercer, was stationed at Lamo to handle American patients in a French Gas Hospital. Captain Knepp, Lieutenant McAdory and three enlisted men were stationed at a French Evacuation Hospital at Giromagny. Only thirty-five patients were handled during the organization's stay at Massevaux.

On the night of August 9th the company and its equipment was moved by motor trucks of the 104th Supply Train from Massevaux and Lava to Montreux-Jeune, arriving there at six o'clock in the morning. A hospital was at once established in a three-story residence building and two barracks buildings. Later it was necessary to pitch five tents to accommodate the patients. A total of five hundred and thirty-nine patients were admitted during this period of operation, all of which were medical cases. The wounded of this sector were cared for by other hospitals. The following men died in the hospital at Montreux-Jeune:

George F. Goodale, Company I, 115th Infantry, September 8th.

John Long, Company E, 104th Engineers, September 1st.

Thomas Wester, Company K, 114th Infantry, September 6th.

Edmund M. Irvin, Company M, 115th Infantry, September 6th.

The Gas Hospital detachment was stationed at Retzwiller and was commanded by Captain Mercer until about September 5th, when he was appointed Division Gas Medical Officer and Lieutenant McAdory took his place with the Gas Hospital.

Montreux-Jeune was considered a fairly safe place, aside from the fact that enemy planes flew over daily and fragments of anti-aircraft shells



fired at them fell uncomfortably near at times. That opinion was changed the night of September 13th, when three "G. I. Cans" came over within a few minutes of each other, one tearing out the side of an Alsatian kitchen and the other two tearing holes in the ground large enough to bury a house in, within several hundred feet of the hospital. On September 20th all patients were evacuated to French hospitals at Hericourt and Belfort, and on the 21st the company moved to Rechotte and went into billets awaiting transportation to the Meuse-Argonne front.

On the 24th, trucks that were to move the unit to the railroad at Morvillars were late showing up and when the company finally arrived the train carrying the other organizations of the 104th Sanitary Train had gone. That night the entire detachment slept in the freight depot. Major Bowman went to Belfort on a passenger train and returned next morning early, having arranged for the company to travel overland with the 104th Supply Train on trucks. The trucks arrived and were loaded and ready to depart at seven o'clock. After traveling two and a half days and camping along the road two nights, Conde-en-Barrios was reached and the company joined the other units of the 29th Division on the afternoon of September 28th, two days after the great Meuse-Argonne offensive had commenced.

A pup tent camp was pitched on the hill just outside the town where every one waited and wondered what would happen next. At eleven o'clock the night of September 30th, with the entire Sanitary Train, the company set out hiking through rain and mud, stopping, after thirty kilometers had been covered, at Ippecourt, at nine o'clock in the morning. The ration truck had stuck in the mud, so all hands went to sleep, hungry as well as wet. Starting out again at seven o'clock and marching until 2:30 A. M., October 2nd, Rampont was reached, where the Sanitary Train bivouacked, awaiting the advance of the division into the lines.

On October 12th, Field Hospital No. 115 loaded up and moved to Charney, a small village, literally razed, about twelve kilometers north of Verdun, and in front of the American and French heavy artillery. A complete field hospital was erected, consisting of six ward tents, two kitchens and auxiliary tents. The hospital was located in a field adjoining cross roads, on which there were heavy troop and supply movements. The Huns knew this, of course, and kept things mighty interesting for Field Hospital No. 115, by shelling Charney and the cross roads spasmodically day and night. The hospital was established at this point principally for reserve and emergency purposes. One hundred and twenty-seven patients were admitted, practically all of which were slightly gassed cases. They were disposed of as follows: Returned to duty, 179; evacuated to triage at Glorieux, 31; died, 1; absent without leave, 16. The death was in the case of a soldier of the 26th Division, who was struck by shrapnel on the road near the hospital and died within a few minutes after being admitted.

A few days after the 115th had gotten established at Charney, a Field Hospital of the 33rd Division pitched its complete equipment in an adjoining field. Then Field Hospital No. 113, of the 19th Division moved up and pitched its canvas on the other side, this making a total of eighteen ward tents, measuring fifty by sixteen feet, and about twelve smaller tents, which altogether presented an excellent target for the Huns to drop bombs on.

Luckily, there were no casualties among the hospital personnel, although a shell fragment tore a large hole in the operating tent one day. Wagoners, Galway, Foster and Williams reported some narrow escapes while hauling medical supplies and rations to the advanced dressing stations.

The hospital was closed October 27th, and the company moved back to Glorieux, a suburb of Verdun, and went into billets, leaving there on the 29th, for Combles, near Bar-le-Duc, for a rest. At Combles an infirmary was established to care for the sick of the division. At this infirmary 140 patients were handled. On November 4th, it was closed and the patients evacuated to Field Hospital No. 116, at Mogneville. November 11th, and the Armistice came while the company was at Combles and immediately afterwards training was again taken up.

The company marched from Combles to Tronville on November 17th.

established a divisional infirmary and went into billets. This infirmary was closed on the 21st and the 115th boarded a "Chevaux 8" special with the other units of the Sanitary Train. After a cold ride of over twenty-four hours, the company detrained at Vitrey, Haute-Saone, about 10 P. M., the 22nd, and hiked several kilometers to Voisey, Haute-Marne, the same night. Voisey was to be the home of the unit for some time, longer than anyone dreamed at the time.

On November 26th, under orders of the Division Surgeon, the company established a hospital for contagious diseases in three large frame barracks buildings on a hill on the edge of the town of Voisey. This hospital operated until April 10, 1919, and handled a total of 939 patients, making a total of 1,925 handled by the 115th in France. Most of these patients were in hospital for periods of from one week to two months, and, measured in "patient days," the 1,925 patients handled would be equal to 15,976 patients, or nearly a whole division cared for over a period of one day.

The entire personnel being required for operating the hospital, the company did not take part in any of the field training or maneuvers with which the remainder of the division occupied its days during the winter of 1918 and spring of 1919. The hospital detail, however, was cut down to the lowest minimum on the occasion of General Pershing's reviewing the division in March, so as to have as complete a turn-out as possible.

Major Bowman left the company about December 4th, and, after spending more than a month in various hospitals in France, was returned to the United States on account of a chronic bronchial trouble. Captain James Warren Knepp succeeded Major Bowman as a company commander, which post he retained until the company was mustered out of service.

Lieutenant Wm. D. Lanier was transferred to Base Section No. 2 at Bordeaux about April 10th. Captain Lawrence B. Raridan, William L. Hercik and Martin H. Deffenbaugh were assigned to the company while at Voisey, Captain Raridan was later sent to the United States because of illness as a patient, as was Lieutenant Edward D. McAdory. Captain Hercik was transferred and remained on duty in France when the company embarked. Captain Deffenbaugh was transferred at St. Nazaire to be sent home in detachment of casual officers. Many of the members took advantage of the leaves granted to visit the leave areas in Southern France, and some of the large cities, while some visited Ireland and Italy.

On April 6th, orders were received to prepare to move to a port for return to the United States. The patients were evacuated to other hospitals and a surprisingly large number improved sufficiently over night to return to their organizations so as to go home too. All property and equipment was packed and shipped to a Medical Department Salvage Depot, and on April 14th the company bid farewell to the good people of Voisey, amid not a few tears, and left on trucks for Jussey, where they entrained in United States box cars at eleven o'clock at night and after a forty-six hour ride, unloaded at Beaumont-sur-Sarthe, a quaint old town in the Le Mans embarkation area.

After inspections and more inspections, the company loaded in box cars at 9 P. M., April 30th, and arrived at St. Nazaire next morning at 10 A. M., where, for ten days, the men watched other troops leave and wondered if they hadn't forgotten about us or had a grudge against us or something. But finally the great day came. On May 11th, Field Hospital No. 115, in company with the rest of the 104th Sanitary Train, boarded the *Manchuria* and at 3 o'clock in the afternoon began the return trip across the Atlantic.

Steaming into New York harbor about dark the evening of May 21st, the *Manchuria* docked on the Hoboken side of the North River on the morning of May 22nd, and everybody disembarked, after being checked with the passenger lists by the port officers. The men marched through a pier, where the Red Cross ladies served coffee, sandwiches and real home-made pie, after which they boarded a ferry boat at the other end of the pier, and proceeded up the river to Weehawken. There a long string of real day coaches was waiting to carry the company to Camp Merritt, N. J.

At Camp Merritt the men were "deloused," new clothing was issued, and daily passes to New York were issued to all who wanted them. The men

going to states other than Virginia and Maryland were transferred to casual units destined for camps in or near their home states. But before these men left, a group photograph of the entire company was taken and the enlisted men presented Captain Knepp with a watch and Captain Edwards with a charm, as evidence of their esteem. All other officers had been separated from the command prior to leaving France.

The remaining portion of the company, consisting of one officer and fifty-two enlisted men, moved from Camp Merritt to Camp Meade, Maryland, May 27th, and at Camp Meade the organization was disbanded and the men discharged on June 2, 1919.



## Summary of Activities—One Hundred and Fifteenth Ambulance Company, One Hundred and Fourth Sanitary Train, Twenty-Ninth Division

Organized at Camp McClellan, Anniston, Ala., September 15, 1917. Trained there until June 21, 1919, entraining on that date for Camp Mills, Long Island. Sailed from New York on the *Aquitania* July 5th and reached Liverpool on the 12th. Entrained for Winchester and spent twenty-four hours resting. Entrained for Southampton on July 14th, embarking there for France, reaching Cherbourg on the 15th. Arrived at Revescemont July 21st. Moved into Center Sector Alsace and served the 29th Division July 27th to September 23rd. Took station at Ende, September 24th, leaving that point on the 29th for Ippecourt. Moved thence to Rampont, October 1st. Left there on the 5th for Glorieux and on the 8th proceeded to Charny, establishing a dressing station south of Brabant. Closed this October 11th and moved to Haumont. Left there on October 19th and returned to Brabant, remaining at that point until relieved, October 29th. Moved to Combles, proceeding thence to Neuville November 5th, thence to Erize la Brules on the 15th, and to Tronville on the 17th. Moved to Melay November 22nd and spent the winter there. Arrived at Beaumont on the 19th, proceeding thence to St. Nazaire on April 30th. Sailed on the *Manchuria* for America May 11th, 1919.

# History of the One Hundred and Fifteenth Ambulance Company

By Russell B. De Vine

**Sources:** Training Reports, Camp Records, Orders, Station Lists, Morning Reports, Returns, Regimental D. R. C., War Diaries, Situation Maps Operations Reports, Organization Records, Overseas and G. H. Q. Records, Operations of the Twenty-Ninth Division (East of Meuse River, October, 1918), Operations of the 104th Sanitary Train in Campaign North of Verdun, by Major J. B. Huggins.

---

Ambulance Company No. 1 was mustered into state service the 3rd of May, 1917, at Norfolk, Virginia, after it had been inspected by state and Federal officers. Four officers who had been neither examined nor commissioned were present, as well as sixty-seven men, while six enlisted men were absent. No captain had been elected—the four officers referred to having been entered on the rolls as lieutenants. The inspectors reported that the personnel of this company was exceptionally good. The armory of the 4th Infantry was used by the ambulance company.

General Orders No. 20, Commonwealth of Virginia, dated May 10, 1917, officially designated the new unit as Ambulance Company No. 1, and assigned it to the Medical Department, Virginia National Guard. The commanding officer was directed to report to the Surgeon General of the Virginia National Guard for orders.

The 1st Ambulance Company became the 115th Ambulance Company of the 104th Sanitary Train of the 29th Division, at Camp McClellan, Anniston, Alabama, on September 15, 1917. The instruction of units of the Sanitary Train was directed from the office of the Division Surgeon. Weekly schedules of training were prepared and carried out.

The company crossed the Atlantic on the *Aquitania*, reaching Liverpool on July 12, 1918, and Cherbourg on the 15th. Disembarking there, the company, along with other units of the 104th Sanitary Train, moved out on July 17th and reached Revessemont on the 21st. The company did not join the 29th Division at first in France, the sick of the division being cared for by Camp Hospital No. 10.

The division was ordered into the Center Sector, Alsace, for combat training with the French, relieving the American 32nd Division, and was attached to the 40th Corps of the 7th French Army. The 104th Sanitary Train served the division in this sector from July 27th until September 23rd, when the 38th French Division relieved the Americans. During this period the 115th Ambulance Company had been stationed at Vennes-sur-L'Etane.

After relief in the Center Sector, the 29th Division joined the First American Army as army reserve troops, Ambulance Company No. 115, taking station at Ende on September 24th. The outfit left that point on the 29th, reached Ipeccourt the following day and Rampont on October 1st, where it remained until the 5th.

The division was released as army reserves on the 5th and placed at the disposal of the 17th French Corps. The Meuse-Argonne offensive opened on the foregoing date and the company served with the division until the latter was relieved by the 79th American Division, on October 30, 1918. The 29th Division moved back to the vicinity of Bar-le-Duc and became reserve troops of the First Army, attached to the 5th Corps.

The 115th Company left Rampont October 5, 1918, and arrived at Glorieux, a suburb of Verdun, the next day. The other ambulance companies of the 104th Sanitary Train were already there, likewise the Headquarters Company and Sanitary Squads Nos. 41 and 42. Field Hospital No. 114 had opened the divisional triage in a French military hospital in the same community and the other field hospitals were at Rampont.

At 6:00 A. M., on October 8th, the 113th and 115th Ambulance Companies moved to Charny, where ambulance parks, kitchens and motor repair

shops were established. The 115th Company, on the same date, established a dressing station in a quarry south of Brabant on the Samogneux-Consenvoye road. This was closed on October 11th, so the company could reinforce the 116th Company at Haumont, a point nearly two miles north of Verdun. This station was frequently under heavy fire, but accomplished excellent results, maintaining liaison with the 113th and 114th Infantry Regiments. The station was closed on the 19th of October and the 115th Company returned to Brabant Quarry and reopened the station there, remaining until relieved, on October 29th, by a detachment of the 79th Division. Evacuation from the front to triage was handled by vehicles of the 113th and 115th Companies, which for three weeks were kept moving over roads that were practically impassable. At times it was necessary to supplement them with trucks. Several cars were damaged by shell fire, but with the exception of one, which received a direct hit that killed three patients, all were gotten back into service a few hours after being hit.

The magnitude of the work of these two companies can be appreciated when the strength report of the division on October 9th is considered. On that date the total strength, exclusive of the Field Artillery Brigade, was 20,222. If that be assumed as its average strength, approximately twenty-three per cent was evacuated during the engagement and two and one-half per cent were killed.

Until the Meuse-Argonne battle, only a small section and a few litter bearers had ever handled wounded men, but despite this lack of experience, they handled their work like veterans.

Supplies were replenished as required from the army medical depot at Souilly, where everything required by the medical department was easily obtained.

The 115th Company left Samogneux on the 29th of October and arrived at Combles the same date. From Combles the outfit proceeded to Neuville, on November 5th. Ten days were spent at that point, then on the 15th the command marched to Erize la Brules, and two days later went on to Tronville. Melay was reached on the 22nd and there the company remained until the 15th of April, 1919, when the first move towards a port of embarkation was made. Ballon was the first stop, two days being spent there, after which the company moved on to Beaumont-sur-Sarthe, on the 19th. Ten days later orders came to proceed to St. Nazaire. The organization arrived at this port on April 30th and on the 5th of May, 1919, sailed for the United States on board the *Manchuria*. Commanding officers of the 115th Ambulance Company were as follows: Captains Thomas V. Williamson and Merritt W. Healey, First Lieutenants Charles E. Flowers, William E. Poindexter, Only J. Chaney.



## Summary of Activities—Company B, One Hundred and Twelfth Machine Gun Battalion, Twenty-Ninth Division

Organized Camp McClellan, Anniston, Ala., October 4, 1917, from Machine Gun Company and part of Company D of 4th Virginia Infantry. Trained there until June, 1918, proceeding thence to Hoboken, N. J. Sailed June 15th on the *De Kalb* and arrived at Brest on the 27th. Entrained for Oucey July 1st and started training. Moved to Rougegoutte July 18th, thence to Center Sector Alsace, on the 24th. Occupied machine gun positions in C. R. Balschwiller August 14th to 20th. Left for Traubach-le-Bas August 21st, proceeding thence to Frais on the 23rd and going into billets attached to 3rd Battalion, 115th Infantry, October 6th, and took part in the Meuse-Argonne offensive, October 8th to 28th. Relieved October 28th and proceeded to Brabant, thence to Bras, thence to Faubourg de Pave. Attached to 115th Infantry until Robert Espagne area was reached, then reported to commanding officer 112th Machine Gun Battalion. Moved to Tremont November 10th, thence to Nantes-le-Petit on November 18th. Left for Ligny on the 21st and entrained for Fresnes, where the company spent the winter. Left Fresnes April 13, 1919, and proceeded to Vivoin, moving from there to St. Nazaire April 28th.

# History of Company B

By Russell B. De Vine

**Sources:** Training Reports, Orders, Morning Reports, Returns, Regimental D. R. C., War Diaries, Operations Reports, Situation Maps, Camp Records, Organization Records, Overseas and G. H. Q. Records, Operations of Twenty-Ninth Division (East of Meuse River, October, 1918).

—o—

This company was formed from the Machine Gun Company and Company D, with eighty-four men of the 4th Virginia Infantry, on October 4, 1917. Twenty men were also included from Company C, one from Company I and ten from the Medical Detachment of the 4th Infantry.

The company trained at Camp McClellan until June, 1918, when it embarked for Hoboken, N. J., where it embarked on the transport *De Kalb* and sailed for France on the 15th of June.

Company B of the 112th Machine Gun Battalion arrived at Brest June 27, 1918. The company left Brest on July 1st, reaching Ocey, in the Tenth Training Area, two days later. There it remained in training until the 18th of July, when ordered to Rougegoutte. Leaving the latter point on the 24th, the company moved into the Center Sector, Alsace, on July 26th. Machine gun positions at the Center of Resistance Balschwiller, were occupied from August 14th to 20th. On the 21st the command started for Traubach le Bas, leaving there the next day and going into billets at Fraiss on the 23rd. Close order and machine gun drills were held daily. The company participated in the regimental field exercises of the 115th Infantry on August 26th. On the 29th one section of the company relieved one section of Company A at Balloon No. 42, near Vauthiermont.

Company B was attached to the 3rd Battalion of the 115th Infantry on October 6th. Lieutenant Koop, Reconnaissance Officer, and three privates were sent to establish liaison between that command and the 112th Machine Gun Battalion at Fromerville.

On the 7th, the 3rd Battalion was ordered to move to Regneville, to be in readiness for the attack on the following day. Company B of the 112th Machine Gun Battalion was hurriedly assembled and hurried to Longbut in order to arrive before the infantry outfit left, but on arrival there Lieutenant Koop reported that the 3rd Battalion had already begun to move and that no further orders had been received. The company was placed under command of Lieutenant Koop, who was ordered to keep in touch with the rear of the battalion, as no directions had been supplied concerning the route to be taken. The Train Officer of the 3rd Battalion stated that the order had been given to attach the train of the company to that of the battalion, which order was complied with. After unavailing efforts had been made to locate the commanding officer of the 3rd Battalion, Captain Lyon, of Company B, knowing the destination of the battalion was Regneville, set out across country to try and locate the column. He caught up with them about one kilometer from Longbut.

The company reached Regneville after a very trying march, and there received orders to wait until 5:00 A. M., then to cross the Meuse to Samogneux and attack. This was the first direct information received from the battalion commander. At 5:00 A. M., on October 8th, the men crossed the pontoon bridge over the Meuse and moved to the junction of the road to Brabant and Route 64. There the guns were unloaded and the carts sent back to the north end of the bridge. Packs were left behind, the men carrying emergency rations in their overcoats. The 3rd Battalion formed along the canal and Company B was disposed so that one platoon would follow the right attack company to cover its flank, and another platoon would do the same for the left attack company, while the third platoon would constitute the reserve and follow the right support company, with the company commander and headquarters remaining with the battalion commander.

There was but little chance for machine gun firing until the intermediate objective was reached, when the two forward platoons were able to sweep the woods along the north edge of the Bois de Consenvoye. The 3rd platoon had become somewhat scattered during the advance, but was finally gotten together again and re-organized. Headquarters were established at a point near the unimproved road running east and west through the center of the Bois de Consenvoye. When information was received that the company would remain in that location, Captain Lyon sent for the carts to proceed to the position of the 3rd platoon which it had been decided to use as a replacement and carrying detachment.

During the night of October 9th, while Captain Lyon was sick, Lieutenant Emigh, who was in charge of the company, received orders from the battalion commander to cover his advance across the open to the west of the German battery position along the Consenvoye—Damvilliers road. In accordance with this plan the guns of both platoons were laid for direct overhead fire. These guns searched the wood due north of their position, but the infantry decided to skirt the wood, so passed to the right of their position.

Captain Lyon resumed command of Company B on the 10th of October and immediately dispatched runners to locate the new line of the 3rd Battalion and the Post of Command of the 115th Infantry. One of the forward platoons was sent to a position on the extreme left of the 3rd Battalion to cover the gap between the 33rd Division and the 3rd Battalion, and the other was stationed on the right along the narrow gauge railroad that determined the front of the 3rd Battalion at that time. Because of the fact that it was largely a matter of conjecture most of the time as to where the line was actually located, directed overhead fire was almost impossible. After the two platoons had been placed, part of the headquarters detachment and nearly all of the 3rd platoon were used to replace casualties. The rest were designated as a carrying detail from the kitchen and train, and five were retained for the purpose of liaison.

The artillery of the enemy commenced to search the woods on October 11th, making it impossible to keep the carts so close to the front; therefore they were sent back to Brabant, after unloading as many belts of ammunition as could be cared for.

The right platoon was relieved on the evening of the 12th by a platoon of the 115th Infantry. Gas was plentiful and nine men were lost from this cause while in reserve. The left platoon was relieved the next day by the reserve platoon and on the 14th, orders were received to advance. When the 3rd Battalion had been established, one platoon was placed near the Post of Command of Company L on the left flank, about 300 yards north of the railroad. One battery of two guns was stationed at the head of Moyemont Ravine and the other two guns of the 1st platoon were placed near cross roads to left of small German railroad yards north of Molleville Farm.

The platoons remained in these positions with slight changes until October 18th, when the battery on the right was so heavily shelled that it had to withdraw to a point near water tower on the railroad. Several men were lost by gas, so another move was made to a point just in rear of German cemetery in southwest corner of Molleville Farm clearing. These positions were held until October 21st, when the outfit was retired to the old concrete telephone station near the Command Post of the 115th Infantry.

On the 23rd of October orders were received for a barrage to be fired the following day. This barrage was executed in the morning of the 24th. Some difficulty developed with reference to getting food up to the front so Captain Lyon went back to the kitchen to investigate. The conditions were remedied, but Captain Lyon became too ill to return to the company, due to having twice passed through heavy gas. He remained with the train that night and attempted to go back to the company in the morning but only got as far as the kitchen, have encountered gas once more. Captain Lyon succeeded in getting in touch with Lieutenant Koop who had been left in command of the company and found that he had received orders to resume the former position. Only one change occurred until relieved on October 28th. The company prepared to withdraw upon the receipt of relief orders, but waited all night without the relief party showing up. Informa-



tion was requested at 2nd Battalion headquarters to which the company had been attached for the last four days. Communication was established with the commanding officer of the 115th Infantry who ordered the company moved out in small groups. The company then proceeded to Brabant and from there to Bras, where supper was served. Captain Lyon went ahead to Belleville, where he received orders to attach the company to the 115th Infantry. It was learned that the 2nd Battalion of the 115th was proceeding to Faubourg Pave, Verdun, so Company B was marched to that point and remained with the 2nd Battalion of the 115th Infantry until the rest area of Robert Espagne was reached on October 31st, when the company reported back to the Commanding Officer of the 112th Machine Gun Battalion.

The men were allowed a few days rest and sleep, and then the work of securing new clothing and equipment was started, along with the reorganization of the various units in readiness for the next advance.

On November 10th, Company B moved to Tremont, from thence to Lisle-en-Rigault on the 16th, and from there to Nantes-le-Petit on the 18th. Three days later the company marched to Ligny-en-Barrois and entrained for Fresnes-sur-Apance which was reached the following day. There the command remained until the following spring. During this time a more or less rigid training schedule was followed. Inspections of one sort or another were numerous. On the 15th of December, 1918, all the machine gun companies in the division paraded at Fresnes.

On the 13th of April, 1919, the company left Fresnes and arrived at Vivoin on the 15th. Twelve days were spent there, the company departing on April 28th, reaching St. Nazaire the next day.

## Summary of Activities—Company D, One Hundred and Twelfth Machine Gun Battalion, Twenty-Ninth Division

Organized at Camp McClellan, Anniston, Ala., February 26, 1918, by transfer of Company D, 110th Machine Gun Battalion (formerly Machine Gun Company of 1st Virginia Infantry). Trained at Camp McClellan until June, 1918, moving then to Hoboken, N. J. Sailed June 15th for France, on the transport *De Kalb*, and arrived at Brest on the 27th. Left for Oeuey July 1st and started training. Moved to Rougegoutte July 18th, and a week later proceeded to Somme-le-Haut. Left for Frais August 8th and went into billets. Entered trenches August 22nd, near Brechaumont. Moved to C. R. Balschwiller on the 28th and on September 5th proceeded to Traubach la Bas. Attached to 1st Battalion, 116th Infantry, October 7th, and fought through Meuse-Argonne offensive, October 8th to 28th. Relieved on the 28th and moved to Belleville, thence to Glorieux and embussed for Robert Espagne area, reaching there October 30th. Moved to Tremont November 10th, thence to Lisle-in-Rigault on the 16th, and to Nantes-le-Petit on the 18th. Proceeded to Ligny November 21st and entrained for Fresnes. Remained there until April, 1919, entraining in that month for the Le Mans area.

# History of Company D

By Russell B. De Vine

**Sources:** Training Reports, Orders, Morning Reports, Returns, Regimental D. R. C., War Diaries, Operations Reports, Situation Maps, Camp Records, Organization Records, Overseas and G. H. Q. Records. Operations of Twenty-Ninth Division (East of Meuse River, October, 1918.)

---

This unit was originally organized at Camp McClellan, Anniston, Ala., as Company D of the 110th Machine Gun Battalion, on September 26, 1917, the Machine Gun Company of the 1st Virginia Infantry being used to form the nucleus of the new company. On the 4th of October, 1917, additional men were assigned to the organization from other companies in the 1st Regiments: two from the Headquarters Company, three from Company C, two from Company D, three from Company E, two from Company F, two from Company G, two from Company H, five from Company I, five from Company K, five from Company L and three from Company M.

General Orders No. 11, of the 29th Division, Camp McClellan, Anniston, Alabama, dated February 26, 1918, changed Company D, 110th Machine Gun Battalion to Company D of the 112th Machine Gun Battalion. The transfer was effected on the 1st of March, 1918.

Company D sailed from New York June 15th, on the transport *DeKalb* and arrived at Brest on the 27th. The command moved out on July 1st for Ocecy, which was reached on the 3rd. There the next fifteen days were spent in training and on the 18th the company proceeded to Rougegoutte. After a week there orders were received for the outfit to go to Somme-le-Haut, from which the next move was to Fraix, on August 8th. The company remained in billets there for some days, during which time problem maneuvers of various sorts were engaged in.

On August 22, 1918, Company D went into support of Company C, which was in the front lines at Brechaumont. While in this position one platoon of the company fired 2,000 shots on August 25th, harassing working parties of the enemy.

The company moved to C. R. Balschwiller on August 28th and relieved the Machine Gun Company of the 116th Infantry. A severe fire was directed against the enemy's wire at Kaiser Vorwerck on the 3rd and 4th of September. On the 5th, the command moved to Traubach la Bas. Conforming to orders which had been received, September 9th was spent constructing machine gun emplacements at positions of resistance. Firing problems were conducted on the range at Montreux Chateau from time to time.

On October 7, 1918, Company D was attached to the 1st Battalion of the 116th Infantry for the attack on the following day. Liaison was effected at once, but contact with the battalion was lost on the way to Samogneux.

The next day the company moved up to the intermediate position. Lieutenant Hatcher, who had been in command, was ordered relieved by the Battalion Commander and First Lieutenant William Storm was placed in charge. He reported the 1st Platoon to the Commanding officer of the 1st Battalion of the 116th Infantry the evening of the same day.

Lieutenant Hatcher reported on the morning of the 10th with one section, the remaining guns of the platoon having been destroyed. One section was sent forward at 10:00 to protect the right flank of the infantry battalion, while the other platoon was held in support.

The company advanced on the morning of October 11th, covering the left flank of the 1st Battalion, through the Bois de Consenvoye. When the infantry reached the edge of the clearing south of the Molleville Farm one battery was placed in position to cover by oblique fire the advance of the battalion on the Bois de Grande Montagne. This protective fire was continued for twenty-eight minutes. The infantry lines which had advanced 200 meters beyond the clearing were halted by heavy firing from the enemy and withdrew to the edge of the woods. The machine guns were



placed where they would cover the left flank of the battalion. For the next three days the guns of Company D covered the front of the battalion.

On the 15th of October one platoon was ordered to proceed to the edge of the woods south of Molleville Farm and reduce certain very active machine gun nests in the Bultry Woods. This mission was successfully fulfilled and the guns were then assigned to the 1st Battalion, which was in reserve.

The company advanced at 3:00 P. M. on the 15th of October in support of the advanced line of the 116th Infantry in the Bois de Grande Montagne. The following day the company closed a gap which had developed in the line held by the 116th. Relief of the company was effected that night by the Machine Gun Company of the 116th Infantry, Company D going back into support position.

Captain Gilkeson returned from the hospital on the 19th and took charge of the outfit. The company remained in support until October 21st, when Captain Gilkeson was designated to command a group of sixteen guns, eight from Company B, and eight from Company D of the 112th Machine Gun Battalion, which were to fire a barrage to cover the advance of the infantry on the evening of the 22nd. The foregoing order was rescinded on the night of the 21st, only to be issued again on the 22nd. This barrage was executed the next morning from 6:15 to 10:20, after which the outfit returned to support position and remained there through the 23rd and 24th.

Company D was attached on October 24th to the 3rd Battalion of the 116th Infantry, which was to relieve a battalion of the 115th Infantry that night. The Battalion Commander wanted all machine guns placed on the front line, but a survey of the ground made it apparent that a field of fire could not be obtained, so it was decided to put two guns on the front line and station the others in the rear for overhead firing. This plan was approved by Colonel Kelly, in command of the 116th Infantry. The same position was continued through the 27th of October. That night the two forward guns were relieved by the Machine Gun Company of the 115th Infantry and returned to support positions.

Company D was relieved on the night of October 28th by machine gun units of the 58th Infantry Brigade, and returned to control of the Brigade Machine Gun Officer. When the company reported at Cote des Roches, where it had been ordered to camp for the night, no space was available for the men. Finally orders were received to proceed to Belleville, which was reached on the 29th. The command rested until afternoon, when it marched to Glorieux and embussed for Robert Espagne, arriving there at 4:00 A. M., October 30th. The next ten days were spent in securing baths and new clothes and equipment.

On November 4th the transportation of the unit was inspected by the Battalion Commander and on the following day an inspection of the personnel and equipment was held by the Acting Division Machine Gun Officer, while the Division Veterinarian inspected the animals at the same time. Guns and equipment were inspected November 8th by the 109th Mobile Ordnance Repair Shop.

Company D moved to Tremont on November 10th, from thence to Lisle-en-Rigault, on the 16th, and two days later to Nantes-le-Petit. The command proceeded to Ligny-en-Barrois, on November 21st, and there entrained for Fresnes-sur-Apance.

On the 7th of December the personnel, equipment and transportation were inspected by the Corps Inspector.

Divisional machine gun tests were held on December 11th, and on the 13th a parade of all the machine gun companies in the division was held at Fresnes. Company D participated in divisional maneuvers.

# History of Company A\*—Virginia Signal Corps

By Captain Edwin P. Conquest

Company A of the Virginia Signal Corps did not have the traditions behind it of some of the older Virginia organizations when ordered to duty on the Mexican border in 1916, but so earnestly did the members of the company labor that the company was highly commended by the battalion commander in a letter to the commanding general of the Southeastern Department, and the then Brigadier General Pershing signed and forwarded this letter to Washington.

Just two weeks after the company was mustered out of Federal service, war was declared with Germany. The members of the company redoubled their efforts to perfect an organization that would serve with credit in the struggle it was about to engage in.

On July 25, 1917, Company A was once more mustered into Federal service. The strength of the command was materially reduced and some of its best men eliminated by the rigid physical examination. Those who remained fell to with renewed energy to recruit the company to full strength. Men with mechanical or technical training, such as electricians, radio and telegraph operators, horseshoers and mechanics were needed. By the time orders were received to report at the mobilization camp, not only had the organization been completed, but everyone had gotten a very fair idea of what was before them.

The outfit, composed of three officers, seventy-five enlisted men and thirty-two horses, left Richmond on the 16th of September, 1917, for Camp McClellan, at Anniston, Ala., and arrived there the following day.

The officers and men naturally thought that Company A would take its place in the Divisional Signal Battalion. Instead of that, however, the command was assigned to the 54th Field Artillery Brigade. During the month that was spent at Brigade Headquarters, every effort was made to have the company retain its identity, but higher authorities entertained different ideas. So on October 7, 1917, Company A, Virginia Signal Corps, definitely ceased to exist. The members of the company were transferred as follows: Two officers and forty men to Headquarters 54th Field Artillery, one officer and nine men to Headquarters Co., 111th Field Artillery, eight men to Headquarters Co. 112th Field Artillery, two men to 104th Field Signal Battalion.

Nearly all of these men arrived in France in the early part of July, 1918. Many of them attained high non-commissioned grades, five won officers' commissions, one officer of the company, Lieutenant Calvin E. Ervay, was promoted to rank of captain. Three members of the original company, Corporal Charles E. Day, and Privates Warren H. Mercer and Thomas J. Siddons, all of Richmond, met their deaths in France.

It was one of the unfortunate circumstances of the war that the men of Company A were not permitted to serve as a unit, but the fact that even though denied this stimulus, they continued to serve faithfully wherever they were redounds, all the more to their individual credit.

---

[\*EDITOR'S NOTE: Company A, Virginia Signal Corps, never saw service as a separate unit in France. It was broken up at Camp McClellan in October, 1917, and the members assigned to various organizations in the 29th Division.]

## PART II

---

# Virginia Military Organizations in the Forty-Second Division

*"RAINBOW"*



## Summary of Activities—One Hundred and Seventeenth Trains Headquarters and Military Police, Forty-Second Division

Organized in August, 1917, from 1st and 2nd Companies of Virginia Coast Artillery, then in training at Fortress Monroe. Embarked August 26th for Cape Charles and there entrained for Camp Mills, Long Island. Sailed for France October 19th, on the *Covington*. Disembarked at St. Nazaire November 6th. Entrained at once for the Fifth Training Area, and after two days' travel, 1st Company detrained at Vancoulers and 2nd Company at Mauvages. Remained in this area until December 12th, leaving on that date for Orguevaux. Left for Rolampont December 27th, where spent next seven weeks in training. On February 17, 1918, 1st Company moved to Baccarat and the next day the 2nd Company left for Luneville. The 1st Company remained at Baccarat five weeks. The 2nd Company detrained at Gerberwiller and marched to Loromonsey, moving to Luneville, March 1st. The 1st Company was redesignated Company A and the 2nd redesignated Company B. Division ordered to Rolampont area and Company A moved to St. Boinigt and Company B to Moriviller. Division ordered back to Baccarat sector so Company A re-established headquarters at Baccarat and Company B established headquarters at Bertichamps. Company A moved to Chatel-sur-Moselle June 19th, and Company B to Hardencourt, the latter company moving to Chatel on the 23rd. Both companies proceeded to Charmes June 24th and entrained for Chalons, detraining there and marching to St. Germain. Moved to Camp Chalons June 28th. Participated in the fighting in the Champagne. Entrained July 23rd for La Ferte sous Jouare, marching thence to Truguey, north of Chateau-Thierry. Moved to Bretenil Farm July 27th and to a position south of Beauvarde the next day. Relieved August 11th and reached Bourmont on the 18th, Company B remaining there and Company A going to Doncourt. Moved to Chatenois, then to Colombe la Belle. Company A detached and held close to division headquarters. Company B moved to Foret de la Raine and on September 11th proceeded to Ansauville. Took part in St. Mihiel battle. Both companies moved to Essey and Company A remained there until September 18th, when it was ordered to First Army headquarters. Company A saw no more active service. Company B left Essey October 1st for Benoitvaux Convent. Left on October 5th and marched to Cheppy. Took part in Meuse Argonne offensive. Left for Sedan November 3rd and proceeded through Grandes Armoises and Chemerey, establishing headquarters at Maisonnelle. Ordered back November 7th and returned to Buzancy. Left for Germany November 14th, to become part of Army of Occupation. Reached Montmedy November 20th. Proceeded through Belgium and Luxembourg and entered Germany December 3rd. Established headquarters at Ahrweiler. Remained there until April, 1919, leaving on 10th for Brest. Sailed April 18th on *Leviathan* for America and reached Hoboken April 26th. Mustered out at Camp Meade May 6, 1919.

---

[EDITOR'S NOTE: Due to the fact that the Forty-Second (Rainbow) Division contained only one Virginia unit, no table of contents has been provided for Part II. Because the activities of the 117th Trains Headquarters and Military Police paralleled those of the 42nd Division, no separate summary of activities for the division has been included.]

# History of the One Hundred and Seventeenth Trains Headquarters and Military Police

By Captain Frank B. Varney

At the time of the declaration of war with Germany there were only two companies of Coast Artillery in the National Guard of Virginia, both of which had been in existence for little more than a year.

The organization of the First Company which was perfected at Roanoke, in December, 1925, was largely due to the interest and enthusiasm of Horace Maher, Graham Clayton and Henry D. Didier. Henry K. McHarg was elected Captain; Graham Clayton, First Lieutenant, and Caesar Massei, Second Lieutenant. The departure of Clayton, from Roanoke, resulted in Massei being elevated to the First Lieutenancy and John Izard being made Second Lieutenant.

For several months the company drilled in civilian clothes. It was mustered into State service on April 13, 1916, as the First Company, Virginia Coast Artillery.

In August, 1916 the company spent ten days at Fortress Monroe and made a splendid record during that time, particularly in target work at Battery Church.

The personnel of the company was exceptionally good. Later when the Officers' Training Camps were thrown open to the National Guard, several members of the First Company took advantage of this opening and obtained commissions. Two of these, First Lieutenant Lucien Cocke of the aviation service, and Second Lieutenant Davis attached to a machine gun company, were subsequently awarded the Croix de Guerre with Palm.

The resignation of Captain McHarg, in January, 1917, caused Lieutenant Massei to be made Captain and John Izard First Lieutenant, while Cyrus K. Hawkins was elected Second Lieutenant. The latter left Roanoke a month later, so Henry K. Tice was chosen to fill the vacancy.

The company took part in the inaugural parade in Washington, on March 4, 1917. On the 26th of that month the organization was called out for the purpose of protecting railroad property, guards being established at Peppers tunnel, the New River bridge, and the shops in Roanoke. Lieutenant Tice was accidentally shot through the hand during this period.

On April 6th orders came from the War Department for the company to proceed to Fortress Monroe for muster into Federal service. Recruiting jumped overnight and almost any number of men could have been enlisted. Only a very few could be accepted however. At 10 P. M., Sunday, April 8th, the company entrained for Fortress Monroe.

The origin of the Second Company of Virginia Coast Artillery is surrounded with somewhat unusual circumstances. A member of the Improved Order of Red Men conceived the idea of organizing a military company composed entirely of members of this fraternal order and offering it to the State of Virginia as a unit in the National Guard. Accordingly a committee was formed of which Frank B. Varney was chairman, and the program of organization started. Eighty-seven men were enrolled, all of whom were Red Men in good standing, officers were elected, and it was decided to call the outfit "The Shawnees." Application was made to the Adjutant-General of Virginia for recognition as an infantry unit. This could not be granted as no vacancy existed at that time in the infantry, but the members held together in the hope that recognition would later be extended. On the 18th of July Adjutant General Sale notified Captain Varney that the company could be accepted as a coast artillery unit and authorized him to organize the Second Company, Virginia Coast Artillery. Federal recognition was accorded after many delays and on October 18, 1916, the organization composed of 3 officers and 68 men was mustered into the service of the State by Inspector-General Jo Lane Stern. The officers were Captain, Frank B. Varney; First Lieutenant, Emmett D. Butts; and Second Lieutenant, Frank J. Brosch. Only three men in the battery

besides the officers had had any previous military experience, so as soon as the equipment was received the work of whipping the recruits into shape was pushed with vigor.

The company was ordered out March 26, 1917, to guard railroad property in and around Lynchburg, but on April 6th, was relieved by Troop D, First Virginia Cavalry, and ordered to Fortress Monroe. Recruiting which had been brisk for some days picked up at once. The policy of admitting only men of a certain fraternity had been abandoned in order to secure a sufficient number of suitable recruits.

Sunday night, April 8th, at 12 o'clock the train from Roanoke with the First Company arrived and was boarded by "The Shawnees" for the journey to Fortress Monroe.

On the arrival at Fortress Monroe, Lieutenant Mead Wildrick was assigned as mustering officer. He proved to be not only a most efficient officer but a worthwhile friend to the men in the two companies who literally had everything to learn. Lieutenant Wildrick will always be remembered by officers and men alike as their first and best friend at Fortress Monroe.

The Second Company was mustered into Federal service on April 14th and the First Company on the following day. The former remained the senior company throughout the war.

The two companies were assigned for training to the 10-inch batteries Eustis and Church, and on May 1st they went into camp at their respective batteries. Later on the Second Company was assigned to Battery De Rusey, composed of three 12-inch guns. The training now became intensive and the men not only worked earnestly to learn the proper handling of the big guns but also at the routine duties of the post.

While the First and Second Companies were being moulded into real coast artillerymen several other units were organized in the State. In the early part of August, Governor Stuart commissioned Captain Massel a Major and Lieutenants Izard and Tice Captains while First Sergeant Felix K. Parker was made a First Lieutenant and Sergeant Ryland S. Hutton a Second Lieutenant. Captain Tice was designated to command the First Company, and Lieutenants Parker and Hutton also were assigned to this company.

#### Organization of Rainbow Division

On August 14th it was announced that a division would be formed at once of crack National Guard units from 26 states and the District of Columbia for immediate service overseas. This division was to be made up of men from the east and west, from the north and south. The 4th Alabama Infantry was to fight side by side with its ancient enemy, the 69th of New York, while a battalion of Engineers from South Carolina would be united with a similar unit from California to form the 117th Regiment of Engineers. Virginia was called upon to supply two companies of Coast Artillery which would be organized into the 117th Trains Headquarters and Military Police.

A busy ten days followed. The organization was perfected and the two companies recruited to 150 men each by transfers from the new units just formed. The Captain was placed temporarily in command, Captain Edward C. Harrison, Jr., of Richmond, appointed Adjutant and First Lieutenant Laurence S. Woods, of Roanoke, made Supply Officer; and the enlisted personnel of headquarters selected equally from the two companies. Sunday afternoon, August 26th, the newly formed 117th Trains Headquarters under the command of Captain Varney followed by the First and Second Companies of Military Police commanded, respectively, by Captain Tice and Lieutenant Butts passed in review for the last time at Fortress Monroe, and marched directly to the boat which was to take them to Cape Charles at which point they entrained for Camp Mills, Long Island.

Upon the arrival at Camp Mills, which was a large vacant field, it was discovered that only a few of the other organizations had arrived. Here and there a regimental or battalion camp showed itself, but as a whole



the site looked bare, and disconnected. However, the camp filled up as if by magic. A spot on which a ball game was played one afternoon would be filled in the morning with a tented city, a regiment having arrived in the night and pitched camp. Colonel Robert E. Wood, Commander of Trains, was placed in charge of the 117th Trains Headquarters, and Major James A. Shannon, Divisional Assistant Provost Marshal, assumed command of the Military Police. Both of these officers were from the Regular Army and were exceptionally able as well as very popular.

The Trains Headquarters was busy with infinite details of organization. To the First Company of Military Police was assigned the west side of the camp and the towns of Mineola and Garden City, while the Second Company was given the east side and the towns of Freeport and Hempstead. Besides these regular assignments, the companies were called on to supply patrols and details at all hours. The traffic on the splendid roads around the camp was very heavy and presented a constant problem. The two divisional reviews, first by the Secretary of War and several weeks later by the Vice-President of the United States resulted in unusual difficulties, but by herculean efforts the roads and streets were kept clear and traffic tie-ups prevented.

The Virginians made a most favorable impression on the citizens of Long Island and were widely entertained in private homes when off duty.

Lieutenant Parker with a detail from each company left the last week in September for Newport News to arrange for the shipment of horses for the detachment. At the same time an advance detail of officers was selected from the various units to proceed overseas and make arrangements for the arrival of the division. Colonel Wood and Lieutenant Brosch were the lucky ones from the 117th Trains Headquarters and Military Police.

The last retreat on American soil was stood on October 17th and the evacuation of Camp Mills commenced during the early morning hours of the 18th. At 7:30 that morning the 117th Trains Headquarters and Military Police under the command of Captain Varney (Major Shannon having been detailed for other duty) marched to Garden City and entrained for Hoboken. There the transport *Covington*, formerly the Hamburg-American liner, *Cincinnati*, was boarded. This ship carried the Commanding General and his staff besides several other units of the division. Shortly after dark without noise or lights the vessel dropped down the harbor and anchored off Sandy Hook where it was soon joined by other ships and the convoy of destroyers. A little after midnight the ships weighed anchor and the voyage began:

The fleet consisted of six transports, a cruiser and several destroyers. The trip across required two weeks because of the zig-zag course pursued in order to avoid submarines. Comparatively little uneasiness existed among the men. Most of them had already reached the point where any and everything, the seasickness of comrades, possible attacks by submarines, or "abandon ship" drills had become fit material for a joke. The weather was fine, the water smooth, and two excellent meals a day, with an early one of coffee and bread, made the voyage endurable—and not altogether unpleasant. Of course the men kicked about something when they were not joking. The American soldier was always kicking about something as a rule when he was not laughing, and these Virginians were typical American soldiers.

### Over There

Land was sighted at 6 o'clock the morning of October 31st, but because of the low tide and the deep draft of the ship it was necessary to anchor near Belle Isle and wait for high tide. Late that night the transport docked in the harbor of St. Nazaire. Everyone was up early the next morning expecting to disembark, but no such luck was in store. During the day Colonel Wood, Commanding Officer of the organization, came aboard and it was learned that he was to be detached and remain at St. Nazaire. He was subsequently made Brigadier-General and returned to the United States. Several days more were spent on board the ship.

closely by the First, both under the command of Captain Varney, marched off the ship. The first Virginia unit had landed in France. Marching directly from the wharf to the train the Virginians received their introduction to French box cars. Two days' travel across France, and Vancouleurs, a town in the Fifth Training Area where division headquarters had already been established was reached. The First Company remained at Vancouleurs while the Second Company was sent to Mauvages about eight kilometers further on. The division was billeted in a score of small towns scattered over a front of thirty kilometers so the two Military Police companies were split up into details and sent to these points for duty. The headquarters of the companies remained at Vancouleurs and Mauvages, however. The men made their first acquaintance with billets which as a general thing were stables—or worse. The flashes of the guns in the St. Mihiel sector, north of Toul, could be plainly seen now. It was little thought at the time that ten months later this division would strike the blow that would wipe out the St. Mihiel salient. It rained almost every day and the mud was ankle deep. Nobody in the outfit could speak French and only about one person in a community could speak English. Still, the men got along, picking up a little French while the villagers soon acquired some English. Most of the organization was located in the valley where Joan of Arc was born. The old church where she went to pray before she received her commission and sword still stood at Vancouleurs, and the square in front of the church where this historic ceremony was performed was regarded by the French as hallowed ground. Two weeks had passed by when the news was received that Major Shannon had been ordered to Chaumont as Personnel Officer on the General Headquarters staff. Twice after that Major Shannon visited the 117th and received a cordial welcome. He was killed in the latter days of the war.

It had not been originally contemplated that the 42nd Division should occupy this training area and the moving orders which came were not unexpected. All details were called in and preparations for the departure of the companies were pushed. On December 12th the First Company moved from Vancouleurs and the Second Company from Mauvages with the town of Orguevaux, sixty kilometers away, as their destination. The two companies met at the end of the first day at Maxey sur Meuse. On the second the little town of Domremy, the birthplace of Joan of Arc, was passed. The house where she was born, and the church where she worshipped as a child were still standing, and both looked to be in very good repair. Twenty kilometers per day was good hiking for troops not yet hardened. What contrived to make it still more trying was the fact that the organization rated as mounted troops, and carried saddle pockets slung over their shoulders, in addition to being armed with both rifle and pistol which make considerably more weight than that carried by infantry. The weather was clear for the first forty-eight hours, but on the third day it was snowing before Orguevaux was reached. This village was completely surrounded by mountains and on the morning of December 15th was covered with several inches of snow. The temperature was below zero. The detachment was quartered in flimsy French barracks constructed of half-inch boards with one small stove to a barrack. The uniforms and shoes, which had been issued at Camp Mills were getting in bad shape, particularly the latter. A new issue of clothing was scheduled before the division moved to the Seventh Training Area, which was the next objective. It was soon learned from division headquarters at La Fouché that no further move would be made until after Christmas. It was a blue Christmas for most of the men, although the Quartermaster Corps did manage to get Christmas supplies to the detachment. On December 27th the command left Orguevaux for a two and one-half day hike. Although terrible hardships were encountered the men pushed and reached Rolampont about noon of December 29th.

#### The Lorraine

Seven weeks were spent at Rolampont, Haute Marne, in hard training. Major Marion S. Battle was made Assistant Provost Marshal of the Divi-



sion on January 10th and took command of the 117th Trains Headquarters and Military Police. He was a Virginian—a Regular Army officer and made a very able and popular commander. Major Battle subsequently became a Colonel and commanded a brigade of artillery in Germany.

While the billets as a whole were nothing to brag about still the men were fairly comfortable. Everybody was kept busy with pistol practice, infantry drill, problems in traffic control, and almost daily inspections.

The details that had been sent to Newport News in September for horses reached camp on February 14th. They had had a rough voyage as well as a long one, coupled with a narrow escape from submarines. The horses were somewhat the worse for wear, but nothing could be done with them for several days except get them shod. Before this could be finished orders came for another move and on February 17th the First Company proceeded by train to Baccarat, 25 kilometers southeast of Luneville on the Lorraine front. The Second Company entrained for Luneville on the 18th. At last the division was to enter the line to complete its training under French tutelage. For five weeks the First Company remained at Baccarat covering the town and roads in its part of the divisional area with mounted patrols. The Second Company had been ordered to detrain at Gerberviller and march to Loromonsey, and there to await further orders. The night was very dark and cold and as this was the men's initial experience in handling horses at night the unloading was no easy task. There was no quay available so the animals and wagons were unloaded by means of ramps and gang planks. The real difficulty came however in saddling up. Few of the men had ever saddled a horse, so naturally much confusion resulted. The French guide failed to show up, faulty directions were received, and so the men rode 25 instead of 16 kilometers, arriving at Loromonsey with horses as well as men practically exhausted. One incident of the night march proved especially amusing. One lad complained frequently during the night of an ill-fitting saddle. As it grew light the reason for this became evident—he had the saddle on backwards. The company remained in Loromonsey until the horses were shod, and while there got quite a lot of drilling in cavalry fundamentals. On March 1st the company moved to Luneville. Several details had already been sent here for duty at division headquarters. The month spent there was very pleasant as the town was a good one, with a variety of stores. Lieutenant Brosch was designated as Police Officer in charge of a permanent detail in the town. The remainder of the company was split up into patrols covering the roads and towns at their end of the divisional area. This area was an extensive one, as the division in conjunction with the French was occupying four sectors Bombasle, Baccarat, Luneville and St. Clement. The Second Company with headquarters at Luneville covered the northern end of the area while the First Company with headquarters at Baccarat had the southern end. Here the boys smelled powder and tasted real war.

The big problem of the military police was traffic control. In view of the congested condition of the roads the supply trains would never have gotten to the front with food and ammunition had they been left to their own devices. The roads of the divisional area were mapped by the Assistant Provost Marshal. He also designated the one-way routes and issued such other orders as were necessary. It was up to the military police to enforce these orders which was a large contract in itself. The work took them to the front lines and to the rear echelons and along main roads and small ones. The enemy realized the advantage to be derived from delaying traffic and concentrated artillery fire on road intersections and such points. Troops and supply trains could hurry by these spots, but the M. P.'s were compelled to remain right there. Military police were given great authority and were required to take orders only from their own officers or officers of field rank. Seldom did they receive any however, save from their own officers. On the other hand it was a common occurrence for an M. P. to call on a passing battalion or company commander for assistance. Sometimes this was rendered grudgingly but nevertheless it was always given. In a few instances it was necessary to call the



attention of the officers to a certain paragraph in Field Service Regulations, but were very rare. The Virginians had won the respect of the division and usually received such assistance as they required.

These sectors had been labeled "quiet" before the arrival of the "Rainbow," but the Boche soon learned that they could no longer wash their clothes in shell holes in No Man's Land. They resented this very keenly so raids and artillery fire became the order of the day—the sector was no longer "quiet."

After a month spent in training with the French the division was assembled and ordered to proceed by marching to the Rolampont area. The time had been well spent, for the importance and difficulty of the task before them had been learned by actual experience. Men had been under fire, had seen other men die, had come in contact with the enemy—had "found themselves," so to speak. The official designation of the companies was changed the First becoming Company A and the Second becoming Company B. Company B reached St. Boinigt and Company A the town of Moriviller when orders were received calling off the march back to Rolampont and the rest period to which everyone had been looking forward. The great German offensive of March 21st had begun and the 128th French Division which had been holding the line in the Baccarat sector was needed on the Somme. So the Rainbow faced about, marched back to the front and took over in its own right the Baccarat sector, relieving the 128th French Division. The Rainbow had the honor of being the first American Division to occupy a sector all its own and under its own commander. Major General Charles T. Menoher took command of the sector March 31st. Company A re-established its headquarters at Baccarat, having the northern area in charge, while Company B with the southern area to look after operated out of Bertirchamps. Colonel Pierce M. Murphy, of the United States Cavalry, was assigned as Commander of Trains, but remained only two weeks, when he was sent to another division. Major Battle was also transferred and turned over command of the organization to the senior captain on April 14th. On the 25th of the same month Major Allen Potts, then assistant to the Division Quartermaster, was transferred to the infantry and took command. Major Potts was already known to the organization and received a royal welcome. During the months which followed Major Potts took a firm hold on the affections of the men. It had become necessary sometime previous for both companies to have additional officers so Second Lieutenant John Rhodes had been assigned to Company A and about the last of April Second Lieutenant Norman A. Mott was assigned to Company B. The work was conducted by mounted patrols and the entire divisional area was covered every day. Road patrol work at night was not considered necessary, but "barrage posts" had been established and in case of a general attack every officers and man knew his post and was prepared to get there quickly. A general attack did not develop, however. The fighting was local, but deadly for this "quiet" sector had become anything but quiet. Raids were frequent and artillery fire was more or less constant.

Roads were favorite targets as well as the towns of Ancerviller and Badenviller, which were practically in the lines. These villages had been lucky during the first four years of the war but conditions were changed and now they were constantly "shot up."

The Germans launched a severe gas attack on the night of May 26th on the village of Negie which was occupied by the 168th Infantry. The gas attack was accompanied by an artillery barrage, speedily followed by a raid. The Germans were repulsed as they were again two nights later when the raid was repeated.

Major Potts conceived the idea that several days in the front line trenches would be a valuable experience for the men and would promote a better understanding between the M. P.'s and the doughboys. The company commanders were consulted and permission was secured from the Chief of Staff to send the men in with the 165th Infantry at the C. R. Chasseurs, a position adjoining the village of Negie. Details of one officer and twenty men were to go at a time and only those who wanted to need

go, there being nothing compulsory about it. Company B being the senior organization was given the first choice and volunteered to the last man. The first detail entered the trenches for three days, being relieved by a similar detail at the expiration of that time. The whole course was taken—outpost duty, patrols, raiding parties, grenade throwing, and all—and on their return the men were enthusiastic over the experience. As the last detail of Company B was serving its three days, moving orders were received so Company A failed to get into the trenches. Company B was the only military police company to see service in the front line trenches, so far as it is possible to learn. The commanding officer of the 165th Infantry asked that the Virginians be made part of his regiment, but this request was refused by the Commanding General.

Much more than can be recorded here had been accomplished on the Lorraine front. The Rainbow Division had kept the Germans busy and caused the latter to maintain a large force here which otherwise could have been employed on the Somme or elsewhere. The military police had carried out faithfully and efficiently the duties assigned to them and had acquired a great deal of valuable experience. The division had remained here for a longer period than it was destined to stay in any one place again during the war. The country was beautiful, many warm friends had been made, and the men had begun to feel as if this lovely section in the Vosges was home. So, it was with genuine regret that farewells were said and on June 19th the division moved away.

### The Champagne

At the end of the first day Company A reached Chatel sur Moselle, a very good town on the Moselle river. Company B stopped at Hardencourt, which was hardly big enough to billet one company in. This was the smallest town the outfit was quartered in while in France. So impressed was the Major with it that he renamed it Varneyville. (Later the remains of a town named Varneyville were found in the St. Mihiel.) As the division had been in the line for three months, which constitutes the record for continuous service of any American division before or since so far as can be learned everyone felt that a rest was deserved, and expected one. Many plans had been made for the spending of "leave." As the division was short on animal transportation about half of the horses of the military police companies were requisitioned, and for the rest of the war each company had a foot as well as a mounted detachment. This did not matter particularly in an active sector as there were many places where horses could not be used, but on the move it worked a serious hardship on the dismounted platoon. Inasmuch as the organization was regarded as a mounted one no arrangements were ever made by higher officials for transportation. Several days were spent waiting for the division to assemble and during this time details from both companies were busily engaged in handling traffic on the various roads. One day the Commander-in-Chief came through the area and stopped to question one of the Company B men who was stationed at a cross road near Zinecourt. This man was a good soldier but of a somewhat nervous temperament and the four stars on the windshield of the big automobile that pulled up at his post rattled him temporarily. He answered General Pershing's first question as to what organization he belonged to correctly, but when the General asked who the divisional commander was the excited soldier responded quickly, "Major Allen Potts." Even General Pershing smiled it is said. The incident was related to the Division Commander who proceeded to "kid" Major Potts about it. The Major replied that the statement might be somewhat premature, as he had no desire to command the division until the General got a corps.

Company B moved to Chatel, on June 23rd, and the following day the whole organization marched to Charmes, there to entrain for an unknown destination. Movements into position had been under cover of darkness all along, of course, but from this time on all moves were made at night. Chalons was reached on June 26th where the outfit detrained and marched 15 kilometers southwest to St. Germain. Chalons was a big fine town



on the banks of the Marne. As soon as the country outside was reached, however, chalk dust was encountered and the marching became fierce, the boys concurring heartily in the French designation of this region as the "lousy Champagne." Nobody liked St. Germain and the song "Where Do We Go From Here Boys" feelingly expressed the sentiments of all. A rest period was hoped for but with the Germans as active as they were at this time no one seriously counted on it. As a matter of fact three months of trench warfare had inspired everybody with the desire to get at the Huns and finish up the business as soon as possible.

The division was billeted in adjoining towns in the valley of the Marne. The military police companies were divided into patrols which covered the entire area, comprising twenty-eight towns from Vitry le Francois to Chalons. This had barely gotten settled when moving orders came. All details were hurriedly called in and on the night of June 28th the march back to Chalons was started. No halt was made until Camp de Chalons, fifteen kilometers north of the city was reached. This march of thirty kilometers was completed, picket lines established and camp pitched before daybreak. The site now occupied as a camp had been famous as a battleground since the days of Attila the Hun, and his old fort was still standing at La Cheppe, five kilometers to the west. The turfed over sand walls of this fort were in almost perfect condition and it was difficult to believe that they had stood thus for centuries. The country round about was a desolate one. Barren fields, white dusty roads, and chalk banks everywhere—the chalk so pure one could break it off and write with it. Division headquarters were established at Ferme de Vadenay. Vadenay also contained the military police headquarters. The town itself was forsaken and dilapidated. The white houses and still whiter streets created a blinding glare. A small creek which ran through the town was bordered on one side by a beautiful grove of trees and here the picket lines were staked out. The Rainbow Division was now a part of the 4th French Army under General Gouraud which was preparing to launch an offensive movement in conjunction with the 5th French Army to the west near Dormans. Enthusiasm ran high as everyone felt that at last some real action was ahead.

The two companies of military police had been divided, the mounted men placed in one company commanded by the senior captain, and all the dismounted men in another with the junior captain in command. These plans were never carried out, however. On the morning of July 4th the division became a part of the 4th French Army in more than words. Information had been received that the Germans contemplated an attack here and that they hoped to administer such a crushing defeat to the French and win such a strategic advantage that it would really force a conclusion of hostilities. Things were very quiet on the front, but it was learned that the enemy was massing troops for a drive on Chalons. Had this attack succeeded the results would have been disastrous in the extreme. Gouraud, however, had no idea of permitting to succeed. On the 7th of July he published the following remarkable order to his army:

TO THE FRENCH AND AMERICAN SOLDIERS OF THE FRENCH ARMY:

"We may be attacked at any moment.

"You all know that a defensive battle was never engaged under more favorable conditions.

"We are awake and on our guard.

"We are powerfully reinforced with infantry and artillery.

"You will fight on a terrain that you have transformed by your work and your perseverance into a redoubtable fortress. This invincible fortress and all its passages are well guarded.

"The bombardment will be terrible. You will stand it without weakness.

"The assault will be fierce, in a cloud of smoke, dust and gas.

"But your positions and your armament are formidable.

"In your breasts beat the brave and strong hearts of free men.

"None shall look to the rear; none shall yield a step.



"Each shall have but one thought; to kill, to kill a-plenty, until they have had their fill.

"Therefore, your General says to you: "You will break this assault and it will be a happy day.

"(Signed) GOURAUD.

"By authority of the Chief of Staff

PETTELAT."

The order itself gives some slight idea of Gouraud but words cannot describe its reception by officers and men. A week of waiting followed and then on July 14th, which was the French national holiday, there was flashed to division headquarters and from there to all unit headquarters the message FRANCOIS 570. This code meant that the German attack was about to break and for all troops to take up the positions previously assigned to them. Company A had moved into camp a few kilometers northeast of Vadenay and the area had been divided up for the expected attack. The roads here—some built by the Romans and others built for military purposes since, had to be kept open, for supplies and ammunition must go forward at any cost. This was the M. P.'s job and men were stationed at every corner and in every town in the area—and these men know what was expected of them. The French Intelligence Section was excellent and knew to the minute when the German artillery would open up. The enemy evidently reasoned that the French would celebrate their national holiday by getting drunk and, hence, would be at a disadvantage, so scheduled firing to begin at eleven o'clock French time. Gouraud followed this reasoning and opened with his artillery fifteen minutes earlier thus catching the enemy troops as they were massing for the assault. The French barrage was terrific, but, nevertheless, on schedule time the enemy opened fire and one of the greatest artillery engagements in the world's history was on. Like rain fell the German barrage along a front of forty-two miles. Front line points, intermediate localities and rear areas were shelled indiscriminately—and no one who was on the Champagne the night of July 14th will ever forget it, nor will anyone ever properly describe it. The M. P. units had received orders to seek such shelter as was possible, so Company B moved out of Vadenay when the shelling commenced to some pine woods on a nearby ridge, and Company A moved out of the French barracks it had been occupying on the Chalons-Suippes road, but remained in the vicinity. The men on duty stuck to their posts, of course, regardless of everything. Until 4:30 o'clock in the morning the artillery fire kept up without cessation in a constant glare of light and a steady roar of sound. Every now and then an ammunition dump would blow up, contributing still further to the inferno of noise and light. Even the men not on duty were under fire and with shells constantly falling on every hand it is remarkable that no casualties resulted. The men on posts were equally fortunate except in the case of the detail on the corner of the Chalons-Suippes and La Cheppe-Vadenay roads. All of these roads, and especially road corners, drew terrific shell-fire and there were many narrow escapes. The detail at the above corner was in charge of Corporal Wade H. Miller, of Company B. This was at once a difficult as well as dangerous post. Several hundred yards away was a French ammunition dump on which the demands grew heavier and heavier as others in the area were blown up. As the night wore on the traffic congestion at this point became so acute that it required the most strenuous efforts of every man on the post to prevent a tie-up. The shelling let up somewhat in the morning, only to break forth with renewed intensity several hours later. Corporal Miller was hit by a piece of high explosive shell and died almost instantly. He was buried that afternoon in a nearby wheat field, close to the point where he had served so valiantly. Corporal Miller was the first man in the organization to lose his life. Several days later a beautiful little monument was purchased in Chalons and placed at his head. The various detachments of both companies "lived hard" all over the area and the escapes from death were well nigh miraculous. First Sergeant Fendall B. Leonard at the greatest personal risk saved the

horses of Company B from almost certain destruction during the shelling of Vadenay. He was later cited for gallantry in action by the Division Commander and commissioned a Second Lieutenant. The artillery fire continued through the 15th and 16th but it was not until the night of the latter that the Germans really admitted defeat. The division was relieved on July 18th. The day following General Gouraud spoke to the assembled units of the division praising their work in this great battle. On the night of the 20th the division started to entrain. A detachment from Company A was at St. Hilaire-au-Temple where an infantry regiment was entraining. Enemy planes bombed the railroad yards and during the attack Private Albert N. Cleary was killed. He was later cited in orders along with Corporal Miller by the French, and both were awarded the Croix de Guerre with Palm. The Distinguished Service Cross was awarded to Private Hammond and Wagoner Gumm for rescuing a wounded French officer under fire. Sergeant-Major Richard B. Fowlkes was cited for bravery and later made First Lieutenant at the First Army headquarters. Thus, ended the period of service in the Champagne. On the night of July 23rd the outfit marched to Coulus near Chalons and entrained for an unknown destination. It was rumored that the long looked for rest was at last going to materialize.

#### Chateau-Thierry

The Germans in their retreat had destroyed the railroads very thoroughly so it was almost always necessary in troop movements to cover twice the distance, or more between two given points. On this present trip a distance of approximately 200 kilometers was covered in order to reach a point 90 kilometers from "Camp Virginia" in the pine woods near Vadenay. A brief halt was made on the edge of Paris where a considerable crowd gathered and applauded the Americans. After three hours of further travel La Ferte sous Jouarre, 55 kilometers from Paris, was reached and here the journey ended. Orders were received to march at 7 o'clock the next morning for Chateau-Thierry. It has been suggested that an appropriate title for a history of the Rainbow would be, "Rests We Never Had." Once for ten days the division was withdrawn from the lines but there was no rest, the time being spent in the most intensive sort of training. Promptly at 7 A. M. the following day the start for Chateau-Thierry was made. The destination was Truguey, 10 kilometers north of Chateau-Thierry, a total distance of 35 kilometers. The day was very hot but the orders were to hurry as the enemy was on the run and the division must "get in the game" at the earliest possible moment. The mounted detachment arrived at 3 o'clock in the afternoon in good order. An earlier arrival would have been possible except for the crowded condition of the roads. The infantry was being moved by camions, the artillery was on the road, French traffic was heavy, and when Le Poncets was reached a tremendous jam was encountered. The division was going into action, nothing could move either way and even the trucks carrying the infantry were hopelessly blocked. The officer in command of the mounted section of M. P.'s analyzed the situation, and then leaving the wagon train, divided the detachment into details and tackled the problem of getting order out of chaos. The French truck driver is not susceptible to American reasoning and the Chinese, whom the French used to a large extent as drivers of their camions, are simply impossible. Commands, prayers, curses—these things availed not at all—so in many cases an excitable Chinaman or Frenchman who could not understand or would not obey a command in English or French found himself looking into the business end of a 45 "automatic"—this he understood at once and would obey. Few situations encountered by the organization during the war compared with this jam, but it was soon cleared and traffic was moving again. Truguey showed very plainly the effects of the fighting there the previous day. All around were unburied Germans and a few dead Americans, while open graves were everywhere. A few yards away was discovered the grave of Lieutenant Randolph Mason, of Richmond, who had been attached to the 26th Division. The men appropriately christened this spot "Camp



Mud." The dismounted detachments came in after dark, completely worn out with the long hot march.

The Major had the area which was an unusually large one mapped out, and the next morning every man was on duty. The Rainbow relieved the 26th American and the 167th French Divisions taking over both sectors. The Germans had been forced back from Chateau-Thierry and were holding new positions at Le Croix Rouge Farm—a large open field with a road running through it and surrounded by woods. The troop dispositions having been made on the night of July 25th the attack was launched the following morning. Stubborn resistance was encountered and casualties were so heavy that the ambulance companies were unable to get the wounded to the field hospitals fast enough. With the wounded coming south and supplies and ammunition going north the congestion was beyond description. On the 27th the organization moved from "Camp Mud" to Bretenil Farm, which was located on a good road and near a water supply. At the former location water was obtained from a small spring and because of the heavy demand water carts were constantly lined up waiting their turn and wagoners had to be on duty day and night. There was no way for the men to wash, there being barely enough water for cooking. The stay at Bretenil Farm was brief the companies moving the next day to a position south of Beauvarde which was christened "Camp Schrapnel." This spot was bombed every night by enemy plants and by day his artillery shelled a ration dump a few hundred yards away. The advance continued in spite of the stubborn resistance of the enemy and the heavy casualties of the Rainbow. No such traffic difficulties had been encountered during the war as were now faced. Every man in the M. P. companies rated as available for duty was on the job day and night, but even these were not sufficient to properly handle the situation. So great was the need that Major Potts ordered every man at headquarters—adjutant, supply officer, sergeant-majors, wagoners and privates—out for active M. P. duty. Cooks doubled up so extra cooks could be used, company clerks, first sergeants, stable sergeants—all were needed and used. Another move was made, this time north of Beauvarde and camp was made at a miserable unsanitary hole, where it was possible to secure only enough water to cook with, and a guard had to be placed over the water cart. All this time, however, the Germans were being steadily forced back to the Ourcq river. The number of wounded seemed to increase and despite traffic jams ambulances were given the right of way to the field hospitals. Military police details were not only up with the infantry but in one instance even ahead of the "doughboys." A detail had been ordered to proceed to a certain bridge over the Ourcq at Sergy. They were met with a hail of machine gun bullets, but proceeded to lie down and remain where they were until the infantry arrived, when they crossed with them. The engagements at Sergy, Nesles, Meurcy Farm, Seringes and Le Croix Blanche Farm are now all matters of history. A constant patrol was maintained on the dangerous Fere-en-Tardenois road. The division crossed the Ourcq. There was no let-up in pressure on the M. P.'s. German planes seemed to have control of the air and harassed the Americans with machine gun fire by day and bombs by night. Few enemy prisoners were taken—the battle was to the death. So far the Rainbow Division had lost 184 officers and 5,469 men in killed and wounded. By August 1st the Germans were retreating towards the River Vesle and although every man in the division was utterly exhausted the pursuit was pressed vigorously until a line running between Chery Chartreuve and Mont St. Martin was reached. Here the 4th Division relieved the Rainbow. The advance by the Rainbow totaled 18 kilometers—said to be the greatest distance gained by any American division between Soissons and Rheims. While the artillery and ammunition train remained in the line in support of the 4th Division the remainder of the division camped in the Foret de Fere. Unburied men, Americans, French, Germans were in thickets and gullies having been overlooked by burial details, and hundreds of dead horses filled the woods. With a hot July sun beating down millions of flies, and naught but polluted water the place was a veritable hell and during the week spent there ap



many men were evacuated because of sickness as had been wounded during the active operations. The number lost to the M. P. companies because of sickness was small, due in large measure to the care the men took of themselves. Quite a few men who were sick refused to go to the hospital. In this area near Coincy was found the emplacement where the "Big Bertha" had been located. It was built of steel and was a splendid piece of work. A standard gauge railroad had been constructed around it which not only kept it supplied with ammunition but enabled the gun to be removed when the fighting came too close. On August 4th Major Potts was ordered to report to General Pershing at the headquarters of the First Army which was then being formed as Headquarters Commandant. Accordingly Major Potts turned over command of the organization on the morning of August 5th to the senior captain. Two days later Colonel George H. Wood was designated as Commander of Trains. Never doing the history of the organization had the foregoing position carried with it the command of the military police companies. They had always been directly under the Assistant Provost Marshal who was sometimes a Major and at others a Captain. Since the tables of organization had been made up the functions of trains had changed materially and there was very little for the Headquarters personnel to do. The adjutant and supply officer had regular duties, but for months the enlisted personnel had been operating under the Assistant Provost Marshal and had been of great assistance. Colonel Wood remained as Commander of Trains until the middle of October when he was relieved. He was a most agreeable officer and his departure was generally regretted. Major Potts had taken Lieutenant Brosch with him to First Army headquarters as his Adjutant. Everybody hated to see him go. Major Potts also took Sergeant-Major Richard B. Fowlkes, Sergeant Shields and Wagoner Gumm with him. Fowlkes was later commissioned and subsequently made a First Lieutenant.

For over a week the division had been held in reserve but on August 11th was ordered back to the valley of the Marne. As there was no necessity now for moving by night or for any particular haste two days were consumed in the trip, one night being spent at Le Thiolet. The next few days were used in getting cleaned up once more, while many officers and men secured a 24-hour leave. On the night of August 17th the outfit marched 15 kilometers west of Trilport which had been designated as the entraining point for mounted troops. A German plane bombed the town of Le Ferte about an hour before the organization departed but there were no casualties so far as could be learned. Just before leaving Lieutenant Woods, the supply officer, was relieved and order to Chaumont as assistant to the Personnel Officer.

#### St. Mihiel

Bourmont was reached on August 18th. It was a good town on the road between Langres and Neufchateau less than 50 kilometers from Romilpomp. Orders were to remain here for 30 days and everybody was looking forward to the rest. But there was no such good luck. Barrier posts were ordered established on every road leading out of the divisional area in addition to the usual policing of villages. Company A was ordered to take over the southern area with headquarters at Doncourt while Company B remained at Bourmont. Both companies now had badly needed clothing issued to them. Replacements to fill vacancies caused by sickness and transfers were also received. These replacements were composed of men from all branches of the services, from Regular Army cavalrymen to raw recruits who had only been in the service a few weeks and in France a few days. By means of schools and drills these were speedily whipped into shape and the organization viewpoint inculcated in them. They were taught to salute an officer not at 30 paces but as far as he could be seen. In this branch of the service privates had more authority than many officers and for that reason in particular they must at all times be courteous and firm yet never arrogant. Thousands of replacements were being drilled by the other units of the division so the ten days spent here were devoted

to intensive training. It was the first time the division had been withdrawn from the line and it was destined to be the last.

Major Emory C. Worthington from the 168th Infantry was assigned as Assistant Provost Marshal on August 25th and assumed command of the military police companies. On the 28th of the month the outfit took to the road again, marching by night and resting by day. Labor Day was spent at Chateaufort then the march was resumed until Colombe la Belle was reached. Here orders were received to hold one company in readiness to report to the First Army in preparation for the organization of the Military Police Corps. Company A was designated and from that time forth this company was held close to headquarters in readiness to move at a moments notice. Company B moved on. Rumors were constantly being encountered now that the First American Army was to attack the St. Mihiel salient. One of the remarkable things about these rumors was that they always came from the French who seemed to know a great deal more about the plans and movements of the American troops than the latter did. The Foret de la Raine was reached on the 9th of September and here the whole division camped. Rain fell steadily and the whole place was a quagmire. The attack had been scheduled for September 7th as Marshal Foch had advised that an advance could not be made after the rains started the second week in September. Because of transportation problems it was impossible to launch the attack on the 7th. The heavy movement of troops, artillery, tanks, supplies, etc., had turned the dirt roads into mud that was knee deep in places and traffic problems under such conditions became very acute. Approximately one-fourth of the transportation was out of commission nearly all the time, either being stuck in the mud or rolled in the ditch. When a truck got stuck and was holding up traffic the M. P.'s ordered it ditched despite protests of driver or supply train officers. Miles of traffic could not be tied up because of one disabled truck.

On the evening of September 11th the company moved out of the woods into the little town of Ansauville. The movement of troops into position was to take place that night as the attack was scheduled for one o'clock. In spite of the fact that the roads were jammed and were under constant shell fire the various units were in their proper position at the appointed hour. Thirty men had been sent from Company B under Lieutenant Butts, to the headquarters of the 83rd Brigade and thirty under Lieutenant Mott to the 84th Brigade. The latter detail was stationed in one of the many small shelters on the south side of the road near Seicheprey until time for the attack. The American artillery opened promptly at one o'clock and the enemy replied but compared with the Champagne the affair sounded quite tame. The Rainbow was the center division of the Fourth Corps and attacked the southern boundary of the salient east of Mont Sec and northeast to Thirey, including Seicheprey. The Germans had occupied this area for four years and consequently had it well organized. Despite this, however, the infantry moved forward steadily after it "jumped off" at five o'clock the morning of September 12th. M. P. details were up with the infantry and took charge of the prisoners marching them to the rear where they were placed in prison pens from which they were evacuated to the Corps prison camp by mounted details of Company A. One thousand were taken in this advance, which covered 19 kilometers in 20 hours. A new front was organized and occupied for several weeks. The day after the attack division headquarters were moved to Essey and the M. P. companies accompanied them. Here were found about 100 French civilians who had been little better than slaves to the Germans. Quantities of supplies were discovered and at Pannes there were large military storehouses. Company A remained here until September 18th when it was ordered to First Army headquarters. Later it was learned that the company had been split up, some serving at Toul, some at Triconville and the remainder at Bar-le-Duc. From that time until it embarked at Brest for the United States in April, 1919, Company A saw no more service in active sectors which was a great disappointment to all the members. Company B remained at Essey until October 1st sending out the usual mounted



patrols and details to the various towns within the area. The Germans shelled the sector occupied by the Americans several times daily for the next several weeks and a few casualties resulted. While the towns in the area had been practically obliterated during the four years of occupation there were a few houses standing in Essey, and in these and the abandoned dugouts the men managed to keep dry. On October 1st the dismounted section of the company was moved in trucks to Benoitvaux Convent. The mounted detachment proceeded through the town of St. Mihiel and after spending one very wet day in the woods reached Benoitvaux Convent on the 3rd. This was a spot much frequented by tourists in peace times because of the supposed miraculous cures effected there. Almost everybody in the organization visited the Holy Well and the Twelve Stations of the Cross. It was discovered while here that the 29th Division was near Souilly, a few kilometers away, and as nearly all the men had friends in that division plans were made to visit them. However, these proved vain as October 5th found the company once more on the march.

### The Meuse-Argonne

Quite a few changes had taken place in the commissioned personnel. Lieutenant Mott had been ordered to an aviation camp near Paris and Lieutenant Stackpole the Medical Officer was transferred to the 117th Field Signal Battalion. First Sergeant Fendall B. Leonard was commissioned Second Lieutenant and assigned to Company B. Captain E. F. Sommers, of Indiana, was assigned as Medical Officer in place of Lieutenant Stackpole. Captain Sommers was an excellent doctor, and one of the finest men the organization ever had to do with, thinking always first of the other fellow, and considering his own convenience or pleasure not at all.

News was received that a big drive had started on the enemy near Verdun, on September 26th, and the Rainbow was apparently pointed straight for it. The last offensive had cost the division 1,118 men in killed and wounded and everyone had suffered from the strain of exposure and hard work. However, the Rainbow was now rated as a "Shock Division" and everybody was very proud of this. This was to be the biggest thing of the war it was felt and the work of the M. P.'s was cut out. Hence, every available officer and man, mounted or dismounted, was at his designated post on the morning of October 5th doing his utmost to keep the division moving through the congested area without a tie-up. Headquarters, the medical detachment, and cooks were about the only ones not on active traffic duty. Captain Sommers, the Medical Officer, was put in command of the train and such men as were not on duty and ordered to proceed to Recicourt. He reached there all right and during the night the men struggled in, one or two at a time. Most of the moves now were by day for it is doubtful if any headway could have been made at night because of the condition of the roads and the congestion of traffic. The next morning the company was again on the move. The days march included several kilometers over crushed rock—which had not been rolled—merely dumped. Even the lightest sort of transportation had great difficulty in negotiating this piece of road. Then came a long stretch of "corduroy," composed of everything from twigs to broken planks. It was nearly morning when the train reached its destination in the Bois de Montfaucon. All night and until after daybreak the men continued to drift in, and drop down to sleep in the mud. These woods were "shot to pieces" as the tide of battle had ebbed and flowed for four years here in the German effort to take Verdun 10 kilometers southeast. No muddier, filthier hole could be found than the M. P.'s camp and water was practically impossible to get. Here too, German airplanes harassed the Americans day and night.

The Rainbow was now attached to the First Army reserve with the exception of the artillery brigade which supported the 32nd Division in its operations near Romagne until the Rainbow was ordered into line. After a week in this miserable hole the division was ordered to relieve the 1st Division north of Fleville and Exermont. Division headquarters



moved to Cheppy and the M. P.'s trailed along as usual. Traffic congestion was indescribable. A combat division with its trains marching at normal intervals is strung out over 33 miles of road so when several divisions are moving over the same roads to the same locality conditions verge on chaos. However, the division was policed into the lines and at midnight October 12th they had relieved the 1st Division. Although every man worked day and night even then the personnel was not sufficient to cope with the situation so on October 13th Major Gill ordered two officers and fifty men of the 117th Trench Mortar Battery to report for duty with the Military Police. They reported the next morning and were sandwiched in among the various details and sent out on duty. Sergeant Clark was killed by a high explosive shell. Captain Harrison, Adjutant, was taken sick and sent to the hospital on October 15th. He did not rejoin the outfit until January, 1919, in Germany. Lieutenant Butts was detached from the company and assigned to headquarters as Supply Officer and Acting Adjutant. The M. P.'s were up with the infantry as usual. The drive, however, had slowed up when the Rainbow went in because of the stubborn resistance put up by the enemy at Hill 288 and Cote de Chatillon. Two days were required to overcome the defense of these positions. The country was very rugged, hills, trees, and tangled brush provided ideal nests for the enemy's machine guns, and rendered any advance very difficult. When the foregoing hills had been captured the Argonne drive moved on. On October 19th the M. P.'s moved from Cheppy to a little piece of woods northeast of Apremont. Enemy airplanes were very active here and besides the customary bombing dropped thousands of handbills printed in English containing the usual anti-ally propaganda. Here the order went into effect changing the official designation of Company B to the 42nd Military Police Company, at the same time making the commanding officer Divisional Assistant Provost Marshal. The enlisted personnel was increased from 150 to 200, and an additional first and second lieutenant were given the company. This same order relieved Major Worthington as Assistant Provost Marshal but he remained for several days awaiting orders. The 2nd Division relieved the infantry on October 31st, but the artillery and machine gun units remained in line to support the 2nd. It is related that an order was given the 1st, 42nd, and 77th by telephone which read, "Sedan, regardless of boundaries." Whether this was the exact wording or not doesn't matter—the fact remains that on November 3rd an advance was started unlike any that had been seen before. As usual the M. P.'s were split into small details and sent on ahead, only the wagons and Headquarters and Medical detachments being left to travel as the 42nd M. P. Company. For the next few days Captain Sommers struggled on with the little train. The men made no attempt to locate the kitchen but lived off of iron rations wherever they could get them, working day and night to keep transportation going. The long steep muddy hill at Champoigneulle was simply impassable for trucks. By requisitioning truck crews and passing troops, trucks, mule carts and staff cars were literally pushed up this hill. After passing through Bazancy and reaching Autruche, on November 4th, it was learned that all bridges and fills had been blown up by the retreating enemy so the advance had to be temporarily halted until the engineers could repair them. In the Bar Valley north of Briuelles the Germans had not only destroyed the causeway, but had blown mine craters every 75 feet—which were below the level of the swamp in depth. So perfect a job of destruction was this that not even a man on foot could cross over but in 24 hours the Engineers had built a corduroy road around it and traffic was proceeding. However, it was necessary to keep a force of men here to help push the transportation—ranging from escort wagons to 6-inch field pieces—across. The M. P.'s kept two officers and twenty men at Briuelles for several days. Not only the 42nd Division got across, but also parts of the 1st and 77th. The Engineers had pushed on ahead for every bridge, both small and large, had been destroyed. The division moved on through Grandes Armoises and Chemerey. The road the 42nd was using was the most direct, but it was also the most impossible. At

some previous time there had been another road over to the right of this sector through St. Prerremont which the 77th was trying to use, but the bottom was out of it, which resulted in a great deal of traffic from the 77th crowding over into the already congested route being used by the 42nd. At Oche a train several miles long was at a complete standstill with no prospect of moving. An M. P. officer found a Second Lieutenant of Engineers to direct the work and requisitioning the personnel of the train, soon had it moving again. At Grandes Armoises one shell hole in the road blocked everything until an M. P. detail filled it up with rock from a ruined building nearby. At Stonne a large section of earth and rock had been blown out of the side of the mountain completely blocking the way. The road was so narrow that transportation could not be turned around in the usual way. Lieutenant Leonard arrived and commandeering a passing company turned all transportation, ranging from water carts to 75 mm guns, around by hand, and routed it back through Grandes Armoises to Tanney and forward through Chemerey to Sedan. Division headquarters were now established at Maisoncelle. Troops were crowding north as rapidly as possible. At Bulson, the most forward traffic post, the shelling was unusually heavy and units passing this point suffered heavily, the 149th Artillery in particular losing a considerable number of men. Lieutenant Leonard who was in charge here had his men seek what protection they could and still attend to their duties. Many were the narrow escapes recorded. The 1st Division had now passed the 77th and had edged over to the left until they were entirely in the Rainbow's sector, but as the advance was "regardless of boundaries" this did not matter except that the congestion was increased. Neither the 1st nor 77th knew, however, that the 42nd had "beat them to it." Outposts of the 165th Infantry occupied Wadlincourt, a suburb of Sedan, on the night of November 6th. This was not known to the 1st Division, however, and a scouting party feeling its way ahead in the dark seeing an important looking officer wearing a cape and a soft hat worked up on him carefully and with a swift rush made him prisoner without a contest. It was the last "prisoner of war" captured by the 1st Division. Although this "prisoner" protested in most forcible terms he was taken back to headquarters where it was discovered that the captive was Brigadier-General Douglas MacArthur, commanding the 84th Infantry Brigade of the 42nd Division. It was also learned that the Rainbow Division at that moment occupied a suburb of Sedan—the race for that city, "regardless of boundaries" had been won. On November 7th, however, all Americans were withdrawn in order to let the French have the honor of first entering the city. The organization commenced to work its way back through Bruelle and Orth to Buzancy where on November 11th it was learned that the Armistice had been signed and the war was over.

### The Army of Occupation

Seven days were spent at Buzancy, during which time the news came that the Rainbow Division had been assigned to the Army of Occupation in Germany. On November 14th the M. P. detachment marched out of Buzancy and down through Launderville and Landres-et-St. Georges. At the latter place there could be seen from the German side of the line one of the most hotly contested positions the division had ever waged battle for and looking at it from that angle little wonder was expressed at the confidence of the enemy or at his stubborn resistance. The river was crossed at Dun sur Meuse and the march continued to Brandeville where a halt of several days was made in order to permit the men to receive new clothes and badly needed equipment. On November 20th Montmedy was reached. This was one of the points that had been so important to the enemy as a base of supplies. For four years the town had been dead—this was in effect a day of resurrection. The Germans had gone, the Americans had come—on faces everywhere the expression was one of great relief. The day was significant for still another reason—the President of France was coming to visit his long lost people. The Americans were greatly interested in the arrival of President and Madame Poincare



as were the townspeople, but somewhat skeptical as to his statement about the "Boche paying every centime for what he has destroyed," ever coming true. Major Allen Potts was acting as aide to the French President, representing the Commanding General of the First American Army, and the M. P.'s were delighted to see their old commander again. The civilians here were the first that had been encountered for some time, as the division had been operating in a devastated area since the 1st of September. They were very cordial, in some cases bringing up supplies that had been concealed for four years. The next day after a march of five kilometers Belgium was entered. Orders had been received to station men along the Franco-Belgian frontier for a considerable distance in order to assist refugees who were now coming back in large numbers. Leaving these details 3 days rations the organization moved on to Virton which was the first Belgian town of any size so far encountered. Almost the first thing to excite attention was a butcher shop well stocked with beef, pork and mutton. In about ten minutes there was none of the latter two left. The men had plenty of beef but had seen neither pork nor mutton for ages. There was a large German hospital here and a sufficient personnel had been left behind to operate it. Most of the patients were Germans, but there were a few allied soldiers also. Allied flags flew over the buildings and when the attendants went on the street they saluted most punctiliously. At Arlons a days march beyond the Belgians were very enthusiastic over the Americans. After pausing there for a day the march was resumed to Mersch, Luxembourg, where a ten days stop was made in order to secure the remainder of the organizations' supplies. The people had been pro-German during the war and were somewhat cool at first. However, they soon thawed out and became very friendly. Nearly all the members of the detachment while here visited the City of Luxembourg, twelve kilometers from Mersch. This city was a combination of the old and new and contained some fine modern buildings. Among the most interesting points was the Palace of the Grand Duchess. A standing army of some 200 men was maintained by this little country. They wore a very showy uniform, but were up on all points of military courtesy, soon learning to recognize the American officers. As the Germans were not retiring as fast as had been expected the Americans slowed up somewhat in order to let them get out of the way.

There had been some changes in the personnel of the military police companies. Fifty additional men had been received by transfer from the three artillery regiments. First Lieutenant Cowen had been assigned to the company at Buzancy, First Lieutenant Balentine, of Tennessee, and Second Lieutenant Wm. S. Ewers, of West Virginia, both from the 151st Artillery, also joined the company, as did Lieutenant A. S. Beck, of Kentucky. Lieutenant L. K. Roach, who had been Veterinary Officer, was transferred to the 149th Field Artillery, and the Dental Officer Lieutenant Cornwall to Third Army headquarters.

Mersch was left on December 2nd and Cornsdorf reached that night. Leaving there early the next day the detachment soon arrived at Echternach, a large town on the River Sauer. Some delay was experienced here because of heavy traffic, but at nine o'clock on December 3rd the River Sauer was crossed and a Virginia unit was at last in Germany. The country was mountainous and the roads seemed to wind round and round, but the column kept well closed up and finished each day's march on schedule time. The first stop in Germany was in Welschfilling and here acquaintance was made with German civilians. Orders had been issued that there should be "no fraternizing." It was well nigh impossible, however, to reject the overtures of the children and more than likely a tot would be seen going down the street munching a piece of army bread, with as much apparent enjoyment as a child at home would derive from pie or cake. Many of the younger children had never eaten a piece of white bread in their lives and they certainly enjoyed it.

The people here had cook stoves, cream separators, and used modern machinery, and the towns were lighted with electricity. One day was spent in Welschfilling and the following night in Speicher. So far the



roads had been fairly good and the march had been leisurely and pleasant. But from this point on the heavy traffic of the retiring Germans had simply ruined the roads. Rain commenced to fall steadily and from now on the M. P.'s had a real job. Two days were spent in Biersborn and the march was resumed on December 8th. A pause of one night was made in Ober Ehe, which was one of the smallest and quaintest towns encountered in Germany. The next stop was Adenay where five days were spent, leaving on December 14th, with a stop of one night in the little town of Potzfeld, and then on to Ahrweiler, designated as Division headquarters, where the march ended on December 15th.

Over 250 kilometers had been covered, the last half of which was in miserable weather and over terrible roads. However, despite these handicaps the last march of the Rainbow had been creditably performed. The divisional area was about half way between Bonn and Coblenz and was a prosperous section of the Rhineland, known as the Kries of Ahrweiler, which extended back about 20 kilometers from the Rhine. The M. P. headquarters were at Ahrweiler in a beautiful country. After several days rest the actual work of policing the area was started. Barrier posts were established on all roads leading out of the area and a detachment was sent to Cologne to co-operate with the British. This detachment was later complimented in the very highest terms by the British Assistant Provost Marshal. All details included a sufficient number of men to provide for everyone being comfortable, hours were short, and every man was given a billet with a real bed. Some of the men went to Coblenz and took trips up and down the Rhine on the big white river steamers that had been taken over and were now flying the Stars and Stripes. Others visited Cologne and Bonn, while many obtained leaves and went to various parts of France, Belgium, Italy, and a few even journeyed to England. The four months spent here were largely in the nature of a vacation. Many changes occurred among the officers during this period. Colonel Lawrence J. Fleming was appointed as Commander of Trains, but only served a few weeks and was succeeded by Major Davis G. Arnold. During the latter part of the stay many changes occurred among the officers. Captains Harrison and Somers and Lieutenant Ballantine and Butts who had applied for further service, in the A. E. F., were transferred. Major Shelby was assigned to the company as Medical Officer and Captain J. R. Gray as Adjutant, while Lieutenants W. E. Preston and W. S. Bowser were also assigned. It was announced that the Commander-in-Chief was to review the division. So on Sunday, March 16th, in an immense field on the banks of the Rhine between Remagen and Sinzig the Rainbow Division passed in review for the last time. This review could never be forgotten by anyone who witnessed it. The setting was magnificent. The Rhine and the picturesque range of mountains on the other side provided a wonderful background, the long level expanse of low ground on the west bank seemed created for the purpose, and a few yards west of the reviewing stand rose a hillside which made an ideal grandstand for those so fortunate as to witness the pageant. A number of decorations were conferred by General Pershing and then the various units were inspected, after which the 30,000 odd veterans with flags flying and bands playing passed in review. It was a most inspiring sight and a most fitting close to the activities of the division. The military police had experienced comparatively little difficulty in getting the different units in to the reviewing field, but getting them out and back to their stations while at the same time keeping the roads open for other traffic was a serious problem. Several days after the review the M. P. details were ordered to report at company headquarters where they were drilled in close order formation. It was the first drilling the men had done since February, 1918, and also the first time the entire company had been together during the same period. In one case a detail which had been left in Varennes, France, in October, 1918, when the organization passed on, did not rejoin the company until January, 1919. A few days together and the outfit was as good as ever, but with a new sureness acquired during months of the most trying duty under conditions where the lives of hundreds depended on them.

In the last days of the division's history the commanding General issued General Order No. 21N which noted the service of the 42nd M. P. company. On April 2nd began the movement of the division to Brest where it was to embark for the United States. Half of the M. P. organization left on the first train and half on the last, which pulled out on April 10th. The stay in Germany had on the whole been a pleasant one and many friends were left behind. Major Arnold was relieved as Commander of Trains on the arrival at Brest, and Major Allen Potts was appointed in his stead being made Divisional Ordnance Officer and Divisional Judge Advocate at the same time. This did not carry with it however, command of the Military Police—they remained under the command of the Assistant Provost Marshal, Captain Varney. On April 18, 1919, eighteen months from the day the organization sailed for France, the *Leviathan* was boarded for home. The voyage was without incident and on the afternoon of April 26th the ship docked at Hoboken. A few days at Camp Merritt and then to Camp Meade where on May 6, 1919, the 117th Trains Headquarters and Military Police was mustered out of service.





# PART III

---

Virginia

Military Organizations

in the

Eightieth Division

*"BLUE RIDGE"*

## TABLE OF CONTENTS

---

<b>Summary of Activities of the 80th Division</b> .....	<b>Page</b> <b>231</b>
<b>Summary of Activities of the 318th Infantry</b> .....	<b>232</b>
<b>History of the 318th Infantry</b> .....	<b>233</b>
Compiled from the History of the 318th Infantry, published by the members of that regiment shortly after demobilization.	
<b>Summary of Activities of the 317th Infantry</b> .....	<b>282</b>
<b>History of the 317th Infantry</b> .....	<b>283</b>
Compiled from the History of the 317th Infantry by First Lieu- tenant Edley B. Craighill.	
<b>Summary of Activities of the 314th Machine Gun Battalion</b> .....	<b>304</b>
<b>History of the 314th Machine Gun Battalion</b> .....	<b>305</b>
Compiled from the History of the 314th Machine Gun Battalion, prepared by the Editorial Committee, consisting of First Lieuten- ant Herman R. Furr, Chairman, First Lieutenant Robert A. Horner, Second Lieutenant Walter L. Lukens and Mr. Aaron R. Merritt, of the Y. M. C. A.	
<b>Summary of Activities of the 319th Ambulance Company</b> .....	<b>328</b>
<b>History of the 319th Ambulance Company, by Captain Julius J. Hulcher</b>	<b>329</b>

## Summary of Activities—Eightieth Division

Organized August 27, 1917, at Camp Lee, Va. Trained there until May 17, 1918, commencing to leave on that date. Part of the division sailed from Newport News and part from New York. Entered France through ports of St. Nazaire, Bordeaux and Brest, the last units of the division reaching France June 19th. The division assembled at Calais, leaving there early in June, 1918, for the Samur area, to train with the British. The artillery did not train in this area, but rejoined the division September 13, 1918. The division left Samur area July 3, 1918, for the British Third Army Sector. Left this sector August 18th and moved by rail to the Fourteenth Training Area, where it remained until August 31st. Proceeded on September 1st to Stainville and later to Tronville area, serving in reserve during the St. Mihiel operation. The division began moving into the Argonne on September 14th and on the 26th it attacked at Bethincourt, advancing nine kilometers in two days. Relieved on September 29th and assembled near Cuisy, where, on October 4th, it again attacked, moving forward over difficult ground, four kilometers in nine days. Relieved on October 12th and proceeded to Thiaucourt area, where some days were spent in resting and refitting. Moved to Le Neufour area October 23rd/24th, remaining there until the 29th. On that date entered the line St. Georges-St. Juvin, attacking on November 1st, advancing a distance of twenty-four kilometers in the next five days. Relieved on November 6th and marched to the Buzancy and Champ Mohaut area. Left on November 18th for the Fifteenth Training Area, completing the march December 1st. The 155th Field Artillery Brigade, after its relief from duty with the 80th Division, remained in the Cunel sector, serving with various American divisions in that sector for forty-eight consecutive fighting days. It moved by train from Dun-sur-Meuse to the Fifteenth Training Area, arriving December 4th to 7th. The division was reviewed by General Pershing on March 26, 1919, near Pimelles. Moved to the Le Mans area in April, and started preparations for the return to America. Embarked in May, 1919.



## Summary of Activities—Three Hundred and Eighteenth Infantry, Eightieth Division

Organized in September, 1917, at Camp Lee, Va., and trained there until May 20, 1918, entraining on that date for Hoboken, N. J. Sailed for France May 22nd on the *Leviathan*. Disembarked at Brest May 31st and went into camp at Pontanezen Barracks, three miles from the city. Left Brest for Calais June 7th, commencing to move on that date to Samer area. Trained with British in that area until July 5th, entraining at that time for Bonneville area. Left for advanced zone near Rubempre July 22nd and entered trenches for first time. Moved from Rubempre area August 19th and set out for the American sector in eastern part of France. Regiment less 2nd Battalion (which moved to Bernaville), proceeded to Domleger. On August 23rd, 1st Battalion and Headquarters, Supply and Machine Gun Companies detrained at Poincon and marched to billets in Recey-sur-ource, Chambain and Menesbles. The 2nd and 3rd Battalions detrained at Chatillon sur Seine and marched to their billets in the villages of Gurgy-le-Chateau, Gurgy-la-Ville, Colmiers-le-Haute and Buxerolles. Regiment left for Dancevoir August 31st and camped. Entrained at Latrecy September 2nd for Tannois. Regiment was in reserve during St. Mihiel operation. Embussed at Culey September 15th, debussing in Relamee Woods. Marched to Bois la Ville four days later. Moved to Bois des Sarterelles September 24th and the next night to a position south of Bois Bourrus. Took part in Meuse-Argonne offensive. Relieved November 6th and assembled at La Polka Farm. Moved thence to Briquenay and to St. Juvin on the 11th, reached La Chalade. Left November 18th, marching first to Brizeaux, thence to Laheyecourt and on to Robert Espagne, thence to Valcourt, Wassy, Villiers-aux Chenes, Colombella-Fosse, Champignol, Pothieres, reaching Asnieres-en-Montagne in the Fifteenth Training Area, November 29th. Remained in that area for four months. Entrained at Nuits-sous-Ravieres April 2nd/3rd, 1919, and arrived at Mayet in the Le Mans area on the 3rd/4th. Entrained at Mayet May 13th/15th, for Brest. Regiment, less L, M and Supply Companies, sailed for United States May 17, 1919, on *Mani*. Landed at Newport News, May 27th.

# History of the Three Hundred and Eighteenth Infantry

[EDITOR'S NOTE: Compiled from the History of the 318th Infantry, published by the members of that regiment shortly after demobilization.]

## Organization

The 318th Infantry Regiment was organized at Camp Lee, near Petersburg, Virginia, in September, 1917, Colonel Briant H. Wells, commanding, and, with the 317th Infantry and the 313th Machine Gun Battalion, was assigned to the 159th Infantry Brigade, commanded by Brigadier-General Charles S. Farnsworth, the 159th and 160 Brigades comprising the infantry of the 80th Division, Major-General Adelbert Cronkhite commanding.

The 159th Brigade was known from the first as a Virginia organization, from the fact that the enlisted personnel of the two infantry regiments was originally drawn entirely from that State, the 317th from the western, the 318th from the eastern counties, although the officers came from all sections of the United States.

The enlisted personnel of the 80th Division, as a whole, was drawn from Virginia, West Virginia and the western counties of Pennsylvania, giving the division the name of "The Blue Ridge Division." The designation was a happy one for the three States have been bound even more closely together by their association in the 80th Division than they are by the famous ridge.

All the officers assigned to the 318th Regiment at its formation, with the exception of Colonel Briant H. Wells, Lieutenant-Colonel James M. Love, Jr., and Major Albert B. Dockery, of the Regular Army, were graduates of the First Officers' Training Camp at Fort Myer, Virginia, and represented nearly every state in the Union. The majority of the officers had received no military training other than that gained as members of the Provisional Training Regiments at Plattsburg in the summers of 1915 and 1916 and from attendance at the Training Camp at Fort Myer. There were, however, a few notable exceptions.

Major Charles Sweeny, at one time a student at West Point and a sometime member of Madero's army in Mexico, came to the regiment after serving through two and one-half years of the European War as a member of the French Foreign Legion. During his service in the Foreign Legion he rose from the ranks to a captaincy and won the decorations of the Legion of Honor, the Military Medal, and the Croix de Guerre. He came to the United States in the spring of 1917 as a member of the mission headed by Marshal Joffre. In May, 1917, he was commissioned a major in the Infantry Section of the Officers' Reserve Corps, United States Army.

Captain John Crum, a former member of Villa's army in Mexico, came to the regiment after serving some two years with the British Expeditionary Forces on the Western Front.

In addition to these two there were a few officers who had served one or more enlistments in the Regular Army and had been commissioned at Fort Myer, Virginia. Still others had served one or more years in National Guard organizations, of whom some had seen recent service on the Mexican Border.

The Officers' Training Camp at Fort Myer sent out its graduates on the 15th of August, 1917, and the officers of the Third and Fourth Companies were assigned to the 318th Infantry, with orders to report for duty at Camp Lee on the 27th of August. In compliance with these orders, the officers arrived at Petersburg on a fearfully hot, windy day, detraining in a sandy desert, where they were met by Lieutenant-Colonel Love, who directed them to the area assigned to the regiment.

It is safe to assert that the first impressions of the camp that were formed by these officers were far from pleasing ones. The camp was still in process of construction and many days were to elapse before it reached

completion. As a result, the period between the arrival of the officers and that of the first contingent of the draft which was to form the nucleus of the regiment, was spent in endeavoring to speed up the carpenters and plumbers and in attending schools on Infantry Drill Regulations and Field Service Regulations with the officers of the 317th Infantry, which schools were conducted by Brigadier-General Farnsworth, commanding the 159th Brigade. Many officers had fondly imagined that their period of study had ceased on August 15th. Such illusions were speedily dispelled. Late in November an officer was heard to remark: "Schools? I'm only in the Third Grade—and you have to take a college degree in them!"

On September 4th, word having been received that the first group of enlisted men would arrive that night or the following morning, the regiment was organized, per General Order No. 1, Headquarters 318th Infantry, as follows:

Colonel Briant H. Wells, Commanding.  
 Lieutenant-Colonel James M. Love, Jr.  
 Major Albert B. Dockery, Commanding 1st Battalion.  
 Major Charles Sweeny, Commanding 2nd Battalion.  
 Captain Henry H. Burdick, Commanding 3rd Battalion.  
 Captain Senius J. Raymond, Adjutant.  
 Captain Ernest L. Nunn, Supply Officer.  
 Captain Paul D. Connor, Commanding Headquarters Company.  
 Captain Robert J. Halpin, Commanding Machine Gun Company.  
 Captain Clarence E. Goldsmith, Commanding Company A.  
 Captain Herbert R. Rising, Commanding Company B.  
 Captain Clinton D. Winant, Commanding Company C.  
 Captain Thomas J. Echols, Commanding Company D.  
 Captain Edward H. Little, Commanding Company E.  
 Captain John Crum, Commanding Company F.  
 Captain Charles C. Griffin, Commanding Company G.  
 Captain Gulian V. Weir, Commanding Company H.  
 Captain Robert C. Powell, Commanding Company I.  
 Captain Robert M. Dashiell, Commanding Company K.  
 Captain Albert T. Griffin, Commanding Company L.  
 Captain Louis J. Koch, Commanding Company M.

Lieutenant-Colonel Love was made Chief Mustering Officer for the regiment, and everything was ready to receive the new arrivals.

The military authorities had decided that the drafted men would be sent to camp in the approximate ratio of 5 per cent the first week, 15 per cent the second week, 25 per cent the third week, and the balance the last week, and had asked for volunteers for the first 5 per cent. Strenuous efforts had been made to have accommodations ready for the first arrivals; but, in spite of everything, the plumbing was not completed and messing facilities were not installed when the men arrived, and bedding was received at the same time as the men.

On the late afternoon of September 5th the first group arrived and were rapidly sent through the Mustering Office, then assigned to A and E Companies for rations and quarters. It had been determined that, rather than distribute through the fifteen companies the 350 or more men who were received in the first 5 per cent, A and E Companies would be brought up to the then authorized strength of 150 men each, and the balance sent to I Company.

In accordance with this scheme, A Company received its full quota and was mustered in on September 7th, the first company of the regiment to be mustered into the service, and, it is believed, the first company to be mustered into the National Army. E Company received its quota and was mustered in on the following day, and the balance of the men, some fifty in number, were assigned to I Company.

The new arrivals were rapidly introduced to the rigors and intricacies of army life. Men were at once detailed to install kitchen equipment, to go considerable distances in search of water, which, prior to the completion of the plumbing system, was very scarce, and to receive, store, and issue



quartermaster property and ordnance property; and be it known to all that quartermaster and ordnance supplies embrace practically every item of equipment needed to convert the civilian into the soldier. While company commanders were busily engaged in supervising the above activities, lieutenants found their hands full in the effort to teach the recruits the fundamentals of soldiering as embodied in that well known document, the "Infantry Drill Regulations," Chapter I, entitled "The School of the Soldier."

It is perhaps not amiss to mention here that the majority of the members of this regiment had been brought up and spent most of their lives on farms, and they were at once given an opportunity to use this experience to good advantage. The drill field which had been assigned to the regiment was completely covered with fully grown corn, and, to those officers who had not had the benefit of a farming career, presented almost insurmountable difficulties in preparing it for drill purposes. But someone had a bright idea. The farmer army was turned loose and in twenty-four hours there was no corn in sight. The time would have been appreciably less had it not been for the great number of rabbits, whose homes were destroyed during the process. It should, however, be recorded as a matter of history that the rabbit stood as much chance as the proverbial snowball, and rabbits and corn disappeared simultaneously. Thereafter it was a matter of only a few days until the steady tramp, tramp, tramp of drilling hosts levelled the furrows and provided a first-class drill field.

In the latter part of October the regiment reached its full quota of officers and men. Before that, however, the War Department had changed the tables of organization for practically all units in the army, increasing the authorized strength of infantry companies from 150 to 250 men, with the commissioned personnel increased to one captain, three first lieutenants and two second lieutenants. This necessitated a reassignment of barracks, the 2nd Battalion as a whole moving to a new section. Other units remained in their old barracks, taking over the vacated barracks for their additional personnel.

In the early days of November, sufficient opportunity having been given to know the men, the majority of the non-commissioned officers were selected and the regiment gradually assumed the aspect of an organization instead of a mob.

### Training "Over Here"

The training of the regiment began simultaneously with the arrival of the first contingent on September 5, 1917, and continued without interruption until the regiment was disbanded. The notes of reveille, so cordially hated at first, soon became no more abhorrent than the music of the familiar alarm clock, and it was not long before the slouch of the civilian gave way to the erect bearing of the soldier.

That month was a strenuous one for all. Work on the drill field continued steadily from 7:30 in the morning until 4:30 in the afternoon, Saturdays and Sundays excepted. But activities did not cease with the sounding of recall. In the evenings there were schools for the officers, schools for the non-commissioned officers, schools for the illiterates. In the evenings equipment, as it gradually became available, was issued, accompanied by talks and demonstrations on its use and care.

Company commanders were constantly busy breaking in first sergeants, supply sergeants, mess sergeants and company clerks; teaching the elements of personal hygiene and of first-aid treatment; explaining the articles of war and the principles of military discipline and courtesy. At times, indeed, it appeared to company commanders that sleep had been suppressed as a non-essential industry.

And always there was the paper work, unceasing, endless, inexorable. Officers, fresh from civil pursuits, often wondered why all commissions were not reserved for expert accountants.

However, order gradually came out of chaos. Material for non-commissioned officers was plentiful and was not long in being discovered; and after the first week or so the men could be relied upon not to put on their

leggings upside down. It was more difficult to catch an entire platoon in step, even when the band was playing; but this also was finally accomplished. And it is remarkable how rapidly the men gained in weight and health by reason of the well-ordered lives they led, the vigorous exercise they took, and the enormous meals they consumed three times a day.

In October, the people of Richmond, Virginia, having expressed a desire to see a parade of the veterans of one month's training, a provisional battalion, composed of Company A 318th Infantry, and a company of the 317th Infantry, under command of Major Jennings C. Wise, commanding the 3rd Battalion since September 17, 1917, was sent to Richmond and made a most creditable showing. Every one was much astonished at the progress which had been made, a progress which would not have been possible, had not the men entered heart and soul into the spirit of the game from the very beginning.

Shortly thereafter Governor Stuart, of Virginia, visited the camp and again the men demonstrated their progress. On this occasion a provisional battalion was formed, each company having 250 men, it being the first time that any officers or men of this camp had ever seen a company of that size pass in review. This battalion was also commanded by Major Wise and was composed of E and F Companies of the 318th and two companies of the 317th Infantry. Due to the fact that all of the men in the companies were not fully equipped, 100 men from A Company were attached to E Company and an equal number from G Company to F Company.

In the meantime the camp had been brought to a state of completion, and the advisability of preserving spare lumber, nails, etc., for a future rainy day had become apparent to all, the result being that an investigation underneath any of the barracks would have disclosed a most remarkable collection of material. Unfortunately, some humorous member of the staff issued an order that nothing must be kept under the barracks, and that all lumber and other material then stored there must be neatly piled at the end of, and ten feet from the buildings. The result was most astonishing and each company vied with the others to see which one would have the biggest pile.

During the month of November, 1917, the Hon. Newton D. Baker came to Camp Lee and reviewed the entire division. The 2nd Battalion, 318th Infantry, under command of Major Sweeny, was chosen as the guard of honor, to welcome the Secretary on his arrival. It was unfortunately an extremely cold day, with a high wind blowing, which made standing around a rather trying ordeal. The horseless and gunless artillery and the blue denim negro battalion claimed that they carried off the honors of the day, but the infantry admit that never was there a better parade than the exhibition they made; and unquestionably the 318th Infantry, as in everything else, led them all.

It may be remarked as a matter of interest that the papers subsequently stated that Secretary of War Baker reviewed the 80th Division, which filed by with perfect ranks and with all men fully equipped!

About the middle of November the War Department decided to rush certain divisions overseas and, in order to bring them up to war strength, called for detachments from all of the other divisions in the East, with the result that in the end this regiment sent approximately 1,000 men to other organizations. It was, of course, very discouraging to men and officers to see the organizations broken up and scattered to the four winds; and from this time until early in April training was carried on with the companies greatly reduced in strength, averaging, approximately, 175 men.

On November 24th Major Jennings C. Wise was transferred to the 314th Machine Gun Battalion, Captain Henry H. Burdick assuming command of the 3rd Battalion. Captain Burdick was commissioned major February 9, 1918, continuing in command of the 3rd Battalion until the regiment was demobilized.

Meantime, the psychiatrists had been given an opportunity to amuse themselves, and officers and men alike had undergone the test for sanity, which consisted of placing the dot in the part of the square which was in the circle, but not in the triangle, or in placing the dot in that part



of the triangle which was in the square, but not in the circle; and deciding that very important question of "how many legs has a Korean?"—to which one man replied: "I don't know, but it must be four, otherwise the man wouldn't be such a damn fool as to ask." If you answered all of these questions and some others of a like nature correctly, you got 414, which proved you insane; if you didn't answer any of them you got zero, which proved that you did not have enough brains to be insane. Intermediate ratings showed intermediate degrees of insanity.

Fortunately, none of the men or officers were permanently harmed as a result of this ordeal; but they had scarcely recovered from the effects of this form of diversion when the government invented a new game, known as the War Risk Allotment. Unquestionably this was a most worthy act, and one of great benefit to all members of the armed forces, but unfortunately it was launched before anybody could be found who understood its operation, as a consequence of which the spare hours of the evening were spent in trying to decide whether you came under Class A, B or C, if you had a stepmother, two sisters, and a stepbrother. In the long run the result was usually determined by tossing up a coin.

By the end of November practically everybody had been War Risked, and all sat back to take it easy. Then along came the Liberty Loan, and the members of the regiment decided that it was up to them to give not only their services but also their money; and, in spite of the fact that the members of the regiment came from a part of the country where money is not plentiful, they succeeded in three days' time in raising a most gratifying sum. A large portion of this represented the purchase by the individual soldier, who agreed to allot to the government a portion of his pay each month. The regiment may justly pride itself that only one organization in the division exceeded its subscription in which instance, a large proportion of the amount subscribed was given by a small group of very wealthy individuals.

Shortly before Thanksgiving the War Department sent out instructions that 30 per cent of the men would be given leaves to go home for this holiday. Those so unfortunate as not to be included in this percentage managed to fare very well in camp, as the company funds of all organizations were called upon to provide a real Thanksgiving feast.

For some time our energetic and able adjutant, Captain Raymond, had been working quietly but effectively to turn out from the members of the regiment a creditable show, having two purposes in mind: first, entertainment for the members of the regiment; and, second, a means of building up a regimental fund with which to purchase instruments for the band and athletic equipment for the men. At Thanksgiving time he announced that he was prepared to prove to the people of Richmond and Petersburg that Virginians were not only good fighters, but also good actors. The 318th Infantry Minstrels performed in Richmond on Thanksgiving night to a crowded and most enthusiastic house. It was voted a great success by all and accomplished its objects, proving financially profitable and helping to bring the various elements of the regiment together.

From now on the training was carried on with great difficulty, due to the extremely cold and wet weather; but almost before anyone realized it, Christmas was at hand and again 30 per cent of the men were permitted to visit their families. The remainder were naturally greatly disappointed at having to stay in camp; nevertheless they displayed that splendid spirit of "playing the game," which later on the fields of France through all of the hardships of a most arduous campaign made possible the wonderful success achieved by the 80th Division. These men entered into the spirit of the season and decorated all the barracks, providing Christmas trees, and having a real old-fashioned Christmas in spite of everything.

The pleasure of this holiday season was considerably dampened for the officers and men of the regiment when they found that their much respected and beloved Colonel Briant H. Wells had been ordered to Washington, as a member of the Army General Staff, later to become a member of



General Bliss' Staff, which preceded this regiment to France by some five months. It was the first of many such sacrifices which the regiment was called upon to make for the benefit of the army as a whole.

Lieutenant-Colonel Love, who had been on detached service at Fort Sill for some three months, and who was consequently not very well known to the members of the regiment, returned December 26th and temporarily took command of the regiment, pending the opening on January 5, 1918, of the 3d Officers' Training Camp at Camp Lee, of which he was commandant. When Lieutenant-Colonel Love took up his duties at the 3d Officers' Training Camp, Major Albert B. Dockery, the ranking major of the regiment, assumed the duties of regimental commander until the arrival of Colonel Ulysses G. Worrihow, United States Army, who was assigned to the regiment on March 6th, but, being on duty at the 155th Depot Brigade, did not actually assume command until March 10, 1918.

The citizens of Petersburg and the neighboring counties had frequently stated that the winters in this locality, while at times somewhat cold, were practically free from snow, and that snow, if it fell, never remained on the ground for more than twenty-four hours. It may be said, in this connection, that from about the middle of December until the end of January there was at least a foot of ice and snow on the ground almost continuously, and the New Year was heralded in camp by the freezing of nearly all of the water mains, with the thermometer not far from zero.

On the 5th of January the 3d Officers' Training Camp was opened and this regiment sent many non-commissioned officers and privates as candidates to this school. These were all picked men and their departure was a big loss to the regiment, although it afforded an opportunity for many men to develop under the added responsibility which was placed upon them.

Due to the excessively cold weather and the unusual amount of snow, the training during the months of January and February was considerably retarded, and consisted mainly of brisk hikes under full equipment, and numerous conferences indoors, interspersed with bayonet work on the outside. Later, as spring came on, the division started the construction of a divisional trench sector and much time was spent by the regiment in the construction and occupation of these trenches. What time remained was devoted to musketry training and firing on the range.

About the first of April the new draft was received and sufficient men allotted to the regiment to bring it up to war strength, 114 officers and 3,720 enlisted men, these figures including medical and ordnance detachments. Nearly all of this draft was from Pennsylvania and naturally looked upon the older men as veterans of long standing. In order not to retard the instruction of the older men, the new draft was put in separate barracks and given special instruction under selected officers and non-commissioned officers. These men showed the same spirit the original draft had displayed and, by the end of a month, were considered to have progressed far enough to permit their being absorbed into the companies of the regiment.

For some time now there had been constant rumors of the division leaving for "over there." Finally, in the early part of May, orders were received to be prepared to move on short notice. The time thereafter was spent in checking and re-checking and checking again to see that every man in the organization was fully equipped for overseas duty. Company property was carefully marked and labeled and for many days the regiment was "on its toes" awaiting the signal to move, until all began to fear that someone had cried "Wolf!" Many, indeed, felt "all dressed up and no place to go!"

However, they awoke one morning to find that part of the 160th Brigade had already entrained; and, shortly thereafter, orders were received for the 318th Infantry Regiment to leave, and on the 20th of May at 1 P. M. the regiment entrained for Hoboken, N. J., all eager to get away.

Many changes had occurred in the personnel of the regiment since

it was first organized, and on the day of the departure from Camp Lee the staff officers were:

Colonel Ulysses G. Worrilow, Commanding.  
Lieutenant-Colonel James M. Love, Jr.  
Major Robert J. Halpin, 1st Battalion.  
Major Charles Sweeny, 2nd Battalion.  
Major Henry H. Burdick, 3rd Battalion.  
Major Clyde W. Sample, Medical Officer.  
Captain Senius J. Raymond, Adjutant.  
Captain Corvan Fisher, Personnel Officer.  
Captain Ernest L. Nunn, Supply Officer.  
First Lieutenant Reginald Davey, Intelligence Officer.

The company commanders were:

Headquarters Company—Captain Charles J. Houser.  
Machine Gun Company—Captain Louie A. Cuthbert.  
Company "A"—Captain Clarence E. Goldsmith.  
Company "B"—Captain James S. Douglas.  
Company "C"—Captain William A. Taliaferro.  
Company "D"—Captain Vivian T. Douglas.  
Company "E"—Captain Edward H. Little.  
Company "F"—Captain John Crum.  
Company "G"—Captain Charles C. Griffin.  
Company "H"—Captain Grover E. Moore.  
Company "I"—Captain Richard P. Williams, Jr.  
Company "K"—Captain Robert M. Dashiell.  
Company "L"—Captain Lincoln MacVeagh.  
Company "M"—Captain Louis J. Koch.

#### Dodging Porpoises

The regiment left Camp Lee in five sections, at fifteen-minute intervals, all sections coming together again just outside of Washington, D. C., where the Red Cross provided everybody with hot coffee, biscuits and cakes.

It was the first experience the men had had of traveling in troop trains; and, while at this time many thought it a rather lonesome trip and that sleeping in a day coach with three men to seats designed for four people was pretty tough, subsequent experience with cars labeled "40 HOMMES OU 8 CHEVAUX" made this trip seem comparatively luxurious.

On the morning of May 21, 1918, the regiment pulled into Jersey City, immediately detrained and marched aboard several waiting ferry boats. Persistent inquiry of every one who would listen failed to disclose the length of our stay in the ferryslips, so the various company mess sergeants were sent on a still hunt for food for the hungry mob. In due course this was obtained and the danger of famine averted.

About 11 A. M. orders were received for all hands to be aboard, and shortly thereafter we started up the Hudson. For most of the men it was the first glimpse of New York City and all were carefully giving it the once over. The enthusiasm of everyone was considerably dampened by the terrific driving rain which accompanied us up the river.

After the ferry boats had proceeded but a short distance a large number of transports came into view. Every one immediately forgot the discomforts of the rain, while speculation ran riot as to which vessel the regiment would draw; and from all sides were heard remarks to this effect: "Ya, the big guy is that old German boat. Gee! wish we'd land her!" or "Look at that little shrimp! Oh, boy! won't she roll!"

The boats soon pulled into a pier once belonging to the North German Lloyd Line and all disembarked in short order, and sat around an unbearably long time inside, waiting further orders. Finally, about 2:30 P. M., we were told that we were fortunate enough to draw the *Leviathan*,



formerly the *Vaterland*, the biggest, fastest, and at one time the most luxurious liner afloat.

Shortly before Uncle Sam entered the war, the Germans damaged the machinery, especially the boilers, of this ship (permanently, as they thought,) but it had been repaired and was now operated by the navy as a troop transport. Prior to this time it had made but one trip in this capacity.

The 318th Regiment was assigned to F, G and H decks. It might be remarked here, that A deck is that section of the ship nearest heaven: nobody knows how far down the lowest portion of the boat's anatomy is, but G and H decks represent that intermediate state between heaven and hell which is fringed by the water line and decidedly unpleasant.

The boat remained at the dock until 3 P. M. the following day, taking on ammunition, supplies and more troops. These troops, while unquestionably most excellent men, were naturally of inferior quality to the 318th Infantry, and were therefore assigned to that section of the ship still nearer hell and high water.

At 3 P. M., May 22, 1918, with much tooting of whistles, and under the guidance of some three sturdy tugs, the big boat slowly backed out into the middle of the river and started on its long trip, with some 10,000 odd troops, and several thousand sailors aboard, in addition to the crew, a grand total of about 13,500 men and women; for, as luck would have it, there were some 200 nurses aboard.

Now some genius, presumably working in the Middle West, had evolved the idea that, in order to prevent the Huns' agents from knowing that the *Leviathan* was transporting any troops, it was necessary to keep all troops below deck until the Statue of Liberty had been passed—this, in spite of the fact that for days the big boat, with its load of human freight, could be clearly seen by anyone not too lazy to look. At any rate, it would have been a strategic triumph, if the Huns had all been blind, and it resulted in the first sight of the statue being from off Staten Island.

The first twenty-four hours spent aboard the *Leviathan* were as hectic as the first days at Camp Lee. The companies, each under the direction of one officer, went on board by one gang plank, while the other company officers and the first sergeants boarded ship by another route. As a consequence much time was consumed before officers were able to locate their men; and when they had succeeded in working their way by devious routes to the distant compartments, many were completely lost in trying to get back to their own quarters.

While this confusion was at its height, mess call sounded. All officers had been furnished a copy of "How to Get to Mess and Back Again" (the latter proceeding not the least difficult). Unfortunately, few officers had had a chance to study this document carefully—and one could not digest its contents hurriedly. Therefore, one saw "confusion twice confounded"—and darkness had settled over the troubled waters long before the harried officers got their men fed and back to quarters.

But the worst was not yet. While in harbor, the water-tight compartment doors had stood open, facilitating traffic to a great extent. On weighing anchor, these doors were kept hermetically sealed, increasing the perplexities of guides fourfold. On the night of the 21st a talk had been given to the officers, explaining the intricacies of the messing system, after which they had gone over the route, guide book in hand. But, in spite of all efforts, difficulties arose at the first meal at sea, on the evening of May 22nd, when the water-tight doors were encountered for the first time.

All went well going to the mess hall, but alas, ye return! Lines passed from the mess hall northeast to stairway number 4, thence up to deck B, thence southwest to stairway 12, up to A deck and abaft to stairway 14, down to E deck, forward to stairway 10, and down to G deck. At this point the mystic instructions said: "Troops will then proceed by the nearest route to their respective sectors."



Certainly and admittedly nothing could be simpler or more clearly expressed than that; but, unfortunately, all of the nearest and shortest routes were closed by water-tight doors, before each of which stood a stern and forbidding sentinel. It was quite a predicament for the first arrivals. It became a disaster for those arriving later, who urged on by the vigilant M. P.'s from the rear, were met in front by the early arrivals trying to get back. Careful search developed the fact that there was but one exit and that there were already four separate lines of men passing this passage in two directions, which passage was four feet in width.

It may be said, in glossing over the intermediate harrowing details, that company commanders reported (some five hours later) that at 9 P. M. the last of their men had reached their compartments.

It is a story of fact and on record that one member of this regiment, unable to find his way back, passed through the mess hall four times, and was compelled by the watchful attendants to eat, much against his desire, four separate meals and, as a result, reached his compartment about 9 P. M. in a somewhat dazed condition.

From the time the Ambrose Channel was left until nearing France, there was little of excitement to break the routine. The ocean behaved its very best and it was only by a wild stretch of the imagination that anyone could become seasick.

A number of men were detailed as guards, mess assistants, etc. The balance of the regiment had a brisk "setting up" drill and an "abandon ship" drill daily, and for a portion of the day were permitted to loaf on deck and watch the whales spout and the flying fish skim the waves. "Abandon ship" drill formed the most diverting form of entertainments, as all were required to hurry without running and crowd without pushing; but daily practice soon resulted in the breaking of all records, in that it required only eleven minutes from the first call for all men to be at the muster station.

After several days out reports were received of submarines in the vicinity and the course of the ship was constantly changed. Due to the speed of the ship, no destroyers were attached until nearing France. As one man put it: "We don't aim to be bothered with no small fry."

The bands of the 318th Infantry, 131st Infantry and 51st Coast Artillery played daily and most of the officers found time for an occasional waltz or fox trot.

Lights were not permitted after dark except in the innermost inwards of the ship and none were permitted on deck after sundown.

On the last night out, due to a report of the torpedoing of a merchant vessel nearby, all officers were required to be on the alert throughout the night. But nothing happened and the convoy of destroyers (which had arrived during the night of May 28th) played about like a lot of happy children.

About noon on May 30th land was reported in the distance and all hands gathered to the rails to see what could be seen. Shortly thereafter there came a sudden "boom" from the forward gun, followed in rapid succession by a number of "booms," and it was evident that there were a number of submarines about. There was danger around in plenty, but all hands conducted themselves with the greatest sang-froid. At the first "boom" one man cried: "Mark number 9!"; another: "Set 'em up on the other alley!" The big boat put on all speed and made for the now distant harbor and the foam began rising over the bows of the convoy. Several conning towers could now be seen with the naked eye, but the transport's speed, the accuracy of the gun crews (picked crews from the navy), and the quick work of the destroyers, prevented any disaster. Though it is not definitely known, it is reported that the destroyers sank two of the enemy, with depth bombs.

#### Training in the Samer Area

By 1:30 P. M., after a rather thrilling and certainly a most interesting finish, anchor was dropped in the beautiful harbor of Brest, and the troops

had their first glimpse of a French city. The regiment had been lucky in coming on the Leviathan; it was again lucky in seeing the largest of the French naval bases, and one felt at home at once by seeing practically every ship in the harbor flying the American flag. Another touch of home, especially for the southerners, was added when presently enormous barges, manned by negroes, came alongside to coal the ship. Owing to her great size, she had to anchor in mid-harbor and unload from that point.

The 1st Battalion was assigned the task of unloading the boat and it was no sinecure with the men working all night in an atmosphere heavily laden with coal dust, stirred up by negro stevedores.

The regiment disembarked on the morning of May 31, 1918, was carried ashore on lighters, and marched at once some three miles to camp at Pontanazen Barracks, built by Napoleon I as a concentration point for his proposed invasion of England. Here life was not at its best. Water was very scarce and cooking facilities were meager. Furthermore, many men, as a result of daily hikes over the hard roads (there were no drill fields), found that garrison shoes were not fashioned for such wear and tear. For some inexplicable reason, all field shoes had been sent ahead in barracks bags to Calais; so that, when the men finally got them, many were practically barefoot.

There was, however, a reverse side to the shield. The regiment found itself in a region abounding in the most wonderful strawberries; and it was here that the men were first introduced to two most welcome allies—Vin Blanc and Vin Rouge. And the American soldier here showed his native gift of adaptability. Very few needed an interpreter in their associations with the French, whether it was to win a smile from a charming demoiselle or to purchase of some shopkeeper a souvenir, for which the soldier has a mania.

But do not imagine that the regiment's stay near Brest was one of uninterrupted leisure. Various and sundry details were constantly called for to dig water mains, to unload and sort out baggage at the docks, to do guard duty and to perform the thousand and one other little tasks which mark the inevitable routine of camp life.

All told some four or five days were spent at this unpleasant location and departure was made by battalions with attached units as follows:

Regimental Headquarters	}	Left Brest June 2nd, arrived Calais June 4th.
1st Battalion		
Supply Company	}	Left Brest June 5th, arrived Calais June 7th.
3rd Battalion		
Machine Gun Company		
2nd Battalion		
Headquarters Company	}	Left Brest June 5th, arrived Calais June 7th.

This was the first experience with "40 HOMMES OU 8 CHEVAUX," and the novelty helped to tide over the many discomforts of French railway travel. There was considerable discussion as to how everybody, plus rations and equipment, could be placed in the allotted space, but after many trials, men, rations and equipment were comfortably piled on top of each other and the various sections departed. It being the first experience of this kind, a journey which otherwise would have been a tiresome one, was made interesting by speculation as to the regiment's destination.

It is believed that a careful survey of the railroad embankment by geologists would lead them to conclude that glass either formed one of the main constituents of a railroad embankment or at least tended to grow in that vicinity, for it must be remarked that "many a redskin hit the dust" between Brest and Calais.

After a journey of some forty-eight hours the various units arrived at Calais and marched through the city to a British camp known as Rest Camp No. 6. This camp, located on the English Channel, was a small city of tents and the ground was covered with sand from three to six inches deep, giving it the appearance of a young Sahara. Sand bags were carefully arranged about the tents to a height of two feet, to afford



some protection from air raids, which were unpleasantly frequent in that locality.

Each unit remained at this camp about three days, during which time the barrack bags, containing many personal and cherished articles, were evacuated to an unknown storage depot, along with much extra equipment. Rifles and bayonets were turned in and replaced by British ordnance, and British gas masks and steel helmets were drawn. Company commanders and supply sergeants, who remembered all too clearly their frantic efforts during the last month at Camp Lee to fully equip their organizations, stood by in dumb and impotent astonishment at this ruthless confiscation of so many of the fruits of their toil.

Later, officers who had been authorized and practically required to bring to France 250 pounds of personal baggage, found themselves confronted by an order stating that they would be limited to 50 pounds, exclusive of what they carried on their persons; and it is believed that the section of France has scarcely a home which failed to obtain souvenirs of "The Mad Americans" in the shape of discarded cots, folding chairs, bed sheets and the many other articles which would have seemed incongruous in a dugout. Had it not been for the generous forethought of the divisional staff in obtaining a storage warehouse in Boulogne for surplus baggage, all officers of the division would have sustained a considerable financial loss.

The 80th Division, less its artillery, had been assigned to the 2nd American Corps, to be trained by British training cadres. These cadres were made up of officers and non-commissioned officers whose original units had been practically annihilated as the result of their many severe campaigns. The division was assigned to the Samer Area to be trained by the 16th (Irish) Division, B. E. F.

On June 7th the movement by train from the city of Calais to the Samer Training Area was begun as indicated below:

UNIT	LEFT CALAIS	ARRIVED SAMER
Regimental Headquarters		
1st Battalion	June 7th	June 8th
Supply Company		
3rd Battalion	June 10th	June 10th
Machine Gun Company		
2nd Battalion	June 10th	June 10th
Headquarters Company		

After a brief stop in the British Rest Camp at Samer, the units march from six to ten kilometers to their new areas as follows:

Regimental Headquarters	
Headquarters Company	-----BERNIEULLES
Supply Company	
1st Battalion Headquarters	
A, B, C and D Companies	-----CORMONT
2nd Battalion Headquarters	
G and H Companies	-----ROLET
E and F Companies	-----BOUT DE HAUT
3rd Battalion Headquarters	
I and K Companies	-----ENGUINEHAUT
L and M Companies	-----THUBEAUVILLE
Machine Gun Company	-----HUBERSENT

This area had previously been occupied by the Portuguese. After their famous charge near Merville in March, 1918, they had retired to this region for "rest and recreation."

Intensive training under the direction of the 16th (Irish) Division, and later the 34th British Division, was at once begun. The training given by the British was thorough and comprehensive. The training system for infantry devoted itself principally to close order and disciplinary drill, gas instruction, bayonet exercises, and small arms practice, including grenade instruction, from all of which the regiment derived great benefit.



though we did not at the time, perhaps, appreciate fully the benefits which this association with veteran British troops afforded us. After the long months of training at home, all were eager for a more active part in the war. Rumors constantly came in of the formation of the American Army in eastern France—and we felt that nothing would satisfy us until we could train and fight as a part of that organization. As a consequence the wonderful organization and discipline of the British Army were not at the time fully appreciated. As a rule, the American soldier came to esteem his British cousins more highly as his experience of war enlarged.

In this area the regiment was equipped with the Lewis gun and two squads per platoon were given intensive instruction in their use and care. Here also the regiment drew its full allotment of transport. Rolling kitchens, G. S. (General Service) wagons, G. S. limbers, Maltese carts and water carts, all of British pattern, were issued with the full complement of animals. In this connection it is not inappropriate to state that the wonderful success achieved by the 80th Division in the 1st Corps and 1st Army horse shows in February, 1919, was the direct result of the instruction in the care of animals and transport received from the British in June and July, 1918.

It was during the stay in this area that there began the famous series of maneuvers and terrain exercises which continued without interruption, save during actual battle, until the regiment passed to the command of the S. O. S., in March, 1919. The motto of the various staffs in the A. E. F. seemed to be: "When in doubt, maneuver."

This area was about ten kilometers from Etaples and Boulogne, both British bases, which received almost nightly visits from Boche raiders. All lights were screened at night and all troop movements were carefully planned with a view to possible trouble from above. It was a long time, however, before all the men overcame the conviction that each passing plane was hovering directly overhead.

On June 29th the regiment passed in review before His Royal Highness, The Duke of Connaught, and made such an excellent showing that the following order was published:

159th Brigade, France, June 30th, 1918.

It is with great pleasure that the Brigade Commander announces to the Brigade the fact that his Royal Highness, the Duke of Connaught, commented most favorably on the showing made by the Brigade in the review of the 29th instant, and that he desired an expression of his gratification communicated to the officers and men of this Brigade.

By command of Brigadier-General Jamerson:

R. W. HARDENBERGH,  
Major, Infantry R. C., Adjutant.

Because of this review, gossip (without which there is no army) had it that we must be going to fight with the British, otherwise so important a personage as the Duke would not have reviewed the regiment. All ranks felt that after the long period of training at home they were prepared for service "up the line," and were very anxious to get a chance at the Boche.

While in this area many changes were made among the officer personnel, the beginning of a series of shifts which were eventually to leave the regiment with very few of its original officers. Lieutenant-Colonel James M. Love, Jr., was relieved as second in command of the regiment in June and assigned to II American Army Corps as Adjutant-General. July 1, 1918, Captain Senius J. Raymond was relieved as regimental adjutant and appointed regimental operations officer, Captain Clarence E. Goldsmith succeeding to the duties of regimental adjutant on the same date. On the same date Captain Robert M. Dashiell, commanding Company K since its formation, was relieved of assignment to the regiment to organize Replacement Company B, 80th Division.

In this area the British established officers and non-commissioned officers' schools at Bout De Haut, to which many members of all companies were sent. In addition numerous local schools were inaugurated; while the American schools at Langres and elsewhere received their quota of students. Often companies were reduced to one officer and a handful of non-commissioned present for duty.

It is believed that the army earned its salary in this area, even though it did not fire a shot in anger.

### Training in the Bonneville Area

On July 5, 1918, the regiment, less the Machine Gun Company, which was left at Hubersent for further training, marched to Samer and entrained for a 24-hour trip to a new and more advanced area. The detraining point proved to be Candas and the various units were billeted as follows:

Regimental Headquarters	}	-----Bonneville
Headquarters Company		
2nd Battalion	}	-----Montrelet
1st Battalion		
3rd Battalion	}	-----Tieffes
Supply Company		

From the date of arrival in this area until July 22, 1918, the regiment pursued very much the same course of training as that adopted in the Samer area, under the supervision of a training cadre from the 19th Battalion, King's Regiment, 66th (British) Division, a most efficient and delightful set of instructors.

Circumstances differed to some extent, however, from those previously encountered. The regiment was well within sound of the guns, whose distant rumbling could be heard every night and, at times, during the day; and air raids were of no less frequent occurrence than in the Samer area. On the night of July 12th, a hostile airman, attempting to destroy the railroad passing through Fieffes, bombed the 3rd Battalion transport, killing twelve of their horses. This was the first personal call by an enemy bomber on the 3rd Battalion, and, though no men were hurt, the explosions, coming as they did in the "wee sma" hours of the night, took them somewhat by surprise and caused a panic in the breast of one man. An English sentinel apprehended him a few minutes later, several miles away and still going strong.

On the night of August 10th, a monster new type of German bombing plane, driven by three powerful engines and carrying fifteen men, raided Doullens and made a direct hit on the headquarters of the 159th Brigade. Fortunately, only one officer was in the building at the time and he miraculously escaped injury. The only casualty was a sentinel at the gate, wounded in the knee by a machine gun bullet.

As the Hun was trying to escape, the searchlights caught and held him in their lights and he was shot down by a British plane, falling in flames near Regimental Headquarters at Rubempre. There are in the regiment enough aluminum rings, fashioned from various parts of the plane, to stock a large jewelry store.

Upon arrival in this area, closer association than had hitherto existed was established with British higher headquarters, the regiment coming under the orders of the 5th Corps of their 3rd Army, holding the front in the vicinity of Albert. To conform more closely to the British scheme of organization and thereby ensure complete harmony, seconds in command were appointed in each battalion, the following officers being designated:

1st Battalion—Captain James S. Douglas, Jr.

2nd Battalion—Captain Edward H. Little.

3rd Battalion—Captain Richard P. Williams, Jr.

A few days later, Division Headquarters ordered the addition to each brigade staff of an assistant to the brigade adjutant to correspond to the British staff captain. Captain Williams was, accordingly, relieved from



duty with the regiment and attached to the 159th Brigade Headquarters, Captain Louis J. Koch becoming second in command, 3rd Battalion. Captain Lincoln MacVeagh was transferred from "L" Company to duty at Division Headquarters, July 26th.

The British, to avoid a possible repetition of the disaster encountered in March, 1918, had constructed five elaborate systems of trenches extending, in the 5th Corps Area, to a depth of some 19 kilometers behind the front lines. These systems, within the 5th Corps zone, extended almost due north and south. For purposes of convenience the British designated them as follows: The Green Line; the Purple Line; the Brown (Corps) Line; the Red (Army) Line, and the Brown (G. H. Q.) Line.

The Green Line was the outpost line, nearest to the enemy, and, within the Corps sector, passed just west of Beaumont Hamel, just east of Mesnil and Martinsart, just west of Albert.

The Purple Line was the line of principal resistance in case of a general attack and ran just east of Mailly-Maillet, Englebelmer and Bouzincourt.

The Brown (Corps) Line skirted Beausart on the east, passed east of Forceville, west of Hedauville and east of Warloy.

The Red (Army) Line passed east of Louvencourt, Lealvillers and Harponville.

The Brown (G. H. Q.) Line ran just east of BEAUQUESNE and west of Puchevillers and Rubempre.

The Green Line was expected to stop any local attack. In case of a general attack, the garrison of the forward zone was to punish the enemy severely, though the main resistance would be offered by reserves in the Purple system, with the other three lines in rear ready as rallying points in any emergency.

In accordance with this general scheme of defense and upon the arrival of the 318th Infantry within its sector, the 5th Corps issued order G. X. 3,817, 5th July, 1918, relative to the action of this regiment in case of an attack. The following extracts from this order are quoted:

1. In case of attack on Third Army front the 318th American Regiment will be prepared, on receipt of orders from V Corps H. Q. to:

(i) Occupy Alarm posts in the G. H. Q. (Brown Line, allotted by V corps. (See Para. 5.)

(ii) Support the Third Army (Red) Line.

(iii) Occupy any portion of the Third Army (Red) Line.

(The above will be within the V Corps boundaries only.)

2. The 318th American Regiment will reconnoitre the ground in preparation for above. (Para. 1.)

The reconnaissance will be carried out in the following order:

(i) The G. H. Q. Line.

(ii) The area between the G. H. Q. (Brown Line and the Army (Red) Line.

5. (a) In case of attack on the Third Army front, the 318th American Regiment will, on receipt of orders from V Corps Headquarters, occupy Alarm Posts in Tactical localities in the G. H. Q. (Brown) Line within the V Corps boundaries with—

(i) One Battalion in each (British) Divisional sector.

(ii) Three Companies of each Battalion in the line and one Company in reserve.

(b) The route for 318th American Regiment from billets will be: Bonneville-Valheureux-Fme, Du Rosel, Cross Roads, thence,

(a) Le Val De Maison.

Or (b) Beauquesne.

Dry weather tracks will be used as far as possible.

(6) 318th American Regiment will carry out the reconnaissance of the G. H. Q. (Brown) Line for Para. 5 above as soon as possible and will report—

(a) Which of the Battalion Headquarters shown on map it will occupy.

(b) Time which units would take to complete the move into position from the time the leading unit crosses the main Amiens-Doullens Road.



On receipt of this order, great activity commenced, and battalion and company commanders spent days making reconnaissances and working out defense schemes. When it is realized that each battalion was assigned a sector of the G. H. Q. line normally occupied by a division, the often expressed hope that the Boche would never advance that far may be appreciated.

But the regiment did not devote its entire time during this period to defense schemes. Schools for teaching the tactical use of all weapons in the attack continued and all training aimed at keeping the aggressive spirit in the ascendancy. The idea of an American Army being thrown on the defensive seemed to occur to no one.

In accordance with a G. H. Q. Order, Sunday, July 14th, Bastille Day, was announced as a day for competitive platoon drill within the regiments. After an all-day competition in the rain the following platoons of this regiment were declared winners in their respective battalions:

1st Battalion—3rd platoon of Company D.

2nd Battalion—2nd platoon of Company H.

3rd Battalion—4th platoon of Company M.

Further competition among these proved M Company the winner.

On July 19th the Division held a field meet north of Doullens, in which all units of the division had contestants. In the competition between the best platoons of each of the twelve infantry battalions of the division, this regiment's entries finished in the following order:

3rd Platoon of D Company—Second.

2nd Platoon of H Company—Fourth.

4th Platoon of M Company—Twelfth.

The transport of this regiment took second place.

There were other interests also to break the monotony of training. The Yanks and the Tommies soon got on the best of terms, and entered in competition in many sports. Amongst others, the 5th British Corps staged a boxing contest at Toutencourt, in which this regiment took third place in spite of the handicap of boxing under regulations very different from those to which our men were accustomed.

Changes in the officer personnel of the regiment continued. Major Halpin, commanding 1st Battalion, was assigned to the duty of Assistant Division Quartermaster. Captain Raymond was relieved as Regimental Operations Officer and placed in command of the 1st Battalion. Captain Vivian T. Douglas left on detached service at the Army General Staff College. Captain Nunn was relieved as Supply Officer to become Personnel Adjutant of the Regiment. In the army all officers came to feel like "the rolling stone, which perhaps may gain no moss, but certainly acquires a lot of polish!"

### "Up the Line"

The regiment passed at last on July 22, 1918, from the long period of training in back areas to its first experience in the front lines. The transition was effected gradually. In general terms the training of American combat units serving with the British in France was divided into three phases, as follows:

PHASE "A"—Training behind the lines.

PHASE "B"—Training in the lines by attachment of individuals, of platoons, and of battalions, to British units.

PHASE "C"—Training in the lines by attachment of regiments to British units.

Phase "C" was never carried out by this regiment, as the division was withdrawn from the British before Phase "B" was completed.

The following extracts from a letter to the Commanding-General, 80th Division, from the Adjutant-General, II American Corps, dated July 15, 1918, outline the conditions of the service of this regiment in the line with the British from July 22nd to August 19th, on which date the division was returned to the control of the Commander-in-Chief of the American Expeditionary Forces:

It is contemplated that the units of your Division, in case there be no

further interruption, will complete the first phase of training with the British (Phase "A") on July 22nd.

Under present agreements between British and American General Headquarters, the tactical control of your organization will rest with the British commanders of higher units during Phases "B" and "C" and at any time in case any emergency arise. In brief, Phase "B" covers service in the line of battalions, and Phase "C" by regiments. In view of the situation now existing on your front, the exact time and method of passing from Phase "B" to Phase "C" cannot be laid down, and detailed arrangements as to the service must be determined to a considerable extent by circumstances as they arise. It is understood between these Headquarters and the British authorities that in general American organizations shall serve with their organization complete and in accordance with the general principles established by American methods of training and tables of organization. The regiment when serving as an organization will have with it its Headquarters, Supply and Machine Gun Companies. All units will invariably serve under the command of their own officers.

The normal method of attachment in the line will be by first sending up officers and enlisted men for short periods of about forty-eight hours; then by complete platoons for periods not exceeding three days; then by complete companies for similar periods; and finally by battalions and regiments, the total time to aggregate from five to six weeks. It is, however, desirable that if conditions permit the attachment by platoon be limited to tours of forty-eight hours, the attachment of companies be eliminated, and that Periods "B" and "C" be merged where practicable. The situation at the time may be such that variation from either of the above methods will be advisable, in which case the question shall be taken up with these headquarters.

It is probable that all your units may not be in the line at the same time and that in executing the part allotted to you of the defensive scheme of the British Army to which you are attached, it will be necessary for you, in case of a hostile attack, to utilize under your command a part or all of your Division, depending upon the disposition of your units at the time. A representative from G-3, these Headquarters, will, in consultation with your Headquarters and the Headquarters of the 3rd British Army, arrange the necessary details for the inauguration and carrying out Phases "B" and "C."

Upon completion of Phases "B" and "C," the Division will be at the disposal of the Commander-in-Chief, American E. F., and instructions concerning it will be issued later.

In accordance with this general plan for the employment of the 80th Division, the 5th British Corps, to which the 318th Infantry was attached issued, on July 21, 1918, Order G. T. 70, which follows:

1. Phase "A" of the training of the 80th Division, American Expeditionary Force, will be completed on July 22nd and Phase "B" will commence on July 23rd.

2. During Phase "B" the training of American units in the line will be carried out as follows:

Period (a)—By individuals.

Period (b)—By complete platoons.

Period (c)—By complete battalions.

3. For Phase "B" the following units and formations of 80th American Division will be attached to 17th Division for periods (a) and (b). The Division to whom they will be attached for period (c) will be notified later.

318th American Regiment.

314th Divisional Machine Gun Battalion.

318th Machine Gun Company.

4. The programme for periods (b) and (c) will be arranged so that units of only one Infantry Battalion are in the line at the same time. The remaining two Battalions in the event of attack will occupy the G. H. Q. line in accordance with orders already issued (V Corps G. X. 3817, dated July 5, 1918).



5. Period (a) above will start on 23rd instant and will be completed on 27th instant, during which time parties of officers, non-commissioned officers and selected enlisted men will be attached to units in the line in accordance with Table "A" attached.

American Officers and O. R. will proceed to line fully armed and equipped and with two days' rations.

6. (a) Lorries and busses will report at Bonneville at 1 P. M. 23rd instant for American personnel and will proceed via Valheureux Fme Du Rosel-Val De Mais-Herissart to Headquarters 17th Division Toutencourt (to arrive at Toutencourt at 3 P. M.)

(b) A similar number of empty lorries and busses will be at the disposal of 318th American Regiment on 25th instant for the second party for attachment.

(c) 17th Division will make all arrangements for the lorries and busses to proceed from Toutencourt to the debussing point, and will supervise the debussing on both dates and the embussing of the returning party on 25th instant.

7. Period (b) will start on 28th instant and should be completed by August 7th.

During period (b) each platoon of each American battalion will be attached as a platoon to a company of 17th Division.

These attachments will be synchronized as far as possible with British reliefs except that no American platoon will be in the line for more than four days.

8. All arrangements for period (b) will be made by 17th Division direct with 318th American Regiment.

Period (c) will commence immediately on completion of period (b). During this period American battalion will do a tour of duty in the line as a battalion, its moves being synchronized as far as possible with the normal reliefs of British battalions.

9. Details will be issued later regarding the attachments for period (c).

10. Machine gun units have not yet arrived in V Corps area. The attachments will be carried out in a similar manner and for similar lengths of time as for the infantry. Details will be issued later.

11. (a) Pioneer platoons of the Regimental Headquarters Company will be attached during period (b) to Field Companies R. E. of 17th Division, under arrangements to be made between 17th Division and 318th American Regiment direct.

17th Division will make similar arrangements for the attachment of the American Stokes Mortar Battery, signallers and one-pounder battery.

(b) 17th Division will arrange direct with 318th American Regiment for the attachment of American Regimental Headquarters to Brigade Headquarters for a period.

12. (a) 318th American Regiment less detachments in the line will be located from the 24th instant as under—

Regimental H. Q. and 1 battalion at Rubempre.

1 battalion in the vicinity of Val De Maison.

1 battalion at Beauquesne.

(b) G. Os. C. Supporting Divisions will get into touch with the Regimental Commander 318th American Regiment and will give all assistance as regards training of units when out of the line, including the allotment of training grounds and ranges.

They will also assist in the preparation of any training programme or schemes and arrange for units of the American Regiment to co-operate in tactical schemes to be carried out by their own units.

13. The 66th (British) Division and its Battalion Cadres cease to be affiliated to the 80th American Division from July 21st.

14. Please ACKNOWLEDGE.

T. V. LEAHY,

Major for B. G., G. S., V. Corps.

In accordance with this order, the regiment moved to the forward zone of Rubempre and vicinity and, for the first time, entered the Precaution-



ary Gas Zone (in which the gas mask must always be kept on the person). The locations of the units were:

Regimental Headquarters	}	-----Rubempre
Headquarters Company		
3rd Battalion		
1st Battalion		-----le Val de Maison
2nd Battalion		-----Beauquesne
Supply Company		-----attached to units.

Officers and men arrived in the forward zone in high spirits, feeling sure that at last they were to have a chance at the Boche and to do their share towards bringing the war to an end. Hardened by the strenuous training of the previous two months, the arrival at last of the day of action was welcomed with enthusiasm.

Period (a) Phase "B" of the British training program was carried out according to the schedule already referred to; and the regiment was fortunate enough to go through this four-day period without casualties.

Meantime, on July 26th, the Machine Gun Company arrived in this area from Hubersent, detraining at Doullens and proceeding to Puchevillers, where they were attached to the 314th Machine Gun Battalion for training in the line.

On July 27th Major Charles Sweeny was relieved from command of the 2nd Battalion and assigned to duty as Regimental Operations Officer. Major Jennings C. Wise was reassigned to the regiment on the same day and placed in command of the 2nd Battalion.

Upon the completion of period (a), Phase "B," on July 27th, period (b), Phase "B," was at once commenced in accordance with the following instructions from the 17th British Division:

1. Period (b) will start on July 28th and will be completed by August 7th.

2. During this period, each platoon of each American battalion will be attached to a company in the line.

3. Particular attention will be paid to instruction in patrolling: patrols from American troops will be sent out with experienced men from British troops.

4. Each American platoon will bring 2 Lewis Guns.

5. Pioneer platoons of the Regimental H. Q. Company will be attached to Field Coys., R. E., under arrangements to be made between C. R. E. and O. C., 1st Bn., 305th American Engineer Regiment.

6. The Sappers and Bombers Platoon of H. Q. Company, 318th Infantry Regiment (corresponding to British Light Trench Mortar Battery), will be divided into two parties of 1 Officer and 24 O. R. One party will be attached to 50th L. T. M. B., and one party to 51st L. T. M. B., from July 28th to August 7th.

No Stokes Mortars will be brought.

In accordance with this program, units of this regiment were attached to British front line divisions as follows:

16 platoons of 2nd Battalion	}	-----to 17th Division—July 27th-31st.
32 men from Signal Platoon		
Bn. Medical Detachment		
16 platoons of 3rd Battalion	}	-----to 17th Division—July 31st-August 4th.
32 men from Signal Platoon		
Bn. Medical Detachment		
16 platoons of 1st Battalion	}	to 38th (Welsh) Division—August 8th-12th.
32 men from Signal Platoon		
Bn. Medical Detachment		

The Machine Gun Company was attached by platoons to the 38th Battalion, British Machine Gun Corps, on the night of August 12th-13th, remaining in line until August 19th. Prior to that time, from August 4th to August 10th, numbers 1, 2, 3 and 4 of each gun team of the Machine Gun Company had been attached to the 38th Battalion, British Machine Gun Corps, each team for a period of two days.

The Trench Mortar Platoon was attached to the 17th Division in AVELUY Woods from July 27th to August 4th.

The 37-mm. Gun Platoon during this period remained in BONNEVILLE for further training.

The 2nd Battalion, the first unit of the regiment to enter upon period (b) of Phase "B," was attached, on the night of July 27th-28th, by platoons to the trench garrison of the 17th British Division, holding a sector of the line along the ANCRE RIVER between MARTINSART and BOUZIN-COURT in front of THIEPVAL Ridge and the town of ALBERT, the platoons being attached as follows:

Four platoons to the 50th Brigade, Brigadier-General Gwynne Thomas, commanding, composed of the 6th Dorsets, West Forks and East Forks.

Six platoons to the 51st Brigade, Brigadier-General Dudgeon, commanding, composed of the 7th Lincolns, 10th Sherwood Foresters and 7th Borderers.

Six platoons to the 52nd Brigade, Brigadier-General Allasson, commanding, composed of the 10th Lincolnshire Fusiliers, 12th Manchesters, and 9th Duke of Wellingtons, or West Ridings.

The various units remained in the trenches until August 1st, and during that time witnessed a very heavy artillery concentration by the British on the enemy's trenches and lines of communication. During this period of attachment, the 2nd Battalion had four men killed, and five men wounded.

On the withdrawal of the 2nd Battalion, the 3rd Battalion was then attached to the 17th Division for the period from July 31st to August 4th. During this attachment, Second Lieutenant J. F. Clemer, Jr., was mortally wounded while conducting his platoon into the line and died the following day in the Canadian Hospital in DOULLENS. The battalion also lost one enlisted man killed and seven wounded.

From August 8th to 12th the 1st Battalion was attached by platoons to the 38th (Welsh) Division, which had relieved the 17th Division in the line on the night of August 5th-6th, eight platoons being attached to the 113th Infantry Brigade and eight to the 114th Infantry Brigade. During this period, the battalion had one officer and two enlisted men wounded.

Prior to the completion of the period of attachment by platoons, the British 5th Corps on August 2, 1918, issued Order G.T. 70/13, relating to the attachment of this regiment by battalions to British units in the line. Extracts from this order follow:

1. 38th Division on relieving 17th Division will take over from 17th Division the duties connected with the attachment of units in V Corps area of 80th (American) Division for the remainder of the attachments in the line of Phase "B" of Training.

2. (i) The 3rd Battalion 318th (American) Regiment will complete period (b) complete platoon attachment, on August 4th.

The 2nd Battalion has already completed period (b).

(ii) The 1st Battalion 318th (American) Regiment will not commence period (b) until the 2nd Battalion has completed period (c), (complete Battalion attachment).

(iii) The 2nd Battalion 318th (American) Regiment will be available to commence period (c) from 5th August, inclusive.

3. All arrangements for the completion of Phase "B" will be made between 38th Division and 318th (American) Regiment direct, subject to the following restrictions:

(i) Two American Battalions and 2 Machine Gun Companies, excluding the company of 313 American Machine Gun Battalion, will be available for manning rear defenses in accordance with V Corps Defense Scheme, Section XIII.

(ii) For period (c), the American Battalion will be regarded as a Battalion of 38th Division, for its period of attachment, and will carry out the normal period in the line as for British Battalions.

(iii) One American Battalion will not relieve another American Battalion in the front line.

(iv) The 1st Battalion 318th (American) Regiment will not commence period (c) immediately on completion of its period (b) attachment.

Instructions issued later provided for the attachment of the units of this regiment as follows:

2nd Battalion—August 12th-18th (completed).

3rd Battalion—August 18th-24th (not carried out).

1st Battalion—August 24th-30th (not carried out).

Pioneer Platoon—August 12th-30th—attached to 19th Welsh Regiment (GLAMORGAN Pioneers) until relieved.

Signal Platoon—32 men attached to each battalion.

Medical Detachment—Battalion detachments with battalions.

The One-Pounder Platoon remained at BONNEVILLE during this period, together with the One-Pounder Platoons of the 317th, 319th and 320th Regiments, under the instruction of First Lieutenant Russell M. Page, of this regiment.

August 11th the 2nd Battalion marched to billets in VARENNES, from which reconnoitering parties preceded it to the AVELUY Wood Sector, held by the 38th (Welsh) Division. The 2nd Battalion was now attached to the 113th Infantry Brigade and on August 12th at 7 P. M., marched from VARENNES, five miles into the trenches, relieving the 14th Royal Welsh Fusiliers at 11 P. M. Companies E and G were assigned to the forward zone in AVELUY Wood on the right and left of the sector, respectively, while Companies F and H were in the secondary line, one kilometer to the rear. At daybreak on the 13th, heavy hostile artillery fire fell upon the left of the battalion sector, resulting in casualties. During the next few days repeated efforts were made by the battalion and associated British units to force reconnaissance parties and combat patrols across the ANCRE, strongly held below THIEPVAL Ridge.

The battalion section extended from the southern edge of AVELUY Wood north to a point approximately 700 yards southeast of MESNIL, a total front of about 3,200 yards. The sector was nearly due west of, and about 2,000 yards from THIEPVAL Ridge.

The enemy had just retired across the ANCRE, having destroyed all bridges and concentrated machine guns on possible crossings. As a consequence the patrols were unable to force a passage of the river. A series of outguards held the railroad paralleling the river, which, because of direct hostile observation, could be approached only at night.

During its tour of duty the 2nd Battalion performed the usual trench duties, including the digging of trenches, the erecting of wire entanglements and the constant and vigilant patrolling of the area, suffering the loss of one man killed and one officer and eighteen men wounded. The battalion was relieved the night of August 18th, bivouacked that night at VARENNES, and reached BEAUQUESNE on the following day.

The 3rd Battalion had proceeded to VARENNES on the 18th to occupy a sector in the front line, when orders were received directing them to return to their billets in RUBEMPRE.

The service of the 318th Infantry with the British had come to an end. The division was about to join the American Army in eastern France.

#### The 318th Joins the American Army

Telegraphic instructions from Headquarters, 5th Corps (British), were received August 18th, specifying that all American units in line with the 38th (Welsh) Division would be withdrawn immediately. This made impossible the completion of a trench tour by the 1st and 3rd Battalions as combat units.

The regiment, less the 2nd Battalion, left the RUBEMPRE area on August 19th, and proceeded by marching to the vicinity of DOMLEGER. The 2nd Battalion left BEAUQUESNE on the 20th and proceeded by marching to BERNAVILLE. The several units were now located as follows:



Regimental Headquarters	}	-----DOMLEGER
3rd Battalion		
Headquarters Company		
Supply Company		
Machine Gun Company		-----BERNEUIL
2nd Battalion		-----BERNAVILLE
1st Battalion		-----LONGVILLERS

On arrival in this area, all units turned in their British rifles and bayonets, drawing American rifles and bayonets in their stead. To many this was the best possible proof that the regiment would henceforth fight with other Americans—and enthusiasm was bounded.

After a two-days' stay in this area, the regiment began entraining near DOMLEGER, the 1st Battalion, Headquarters, Machine Gun and Supply Companies leaving on the night of the 21st, and the 2nd and 3rd Battalions on the 22nd.

It was known that the regiment was leaving for the American sector, and, while everybody had begun to appreciate the wonderful work accomplished by the British Army and their most efficient organization, even yet they did not fully appreciate what a wonderful opportunity they had had in obtaining experience, both in actual fighting and in those very important questions of organization, in which the British excelled anything the 318th had experienced to date or were to experience in the future.

They therefore looked forward with great delight and much anticipation to joining the American Army then being formed in the eastern part of France. The trip proved to be a very trying one, taking some two days, and the men, crowded in the open cars, suffered greatly from the excessive heat. No one knew for what particular section the outfit was bound, and most of the units detrained in the midst of a very black night in an unknown place, having no maps, not knowing whither they were to go from the detraining point, and with no one around to give them the necessary information. Truly, the first experience with the American Army was not one to arouse much enthusiasm or to offer much hope for the future!

Eventually, the various billeting areas were located and the men got settled. On August 23rd the 1st Battalion, Headquarters Company, Machine Gun and Supply Companies, having detrained at POINCEON at 4 A. M., marched forty-one kilometers or more to their billets that day, while the 2nd and 3rd Battalions detrained at CHATILLON-SUR-SEINE on the 23rd, and, after spending that night en route, reached their billets the following day. The regiment was now located as follows:

Regimental Headquarters	}	-----RECEY-SUR-OURCE
Headquarters Company		
1st Battalion		
2nd Battalion Headquarters	}	-----GURGY-LA-CHATEAU
E, F and G Companies		
H Company		-----GURGY-LA-VILLE
3rd Battalion Headquarters	}	-----COLMIERS-LE-HAUT
L and M Companies		
I and K Companies		-----BUXEROLLES
Machine Gun Company		-----CHAMBAIN
Supply Company		-----MENESBLES

This particular section of France was by far the most beautiful that had yet been encountered, well wooded, and full of game, and with plenty of room in which to move around. By this time the regiment had had sufficient experience in billeting to be able to settle down in a very short time, and training was immediately taken up in preparation for the action which everyone realized was soon to come. Particular stress was laid on training with the Chauchat rifles, which were now issued to the regiment for the first time. Training proceeded for seven days when, quite unexpectedly, on August 31st, orders were received to proceed by marching to DANCEVOIR with a view to entraining at LATRECEY for another area.

At DANCEVOIR the regiment camped in shelter tents, all units being

in sight of each other. It was the first time the regiment had been together since arriving at BREST, and the first experience that it had had camping in the open as a unit. It was a most inspiring sight and seemed like old-time campaigning before the days when aeroplanes turned men into moles and bats, burrowing into the ground and flying only by night.

Two days were spent here and on Monday, September 2nd, the regiment broke camp and the various units marched to LATRECEY and entrained for an unknown destination, which later proved to be TANNOIS. The 318th was now in that section of the country which the French had allotted to the American Army, and, except for the French artillery attached thereto, only American troops were in evidence.

On August 28th Lieutenant-Colonel Charles L. Mitchell had been assigned to the regiment, joining it at RECEY-SUR-OURCE, prior to its departure for TANNOIS. On September 2nd Major Charles Sweeny was relieved as Regimental Operations Officer and assigned to the command of the 1st Battalion. Captain S. J. Raymond was relieved of command of the 1st Battalion and placed in command of Company G. Captain Edward H. Little was appointed Operations Officer.

The regiment remained in bivouac in ravines near TANNOIS from September 2nd to 7th, the men being required to keep carefully concealed during the day from possible aerial observation. During this period training was continued with the automatic rifles upon improvised ranges. The necessity for concealment prevented practically all other training, except what could be done entirely in the woods or at night.

On the evening of September 7th the regiment marched a few kilometers north to another area, the units being located as follows:

Regimental Headquarters	}	-----RESSON
Headquarters Company		
1st Battalion		
Supply Company		
2nd Battalion	}	-----CULEY
Machine Gun Company		
3rd Battalion		
		-----GERY

Training in this area was hampered as it had been in the preceding one by the necessity for constant precautions against aerial observation. If the Boche had seen the enormous troop concentrations in the American area at this time, he might have inflicted serious damage there by an aerial attack.

For some time it had been rumored that a drive on the ST. MIHIEL salient was imminent. The location of this regiment was southwest of, and about twenty kilometers from, the point of the salient, a position from which any part of the sector could be readily reached.

It was at this juncture, apparently in preparation for a hasty reinforcement of the attacking divisions in the St. Mihiel drive, if this should become necessary, that the famous "If we embus" series began. It consisted of hourly bulletins explaining in fulsome detail the latest and most approved methods of embussing. Towards the end, the game became so fast and furious that the bulletins could not be turned out with sufficient rapidity and were therefore supplemented by personal visits of, and black-board instructions from, those higher up. It was all new and most interesting (and helped pass the time away pleasantly). Unfortunately actual experience a little later on proved to be entirely different from anything taught in the afore-mentioned series.

On September 12, 1918, the First American Army, under command of General Pershing, launched its first real attack with an assault on the ST. MIHIEL salient, a naturally strong position and one which the Hun, owing to his four years of undisputed control, had greatly strengthened. During this operation, which culminated in the attainment of the army objective on September 14th, this regiment, with the balance of the 80th Division, constituted the 5th Corps Reserve under orders to be prepared to move by embussing on one and one-half hours' notice.



On September 14th, at 7 P. M., the entire regimental field and combat trains left, as part of divisional trains, destination unknown, and on the following night at 7 P. M. the regiment embussed at CULEY, destination unknown. After a run of several hours the debussing point was reached and found to be in RELAMEE Woods, some three kilometers from SOUILLY.

Four days were spent in this area, when orders came to proceed by marching to BOIS LA VILLE, twelve kilometers distant. On this occasion the trains were sent as part of Brigade trains. The troops arrived the morning of the 19th about 4 A. M., having covered the twelve kilometers in seven and one-half hours. This slowness in reaching the destination was due to the frightful congestion of traffic, the almost total lack of guides, the slippery condition of the roads and the blackness of the night. It was a weary droopboy who finally dropped off to sleep in the midst of a pouring rain.

### The First Call

The BOIS LA VILLE, on whose northeastern edge stands Fort du Regret lies six kilometers to the southwest of VERDUN and is what the French call a "fortified camp," forming a part of that tremendously powerful defense line which the Boche would have found even more costly to attack than VERDUN itself proved to be. In this woods were now concentrated the whole of the 80th Division, many heavy artillery units and numerous special units. The northern edge of the woods contained a large French ammunition dump, which, together with the many batteries, made attractive targets for Boche airmen. Several bombing raids were made while the regiment was concentrated here, but no casualties resulted.

For five days the 318th remained here. During this time many reconnaissances were made by the field and staff officers of the forward zone, held by the French, but soon to be taken over by the Americans for the great assault of the American First Army from the Meuse to the Argonne Forest.

The 80th Division, which had been the reserve of the 5th Corps in the ST. MIHIEL drive, had now been transferred to the 3rd Corps, Major-General Bullard, commanding.

On the night of the 23rd of September orders were received to proceed by marching from the BOIS LA VILLE to the BOIS DES SARTELLLES. When all units were ready, the men having their packs on their backs, word was received that the order to move was to be "held in abeyance." No one present knowing just what that meant in military parlance, everybody stood around in a "position of readiness" for some three hours until midnight, when word was received from the division that in this case "hold in abeyance" meant "disregard entirely."

The next night, the 24th, the order to move actually went into effect and the regiment was in bivouac in the new area by midnight.

The following night at 7 P. M. the regiment moved from the BOIS DES SARTELLLES to a position south of the BOIS BOURRUS on the GERMONVILLE-VIGNEVILLE road, a distance of five kilometers. The route to this position lay through FROMERVILLE. The traffic jam in this town was simply indescribable. Everything and everybody was trying to get through town at the same time, infantry, artillery, ammunition trucks, ration trucks, official cars, motorcycles and, apparently, everything else on wheels, and the two poor M. P.'s were swamped. Had the Hun but known and placed a couple of well directed shots in the town, the destruction would have been frightful. But, "The Lord helps those who help themselves"—and all troops were in bivouac by midnight.

The next day, September 26, 1918, was the date on which the First American Army, in conjunction with the Fourth French Army on the left, was to attack from the Meuse River west to the western edge of the Argonne Forest. The Third Corps held the right of the First Army sector, with three divisions in line, the 33rd on the right, the 80th in the center, the 4th on the left. The Third Corps' front extended from the Meuse



River on the right, or east, to MONTFAUCON on the left, or west. The 80th Division was to attack with the 319th and 320th regiments of the 160th Brigade in line, each in column of battalions, the 159th Brigade (317th and 318th regiments) constituting the divisional reserve.

The axis of the sector assigned to the 80th Division was a general line running northwest from VERDUN through BETHINCOURT, thence north to the east of BRIEULLES on the Meuse.

At 11:30 P. M., September 25th, the preliminary bombardment began over a forty-mile front. Guns of all calibres to the number of some 3,700 took part in the rain of steel and high explosive upon the Boche lines. One's heart beat faster, one's breath came quicker, in the presence of the most terrific and awe inspiring bombardment yet witnessed in the annals of war. In comparison, the German reply was negligible. For six hours the fire from all available guns continued, increasing in intensity, if that be possible, as the night wore on until, at 5:30 A. M. on the 26th, the hour when the infantry attacked along the whole front, it seemed that all the guns in Christendom were roaring civilization's answer to Germany's bid for world dominion.

At 3:30 A. M. all battalion commanders read to their troops beneath a sky lit by a brilliant moon and by the flashes of countless guns the following message from the Division Commander:

#### HEADQUARTERS EIGHTIETH DIVISION, AMERICAN EXPEDITIONARY FORCES,

France, September 23, 1918.

To the Members of the 80th Division:

For over a year we have been learning how to fight.

Within the next few hours, we shall have a chance to apply what we have learned.

We form part of a vast army, consisting of over 300,000 Americans and an equal number of our French Allies.

No enemy can withstand you, men from Pennsylvania and West Virginia and Virginia.

You are fighting for everything that makes life worth living, the safeguarding of your families and homes, and that personal liberty so dearly earned and so tenaciously maintained for over a century.

Go at them with a yell, and regardless of obstacles or fatigue, accomplish your mission.

Make the enemy know that the 80th Division is on the map: make him know, when he faces you in the future, that resistance is useless.

A. CRONKHITE,  
Major-General.

At 5:30 A. M. ("H" hour) the infantry along the entire army front advanced under the protection of a combined artillery and machine gun barrage. By 7 A. M. news arrived that the offensive, with 300,000 American troops in line, was meeting with splendid success and that the 160th Brigade had been especially successful.

At 7:30 A. M. the 318th which had breakfasted and had been in readiness to move on a moment's notice since "H" hour, received verbal orders from the Brigade Commander to proceed to some ravines slightly northwest of the position then occupied. This was speedily accomplished and the regiment remained there until about 1 P. M., when orders came to proceed to Hill 205, one kilometer south of BETHINCOURT and almost the same distance north of the famous LE MORT HOMME ("Dead Man's Hill"). Fortunately, most of the units had managed to give their men a bit of lunch, so the move began under auspicious conditions.

The distance to Hill 205 was only some nine kilometers. There was, however, but one road available, ostensibly a one-way road, which, because of many attempts to make it a four-way road, very soon became a no-way road. The country on each side of this road had been "No Man's Land" for nearly four years and, as a result of much wiring and heavy shelling,

was almost impassable. As a consequence, the leading unit, Headquarters Company, did not reach Hill 205 until 5 P. M., the other units some hours later.

During the march to Hill 205 the Hun aviators were very active and aggressive, so much so that the frequently reiterated newspaper assertion of Allied supremacy in the air appeared ludicrous. The Hun brought down four Allied balloons and two Allied aviators before the eyes of the regiment and, flying up and down the line of march two or three hundred feet above the marching troops, turned machine guns upon the columns. That casualties were so few is regarded as little short of miraculous.

The 160th Brigade had made rapid headway during the day, but towards night, found further progress impossible, owing to the inability of the 4th Division on the left to make an equal advance. Higher authorities determined that this regiment should be sent to the assistance of the 4th Division. At 5:15 P. M. a message was received to proceed at once to BETHINCOURT. Arriving there at approximately 6 P. M., verbal orders were received from the Commanding General of the 159th Brigade to proceed at once to CUISY, about six kilometers northwest of BETHINCOURT, where the 4th Division had established its Headquarters.

The usual but, let it be hoped, not inevitable traffic jam existed at BETHINCOURT and much valuable time was spent in trying to get through the congested area. Finally CUISY was reached by the leading element a little after midnight on a pitch black, cold, rainy night. The succeeding units arrived at various times up to 3 A. M. The troops were turned off the road into a ravine, to get such rest as might be possible. The Commanding Officer of the regiment reported to the Commanding General, 4th Division, for orders and established his P. C. (Post of Command) on the church steps in CUISY.

It had been a very trying day. The men had been able to get very little sleep the previous night, had marched, all told, some seventeen kilometers, had been under arms almost continuously for fourteen hours and had managed to get only one real meal, namely, breakfast.

CUISY proved to be under almost continuous shell fire and the command suffered a number of casualties during the two days and nights spent there.

On the morning of the 27th orders were issued to the regiment to be prepared to move at any moment. That night numerous orders were received from the Headquarters, 4th Division, only to be countermanded a little later. Finally, about 2 A. M. of the 28th, orders were received attaching this regiment to the 8th Infantry Brigade, 4th Division, and shortly thereafter the Regimental Commander was ordered to send out one company on outpost to the west of CUISY to cover the left flank of the 4th Division, no information having been received as to the location or progress of the 79th Division on its left. The information obtained by this company formed the first definite news concerning this division which the 4th Division had received.

At about 2:30 P. M. of the 28th the Commanding Officer, 318th Infantry, received verbal orders from the Commanding General, 8th Brigade, to attach one battalion to the 59th Infantry of that Brigade, and to proceed with the balance of the regiment to SEPTSARGES, taking up a position to the north and northwest of that town, with a view to supporting an attack to be launched on the morning of the 29th, and also to resist possible counter-attacks from the northwest, it having been reported that the 79th Division was meeting with very stiff resistance.

At 3 P. M. the 1st Battalion, under command of Major Sweeny, with two 37-mm. guns and four Stokes mortars attached, proceeded to join the 59th Infantry, at that time located to the east and northeast of SEPTSARGES.

At 4 P. M. during a pouring rain the balance of the regiment proceeded to SEPTSARGES. The 2nd Battalion, with Machine Gun Company attached, took up a position on high ground to the northwest of SEPTSARGES, the 3rd Battalion taking up a position to the north and north-



east. These positions were taken in the dark of an unusually wet and black night, without the advantage of a preliminary reconnaissance, and were consequently slightly modified the following day. Since the 8th Brigade and the 58th Infantry already had their P. C.'s in SEPTSARGES, this regiment's P. C. was established in the only available shelter left the school building which, being practically intact, offered a most attractive target.

About 2 A. M., September 29th, the attack order of the 8th Brigade was received, extracts from which follow:

2. The Brigade, reinforced by the 318th Infantry and two batteries of the 16th F. A. will pass through the 7th Brigade tomorrow morning (September 29th) and continue the advance to the Army objective. Upon arrival on this line, the position will be immediately prepared for defense.

(3) (b) The 50th Infantry, with one battalion 318th Infantry, one company of 12th M. G. Battalion and one battery 16th F. A., will pass through the sector held by the 47th Infantry. It will place two battalions in the front line, one battalion in support, and the remainder of regiment in the regimental reserve.

(c) The 318th Infantry, less one battalion, and the 12th M. G. Battalion, less two companies, will constitute the Brigade reserve. One battalion of the 318th Infantry, and the Regimental Machine Gun Company, will follow the 58th Infantry at a distance of one kilometer along the left border of the division sector, prepared to resist hostile attacks from the northwest and west. One battalion, 318th Infantry, will follow approximately one kilometer in rear of the center of the Brigade.

At 5:30 A. M., the attack started, making but little progress because of the very heavy artillery and machine gun fire encountered. Most of the artillery fire came from the heights on the east bank of the Meuse.

The 1st Battalion, attached to the 59th Infantry, had been ordered to follow in the rear of the gap between the two battalions of that regiment which were attacking side by side. Due to the failure of these two battalions to make the progress anticipated (the sector of this attack was in a heavily wooded area, known as the BOIS BRIEUEUILLES), the 1st Battalion soon found themselves pushed well to the front, forming the apex of a triangle. Their position was an extremely perilous one, from which the splendid judgment, great coolness and personal bravery of Major Sweeny, the battalion commander, finally successfully extricated them, after they had suffered very heavy casualties.

Meantime the 2nd Battalion, Major Wise commanding, had advanced along the left of the 4th Division's sector in support of the 58th Infantry in its attack on the BOIS DE FAYS. Progressing about one kilometer, it was halted by the failure of the attacking battalions to progress, and was then ordered to organize Hill 295 and cover the gap between the left flank of the 4th Division and the right flank of the 79th Division. For five days the 2nd Battalion held this position on Hill 295, exposed to frontal and enfilade fire from 77s and 5.9s, to say nothing of harassing fire from machine guns. Many casualties were suffered, among them Captain John Crum, who had commanded "F" Company since its organization.

The 3rd Battalion, Major Burdick commanding, being ordered to follow one kilometer in rear of the center of the attacking brigade, moved up into the BOIS DE SEPTSARGES and came under heavy shell fire which inflicted a number of casualties. The attack of the 8th Brigade having proved unsuccessful, this battalion was ordered back to its former position in front of SEPTSARGES.

The time from September 29th to 8 A. M., October 3rd, was spent in improving positions and in sending out reconnaissance patrols. These patrols gathered much valuable information for the Commanding General of the 8th Brigade, of which he was generous enough to make official mention to the Commanding Officer of this regiment.

While during this period only the 1st Battalion had actual clashes with the Hun, the shelling was so constant and casualties so numerous



as to make it a very trying period for the men and officers, without the relief of action and with little opportunity for rest. The transport personnel during this time distinguished themselves by their devotion to duty, and, by bringing the trains up to the troops (in the case of the 1st Battalion right up to the front line) made it possible for the men to get hot meals.

At 8 A. M., October 3rd, orders were received for the regiment, less the 1st Battalion, to proceed by marching to the trench system some two kilometers southeast of CUISY, a total distance of five kilometers. The necessary orders were issued for the various units to proceed by the most practicable route to the designated area, and at 10 A. M. the Regimental P. C. was moved from SEPTSARGES to the new area. The various units were all in bivouac by 2 P. M. of the 3rd.

At 1:30 P. M., October 3rd, the Commanding General, 159th Brigade, held a conference with Commanding Officers of the 317th and 318th Infantry Regiments and their majors, and verbally outlined a proposed attack to be made by the 159th Brigade on the morning of October 4, 1918, at 5:30 A. M. Due to the scarcity of paper and ink, there was but one map available per regiment, but the majors were instructed to make at once such personal reconnaissances as might be feasible. It being about nine kilometers to NANTILLOIS, reconnaissance before dark was impossible. Meantime, preparations were being made to give the men a hot meal.

The final Division and Brigade orders not having been received by dark, the regiment, less the 1st Battalion (still attached to the 59th Infantry), proceeded to its positions in and about NANTILLOIS. The general understanding was, that the 3rd Division, which had relieved the 79th and was then holding a general line slightly north of NANTILLOIS, was to swing to the west, the 4th Division was to swing slightly to the east, leaving a gap of approximately two kilometers to be taken over by the 80th Division. This Division had been relieved by the 33rd Division on September 29th, and had been concentrated southeast of CUISY for four days in reserve. The 159th Brigade was to make the attack, with regiments side by side, and the 160th Brigade was to be in reserve.

Many had considered that the violation of the rules of the road and the resultant traffic congestion had reached the acme of perfection, but the performance on the occasion of the march to NANTILLOIS made all former experiences seem mild by comparison.

The 2nd Battalion, the assaulting unit, left the ravine southeast of CUISY at 8 P. M. and after having covered nine kilometers, managed by much effort to reach NANTILLOIS about 2 A. M., on the 4th, relieving two companies of the 4th Infantry, 3rd Division, and taking up the assaulting position with its right resting on the eastern edge of NANTILLOIS and its left one kilometer to the west, in liaison with the 3rd Division. Company "F," Lieutenant Lankin commanding, on the right and Company "G," Lieutenant Cabell commanding on the left, comprised the first line along the reverse slope of a slight ridge north of the town, with Companies E and H, Lieutenant Neubauer and Captain Moore commanding, on the right and left, respectively, of the second line. The 3rd Battalion reached the vicinity of NANTILLOIS about 4 A. M. and took up a position as the supporting battalion in rear of the 2nd Battalion. The Regimental P. C. was established at midnight in NANTILLOIS about 300 meters in the rear of the "jump-off" position.

At 4 A. M. a conference was held at the Regimental P. C. and final instructions were issued to unit commanders.

The barrage table was changed at the last minute, with resultant misunderstanding, and the attack was twenty minutes late in starting. The barrage was actually laid down at 5:35 A. M. and, some fifteen minutes later, the Hun put down a counter-barrage which made our own barrage seem like the effort of a small boy.

In spite of the inevitable misunderstandings due to lack of orders, maps and personal reconnaissances, the 2nd Battalion went "over the top" in good order and, advancing nearly two kilometers, succeeded in push-

ing their two leading companies into the BOIS DES OGONS. This proved to be an impossible place to hold, for the following reasons: First, the 317th Infantry was unsuccessful in getting off on schedule time and left our right flank in the air; second, the 3rd Division on our left also failed to advance as expected, leaving our left in the air; third, the exposure of our right and left flanks made it necessary to throw out strong detachments from the support battalion to cover these gaps and involved them in the attack much earlier than should have been necessary; fourth, the failure of flanking units to advance resulted in the two advance companies of the 2nd (attacking) Battalion being fired upon by machine guns from both flanks as well as in front, and, in addition, left them at the apex of a triangle, enabling the Boche to concentrate on them with his artillery. The inevitable result was that the advance elements of these two companies suffered very heavy losses within the first two hours of the fighting, and the companies were compelled to retire about one kilometer to the cover of Hill 274, which position was at once organized for temporary defense, it being planned later in the day to advance again in conjunction with flanking units.

Up to noon of October 4th a total advance of about one kilometer had been made, which advance had cost the 2nd Battalion the loss of all of its company commanders and fully 60 per cent of the remaining officers in casualties. The 3rd Battalion had also suffered very heavily, having taken up a position on the right of Hill 274 to close a gap between the 2nd Battalion and the unit on its right.

The shelling from the east bank of the Meuse continued throughout the day. It was especially trying to our morale, in that it came from the right flank and right rear and gave the troops the feeling that they were being fired upon by their own artillery.

On the afternoon of October 4th, information was received from the Commanding General of the 159th Brigade that one battalion of the 319th Infantry of the 160th Brigade was attached to our regiment and would make an attack that afternoon under cover of heavy artillery fire. This attack was launched late in the day. Two companies of the 2nd Battalion, 319th Infantry, succeeded in reaching the BOIS DES OGONS. These units, together with elements of the 317th and 318th Infantry, found the position untenable and were forced, under cover of darkness, to retire to a position in a ravine south of the woods.

On October 5th the 1st Battalion, 318th Infantry, was relieved from attachment to the 59th Infantry, and put at the disposal of the Commanding General of the 159th Brigade for co-operation in the attack upon the BOIS DES OGONS.

Shortly after dawn another attack was launched under cover of a heavy artillery concentration on the FERME DE LA MADELEINE and the intrenched position north of the BOIS DES OGONS. This attack was to be supported by tanks, which, however, found it impossible to go forward in the face of the heavy hostile fire.

An amusing incident occurred at this time. When the tanks were stopped, the crews started rapidly to the rear. Lieutenant Higgins, commanding a platoon of the supporting battalion, saw them coming and thought the Boche had broken through, whereupon he at once began to heave hand grenades at them, which, it is reported on good authority, completely destroyed what little morale the crews still retained.

On the afternoon of the 5th the 2nd Battalion, 319th Infantry, under command of Major James Montague, launched an attack which, though at first unsuccessful, later under cover of darkness succeeded in getting the troops into the woods and holding the ground gained. The 3rd Battalion, 318th Infantry, supported this attack, the 2nd Battalion remaining in position on Hill 274 to cover the left flank.

Meantime the 1st Battalion (318th), in co-operation with the rest of the 159th Brigade, made an attack through the BOIS DE FAYS from the 4th Division sector with a view to flanking the BOIS DES OGONS from the east. They encountered much hostile machine gun fire from nests which

had not been mopped up by the 4th Division, and heavy artillery fire from the front and right flank. However, they gradually worked their way forward, destroying many machine gun nests, and took up a position on the west and northwestern edge of the BOIS DE FAYS, from which they were unable to emerge because of the terrific concentration of hostile artillery and machine gun fire on the fringe of the woods. In this operation Lieutenant Hort was killed. They held this position until relieved by a battalion of the 4th Division the following day and were then ordered by the Commanding General of the 159th Brigade to withdraw to the former position southeast of CUISY.

Sunday, October 6th, was spent in consolidating the ground gained and in reorganizing the units. Late in the afternoon word was received that the 319th Infantry was to relieve this regiment. At midnight October 6th-7th this relief was completed and the regiment returned to the trenches southeast of CUISY.

Upon the relief of the Brigade on October 7th, the Division Commander sent the following letter to all concerned:

HEADQUARTERS EIGHTIETH DIVISION, AMERICAN EXPEDITIONARY FORCES

October 7, 1918.

To the Officers and Men of the 159th Brigade:

The Division Commander wishes to express his great appreciation of the highly important success gained by General Jamerson's 159th Brigade and Major Montague's attached battalion of the 319th Infantry.

Continually under effective artillery fire on your flank, as well as machine gun fire from your front and flanks, you nevertheless returned again and again to the attack until your objective was gained and held.

Your success has earned the repeated congratulations of your Corps Commander as well as the thanks of your country.

ADELBERT CRONKHITE,  
Major-General, Commanding.

HEADQUARTERS 159th BRIGADE, AMERICAN EXPEDITIONARY FORCES

October 8, 1918.

The Brigade Commander desires to add to the above his expression of appreciation of the work accomplished by the Brigade and Major Montague's Battalion, 319th Infantry, during the three-days' fight for the BOIS DES OGONS, and his pride in the command of an organization possessed of that iron will and determination which alone could win success in the face of such odds.

G. H. JAMERSON,  
Brigadier-General, Commanding.

Many recommendations were made for the Distinguished Service Cross, but because of the lack of definite knowledge of how to properly submit these recommendations, very few of them were approved. The regiment takes a just pride in the following awards as published in General Orders from General Headquarters, A. E. F.:

Second Lieutenant Charles K. Dillingham, 318th Infantry. For extraordinary heroism in action near NANTILLOIS, France, October 6, 1918.

Lieutenant Dillingham, on duty as battalion intelligence officer, twice volunteered and led a patrol through woods known to be occupied by hostile machine guns. Working his way through artillery and machine gun fire, he succeeded in ascertaining the position of units on the right and left of his own.

Throughout the action around NANTILLOIS and the BOIS DES OGONS this officer was a constant inspiration to his men by his devotion to duty and disregard of personal safety.

Private Eddie Bann, Company "M," 318th Infantry. For extraordinary heroism in action in the BOIS DES OGONS, France, October 4, 1918.



Private Bann was acting as stretcher bearer with another soldier who was shot by a sniper. Going out under fire from the sniper, he captured the latter with the aid of another man. While taking his prisoner to the rear, Private Bann found a wounded man whom he carried to the aid station under heavy fire, while his companion went on with the prisoner. Upon returning from the aid station he continued his work of rescuing the wounded.

Sergeant William T. Johnson, Company "A," 318th Infantry. For extraordinary heroism in action near BOIS DE FAYS, France, October 5, 1918.

While leading a patrol Sergeant Johnson encountered terrific machine gun fire, which forced him to order his patrol to cover. He then advanced alone, working his way to the nest which he destroyed, and allowed for the continuance of patrol. Later the same day he braved the perils of an extremely heavy barrage to bring to safety a wounded comrade who was lying three hundred yards in advance of the lines.

The regiment during the period between September 26th and October 7th suffered the following casualties:

Unit	Killed		Wounded		Missing	
	Officers	Men	Officers	Men	Officers	Men
1st Battalion -----	3	30	8	242	0	2
2nd Battalion -----	4	46	7	291	0	0
3rd Battalion -----	0	15	5	174	0	0
Machine Gun Company -----	0	3	2	40	0	0
Headquarters Company -----	0	5	0	49	0	0
Supply Company -----	0	0	0	3	0	0
Medical Detachment -----	0	2	3	8	0	0
Total -----	7	101	25	807	0	2

#### Reorganization

Following the relief of this regiment on the night of October 6th-7th by the 319th Infantry, the various units reached the designated assembly area southeast of CUISY about 5 A. M., October 7th, mentally and physically exhausted, and, due to the numerous casualties among the officers and non-commissioned officers, rather badly disorganized. From September 26th to October 7th this regiment had been under constant fire (part of the time a most concentrated and terrific fire), and had had numerous casualties daily.

October 7th was devoted to resting and reorganization. Revived by a few hours of uninterrupted sleep and three square meals, the morning of the 8th found the men again in good spirits and prepared for any eventuality, though they were greatly in need of a few days' real rest. Orders were received that morning to move to the BOIS DE MONTFAUCON, immediately south of what at one time comprised the town of MALANCOURT, about five kilometers from the existing bivouac. This march was made without interruption and early in the afternoon the men had their "bivies" up. Orders were then received to immediately re-equip the regiment and be prepared to move on short notice.

The day after the 318th was relieved, several officers rejoined their units from various Army Schools. At about the same time a number of new officers were assigned to the regiment. Even with this addition, the battalions averaged less than two officers per company.

On October 8th, Colonel Ulysses G. Worrilow was relieved from command of the regiment and ordered to FROMERVILLE, Lieutenant-Colonel Charles L. Mitchell succeeding to the command.

The regiment's strength was so greatly reduced that companies were at once reorganized on the basis of three small platoons per company, and a certain amount of drilling was carried on under adverse conditions.

On October 11th, at 4 P. M., orders were received to proceed at once by marching, keeping off the road in so far as possible, to the BOIS DE HESSE—a distance of some eight kilometers. The regiment was under way at 5 P. M. and in camp at 10:30 P. M., after having made a very

strenuous hike across country—this area being a devastated No Man's Land, a continuous series of shell holes, destroyed trenches and hidden wire.

The regiment remained in bivouac in the BOIS DE HESSE until 5:30 A. M., October 14th, at which time it proceeded by marching to DOMBASLE and there embussed for the following billeting areas:

Regimental Headquarters	}	-----VAUDECOURT
Headquarters Company		
Machine Gun Company		
Supply Company		
1st Ballation	-----	PRETZ
2nd Ballation	-----	SOMMAISNE
3rd Ballation	-----	BEAUZEE

A new issue of clothing with overcoats was received, and Browning automatics and machine guns were also issued. Training was continued and practice held with the new weapons, which at once won the confidence and aroused the enthusiasm of the men. This was particularly the case with the Browning automatic. The Lewis gun, which had been used in the British area, was too cumbersome a weapon to enjoy great popularity among the infantrymen armed with it; while the American adaptation of the French Chauchat rifle, chambered for American ammunition, was unpopular because of its tendency to jam and to break essential parts. The Browning automatic, on the other hand, combined the merits of lightness with durability and accuracy.

The area now occupied showing the effects of the brief German occupation in 1914 in the shape of many ruined buildings; but it was such a vast improvement over the "abomination of desolation" just witnessed in BETHINCOURT, MALANCOURT, CUISY, SEPTSARGES, MONTFAUCON, NANTILLOIS and the whole of that devastated area that one barely noticed the mute witness of the passing of the Hun.

The period of ten days spent here proved sufficient to fully re-equip the regiment and to give the men the rest they had so justly earned.

At 7 A. M., October 24th, the regiment was assembled at PRETZ and embussed for ISLETTES LES PETITES, in the Argonne Forest, arriving there at 11 A. M. It was at once assigned a bivouacking area in the woods, an almost ideal location for camping.

On October 24th the Corps and Divisional orders for the next offensive arrived and preparations were at once made for a quick move. The regiment was on its toes for six days, each day expecting to move the next morning. The air was electric with anticipation of the coming attack which all expected to be even more successful than the drive of September 26th. The Americans had been hammering the Boche now for a month without cessation and the whole battle line from the Meuse to the North Sea was witness to the fact that the Allied forces had gained and meant to maintain the mastery of the situation. While pessimists still existed who foresaw a war lasting until 1920, many were found who were willing to bet that the Hun would capitulate before the year was out.

Meantime, while awaiting the order to move forward for the new attack, the regiment's attack formation was considerably modified. Recent experience had demonstrated that the formations used in the previous drive did not possess sufficient elasticity for the maneuvering requisite to success in the war of movement which had so suddenly succeeded the long period of stationary warfare.

The change involved the reorganization of the platoon as the combat unit. Heretofore, the platoon had consisted of four sections, two of which consisted of automatic riflemen and riflemen, one of rifle grenadiers and one of bombers (hand grenadiers). The new formation provided for a platoon of forty-nine men, divided into two identical half-platoons of three squads each—a rifle squad, an automatic rifle squad, and a grenadier squad. This made the combat unit a half-platoon which, because of its smaller

size and its possession within itself of all the infantryman's weapons, gave the regiment an organization superior to the old platoon in the following respects: greater adaptability to changing conditions; greater mobility and maneuvering power; greater susceptibility to control.

At the time this change was adopted, a number of replacements, most of them untrained or at best only partly trained men, were assigned to the regiment. The ease and rapidity with which these men were made familiar with the new formation and the commands and signals adopted for maneuver therewith, spoke volumes for its practicability and the regiment awaited further action, confident that great successes would be won with fewer losses.

Lieutenant-Colonel Charles L. Mitchell, Major Henry H. Burdick and Captain Edward H. Little developed and worked out the details of this reorganization of the basic combat unit.

### The Second Call

After remaining in a state of uncertainty for nearly a week in the woods near ISLETTES LES PETITES, definite word was at last received that a concerted attack along the whole American front was to be made on the morning of November 1st. With this news came the disappointing intelligence that this Brigade was to be again called upon to fill the role of divisional reserve, a disappointment to officers and men alike, who felt that the three weeks of rest and reorganization had put the regiment in a state of efficiency unsurpassed by any unit in the army.

Colonel Harry C. Jones was assigned to command of the regiment on October 29th. A number of other officers also reported, giving the regiment almost its entire complement of officer personnel. The regiment was ready for action as it never had been before—and all keenly regretted the passive role allotted for the beginning of the attack.

On October 30th the regiment was ordered to proceed by marching on the following day to a location immediately south of CORNAY, a distance of twenty-five kilometers, via the famous ravine LE FOUR DE PARIS, which the French by a surprise attack had taken from the Boche in 1917.

The march began at 8 A. M., October 31st. The greater part of the march lay through the FORET D' ARGONNE, the scene of much bitter fighting within the past few weeks. Great delay was caused by the crossing of the line of march by the 77th Division, which was attack on the left of the 80th Division, and the men did not reach their bivouac until 9 P. M. that night, after being under arms some thirteen hours. Camp was made in the open, under cover of rising ground midway between CORNAY and CHATEL-CHEHERY.

The roar of the guns continued throughout the night and at 5:30 A. M., November 1st, the attack was launched along the entire front. In the 80th Division's sector, the 319th Infantry attacked on the right in liaison with the 2nd Division, the 320th Infantry on the left in liaison with the 77th Division.

The attack of the 319th Infantry and the 2nd Division made rapid headway during the day, whereas the 320th Infantry and the 77th Division encountered most stubborn resistance and advanced only a short distance, so that at the end of the day the Divisional Front, originally facing almost due north, became greatly extended and faced practically northwest.

Meantime, this regiment had been ordered forward a distance of some five kilometers to a position in some ravines about 500 yards north of FLEVILLE. Due to converging streams and the existence of but one available bridge, it was necessary to keep to the road; consequently the march, begun at 6 P. M., was ended only at 1 A. M., of the 2nd, seven hours being required to cover five kilometers. The days of traffic jams were not yet past!

To prevent too great an extension of the front held by the 319th Infantry and to relieve the pressure still retarding the 320th Infantry, the



Division Commander placed the 317th Infantry at the disposal of the Commanding General of the 160th Brigade and orders were issued that on the morning of the 2nd the 317th Infantry should attack between the 319th Infantry and the 2nd Division, while the 319th, by an attack in an almost due westerly direction, would assist the advance of the units on its left by flanking the hostile positions. When the 317th finally got into position and attacked from the neighborhood of IMECOURT at about 10 A. M. on November 2nd, the following peculiar situation existed: the 317th Infantry was farthest north and was advancing in a generally northwesterly direction; the 320th Infantry was farthest south and was attacking due north; while the 319th Infantry, maintaining contact with the 317th and 320th, was attacking almost due west.

The result was that, as the afternoon wore on, the 317th Infantry gradually extended its front across the entire Divisional sector and by a rapid advance took the town of BUZANCY before nightfall. This result having been anticipated, the Division Commander turned over the command of the sector to the 159th Brigade at 5 P. M., on November 2nd.

Brigadier-General George H. Jamerson, who had commanded this Brigade since April, 1918, had been evacuated, injured, on October 8th. Lieutenant-Colonel Edmund A. Buchanan, at that time the senior officer present with the brigade and attached to Brigade Headquarters, was assigned to the command of the Brigade. Upon the assignment of Colonel Jones to this regiment and the promotion of Lieutenant-Colonel Keller, of the 317th Infantry, the Division Commander assumed command of the 159th Brigade, exercising his command through Lieutenant-Colonel Buchanan as Brigade-Adjutant.

At 11:30 A. M., on the 2nd, this regiment was ordered forward about two kilometers to a position just south of ST. JUVIN. This movement, carried out in a pouring rain, had just been completed at 1 P. M. when orders came, directing the regiment to proceed at once to SIVRY-LEZ-BUZANCY, twelve kilometers north. Field officers were to precede the column and make personal reconnaissances but did not reach SIVRY until after dark. The troops, much exhausted after the long hike over fearfully congested, very muddy and badly shelled roads, went into bivouac in the pouring rain of an unusually dark night, about 11 P. M., just east of SIVRY-LEZ-BUZANCY.

The regimental P. C. was established in the town, as were also those of the 159th Brigade, the 317th Infantry, and the 313th Machine Gun Battalion. With four headquarters in one small town, all available shelter was quickly pre-empted. Consequently, upon the receipt about midnight of the Division and Brigade attack orders for the following day, a conference of officers of this regiment was at once held in the only available shelter, a large stable, some thirty yards from Regimental Headquarters.

The Hun had been shelling the town intermittently throughout the evening. While some forty-five officers and men were busily poring over the maps and the orders for the attack, a shell came through the roof and exploded in the midst of the gathering, killing Lieutenant Niven, adjutant of the 3rd Battalion; mortally wounding Lieutenants Coble and Robertson and wounding Captain Taliaferro, Chaplain Brown and Lieutenants Benson, Crutchfield, Dillingham, Kleinsturber, Morrison, Palmer and Turner, all of whom were evacuated excepting Chaplain Brown and Lieutenants Dillingham, Morrison and Turner, who required first-aid treatment but refused to be evacuated. It was a heavy blow to the regiment to have so many officers put out of action on the eve of an attack.

The transport personnel, zealous for the welfare of the combat troops, pushed on over well-nigh impassable roads and brought up the kitchens and ration wagons, ensuring a hot breakfast for all after a night passed in the rain.

At 5 A. M. the attacking unit (3rd Battalion) with attached units (Company B, 313th Machine Gun Battalion, two Stokes mortars and two 37-mm. guns) started forward in a northwesterly direction to its position

on the left of the 317th Infantry and the right of the 77th Division. The 1st Battalion was in support.

No accurate information as to the exact location of the units holding the line had been secured at this time; consequently, the 3rd Battalion advanced, prepared to be fired upon from BUZANCY to HARRICOURT, some four kilometers northwest of SIVRY-LEZ-BUZANCY. The advance was greatly delayed by having to pass, under heavy shell fire, through a deep swamp just south of the BUZANCY-BAR road. During this advance an enemy shell killed Lieutenant Turner, Commanding "I" Company, and severely wounded 1st Sergeant Schutte, of the same company.

Once across this swamp, contact was quickly gained with the 319th Infantry between BAR and BUZANCY, and with the 77th Division near HARRICOURT. From this line, with K Company on the right and M Company on the left, I and L Companies being in support, the 3rd Battalion made a very rapid advance, which at 4:30 P. M. reached the general line of the unimproved road running southeast from ST. PIERREMONT. The battalion was there held up by heavy enemy fire from machine gun nests in the woods to the north.

During the night and early the next morning some of those machine gun nests were destroyed, and the battalion had advanced a half kilometer further and was still advancing when a passage of lines was executed by the 1st Battalion about 8 A. M. The 2nd Battalion thereupon became the supporting battalion, the 3rd Battalion passing to Brigade Reserve.

By thus relieving each battalion after twenty-four hours in the front lines, all troops were enabled to get a good rest and hot food after subsisting on the emergency ration during a period of great strain. Great credit is due the Supply Company for its success in keeping the troops well supplied at all times during this three-day engagement.

During its advance the 3rd Battalion captured, among other things, a battery of 77's, possibly the battery which had shelled us the previous night. So rapid had been the advance that the Boche artillery officers left their mid-day meal set upon a table in a tent back of their guns. Ten machine guns were also captured.

The Regimental P. C. during the day was advanced from SIVRY-LEZ-BUZANCY to BAR, with an advanced P. C. at FONTENOY.

On the morning of November 4th the 1st Battalion, with attached units (Company C, 313th Machine Gun Battalion, two Stokes mortars and two 37-mm. guns), continued the advance with B, C and D Companies in line, A Company being in support. At this time this regiment was considerably in advance of the units on the right and left and, as a consequence, encountered machine gun fire from both flanks, from positions within the sectors of adjacent units. In one case, in order to make further progress, it became necessary to take the town of SOMMAUTHE and the dominating heights of Hill 314 just south thereof, within the sector of the unit on our right. This was done, the town was handed over to D Company of the 317th Infantry, and the advance proceeded.

Slow but steady progress was made throughout the day and towards nightfall the line was generally east and west a few hundred yards south of LA POLKA Farm. Further progress was delayed for some time because of the trouble which the unit on the left had in taking the high ground west of LA POLKA Farm. This height dominated our sector, and by means of direct machine gun fire, the Hun controlled the situation in our front as long as he had observation from this hill. Under cover of darkness, however, the battalion succeeded in getting forward and taking LA POLKA Farm and the Farm d' ISLY in spite of stubborn resistance which was supported by fire from Hill 278 and the heights to the west. From this time until relieved the battalion occupied a line passing north of the Farm d' ISLY and bending back on the right to maintain contact with the left battalion of the 317th Infantry.

During its advance the 1st Battalion suffered a number of casualties, among whom were Lieutenant Davidson, killed, and Captain Winant, wounded.



On the 4th the Regimental P. C. moved forward from BAR to a position on a hill northeast of FONTENOY.

At 5:30 A. M., November 5th, the 2nd Battalion and attached units (Regimental Machine Gun Company, two Stokes mortars and two 37-mm. guns) passed through the 1st Battalion and took up the advance, with the 3rd Battalion in support. The 2nd Battalion had E Company in line on the left, G Company in line on the right, F and H Companies being in support. The 2nd Battalion effected a very rapid advance through the BOIS DE ST. PIERREMONT, the BOIS DE LA BERLIERE and the BOIS DU GRANT DIEULET, reaching its original objective along the LA BAG-NOLIE-WARNIFORET road and taking the latter town about 9:30 A. M.

While this position was being organized, an order was received by the regiment to push on to the YONCQ-BEAUMONT Road, with the left of the regiment resting on YONCQ and the right on LA HARNOTERIE Farm. The 2nd Battalion consequently resumed its advance, but encountered most determined resistance from machine guns and artillery, chiefly 77's. In spite of this resistance, however, the battalion succeeded in advancing to a position just south of the YONCQ-BEAUMONT Road, with patrols out toward the MEUSE and to the west of YONCQ on Hill 275.

In this position the battalion was relieved at 6:30 A. M., November 6th, by the 1st Division, after having made an advance of some seven kilometers.

During the advance of the 2nd Battalion the Regimental P. C. moved to SOMMAUTHE, and thence to a position in the BOIS DU GRAND DIEULET, about one kilometer north of LE GROS FAUX Farm.

During the three days in line the regiment made a total advance of sixteen kilometers, capturing much valuable material, with the following losses:

	Killed		Wounded		Missing	
	Officers	Enl. Men	Officers	Enl. Men	Officers	Enl. Men
1st Battalion -----	2	12	5	45	0	0
2nd Battalion -----	0	3	1	11	0	0
3rd Battalion -----	2	2	1	20	0	0
Machine Gun Company	0	0	1	2	0	0
Headquarters Company	0	1	0	2	0	1
Supply Company -----	0	0	0	2	0	0
Medical Detachment --	1	2	1	2	0	0
	5	20	9	82	0	1

It has been authoritatively stated that during the advance of this Brigade from November 3rd to 6th, with the exception of a portion of one day, it was in advance of the divisions on the right and left. The regiment takes pride also in the fact that at the hour of its relief it was further north than any unit on the American front.

Just why this division was relieved on the morning of the 6th has never been made clear. The 160th Brigade, after being in line for thirty-six hours, had had a three days' rest; whereas the 159th Brigade, although engaged for three and one-half days, had suffered very few casualties considering the results attained. The morale of the division was never higher than during this engagement—and it is believed that we were relieved simply to enable the First Division, which had been the first to come over, to be in line at the signing of the armistice, which was expected momentarily at the hour of our relief. Certain it is that no division had advanced farther or suffered fewer casualties from November 1st to 6th than had the 80th Division.

The following awards of the Distinguished Service Cross were made in this regiment as the result of heroism in this engagement:

First Lieutenant James A. Turner, 318th Infantry (deceased). For extraordinary heroism in action near BUZANCY, France, November 23, 1918. After having been severely wounded during the night of November 2, 1918, Lieutenant Turner continued in command of his



company. Despite his wounds he led his company in the attack the following day when he was killed by an enemy shell. He set an example of fearlessness and bravery to his men.

Private W. P. Tignor, Company "D," 318th Infantry. For extraordinary heroism in action near SOMMAUTHE, France, November 4-7, 1918. Acting as a scout, Private Tignor repeatedly went forward and by calling and making noises, drew machine gun fire upon himself in order to locate machine gun nests, which were subsequently put out of action.

### The Armistice is Signed

Orders had been received that upon the relief of the 80th by the 1st Division, the 318th regiment was to be assembled at LA POLKA Farm, there to await further orders. By noon, November 6th, all units were in bivouac in the woods and ravines about the farm. Shortly after arrival there, information reached us that the Division would be given a forty-eight-hour period of rest and reorganization, after which it would be considered available for immediate resumption of hostilities. Just how the Division, after sitting still for two days, was to be expected to get close enough to the front lines, fast receding in the north, to resume hostilities was never explained. In view of the absence of railroads and shortage of motor transportation, this will doubtless remain one of the unsolved mysteries of the war!

Still, not much time was consumed at that juncture in any such idle speculation. Regimental and Battalion Supply Officers got extremely busy, with the result that by 6 P. M., November 7th, all essential shortages had been made good and the regiment was as ready for action as it had ever been.

Then, to everyone's amazement, orders arrived that night directing the regiment to march the following morning, not north to the scene of action, but south to the vicinity of BRIQUENAY, where a considerable amount of action had been expected late in October.

Army intelligence reports received just prior to November 1st had given this town a general line east and west thereof as the position on which the Boche had prepared to make a determined stand in the event of his being driven from the line he was then holding, a general line running east and west through SOMMERANCE, some nine kilometers south of BRIQUENAY. Doubtless he had intended to make a stand there; evidences to that effect were found in plenty. It was a naturally strong position, easy to defend, with an excellent field of fire; and the Hun had fortified it as best he could in the short time available after he discovered that "the mad Americans" meant to continue their advance in spite of his well known defensive ability. But the advance that began on November 1st had been too rapid to permit him to carry out his prearranged plans—and the BRIQUENAY position had been taken almost without a struggle.

Amazement was acute on the receipt of the order to march south, but all of us knew the line: "Their's not to reason why." and the regiment covered the 20 kilometers to BRIQUENAY before noon on the 8th.

On November 9th the march was continued to ST. JUVIN and MARTIN-COURT Farm, distance of about 11 kilometers.

On the 10th the regiment marched only some 4 kilometers, bivouacking on the same ground occupied on the night of October 31st, along the CORNAY-CHATEL-CHEHERY Road.

On the 11th the regiment marched 25 kilometers to LA CHALADE, arriving about 3 P. M. There the units found very comfortable billets containing electric lights and other little luxuries. This area had been practically undisturbed during four years of war, save for occasional long-distance shelling, and was, consequently, a most desirable location. The

men took it as a good omen that we had reached such a haven on November 11th.

Two weeks prior to that date rumor had begun to succeed rumor to the effect that the armistice had been signed or was about to be signed, only to be officially denied a little later. Finally, definite and official news came to the regiment while on the march through the Argonne Forest that the terms of the armistice had actually been signed by the German delegates, to go into effect at 11 A. M., November 11th. Shortly after, a number of French soldiers were passed, capering about joyously and shouting "The war is finished!" One dough-boy speaking from the heart and voicing the sentiments of all, replied: "Well, for the Law'd sake, don't start another one unless you can finish it yourself!"

Quite naturally the enthusiasm was intense and, on arrival in camp, the men began to figure at once on the best way to celebrate. By common consent the discovery of a large amount of pyrotechnics was voted a God-send, and that night the heavens were lit by every conceivable kind of military fireworks at once. When one remembers that this was the first night since our arrival in France that no danger was attached to a display of lights and that this was the first night for nearly six months that one did not have to reckon with the possibility of a hostile aerial visitor, the spontaneous, boyish outburst may be forgiven.

Many city councils could have learned valuable lessons that night in the art of celebrating such occasions as the 4th of July.

Upon the suspension of hostilities the Division Commander issued the following general order:

#### HEADQUARTERS EIGHTIETH DIVISION AMERICAN EXPEDITIONARY FORCES.

##### GENERAL ORDER No. 19.

France, November 11, 1918.

To the Members of the 80th Division:

The 80th Division only moves FORWARD.

It not only moves forward against the ENEMY, but it moves forward in the estimation of all who are capable of judging its courage, its fighting and its manly qualities.

In the operations for the period November 1st-5th, the Division moved forward fifteen and five-eighths miles in an air line.

It always led.

It captured two Huns for every man wounded.

It captured one machine gun for every man wounded.

It captured one cannon for every ten men wounded, besides large quantities of munitions and other stores.

It accomplished these results, of vast importance to the success of the general operation, with a far smaller percentage of casualties than any other Division engaged.

It has learned by hard training and experience.

The appreciation of the Corps and Army Commanders is expressed in the following:

Telegram from the Commanding General, First Army (dated November 1st.):

"The Army Commander desires that you inform the Commander of the 80th Division of the Army Commander's appreciation of his excellent work during the battle of today. He desires that you have this information sent to all organizations of that Division as far as may be practicable this night. He fully realizes the striking blow your Division has delivered to the enemy this date."

Telegram from the Commanding General, First Army Corps (dated November 1st.):

"The Corps Commander is particularly pleased with the persistent, intelligent work accomplished by your Division today. He is further desirous

that his congratulations and appreciation reach General Lloyd M. Brett, commanding your Brigade, which has borne the brunt of the burden."

Letter from the Commanding General, First Corps:

"1. The Corps Commander desires that you be informed and that those under your command be informed that in addition to other well deserved commendations received from the Army Commander and the Corps Commander, he wishes to express his particular gratification and appreciation of the work of your division from the time it has entered under his command."

It is necessarily a great honor to be allowed to command an organization which earns such commendation.

It is likewise a great honor to belong to such an organization.

I do not know what the future has in store for us.

If it be war, we must and shall sustain our honor and our reputation by giving our best to complete the salvation of our country.

If it be peace, we must and shall maintain our reputation and the honor of our Division and the Army, as soldiers of the greatest country on earth, and as right-minded, self-respecting men.

The 80th Division only moves FORWARD.

A. CRONKHITE,  
Major-General.

### We Take a Walk

A week was spent in the pleasant surroundings of LA CHALADE. To make it more delightful, the sun decided to shine brilliantly throughout this period and the air had just the tang needed to put everyone in fine fettle.

On November 12th steps were taken to salvage all surplus property in the area, clear off mud and dirt from clothing and equipment and get everything into good shape in accordance with the high standard of the regiment. This having been accomplished within two days, a regimental review and inspection of troops and transport was held on November 14th. The Division Commander, accompanied by his Chief of Staff, Colonel W. H. Waldron, and Lieutenant-Colonel E. A. Buchanan, of the 159th Brigade, honored the regiment with his presence and gave the assembled troops a brief talk after the review.

On November 15th, official sanction having been given for 20 per cent. of the officers to avail themselves of a seven days' leave (exclusive of time of travel), the allotted quota departed. It was the first leave most of the officers had had in a year or more and was therefore most welcome, the more so in that the signing of the armistice marked the successful completion of the job which had called them from their civil pursuits.

The time up to November 18th was spent in further cleaning up and drill, the newer men having scarcely had sufficient time to be assimilated.

On November 18th the regiment began a march which made the famous march of the 10,000 Greeks seem, by comparison, a mere Sunday afternoon stroll. There are two essentials, without which a doughboy, whatever his other qualifications, is a failure: first and foremost, the ability and the eagerness to fight; second, the ability to get anywhere on his own motive power. The regiment, having already demonstrated its possession of the first essential, was now given an opportunity to show what it could do on a real, continuous march.

The march began November 18th and was completed on November 29th, a total distance of 220 kilometers being covered in ten days of actual marching, in accordance with the following march table:

November 18th—Marched from LA CHALADE to BRIZEAUX (20 kilometers).

November 19th—Marched from BRIZEAUX to LAHEYCOURT (19 kilometers).

November 20th—Marched from LAHEYCOURT to ROBERT-ESPAGNE (26 kilometers).

November 21st—Spent in ROBERT-ESPAGNE.



- November 22nd—Marched from ROBERT-ESPAGNE to VALCOURT (20 kilometers).  
November 23rd—Marched from VALCOURT to WASSY (15 kilometers).  
November 24th—Spent at WASSY.  
November 25th—Marched from WASSY to VILLIERS-AUX-CHENES (19 kilometers).  
November 26th—Marched from VILLIERS-AUX-CHENES to COLOMBE-LA-FOSSE (17 kilometers).  
November 27th—Marched from COLOMBE-LA-FOSSE to CHAMPIGNOL (19 kilometers).  
November 28th—Marched from CHAMPIGNOL to POTHIERES (31 kilometers).  
November 29th—Marched from POTHIERES to ASNIERES-EN-MONTAGNE (34 kilometers).

This table shows the towns in which Regimental Headquarters were established during the march. Some units, owing to the crowded conditions in certain billeting areas, had to march a considerable distance away from the main line of march to find accommodations. Thus, the total of 220 kilometers falls far short of the distance actually marched by some, if not all, of the men of the regiment.

The march started under almost ideal weather conditions, which continued for several days. Before the march ended, however, this luck had changed and rain set in and continued. Where units had to bivouac for lack of billets, the latter part of the period became a rather trying one.

The Division Supply Department functioned admirably throughout the march in rationing the regiment. The 159th Brigade had advance parties out at all times, finding the exact billeting possibilities of all towns to be occupied by its units. Each day at 4 P. M. a representative of the regiment reported at Brigade Headquarters, receiving the march order for the following day, with the names of all towns to be occupied and the billeting possibilities of each. It would have been much simpler if the Division could have written one order for the entire march, but this was impossible because of the great numbers of troops moving south simultaneously and the changing instructions received from time to time from higher up. The only thing definitely known throughout the march was that we were headed for the 15th Training Area and that Division Headquarters would be in ANCY-LE-FRANC.

Everything went smoothly until the regiment reached ROBERT-ESPAGNE, where five hundred and eighty-three replacements were assigned to the regiment, representing every degree of training from a year to a month and every branch of the service from infantrymen to balloon observers. Some came fully equipped, others lacked nearly everything save the clothing on their backs. No service records arrived with any of them. It was an unfortunate deluge to arrive at such a time.

One other serious defect is to be noted in the arrangements for the march. No provision had been made for a resupply of shoes, and the 220 kilometer march over metalled roads played havoc with the shoes which had already seen hard service "up the line." As a result, many men finished the hike with their feet practically on the ground.

The long march was ended by the arrival of the regiment within the 15th Training Area on the night of November 29th. With the exception of a number of the replacements who joined us in poor physical condition, the regiment finished the march in excellent shape.

#### In Winter Quarters

Upon arrival in the 15th Training Area on November 29, 1918, the regiment was billeted as follows:

Regimental Headquarters	}	-ASNIERES-EN-MONTAGNE
Headquarters Company		
Supply Company		
1st Battalion (less D Co.)		

2nd Battalion	-----	STIGNY
3rd Battalion (less I & K Co.'s.)	-----	ARRANS
I and K Companies	-----	ETAIS

Machine Gun Company	}	-----	VERDONNET
D Company			

On December 5th the following readjustment in locations was made:

Regimental Headquarters	}	-----	CRY
Headquarters Company			
Supply Company			

1st Battalion	-----	ASNIERES-EN-MONTAGNE
2nd Battalion	-----	STIGNY
3rd Battalion (less K Co.)	-----	ARRANS

Machine Gun Company	}	-----	VERDONNET
K Company			

This arrangement was subsequently modified by moving the 3rd Battalion and the Machine Gun Company as follows:

3rd Battalion (less L & M Cos.)	-----	PERRIGNY
L and M Companies	-----	ROUGEMONT
Machine Gun Company	-----	CRY

The regiment was destined to remain for four months in this area. Many conveniences and some necessities of life were lacking on our arrival, but all deficiencies were gradually made good so that, long before our departure, the regiment had become as comfortable as could be expected. The allowance of fuel was not so liberal as in the United States; to offset this, however, there was a very liberal allowance of rain and mud, with some snow and ice. But whatever the inconveniences to which he is exposed, the soldier has a knack of making himself very comfortable in any situation—and the winter passed more pleasantly than we had anticipated.

On December 6th, Colonel Harry C. Jones was relieved from command of the regiment, Colonel George D. Freeman, Jr., being assigned to the command the same day.

During December many non-commissioned officers returned to the regiment from the Officers' Training School at LANGRES, this school having been discontinued with the signing of the armistice. Many officers and enlisted men who had been wounded were also returned to duty with the regiment.

Many promotions and transfers were made while the regiment was in this area. Lieutenant-Colonel Mitchell was transferred to 92nd Division, January 11, 1919. Major Charles Sweeny was promoted to Lieutenant-Colonel, February 24, 1919, and transferred to Headquarters, 1st Corps, March 11th. Major J. C. Wise was transferred to G. H. Q. February 10th. Captain Edward H. Little was promoted to Major, February 24th, and assigned to the command of the 2nd Battalion. Captain Louis J. Koch was promoted to Major, March 20th, and assigned to the 1st Battalion. Captain L. A. Cuthbert succeeded Captain Goldsmith as Regimental Adjutant, March 4th; Captain R. P. Williams, Jr., succeeded Major Little as Operations Officer, March 4th.

For the first week or two in December the men had the restless air of those expecting something to happen at any moment. Just what should

happen seemed uncertain, but the whole atmosphere was charged with expectation. Perhaps all felt that by some miracle the 80th Division would start back to the States by January 1, 1919. With the war over except for the signing of the treaty of peace, very few officers or men contemplated remaining in the service—and the one idea of all was: "When do we go home?" As time wore on, however, this restlessness gradually passed away and all settled down to face cheerfully whatever the future might have in store.

In addition to the regular drill periods of some five hours per day throughout the four months in this area, the regiment's time and attention were devoted in very large measure to three quite distinct phases of activity, which may be characterized briefly as follows: First a multiplicity of maneuvers and terrain exercises; second, a large variety of sports, amusements and entertainments; and, third, a lively interest in educational work.

Of these, the first demanded the most time, if not interest. In maneuvers the entire personnel of the unit was present; in terrain exercises, all headquarters down to a battalion were present and all means of communication were in operation, but the troops were merely outlined.

Higher headquarters had determined that all combat troops in back areas should pursue a vigorous course of training between the signing of the armistice and their departure for the United States, having two main purposes in view: to prepare the army for a possible resumption of hostilities; and to keep the men occupied during the trying months of a French winter. Hostilities, at the present writing, seem unlikely to be renewed, but this regiment can testify feelingly that it was kept constantly busy with practically every known variety of maneuver and terrain exercise except a landing engagement; and it is suspected that if there had been one sizeable pond within our area, skiffs would have been built and the regiment given a chance to fight its way ashore.

Maneuvers and terrain exercises were held under all sorts of weather conditions. Snow, rain and mud had no deterrent effect. Staff officers often longed for an opportunity to fight out the problems around a large table over a map, with the chance thereby to form a mental picture of the situation of all units involved. The system of having the staffs on the ground had the advantage of making them get their heels off their desks and take some exercise; and the various signal units of the division obtained excellent practice in rapid communication throughout the winter. But, with staff officers scattered all over the terrain without troops and without anyone representing the enemy, officers came to the brief critiques held at the conclusion of all exercises, with their ideas very hazy about everything supposed to have happened throughout the exercise, save as it affected their own units.

Before the four months were ended, we had fought about every conceivable kind of battle, from the defense of a well-organized sector to the escort of a convoy through supposedly hostile territory. The Regimental Operations Officer, on whom fell the burden of all these problems, often remarked sadly, "Every little maneuver has a meaning all its own!"

But our time was not all devoted to maneuvers and drill. Efforts were made, with the limited facilities at hand, to get and keep as many men as possible interested in all forms of athletics. Football teams were speedily organized in all companies and after some few weeks of practice, intra-battalion games were played to determine the battalion champions. These having been selected, the regimental championship was fought out. In the final battle, A Company defeated I Company after a gruelling contest by the score of 13 to 6.

Meantime, new interest was aroused in track and field meets. Two meets were held at CRY, February 12th and March 12th, with entries from all units. For these meets, a provisional Headquarters Battalion, composed of the Headquarters, Supply and Machine Gun Companies, was organized and its representatives competed with teams from the three line battalions. In both of these regimental meets the Headquarters Battalion carried off



the honors and won the handsome banner donated by Regimental Headquarters.

The regiment wishes to acknowledge its indebtedness to the various societies, especially the Y. M. C. A., the Knights of Columbus, and the American Red Cross, for their efforts, in spite of limited transportation and impossible freight conditions, to keep the men supplied with smokes candy, games and reading matter. Each town had a building or tent for the headquarters of one or another of these societies, and those were the nearest approach to clubs for the men that could be obtained.

During this period the 159th Brigade Amusement Troupe entered upon a very active career. Organized the previous August by Captain Raymond, of this regiment, with picked men from the 317th and 318th Regiments, it had to function spasmodically during the period of active operations. With the arrival, however, of the Division in the 15th Training Area, it entered at once upon a program of entertaining the various units of the brigade. The troupe was composed of men of such versatile talent that an entirely new show was presented every two weeks. The idea of a troupe of this sort spread like wildfire and the regiment soon had troupes of its own performing in the various units.

Dances for the men and dances for the officers occupied an important place in the schedules of all units. Officers' clubs were established in all towns. The Regimental Band traveled continuously from one town to another giving concerts. Many of the men went on leave at one time or another during these four months. Everything, in short, was done with the means at hand to make the winter pass agreeably.

On Christmas Day the units in each town, forgetting or suppressing their own homesickness, tried to make the day one to be remembered by all the French youngsters. Enormous, well-decorated Christmas trees brought the holiday touch and presents were lavishly distributed among the children. Company funds were drawn upon freely to make the day a pleasant one for all the men and it was a peculiar man who had a grouch on that day, in spite of his absence from home.

Hand in hand with training and athletics and amusements went education. It was speedily realized that a man could not drill or play all the time, and that a large percentage of the troops would welcome an opportunity to study. With this in view, schools were established in every town, books obtained and instructors selected from the officers and men. How keen was the interest may be seen from that fact that this division far outnumbered the other eight divisions in the 1st Army, both in the number of its schools and the aggregate of its students. Working on the theory that "A little learning is a dangerous thing," everybody apparently was trying to get out of danger!

In January began a series of horse shows which were greeted with lively enthusiasm and finally gave the Division an opportunity to prove to the entire army that, in the care of animals and transport, it could not be surpassed. On January 21st, after preliminary battalion shows, the Regimental Horse Show was held at CRY. The show was a great success in every way, and the turnouts of horses and equipment left little to be desired. The results, with the winners in each event, follow:

**CLASS A—Four-Line Teams:**

First—Machine Gun Company.

Second—3rd Battalion.

Third—2nd Battalion.

**CLASS B—Pair of Horses or Mules to G. S. Wagons, Limbers or Water Carts:**

First—Supply Company.

Second—Supply Company.

Third—1st Battalion.

- CLASS C**—Single Horse or Mule to Machine Gun Cart, Ammunition Cart, or 37-Millimeter Gun:  
First—Headquarters Company (37-mm. gun).  
Second—Headquarters Company (37-mm. gun).  
Third—Machine Gun Company (machine gun cart).
- CLASS D**—Single Horse or Mule to Medical or Mess Cart:  
First—1st Battalion.  
Second—3rd Battalion.  
Third—2nd Battalion.
- CLASS E**—Enlisted Men's Mounts:  
First—Regimental Headquarters.  
Second—2nd Battalion.  
Third—Supply Company.
- CLASS F**—Officers' Chargers:  
First—2nd Battalion.  
Second—2nd Battalion.  
Third—Regimental Headquarters.

On Friday, the 24th of January, the Brigade Horse Show was held and the 318th Infantry came off on top, in accordance with the following awards:

- CLASS A**—Four-Line Team:  
First—2nd Battalion, 318th Infantry.  
Second—Machine Gun Company, 318th Infantry.  
Third—3rd Battalion, 318th Infantry.
- CLASS B**—Single Horse or Mule to Mess, Maltese or Water Carts:  
First—1st Battalion, 317th Infantry.  
Second—2nd Battalion, 318th Infantry.  
Third—3rd Battalion, 318th Infantry.  
Fourth—1st Battalion, 318th Infantry.
- CLASS C**—Single Horse or Mule to Machine Gun, Ammunition or 37-mm. Carts:  
First—Headquarters Company, 318th Infantry.  
Second—Machine Gun Company, 317th Infantry.  
Third—Machine Gun Company, 318th Infantry.  
Fourth—Headquarters Company, 317th Infantry.
- CLASS D**—Officers' Chargers and Enlished Men's Mounts:  
First—159th Brigade Headquarters.  
Second—2nd Battalion, 318th Infantry.  
Third—2nd Battalion, 318th Infantry.  
Fourth—2nd Battalion, 318th Infantry.
- CLASS E**—Pairs Horses or Mules to Wagon or Limber:  
First—Supply Company, 318th Infantry.  
Second—Supply Company, 318th Infantry.  
Third—159th Brigade Headquarters.  
Fourth—Supply Company, 317th Infantry.
- JUMPING CLASS**:  
First—Cognac, 2nd Battalion, 318th Infantry.  
Second—Over the Top, 159th Brigade Headquarters.  
Third—Vin Rouge, 2nd Battalion, 318th Infantry.  
Fourth—Dugout, 159th Brigade Headquarters.
- CHAMPIONSHIP CLASS** (Suitability for Military Use):  
First—Charlie, Machine Gun Company, 318th Infantry.  
Second—Nigger, Machine Gun Company, 318th Infantry.

On February 1st the Division Horse Show was held near ANCY-LE-FRANC. The following quotation from the Division Bulletin of February 2nd will perhaps prove interesting:

The Division Commander desires to express his pride and satisfaction in conspicuously excellent showing made by the Division at the Horse Show of February 1st.

The care and handling of animals, the care of harness and vehicles, the skill and attention to details of every kind produced this demonstration of transport efficiency which is of such value and credit to the Division.

Every entry was a prize-winning entry and a marked credit to the organization presenting it; those that did not win prizes, lost with honor and credit by narrow margins in a competition of superexcellence.

In the midst of so much excellence, the 318th Infantry nosed out all competitors and carried off the handsome silver cup for the unit winning the greatest number of points. The Machine Gun Company, Captain Cuthbert commanding, deserves especial mention for their remarkable showing, carrying off first and second places with a total of nine points in the contest between gun teams of all machine gun units. The Headquarters Company, Captain Houser commanding, carried off five points in the 37-mm. gun competition, taking second and fourth places against strong competition. The Supply Company, Captain McBride commanding, brought up the total to 15 by taking fourth place in the competition between two line teams.

The 314th Field Artillery ran us a close second, with a total of 14 points.

In the closing event, which counted no points but aroused keen interest, various units brought out their most comical entries. A little Boche Burro, taken "up the line," wearing a great Iron Cross and a German cap and drawing a little cart on which was mounted an "anti-aircraft rifle," represented the Supply Company of this regiment and took first place. This team was brought upon the field in the "Old Virginia" Wagon of the 2nd Battalion and was lifted out by hand and set on the ground in front of the judges amid tremendous applause.

The 80th Division having selected its best representatives, went to TONNERRE to the 1st Corps Horse Show on February 8th and easily defeated the Corps Troops and the 36th and 78th Divisions. There were thirty-three events with a total value of 201 points. The division took first place in fourteen events and second place in eight events for a total of 102 points. The nearest competitor was the 78th Division with 46 points. The 80th Division got 10 points for having the best entry in the show.

On March 5th at the 1st Army Horse Show, at BAR-SUR-AUBE, the 1st Corps was easily victorious, the entries from the 80th Division making this victory possible.

Horse shows, maneuvers, drill, study and athletics alone, however, did not make the winter noteworthy. The note of distinction, setting us above our fellows, came in January, with the arrival of Miss Catharine Hopkins, of New York, and Mrs. Edna B. Cartwright, of Boston, the two most welcome "recruits" the regiment ever received. Ostensibly, they came as representatives of the Y. M. C. A., but the regiment will take oath that they were ambassadors straight from heaven, come to brighten our lives and to remove the burden of our discontent. Their gracious presence, their ever-ready smiles and their tireless efforts in our behalf brought the spirit of home to men who had begun to suffer from nostalgia. We can never pay the debt of gratitude we owe them, but it gives us pleasure to publicly acknowledge it.

Between the conclusion of the period of horse shows and the date of departure from the 15th Training Area, one event stands out prominently about all others, the inspection and review of the entire Division by General Pershing. This took place on March 26th near the little town of PIMELLES within the Divisional Area. A more impressive scene could not be imagined than that of an entire division marching in review past its Commander-in-Chief. The following extract from the Division Bulletin of March 27, 1919, perhaps best expresses the excellence of the review:

The Division Commander desires to express to the Division his great satisfaction, gratification and pride in the appearance and performance of the Division at the Review of the Commander-in-Chief. From the beginning of the concentration, through the inspection, the ceremonies, the



review, to the return to billets, the work was that of seasoned soldiers and measured up to the highest standards of military efficiency.

The Commander-in-Chief was enthusiastic in his repeated expressions of praise and approval, reverting often, in the progress of his inspection, to the "splendid body of men" and the "fine division."

Perhaps the most impressive single incident of the day was the bringing of all the colors of all units together before the Commander-in-Chief, who affixed to each regimental color a silken ribbon commemorating the engagements in which each had taken part. Upon the ribbon of this regiment is the following inscription:

PIICARDY Sector, France, July 23rd to August 18, 1918.

MEUSE-ARGONNE Offensive, France, September 26th to September 20, 1918.

MEUSE-ARGONNE Offensive, France, October 4th to October 12, 1918.

MEUSE-ARGONNE Offensive, France, November 1st to November 6, 1918.

The ribbon was issued in lieu of silver bands, bearing the same inscription, to be given later and affixed to the staff of the regimental color.

On March 20th, the Division passed under the control of the Commanding General, S. O. S. (Service of Supply), under whose direction the Division was to be prepared for its return to the United States. Announcement to this effect had been made on February 27th with the additional information that the Division would sail for the United States in May. Wild enthusiasm greeted these announcements and everyone at once made every possible effort to see that nothing should occur to postpone our departure for a single day.

Upon the conclusion of our service as combat troops, the Commanding General, 1st Army Corps, issued the following general order:

#### HEADQUARTERS FIRST ARMY CORPS, AMERICAN E. F.

March 18, 1919.

##### GENERAL ORDER No. 12.

The 80th Division, having been instructed to prepare for return to the United States, will pass from the command of this Army Corps on March 20, 1919.

The 80th Division arrived in France about June 5, 1918. This Division trained with the British Troops and was on active duty with them in the Artois Sector near Arras in July. The Division was in reserve at the battle of St. Mihiel, except the 320th Infantry and 315th Machine Gun Battalion, which took part in the operations of the 2nd French Colonial Corps. From September 26th to 29th, inclusive, the Division attacked at Bethincourt with the 3rd Corps and advanced 9 kilometers in two days. The Division was withdrawn from the line for five days and again attacked on October 4th at Nantillois. In nine days of heavy fighting through the Bois des Ogons an advance of 4 kilometers was made. The Division was withdrawn from the line October 12th for re-equipment and replacements. The Division moved forward on October 29th and 30th and re-entered the line St. Georges-St. Juvin.

The 80th Division passed under the orders of the 1st Corps on October 23rd in the Le Claon-Le Neufour area, west of the Argonne Forest. On November 1st the Division attacked as the right division of the 1st Corps and in six days advanced a depth of 24 kilometers. The Division was relieved from the line on November 6th, with its patrols on the west bank of the Meuse. From the 18th of November to December 1st, the Division marched 221 kilometers to the 15th Training Area at Ancy-le-Franc. The artillery of the Division was part of the time detached from the Division and was in action at all times from September 26th to November 11th. The Division has remained in the 15th Training Area until its present order to prepare for embarkation to the United States.

The 80th Division was given difficult tasks on the front line and in accomplishing them made a splendid record. The Corps Commander

desires particularly to express his appreciation for the soldierly achievements of this division during the time it served with the 1st Army Corps. After returning to the Training Area where living conditions were not easy and often difficult, the spirit of the division has been excellent and has been manifest at all times. The Division leaves on the first part of its journey with the Corps Commander's congratulations for its excellent record and his wishes for a speedy return to the United States and a successful future.

By command of Major-General Wright.

W. M. FASSETT,  
Chief of Staff.

OFFICIAL:

H. M. NELLY,  
Lt.-Col., A. G. D. Adjutant.

### The 318th Prepares to Go Home

On April 2nd and 3rd the regiment entrained at NUIITS-SOUS-RAVIERES, arriving at MAYET, south of LE MANS in the Department of SARTHE, on the 3rd and 4th. In this area the regiment was concentrated in MAYET, with the exception of the 3rd Battalion and Machine Gun Company, located at PONTVALLAIN, some six kilometers west of MAYET. To everyone's delight, it proved to be the best billeting area the regiment had yet been located in.

Upon arrival in this region, known as the American Embarkation Center, all units immediately proceeded to make good all shortages in records, clothing and equipment. These labors were not too onerous, for we had reached MAYET with everything in excellent shape.

Reports had already reached us at CRY of the numerous inspections which we would have to undergo in the LE MANS Area—and the rumors were not exaggerated. Preparations to meet these inspections consumed many an hour of everyone's attention—but the results were worth it. On April 21st, the inspectors of the Embarkation Center made their final inspection of equipment. Each company and detachment had required every article to be displayed according to a definite plan. The result was that an observer standing on one flank of a company saw a perfectly straight line of steel helmets, another of mess kits, another of toilet articles and so on. As one wag put it: "The Commanding Officer said: 'Bully Beef Cans, Right Dress!—and you could hear the lids click!'"

The following communications from Headquarters, A. E. C. to the Division Commander show the satisfactory nature of the inspections:

1. The Commanding General directs that a copy of this report of the Inspector of the A. E. C. be forwarded to you.

2. He desires me to say that he notes with satisfaction in this Division the same devotion to duty and efficiency in the performance of its duties out of the line, as characterized its conduct in active operations. And that such a spirit of co-operation and such efficiency is well worthy of emulation.

1. Having completed the clothing and equipment inspections of the 80th Division in the ECOMMY Area, I desire to call the attention of the Commanding General to its excellent condition. All instructions that we gave were carried out both in letter and in spirit, and each organization tried to excel in this inspection.

2. Their equipment was very clean and most carefully arranged, the greatest attention being paid to minute details. The Brigade Commanders accompanied the Inspectors and their interest in this work produced the very best results and greatly facilitated the work on our part.

3. The spirit of courtesy and emulation that pervades this division, and the efficient and thorough business methods employed reflect the highest credit upon its entire personnel.

An excellent rifle range with one hundred targets, located some five kilometers east of MAYET, was used continuously for about ten days

following our arrival, to give all units a chance to finish the regular target course begun at CRY. At the conclusion of the record practice, it was found that four men had qualified as expert riflemen, thirty-one as sharpshooters and three hundred and thirty-six as marksmen. The United States Rifle, Model of 1917, was built for combat, not for target practice, especially at 500 and 600 yards, and the number of men qualifying is considered very creditable in view of the rifle used, the haste with which units had to be put through the preliminary instruction practice, and the fact that much of the record firing had to be done in the rain.

The whole time, however, was not devoted to being inspected nor to rifle practice. A very lively baseball league was started at once and competition of the keenest nature was shown in every game. Again, as on a previous occasion for track meets, a Headquarters Battalion, composed of the Headquarters Company, Machine Gun Company and Supply Company, was formed and had a team competing with the teams of the 1st, 2nd and 3rd Battalions. When the last ball had been pitched and the last umpire had escaped with his life, the teams ranked as follows:

	Won	Lost	Percentage
2nd Battalion -----	6	3	.667
3rd Battalion -----	5	4	.556
1st Battalion -----	4	5	.444
Headquarters Battalion -----	3	6	.333

A basketball league with teams from the 2nd, 3rd and Headquarters Battalions flourished coincidentally with the baseball league and a hard fought series of games resulted finally as follows:

	Won	Lost	Percentage
Headquarters Battalion -----	5	2	.714
3rd Battalion -----	4	3	.571
2nd Battalion -----	1	5	.167

To add a little variety to our existence, a platoon competition in close order drill was held at MAYET on April 30th. G Company, proud of its victory over M Company at CRY on March 19th, issued a challenge to any and all platoons to compete with them. At 1:30 P. M., April 30th, the following platoons entered the contest:

2nd Platoon of C Company.

1st Platoon of D Company.

1st Platoon of E Company.

2nd Platoon of G Company.

Provisional Platoon of Headquarters Company.

After an excellent showing by each platoon, the 1st Platoon of D Company, First Lieutenant M. F. Rodgers commanding, was declared the winner with the 1st Platoon of E Company, Sergeant W. L. Phalen commanding, second.

About the middle of April a movement began to form an association of the veterans of the 80th Division. Captain R. P. Williams, Jr., and Sergeant William V. Moseley represented the 318th Regiment at the preliminary meetings. The proposal was received with great enthusiasm throughout the division and units vied with each other for the highest percentage of enrollments. The executive committee as finally selected, to serve until October, 1920, consisted of two representatives from this Brigade, two from the 160th Brigade, two from the 155th Field Artillery Brigade and two from Divisional Troops. The Division Commander, Major-General Adelbert Cronkhite, was elected president of the association; Colonel W. H. Waldron, chief of staff, vice-president; and Captain Frederick Hickman, adjutant, 319th Infantry, secretary. Captain Reuel W. Elton, 318th Infantry, was selected by the executive committee as resident secretary and treasurer. Pittsburgh was selected for the division's permanent headquarters. At the date of leaving this area, this regiment had enrolled six life members and 2,254 annual members.

On May 8th the entire regiment was inspected and reviewed by Major-



General Cronkhite, who had returned to the command of the Division on April 12th after an absence of nearly five months as Commanding General of the 9th Army Corps. This corps had been broken up upon the return of its divisions to the United States.

By great good luck May 8th was a perfect spring day and nothing occurred to mar the impressiveness of the review. Yet through it all there was a touch of sadness in the thought that the regiment was together as a whole for perhaps the last time, a fighting unit assembled to salute its beloved commander on the eve of its return to civil life.

#### Homeward Bound

After many disappointments, definite orders for departure for BREST finally arrived and the regiment entrained at MAYET in the following order:

- May 13th: 1st Battalion.  
2nd Battalion (less G and H Companies).
- May 14th: G and H Companies.  
3rd Battalion.
- May 15th: Regimental Headquarters.  
Headquarters Company.  
Machine Gun Company.  
Supply Company.  
Medical Detachment.

All units were in camp at PONTANEZEN, near BREST, by 2 P. M. on the 16th. Our stay was short, but busy. In spite of all the inspections to which we were subjected in the LE MANS area, nobody at BREST seemed inclined to take anything on faith—and a frantic round of inspections began for each unit immediately upon arrival. Furthermore, efforts at MAYET to secure complete equipment seemed, in retrospection, a waste of time, as every man was given at BREST a complete new outfit without requisition. All activities at BREST functioned according to a somewhat complicated but extremely efficient system—and the entire regiment was speedily passed through all tests and declared ready for return to the United States.

Early in the evening of the 16th, only a few hours after the arrival of the last units in camp, a warning order was received to be ready to leave at any hour after noon, May 17th. A shout of joy, audible for miles, went up all through our section of the camp at this unexpected stroke of good fortune. We had arrived expecting to stay at BREST at least a week. To be greeted with such a pleasant surprise was almost too good to be true.

Three very interesting communications reached the regiment on May 16th. Of these, two appeared in the 80th Division Bulletin of May 14th and are as follows:

1. The following letter has been received from Lieutenant-General Robert Lee Bullard, U. S. A., in command of the III Corps, American E. F., during the Meuse-Argonne offensive:

Under the pressure of great events I, at that time commanding the III Corps to which the 80th Division then belonged, failed to cite the gallant conduct of the Division in making three successive assaults with great bravery and finally taking and driving the enemy from the Bois-des-Ogons in the great battle of the Meuse-Argonne. I cite it now. It was truly admirable. We see it now more plainly in the light of the results that followed.

I ask that this be communicated to your gallant Division.

2. The following letter has been received from the Adjutant-General, G. H. Q., American E. F.:

The 80th Division was the only Division which went into line in the Meuse-Argonne offensive three times.

This fact is now a matter of record and is to be incorporated in the final report of the Commander-in-Chief, American Expeditionary Forces, to the Secretary of War, to be submitted in the near future.

The third appeared in the Division Bulletin of May 16th and is as follows:

1. The following communication has been received from the French Government:

FRENCH REPUBLIC

THE PRESIDENT OF THE COUNCIL

MINISTER OF WAR.

Paris, May 13, 1919.

To the Commanding General of the 80th American Division:

My Dear General:

At the time when the 80th Division is preparing to return to its homes, I wish to express to your soldiers the gratitude of the Government of the Republic for the glorious part they have played in the last battles of the great war.

In the Meuse-Argonne battle, in the month of September, the 80th Division was to display its real strength in the attack which took it from the Forges Brook up to the woods of Cote Lemont and Dannevoux.

Several days later, in the hard fighting around the Bois des Ogons and Cunel and on the right bank of the Meuse it gave proof of the same qualities.

From the fourth to the twelfth of October, the Division lost 2,000 men.

November 1st, it took a brilliant part in the attack on Imecourt and Buzancy and in the pursuit of the enemy as far as the Meuse, which the Division reached at LETANE.

I express to the 80th Division my wish for a pleasant voyage and I voice the fervent hope that the blood shed on the soil of France may create an indestructible bond between our two great democracies.

Accept, my dear general, the assurances of my highest esteem.

For the President of the Council and by his order.

The High Commissioner of Franco-American War Affairs,

ANDRE TARDIEU.

Early on the morning of May 17th, orders arrived that the regiment, less L, M and Supply Companies, would sail that day on the U. S. S. MAUI. Accordingly, at 12 noon the regiment marched out of PONTANEZEN Camp, reaching BREST at 1:30 P. M. Three lighters were at once loaded and put out for the ship, which had reached the harbor only at 1 P. M.

The MAUI is an oil-burning vessel of some 17,000 tons, formerly plying between San Francisco and the Hawaiian Islands. Her ability to make three round trips between the United States and France without replenishing fuel augured well for a swift departure from BREST, and at 4:55 P. M. on May 17th anchor was weighed and our service overseas came to an end.

Eleven months and two weeks had been passed on French soil—and it was with mixed emotions that we saw the coast of Brittany recede in the distance. Not a man but was keen to set foot on American soil again; but not a man regretted the year spent in France, fighting beside our allies of France and England. A touch of sadness came to many at the thought that the close associations of campaigning days were so soon to end.

A storm of several days' duration caused many to take up and maintain a "position of readiness" near the rail. But, by May 22nd, the waves had subsided, the steamer rode on an even keel, and the thought that America was soon to be reached was uppermost in all minds.

On May 27th land was sighted, and by 3 P. M. the ship lay at anchor at Newport News.

A few days later the men had returned to their homes.

The colors of the regiment were presented to the State of Virginia, which was altogether fitting, as two-thirds of the men of the 318th who laid down their lives on the field of battle were from that state.

## Summary of Activities—Three Hundred and Seventeenth Infantry, Eightieth Division

Organized at Camp Lee, Va., August, 1917, and trained there until May, 1918. On May 25th marched through Hopewell to waiting steamers on the James and embarked for Lambert's Point. Boarded the *Mongolia* there and sailed May 26th. Arrived at Brest June 8th and marched to rest camp, several miles out of town. Four days later regiment returned to Brest and entrained for Calais, reaching there June 15th. Left on the 18th for Samer, and marched from there to Doudeauville. Commenced training with the British. Entrained at Desvres July 5th, detraining at Doullens that night. From July 25th to August 18th, occupied front line trenches. Relieved on latter date and on August 22nd entrained for the American sector in the eastern part of France. Detrained at Latrecy, and marched to Pouvres-sur-Aube. Moved to Coupray August 31st. Entrained at Latrecy September 2nd for Tronville-Nancois, marching thence to Bois de Montfromont. Proceeded to Salmagne September 8th. Remained in reserve during St. Mihiel operation. Left Salmagne September 15th, reaching Bois la Ville on the 19th. Moved to Bois Bouchet September 25th. Took part in Meuse-Argonne offensive. Relieved November 6th and assembled north of Sommauthe. Started back towards Le Claon November 8th, arriving there on the 11th. Left for Fifteenth Training Area November 18th, proceeding through towns of Triacourt, Auzecourt, Robert Espagne, Hoericourt, Laneuville, Nully, Jaucourt, Beurey, Recey Haute Rive, arriving in the area November 29th. Remained in that area four months. Entrained at Nuits-Raviere for Le Mans area April 3, 1919, arriving at Ecommoy and Mayet 4th/5th of April.



# History of the Three Hundred and Seventeenth Infantry

[EDITOR'S NOTE: Compiled from the History of the 317th Infantry, by First Lieutenant Edley B. Craighill.]

## Organization of the Regiment

On the morning of August 27, 1917, a number of officers who had graduated at the First Officers Training School at Fort Myer, Virginia, reported at Camp Lee, for duty. They were at once assigned to various regiments and spent the next few days in getting the barracks and grounds in shape to receive the first draft. A conference of officers was held on the 5th of September at which they were advised the first increment of drafted men would arrive that night.

Companies A, E and I were the first of the 317th Infantry to be organized, each being assigned 150 men, and the quota of officers was equally divided between the three for the purpose of speeding up instruction. The colonel of the regiment was a splendid organizer and was gifted with the knack of getting the most out of his officers with the least possible grumbling. The work of organizing the regiment was a stupendous task in itself. Then there was the training of the men, it being essential that they be given as good a start as possible. The three companies were whipped into very good shape in a short while, this training being expedited because the officers were competent, and well fitted for their work.

The second contingent of drafted men reached Camp Lee the 22nd of September and the remaining companies of the 317th were filled up to a strength of 150 men each. These companies were harder to organize than the first, due in large measure to the scarcity of officers, many of whom were on duty in the mustering office. Mustering in the regiment was a tremendous job but the lieutenant-colonel who had this in charge systematized the work to such a degree that the process moved like clockwork.

On October 7, 1917, the third contingent of men arrived which permitted of the strength of the companies being increased to approximately 220 men. Company A was selected in a competitive drill on the 11th of October to form a part of the provisional battalion to represent the division at the Virginia State Fair at Richmond. This battalion was reviewed by Governor Stuart, and afterwards gave an exhibition drill at the Fair Grounds, receiving many favorable comments on their appearance. As the time passed and training progressed marked improvement commenced to manifest itself especially in the physical condition of the men.

The schedule of training that was followed included the school of the soldier, the squad, and the company. The new extended order movements received from foreign armies were puzzling at first but study and practice soon qualified the men to execute them efficiently. Battalion drills and parades were soon added to the schedule. These ceremonies never failed to put the men on their metal as there was a keen spirit of competition among the various companies. Entertainment in abundance and variety was provided for the men by the various welfare agencies. The fall of 1917 passed swiftly as did the winter, which will long be remembered for its severity. There was very little sickness comparatively speaking in the regiment.

With the advent of spring training assumed a more warlike aspect. Long lines of trenches were dug and conditions of warfare at the front in Europe simulated as much as possible. Target practice on the newly constructed range between Petersburg and Hopewell started and many high scores were established.

Late in April, 1918, the Secretary of War visited the camp and the 80th Division passed in review before him. He was evidently well pleased for his reports spoke in the highest terms of the fitness and efficiency of the entire division.

Shortly after this rumors concerning the early departure of the division for France began to go the rounds. Property had to be checked up, full equipment had to be issued every man and innumerable other details attended to.

Early in May, 1918, the 159th Infantry Brigade composed of the 317th and 318th Regiments of infantry paraded by request in Petersburg in heavy marching order. The streets were packed with people but there was very little demonstration of any sort. The period from then to the 25th of May was spent in rehearsing what had already been learned.

### Embarkation and Journey Overseas

At noon of May 25, 1918, officers' call sounded from regimental headquarters. The consultation lasted thirty minutes after which orders were issued to the various companies to prepare for departure. Assembly sounded at 2:15 that afternoon and by 2:30 the column was on the march. A pause was made in Hopewell where cold drinks were served to the men by the people of the community. On reaching the heights of the James the marching order was reduced to columns of twos and the long lines filed down many flights of steps until the water level was reached. There the men boarded three waiting river steamers and the trip down the James commenced. Lambert's Point was reached between twelve and one that night, where the men disembarked, immediately boarding the U. S. S. *Mongolia*.

By 11 o'clock the morning of May 26th the *Mongolia* was under way. The days from then on seemed to pass slowly in some respects and yet, after all, the time was comparatively short until the landing in France. The voyage was productive of many hardships but the morale of the men remained at high pitch. A considerable number of men suffered from seasickness on the way over. Several submarine alarms were given and all hands stood by the life boats, but nothing happened. As the convoy came closer to France the destroyer escort increased to eleven. Before reaching France the fleet split up, half of the ships going to Bordeaux and the remainder to Brest. The harbor of Brest, with its numerous breakwaters, was reached on June 8, 1918. The men were conveyed to shore on lighters and then took up the march to the rest camp four miles out of town, where the first night in France was spent.

### Brest—Calais—Doudeauville and Vicinity

The camp at Brest was under canvas and was very inadequate and generally unsatisfactory. The sanitary conditions were fair but only because the troops made them so. There were many points of interest in the vicinity and the surroundings were quite pleasing in some respects. As was the case with most "rest camps" however there was but little rest. Several practice marches were taken. While here instructions were received to cut down the size of packs also to leave behind much company property, most of which was never seen again.

At the end of four days the command marched back to Brest and entrained for an unknown destination. The cars were crowded as five days rations were carried besides the equipment. Very little sleep could be obtained due to the congested conditions. The second night of the journey the train passed through Amiens. This point was only ten miles removed from the German lines and was under intermittent shell fire. A stop was made here for coffee which was dispensed by British soldiers. British base camps were scattered all along the line of travel and everywhere could be seen cemeteries filled with English dead.

At 2:15 on the afternoon of June 15th the train reached Calais and the Americans at once detrained and formed into companies. Camp was reached between four and five o'clock and the men immediately went into quarters. The tents were conical in shape with the floors sunk two feet below the ground level and sand bags around the outside for protection in the case of air raids. Due to lack of space 16 men had to be assigned to each tent so consequently there was little room for moving around. The sand was very deep and disagreeable and penetrated everything from blankets to



mess kits. On the morning of the 16th orders were received to turn in everything with the exception of one shirt, one pair of trousers, one blouse and one suit of underwear. The hardest thing of all was giving up American rifles for those of British make. After that no one knew what to expect. The Germans staged an air raid the second night of the 317th's stay in this camp but no casualties resulted.

June 18th saw the command marching out of camp on its way to the train. The process of entraining and detraining had now become largely a matter of course and could be effected very speedily. By five o'clock that afternoon the train pulled up at Samer, another British camp, although not so large as the one at Calais. Here the men were allowed to rest an hour and eat supper prepared by British troops. The journey was then resumed but this time on foot. The men were cramped and tired from their close quarters in the French box cars and that march will always stand out in memory as a most painful experience. Feet were heavy and bodies aching when shortly before midnight the column drifted down the hill into the little town of Doudeauville. The regiment was separated here, the companies being quartered in small towns in the area. Regimental headquarters and the 1st Battalion were situated in Doudeauville. 2nd Battalion headquarters were in Bezinghem but this village was only large enough to accommodate one company so the other three were billeted in nearby hamlets. The 3rd Battalion was located at Grandall.

#### Training in Doudeauville Area and Move to Doullens

Circumstances were not of the most pleasing but everyone realized that little could be expected in the way of comforts or luxuries. The immediate surroundings were pleasant to look upon in any event. Fields of wheat could be seen on every hand but there was no corn. Good water was very scarce and at times it was almost necessary to drink the light wines afforded by the cafes and estaminets. The roads in this section were unusually good, and showed great engineering skill. Assignments to permanent billets were made the morning after arrival and the remainder of the day was spent in "policing" the town.

The division was now a part of the II Army Corps. Various schools were started for the training of specialists in different branches of the service. It was quite a disappointment to the men when they learned that the Lewis machine gun would be substituted for the Browning. This latter gun surpassed by far any automatic weapons used by European armies. Live hand grenades were used in bombing instruction. Gas drills were started and detailed instructions in bayonet fighting were given.

On the 29th of June the brigade was reviewed by the Duke of Connaught, who expressed himself as greatly pleased. The following letter from the Brigade commander is self explanatory:

#### HEADQUARTERS 159th INFANTRY BRIGADE AMERICAN EXPEDITIONARY FORCES

##### MEMORANDUM

No. 3

France, June 30, 1918.

It is with great pleasure that the Brigade Commander announces to the Brigade the fact that His Royal Highness, the Duke of Connaught, commented most favorably on the showing made by the Brigade in the review of the 29th instant and that he desired an expression of his gratification communicated to the officers and men of the Brigade.

This was the first body of United State troops ever reviewed by him, and he was particularly impressed with the general set up, sturdiness, and soldierly appearance of all.

To have made such an impression on this illustrious British soldier should be a matter of pride to every member of the Brigade, and an incentive to the performance of greater deeds.



This is but a small peace victory, but an index to what may be expected of the Brigade in the future.

By command of Brigadier General Jamerson:

R. W. HARDENBERGH,  
Major, Infantry,  
Adjutant.

True Copy

General Pershing reviewed a battalion of the regiment during one of his flying visits to the area and stated that he was well satisfied with the progress of the training. These things tended to create a higher morale and inspired the men to work harder than ever.

Athletic contests of various kinds were staged on the Fourth of July. That evening the first intimation of a move was received. Preparations were started at once and by 6:15 the morning of the 5th the column was on the way to the railroad center at Desvres. As each successive unit arrived arms were stacked and the men fell out to rest. Cars were soon placed and before 11:45 A. M. the entrainment was completed and another stage of the journey to the front had begun.

The country along the way appeared more broken, with heavily wooded areas bordering the tracks. St. Pol, one of the towns passed through, had suffered from numerous air raids. Bomb proof dugouts could be seen and sand bags were piled about the doors and windows to keep out flying shell splinters. Shortly after leaving St. Pol the train was switched on to a siding and kept there the entire afternoon, the journey not being resumed until nearly dusk. Doullens was reached sometime after midnight and the men detrained and were escorted to their billets by guides. Some companies were led astray and in a number of cases men simply rolled up in their blankets and fell asleep where they were.

#### Doullens and a Tour in the Trenches

There was no reveille the next morning, so everybody slept late. The routine task of policing quarters and the improvement of sanitary conditions was taken up under the direction of the Regimental Surgeon. Lumber was very difficult to obtain, so it was impossible to construct satisfactory bath houses or anything else. The billets were very conveniently situated in most cases and it was only a matter of a short time until everyone was settled. Doullens was large enough to accommodate all three battalions which made for satisfactory administration. Heretofore the regiment had been split up, the battalions being separated and billeted in adjoining villages, which necessitated a great deal of courier work. Doullens was a large town with a number of stores, at which purchases of all sort could be made, even military supplies being available. There were also several hotels affording very good meals. It was possible to obtain eggs there, which rendered them especially attractive to the Americans.

Doullens was situated directly south of St. Pol and a little southwest of Arras. The front line at that time extended from in front of Lens southwest by Arras, and on past Gommecourt, Hebuterne and Albert. Around the latter place the fighting had been of a most serious nature, the Germans having attempted to drive on westward, flanking the allied positions. These attempts had been unsuccessful, the enemy having been repulsed time and again, so the lines were comparatively permanent when the Americans arrived in that sector to complete their training.

Open warfare had not been thought of at this time, because the British, like everyone else, thought the war would last two more years at least. It was not until the fighting at Chateau Thierry, where the Americans met and stopped the Prussian Guard, that hopes commenced to rise. The training here was no different from that gone through with before, except that everyone knew that at last it would terminate in actual front line service.

The British evacuation hospital at Doullens was bombed by the Germans about the middle of May and several American Red Cross nurses and a number of wounded soldiers were killed. Division headquarters had a narrow escape one night when a bomb dropped on a building a short distance away, totally demolishing it and killing several civilians.

Everybody in the command was thrilled when news was received that

the 317th would occupy the Hebuterne sector in conjunction with the First Wellington New Zealand Rifle Brigade. Quite a lot had been heard of the New Zealanders and the men felt that they would have to be on their metal to surpass their high standards of courage and gallantry.

Officers and non-commissioned officers of the 317th were sent up to the front for the purpose of reconnaissance, in order to be familiar with the situation when the line was taken over. The officers of each battalion went separately over a period of four days and secured invaluable information. When these various details returned to their units preparations were immediately started for the move to the front and by noon of July 24th, all arrangements were completed.

The plan was for one battalion at a time to occupy the sector in conjunction with the New Zealand Division during the period from July 25th to August 18th. Not a little excitement prevailed on the morning of July 24th, when the first detail made ready to go into the trenches. From the 25th of July to the 6th of August, the sixteen platoons of each battalion were attached as such to New Zealand troops in the front lines. During this period neither companies or battalions were attached as units; company commanders and battalion headquarters were assigned for instruction to battalion headquarters of the New Zealanders. The 1st Battalion served from July 25th to 29th and the 2nd Battalion from July 29th to August 2nd, when it was relieved by the 3rd Battalion. The total casualties sustained during this short stay in the trenches amounted to nine killed, forty wounded and two missing. Sergeant Fred B. Stultz and Private Albert R. Hall were the first men of the 317th to lose their lives, being killed on July 27, 1918. The conduct of the regiment under its baptism of fire upheld the best traditions of American arms and earned the praise of the New Zealanders. From August 7th to 18th, each battalion did a tour of duty as a separate unit with a New Zealand personnel of one officer and twenty-three privates assigned to each company.

On August 7th, the 1st Battalion relieved the 1st Canterbury Battalion New Zealand Rifles effecting this relief in daylight. The sector occupied was the front line battalion sub-sector, just northeast of and including the village of Hebuterne. This sector was unusually quiet at that time and no casualties were suffered.

The 2nd Battalion relieved the 1st in this sector on August 11th. In company with the front battalion of the New Zealand Brigade, the 2nd battalion "jumped off" on the 16th of August without artillery preparation, advancing two kilometers to a system of trenches southeast of Serre Ridge, the new line at once being consolidated. Only very slight resistance from scattered machine gun posts was encountered as the German evacuation here had been very complete. Few prisoners were captured and but little material, which was disappointing, of course. Six enlisted men of the 2nd Battalion were killed and two officers and twenty-nine enlisted men were wounded, with one missing in this engagement. The 2nd Battalion was relieved on the night of August 16th, by a battalion of the 2nd New Zealand Infantry Brigade.

The 3rd Battalion of the 317th Infantry relieved the support battalion of the 2nd New Zealand Infantry Brigade on the night of August 16th. The following day the battalion was ordered forward to occupy the trench system, which had been consolidated by the 2nd Battalion. It remained there for several days under intermittent but violent artillery fire until relieved by the 3rd Battalion of the New Zealand Rifle Brigade. Casualties during this tour in the lines were light, one man being killed and one officer and two privates wounded.

There were many acts of personal bravery during the regiment's stay in the trenches. R. H. Hall, private first-class, now Corporal of Company C of this regiment, was cited for bravery on the field.

#### HEADQUARTERS EIGHTIETH DIVISION AMERICAN EXPEDITIONARY FORCES

##### SPECIAL BULLETIN:

France, September 4, 1918.

1. The Division Commander takes great pleasure in publishing the following order to the Command, and at the same time to express his high



appreciation of the gallant acts recorded, acts which he is confident will be duplicated on many fields of battle by many other members of the Command:

#### ROUTINE ORDERS

by  
GENERAL HON. SIR J. H. G. BYNG  
K. C. B., KG. C. M. G., M. V. O.  
COMMANDING THIRD ARMY.

MILITARY SECRETARY'S BRANCH.

Monday, August 19, 1918.

1729. HONORS AND AWARDS.—The Field Marshal Commander-in-Chief has, under special authority granted by His Majesty the King, awarded the following decorations:

#### THE MILITARY MEDAL

No. 1817237—Private (1st Class) R. H. Hall, U. S. Infantry.

On the night of 26th, 27th July, a patrol of seven other ranks (two of Auckland, and five U. S. A.), left NAMELESS TRENCH at K.23.b.o.2, and returned to point of departure.

Time of departure 1:00 A. M., due to return at 3:00 A. M.

Object: To keep touch between our front line posts, and night posts in neighborhood of THE POINT (K.23.b.1.7).

On the return journey, the Patrol seems to have missed BLIND ALLEY, and to have got into PIG TRENCH. They were proceeding up the latter and were challenged by an enemy sentry at about K.23.b.7.6. The location of this place is somewhat doubtful. The Patrol Leader (Corporal Roper), shot the sentry and American Private Hall dashed in and killed three with the bayonet. Three Machine Guns opened up and bombs were thrown, and it was clear the enemy were in some strength.

The Patrol scattered, and returned to our trenches. Three are missing—one of our men and two U. S. A. It is impossible to say whether the missing men are killed or now Prisoners of War.

Upon receipt of the orders conferred, they will be delivered with such military ceremony as the circumstances of service may permit.

By command of Major General Cronkhite.

During the foregoing engagement, the 317th Regiment advanced approximately three thousand yards and then occupied the position on Serre Ridge opposite Bapaume. Shortly after the departure of the Americans from this sector Bapaume was captured by the New Zealanders. The last battalion of the 317th was relieved on the evening of August 18th and preparations were started for the move south. The news at this time was very encouraging, as the Allied armies were advancing on all sectors.

The morning of August 22nd found the regiment entrained and moving south.

#### The American Sector, Saint-Mihiel and First Phase of the Meuse Offensive

The regiment at this time was in first-class condition and the men were keen to reach the American sector and participate in the big drive about to be launched by General Pershing. Events were moving so fast that everyone was afraid the war would end before the regiment got in any real battle.

Few outfits in the American Army made as many moves as the 317th Infantry. It had already traveled from one end of France to the other and was now retracing its steps. Up until this time American troops had been sandwiched in with the French and English armies, but plans now provided for an American Army in a sector of its own. The British, assisted by several American divisions, were pushing the Germans back before Cambrai, and the French with the aid of other American divisions were pressing forward in front of Soissons. St. Mihiel remained the most prominent salient in the line, it was to straighten out this angle that the American army was being assembled.

The regiment marched to Domart-en-Ponthien on August 19th, remaining there until the 21st, then on to East Prouville, at which place British rifles were turned in and the American Springfield, Model 1917, issued.



The regiment's equipment was now mixed, being part British and part American. British gas masks and helmets were used throughout the campaign. The regiment entrained for Latrecy on August 22nd and arrived there tired and exhausted but very glad to have reached the American sector.

The next day the 317th took to the road again with Pouvres-sur-Aube as its destination. Here the regiment was split and billeted in eight different towns. Regimental Headquarters, Supply Company and A Company remained in Pouvres-sur-Aube. First Battalion Headquarters with Companies B, C and D were at Arbott. The 2nd Battalion was distributed in three small towns, Bay furnishing accommodations for Battalion headquarters and Companies E and G, with Company F at Aulnoy and Company H in Coermaines. Third Battalion headquarters with Companies I and K were at Chamroy, L Company and the Regimental Machine Gun Company at Vitry-en-Montagne, and Company M at Rouelles. Only a week was spent here, but it was the most enjoyable week the men had spent in France except the stay at Doullens. The French people in this area were very kind and did everything possible to make the Americans feel at home.

On the 31st of August the regiment marched to Coupray returning on September 1st to spend the night at Latrecy. The following day the command entrained for Tronville-Nancois and on arriving there marched to the northern end of Bois de Montfromont where it bivouacked. Continuing to Nant-le-Grand and Nant-le-Petit the regiment went into billets. Never before had such a tremendous concentration of men, guns and material been seen as was concentrated for the drive on St. Mihiel. It was a wise decision of Marshal Foch designating the First American Army under General Pershing to wipe out the last prominent salient on the western front—well did he know the keenness and punch required for this undertaking.

On September 8th the regiment moved to Salmagne as the division was assigned to the reserve for this offensive. The night of the eleventh found the artillery massed hub to hub as far as the eye could see, and some 600,000 men were concentrated for the first big offensive of the American army.

The dawn of September 12th was ushered in with the thunder of thousands of guns, and the infantry advanced on schedule time. By the morning of the 13th patrols from the IV and V Corps met at Vigneulles. In less than two days the St. Mihiel salient had been eliminated and the First Army had completed its mission, with the capture of thousands of prisoners and vast quantities of guns and supplies. This accomplishment inspired the allies with new hope and confidence and also made the Germans realize the strength of the new force they had to cope with.

The 80th Division had not been actively engaged in this battle having been held in the reserve. The next objective was the Meuse-Argonne, so on September 15th the 317th Infantry marched from Salmagne arriving at Loisey that night where camp was made. The next day the command proceeded in trucks to the Osches Woods and bivouacked there until the 19th when a move was made to the Bois le Ville. On the 25th the regiment marched to the Bois Bouchet where it remained under cover in the woods all day.

Plans for the next operation provided that on the 26th of September the III Army Corps with the 80th Division in the center, the 33rd on the right, the 4th on the left, with the 3rd Division in reserve, were to attack in the direction of Mezieres with the mission of breaking the enemy resistance between Rau de Forges and Bois de Foret, advancing north organizing the left bank of the Meuse for defense as the attack progressed.

Orders from corps headquarters were for the leading elements to follow the rolling barrage as closely as possible, in order to penetrate the German second position, where the line would halt thirty minutes, except in Bois de Jure through which the right of the line would advance to the Corps objective, following the rolling barrage and mopping up the woods as it advanced. The 160th Brigade was in the lead, with the 319th Infantry on the right; and the 320th Infantry on the left; each regiment echeloned in depth with one battalion in front line. The troops attached to this

brigade for the execution of the attack were one battalion 313th Field Artillery and one company of the 305th Engineers.

The 159th brigade, less the 313th Machine Gun Battalion, and one company of the 305th Engineers formed the divisional reserve, so on the night of the 25th-26th of September the regiment moved into its position and bivouacked in a system of trenches two kilometers southwest of Châtinaucourt. The men were thoroughly equipped and in excellent spirits. Seven thirty the morning of the 26th the 317th moved by battalions to a position north of Esnes-Laclaire road; and about 1:30 the same day moved forward in column of battalions to take up position on Hill 272, two kilometers north of Bethincourt, in support of the 319th Infantry which was the right regiment of the attacking brigade. On arriving in this new position the 1st Battalion, Regimental Machine Gun Company and One Pounder Platoon were attached to the 319th Infantry, so continued their march on through Guercourt, deploying on the southern edge of the Bois Jure, moving north into the woods and remaining in support during the night of September 26th-27th.

The 3rd Battalion on arriving at Hill 272 was attached to the 320th Infantry, which was the left regiment of the attacking brigade, moving into position just north of Hill 259 and northeast of Cuisy about 7:30 in the evening. It remained in support of the 320th Infantry during the night of September 26th-27th, the remainder of the regiment going into bivouac in trenches two kilometers north of Bethincourt. The 313th and 314th Machine Gun Battalions took up position immediately in front of trench Blanchard for long range overhead fire. The Trench Mortar Battery occupied a position in Hambourg trench, with a mission of cutting wire and putting destructive fire in the vicinity of the town of Bethincourt.

The attack on the morning of the 26th had been preceded by a heavy artillery barrage and the infantry left their parallel of departure, trench d'Alsace, trench Coveland, trench Brody advancing under the protection of the rolling barrage. The bridge for heavy traffic over the Forges River at Bethincourt was completed by the 305th Engineers at about 9:00 in the morning, and three batteries of field artillery immediately crossed over it. The greatest resistance during the first phase of the attack was machine gun fire from the southeastern edge of Bois des Forges, from trench de Billemont and Bois de Jure. By 12:00 noon the attacking troops approached the Corps objective and at this time the brigade was moved forward to the vicinity of Bethincourt, in order to support the attack more closely.

During the afternoon the fighting continued and the opposition grew stronger from both artillery and machine gun fire which came from the Bois de Dannevoux, Bois de Mariaux, the Bois de Septsarges. The 160th Brigade was ordered to the attack again: in order that the Army objective might be gained before nightfall. In compliance with these orders this brigade after slight artillery preparation executed an attack which was only partially successful. By midnight of the 26th-27th the 319th Infantry had reached the Army objective with its right flank resting on the Meuse. During the night the 320th Infantry pressed its attack and reached a position along the northern edge of the Bois d'en Dela, but was unable to advance further without incurring very heavy casualties; due to the heavy artillery and machine gun fire coming from the Bois de Dannevoux.

On the morning of the 27th the 3rd Battalion of this regiment with the Regimental Machine Gun Company and One Pounder Platoon attached, moved to the hillside a little northwest of Dannevoux, in support of the 319th Infantry. They moved into the Bois d'en Dela and remained in support. At 1:00 o'clock the afternoon of the 27th the 160th Brigade attacked and advanced to the Army objective. Early in the morning of the 28th, a counter attack on the left flank from the direction of Briulles was repulsed, and reports were also received that the town Vilosnes was completely destroyed by enemy mines, as well as the bridges at Vilosnes, Sivry and Consenvoye.

At 4:00 o'clock the evening of the 28th the 2nd Battalion of this



was attached to the 320th Infantry, and moved into position along the eastern fringe of the Bois de Septsarges between 5:00 and 6:00 the same evening, filling the gap in the line between the 320th and the 4th Division. This move being successful, communication immediately established with the latter. The 3rd Battalion the afternoon moved into the lines and took up its position along the limits of Bois de la Cote Lemort, the remainder of the regiment in its former location. The outstanding feature of the day's was the repeated attacks on Hill 281 south of Brieuilles, and the the large dump north of Bois la Ville on the left bank of the during the evening of the 28th orders were received for the reserve division; and on the night of the 28th-29th this relief was. Upon being relieved the battalion and special units attached returned to the regiment. The same evening orders were received to a position in support of the 37th Division, so the regiment behaved by battalions to the northern edge of the Bois de Montfaucon. Orders however were revoked before the movement had been completed and the regiment went into bivouac in the trenches northeast and Cuisy.

The 30th day of September brought no changes in the location of the regiment. The 1st Battalion, Machine Gun Company and One Pounder were in trenches one kilometer northeast of Malancourt, with the 2nd Battalion in trenches just east of Cuisy, and the 3rd Battalion south of Hill 236. Regimental Headquarters was established on the Bethincourt road near the co-ordinates 14.4-77.5. Although our regiment was in the front line during this drive, it had been put to many hardships and had suffered a few light casualties, amounting to eighteen killed. It is most important that the results of this offensive were good for during the three days fighting the division had made a fine record, gaining all of its objectives and advancing a total distance of nine kilometers. The 80th was opposed in this engagement by German divisions, the 7th Reserve Division, 117th Division, 5th Reserve Division and various Landstrum Battalions. Here had fallen thirty-five officers and 815 other ranks, aside from a great deal of guns and ammunition, totaling seventy-seven German machine guns, 537 German rifles, sixteen pieces of artillery, 5025 grenades and 5,005,000 rounds of small arms ammunition. The casualties for the division in killed, wounded and missing was twenty-officers and 1,037 men.

#### Nantillois and the Bois des Ogons

The 1st, 2nd and 3rd of October brought no changes worth mentioning in the location of the regiment. The men were weary and worn out from constant marching, taking up positions in support and being on duty at all times to fill any gap that might occur. The high ridge of Cuisy afforded splendid observation of the surrounding country. Everyone was more or less curious to see exactly what it looked like to the left was a high and prominent peak with the town of Nantillois perched upon its crest and the slopes receding gently about the right, snuggling in the valley was Dannevoux, with the heights of the distance on the northeast bank of the Meuse, where the regiment had located masked batteries which gave a great deal of

The trenches the 317th was now occupying had been formerly manned by the Germans and old machine gun posts were everywhere with the machine guns mounted. There were hideous wire entanglements, and the ground was literally perforated with shell holes made by the American artillery of September 26th. Back behind in the valley dumps of various kinds were springing up all around, and the roads were jammed with supplies, artillery and every kind of motor vehicle. There were parties of engineers repairing the roads, military police directing traffic and the whole thing seemed a tangle, that would never be unraveled.



Occasionally the Boche put over a big shell, searching for our ration dumps, and he was not always unsuccessful, but for the most part little harm was done. Our batteries in turn would reply, and the things would quiet down, so to speak, for the night.

Gas sentries necessarily had to be on all night, and several times the alarm was given, and our needed rest disturbed.

The whole division less one battalion of the 318th Infantry, which was still attached to the 4th Division, was now assembled in the immediate vicinity of Cuisy. The Post of Command of the Division had moved to the ravine one kilometer northwest of Bethincourt, just north of Cuisy—Bethincourt road. The morning passed rapidly, and it must have been about 3:00 o'clock when a runner arrived with orders for the Battalion Commanders to report to Regimental Headquarters at once.

About 5:00 o'clock that afternoon the Colonel, the three Majors and several other officers filed into our trench and we could see by the serious look on all of their faces that there was a big job ahead. A rather long discussion ensued, and there was much talk about the time being too short for proper preparation. This talk was useless though, because it had to be done and we were soon told that the regiment was to go over the top the next morning. There was no time to lose the men had to be gotten ready, orders had to be issued and many details had to be attended to. There had been no time for reconnaissance of the ground and without exception the terrain was entirely unfamiliar to all concerned. It was a considerable distance to the line of departure, a matter of some six or seven kilometers, and this being true our time for preparation and study of maps was entirely insufficient.

The attack was to be made in the Nantillois-Cunel sector, then held by troops of the 79th and 4th Divisions. The eastern limit of the zone of action extended from Septsarges four hundred yards from the western edge of the Bois de Fays, thence north through the Bois de Malaumont—Hill 299—Aincreville inclusive. The western limit of the zone of action, Montfaucou exclusive, Hill 259, Nantillois-Cunel road inclusive, Bantheville exclusive, Andevanne inclusive. The attack was to be made in liaison with the 4th Division on the right and the 3rd Division on the left, the purpose being to penetrate the hostile third position between Cunel and Meuse, capturing the high ground north of Cunel and gaining the Army First Phase Line running from west to east, through the center of the town of Bantheville, the northern edge of Bois des Rappes, the north-eastern edge of Clairs Chanes, Hill 299, Bois de Foret inclusive and Brieuilles inclusive. The object of this division was that portion of the Army First Phase Line lying within the zone of action of this division.

The order for the attack was issued late the afternoon of October the 3rd, and it provided that our brigade, the 159th which had been in reserve during the action in the Dannevoux-Brieuilles attack, should be the assaulting brigade. Verbal instructions had previously been given to the brigade and by it to the regiments, and steps were being taken to prepare the troops for the coming action. The Post of Command of our brigade moved to Fayel Fme, on the Cuisy-Montfaucou road about one and one-half kilometers west of Cuisy. One company of the 313th Machine Gun Battalion had been attached to each front line battalion, and the remaining companies were held as a brigade reserve, on the Cuisy-Montfaucou road in the vicinity of the Brigade Post of Command.

It was no time for parleying, or making excuses, the important thing was to do our best come what might, and without a doubt every officer and man strained every nerve in order that the regiment might make a creditable showing. The Colonel and his staff had departed, and the Majors had also gone to their respective posts. The 2nd Battalion had been designated as the attacking battalion, and it was about 11:00 o'clock the night of October 3rd, when the word passed along the line that all was ready for the move forward. The sky was clear but the stars were dimmed as a slight mist hung closely to the ground. Occasionally the burst of a large shell illuminated the surroundings, and the flashes from our guns made one think of a far off thunder storm, with its intermittent

flashes of lightning. On and on trudged the long column, struggling over huge heaps of earth thrown up by terrific explosions. Time was creeping along and the leading battalion had not yet reached the designated forming up place.

There was a decided lack of confidence caused by the short time for preparation; but we were there to do our best under any circumstances. It must have been after 1:00 o'clock when the column of the 2nd Battalion closed up on the Montfaucon-Septsarges road, just west of Septsarges. Here the blanket rolls were cut loose from the packs, leaving the men with only reserve rations and a few necessary toilet articles, and one blanket adjusted in a circular shape; tied around the haversack. Gas masks were put in the alert position and the companies formed in platoon columns. A little meadow several hundred yards wide had to be traversed, in which there were numerous light French batteries. The troops had to pick their way between these guns, finally getting straightened out as we reached the slope that led to the top of Hill 295.

The 3rd Battalion as Brigade reserve moved into position in the trench system east of Fayel Fme, and the 1st Battalion with one company of the 313th Machine Gun Battalion took up a position on the southern slope of Hill 295 as support for the 2nd Battalion. It was now nearly two o'clock and the going was hard, there were numerous thick thorny hedges to go through, and the grade at this particular juncture was very steep. The fog had gotten very thick, rendering it almost impossible to preserve a true sense of direction. Pretty soon the battalion reached the top of the left wing of Hill 295 and started down the forward slope. At this point it was decided that they were bearing too far to the left, which in all probability was true, but it proved to be a fatal mistake to change direction under the existing conditions. The battalion should have been halted, and some known landmark might have been located with reference to the map.

The march continued, however, bearing more to the right. Pretty soon a road loomed up in front of us and no one was quite sure of its identity. Battalion Headquarters stopped here, but the battalion moved on, which step later proved fatal. Time was as precious as life, and it was now about four-thirty o'clock and the attack was to be made at five-thirty. In the meantime Battalion Headquarters had gone on down into Nantillois, thereby becoming separated from the battalion and causing a hopeless situation. Patrols were sent out in every direction to try and locate the battalion, but without avail, and by five o'clock it was deemed wise that the 1st Battalion be substituted in its place.

The parallel of departure was Cierges-Nantillois-Brieulles road north of Nantillois. Formation for the attack was two regiments side by side, the 317th regiment on the right and the 318th Infantry on the left, each regiment in column of battalions. The 1st Battalion was now ordered forward and the 2nd was left in support, on account of not having reached its proper assembly point. The 3rd Battalion, as Brigade Reserve, was initially just north of Montfaucon-Cuisy road, about one kilometer east of Montfaucon.

The 318th Infantry had its 2nd Battalion in the front line and the 3rd Battalion in support. Under the Division order, one company of the 305th Engineers was attached to the attacking brigade and went forward to Nantillois, from which place it was later withdrawn to Septsarges, not being employed by the brigade until the night of October the 6th, when it was used to aid in the consolidation of the lines. This company, during the period it was in Septsarges, assisted in bringing trench mortar and small arms ammunition forward to the front line. One battalion of the 313th Field Artillery was assigned to the attacking brigade as accompanying artillery. This battalion, however, was incorporated in the barrage and did not move forward during the operations of the first day. The 160th Brigade remained in reserve, but kept in readiness to move forward any of its units at a moment's notice.

The 1st Battalion went over at about six o'clock that morning as the barrage scheduled didn't drop at the proper time. They advanced a considerable distance and upon reaching the line of Hill 274, the first wave was met by very heavy machine gun fire from the north, northeast and



east and part of this fire enfiladed our lines. We received intense fire from the north, northeast and east and only a few of our troops succeeded in reaching the edge of the Bois des Ogons. No further advance could be made beyond this position during the day. In addition to the explosives and shrapnel used by the enemy, he also threw over a many gas shells in the vicinity of Nantillois and the ravines around town.

During the afternoon of the fourth another attack was ordered. At five-thirty the attack took place along the whole front after a feeble artillery preparation. This attack failed, and although our troops advanced into the Bois des Ogons under cover of darkness, they were unable to organize and hold the ground due to the machine gun and artillery fire. We retired to the southern edge of the woods during the night. On the morning of the fifth the reserve companies of the 313th Machine Gun Battalion and the company formerly with the attacking battalion of the 313th Infantry, were ordered to a position south of Hill 264, northwest of Nantillois, in order to cover with long range machine gun fire an attack planned under orders for the morning of the fifth of October. This attack, after artillery preparation, did not succeed, and the troops remained throughout the day in their position south of the woods, despite continuous mortar and shelling. During this period units were reorganized, and at six o'clock the attack was resumed, supported by divisional artillery and the French Field Artillery, which was attached. In this attack the line advanced to the northern edge of the Bois des Ogons, without very many casualties, the advance being executed partially under cover of darkness and coming as a surprise to the enemy.

All during the day of October the 6th, these positions were held and a defensive organization was begun. The left of the line held by one battalion of the 319th Infantry, which had been put under the direction of the Commanding Officer of the 317th Infantry, was subjected to machine gun fire both from the front and on the flanks, also trench mortar and artillery fire, and at noon the battalion retired about four hundred yards to establish the 315th Artillery to reduce the enemy machine gun positions in the vicinity of the Fme de Madeline. After the completion of this fire at two o'clock in the afternoon, the original position was resumed. Artillery fire was also timed to coordinate with an attack by the Brigade on the left, which was to come off about two o'clock, and continued until for the afternoon, in support of the advance of the 3rd Division on our left, to enable our front line to push out patrols to trenches north of the Bois des Ogons and occupy them if possible. Our patrols pushed out about five o'clock in the afternoon, but were unable to reach the forward position.

On the night of the 6th and 7th of October, the 1st and 3rd Battalions of the 319th Infantry took over the front line, with two companies of the 315th Machine Gun Battalion in reserve, and one battalion of the 317th Infantry in the trench Des Artisans about one kilometer east of Montfaucon and under orders of the Division Commander. Our entire brigade moved during the night of the 6th and 7th, and on the morning of the 8th took up a position south of Cuisy. The command of the sector remained with the Commanding General of our brigade until twelve o'clock noon of the 7th, at which time it passed to the Commanding General of the 160th Brigade.

After the capture of the Bois des Ogons, steps were immediately taken towards the organization of the ground, with a view to defense or advance, and during the course of the 7th of October, this organization of the ground was continued with the assistance of the 305th Engineers. During the afternoon of the 8th, it was reported that the enemy had placed a screen from Romagne to one kilometer east of Cunel and it is believed that at this time, he effected a relief along the front of the 3rd Division. On the 9th it was learned that strong enemy positions existed north of Hill 264 and several other strong enemy points and batteries were identified along the front of our sector. Artillery fire was concentrated upon these strong points and every effort was made to prepare the way for an advance. On October 10th the 3rd Battalion, with the Regimental Machine Gun Company, attached under orders of the Commanding General of the 160th



gade, moved to Hill 295, southeast of Nantillois, where it took up a position as brigade reserve, the remainder of the regiment remaining in the Cuisy area. The afternoon of the 11th the entire regiment moved to vicinity of Hill 295, and when the division was relieved we moved by battalions to the northeast section of the Forêt de Hesse and went into bivouac, the move being completed by two o'clock in the morning of October 12th. We remained in this vicinity for two days, moving out again on the 14th and marched to Dombasle, where the regiment embussed for the Triacourt area. Arriving in this area Regimental Quarters, Machine Gun Company, Supply Company, Companies A and B, and the 3rd Battalion were billeted in Rembercourt. Companies C and D were in the little town of Courcelles and the 2nd Battalion in Seraucourt. Our casualties for the month of October had been pretty heavy, having one officer and eighty men killed, twenty-two officers and four hundred and seventy-two men wounded, with only ten missing. The division was opposed in this operation by the 5th Bavarian Reserve Division, 28th Division, 236th Division, 115th Division and the 5th Pioneer Landstrum Battalion.

The line had been advanced to a depth of four kilometers and the prisoners captured were comparatively few, numbering only thirty officers and one hundred and two of other rank. The material captured was ten 77 mm. guns, two 77 anti-aircraft guns, one 6-inch howitzer, four 150 mm. guns, six minenwerfers and fifteen thousand 77 mm. shells. The division had suffered pretty severe casualties from October the 5th to 12th, having killed, wounded and missing one hundred and thirty-nine officers and three thousand four hundred and twelve enlisted men.

The entire operation of our brigade had been seriously hampered by misinformation coming from the flanking divisions, and acting on this information repeated attempts were made to out-flank the strongly held Bois des Ogons. These attempts, however, proved unsuccessful in every case on account of heavy machine gun fire coming from our flanks, and it was later learned that neither of the flanking divisions had advanced their line as far as our own. During the second phase of the operation the supply of our troops was at all times very satisfactory, both in ammunition and rations. This was due partly to the improved condition of the roads. The troops now back in the area around Rembercourt were being refitted and reorganized for our next great offensive, which was to take place in the Argonne proper. We had learned our lesson in this fight around Nantillois and the Bois des Ogons and were preparing to reap the benefit of the mistakes that had been made. The troops had shown great gallantry and had advanced unflinchingly to the attack in the face of disastrous machine gun and artillery fire and were anxious now to apply the lessons which they had learned.

There were many acts of personal gallantry during these operations, which can never be known to others than the men who stood beside the gallant fellows who performed them. We had gotten a taste of real war and the hardships suffered were far beyond the power of words to describe. The following proclamation issued by the Division Commander on the 30th of September shows the appreciation that he had for his troops. In turn the men showed their esteem for their Commanding General in the splendid work that they accomplished in the ensuing offensive.

#### HEADQUARTERS EIGHTIETH DIVISION

A. E. F. (In the field).

September 30, 1918.

#### TO THE OFFICERS AND ENLISTED MEN OF THE 80TH DIVISION

I wish to express to you my deep appreciation of the great work accomplished by you, in your first active operation.

Your work has received the highest commendation from our Corps Commander, and his confidence in your military prowess is evidenced by the demands he has made upon your services.

It is too soon to officially mention individual deeds, but you may rest assured that due honors will be recommended in all cases of personal distinction.

Remember, as well, that whatever hardships you may have to suffer, the Divisional Staff, whose duty it is to provide for you, have done and will continue to do, all that is within the limits of possibility, to lessen your burdens. Give them your thanks.

You will soon be called upon for another push.

Remember that you made the Army Objective on your first call.

Remember that the Eightieth Division can never stop short of the Army Objective, wherever it may be placed.

The enemy is faltering; his allies are deserting him. His infantry will not stand before your onrush.

Continue to smother his machine gunners by skillful maneuvering; hit his line hard and push through.

GET HIM ON THE RUN, AND WE SHALL EAT OUR THANKSGIVING DINNER IN PEACE.

A. CRONKHITE,

Major General.

### Meuse-Argonne Second Phase Sivry-Buzancy-Vaux-Sommauthe-Bar-Beaumont

In preparation for the coming offensive the entire division was in the Triacourt area from the 13th of October to the 24th of October, for the purpose of training, reorganization and re-equipment. On October the 24th the task mentioned above had been completed and the regiment embussed for the La Chalade-Le-Claon-Le Neufour-Les Islettes area, the division having now become a part of the I Army Corps. We had expected to go straight in to the fighting again from our last station, but for some unavoidable reason had been delayed, and remained in the last named area until the morning of October 31st.

During our short stay here the regiment indulged in a period of intensive training. Browning heavy machine guns and automatic rifles were issued throughout just prior to our move from the Triacourt area. The enemy now held the line along the southern edge of the Bois de Bourgogne one kilometer south of St. Juvin, thence along seven hundred meters south of Landres et St. Georges, and the First American Army, while continuing its operations east of the Meuse was planning to attack on its front west of the Meuse. The I Corps was to attack on the front from Grandpre to St. Georges, with three divisions in the line. The 80th Division was on the right, the 77th Division in the center, and the 78th Division on the left. It was intended that the enemy be enveloped from the right, which from all appearances meant a rapid advance for our division. It was planned that the high ground south of Verpel should be carried on the first day, with the object in view of driving to Boulton aux Bois upon further orders, thereby making a junction with the Fourth French Army, attacking on the left of the I Corps, and enveloping the Bois de Bourgogne. The 80th Division had the mission of covering the left of the V Corps, attacking on the right of the I Corps, and seizing the high ground to the north of Sivry-les-Buzancy, gaining this point the first day of the attack.

On the morning of October 31st this regiment as part of the Division Reserve, moved by battalions from Les Islettes area to the high ground one kilometer southeast of Fleville, where it took up a position in support of the attacking brigade and went into bivouac for the night. This march was one of the most strenuous ever endured by the regiment, the last part of it being completed after nightfall. The distance was twenty-two kilometers, and the roads were jammed with traffic, which made marching quite a problem.

November the 1st the regiment was held in readiness during the entire day, but did not move forward until five o'clock that evening, when it marched by battalions to the ravines west of Sommerance and north of Sommerance-St. Juvin road, where the troops went into bivouac for the night of November the 1st-2nd. The zone of action for the right east limit of the division was Vauquois, Cheppy, Charpentry, Raulny, Exermont, Fleville, Sommauthe, St. Georges, thence along the 300th meridian to ridge northwest of Immeacourt, thence northeast along ridge between Bayonville-



Sivry-les-Buzancy-Foose and Vaux en Dieulet. The left west limit of the zone of action Chatel Chehery, Cornay, meridian 298 from the Aire River to the western edge of Buzancy, thence north to St. Pierreumont.

The 160th Brigade was the attacking unit and on November 2nd our regiment was attached to this brigade and was ordered to be ready to move under orders of Commanding General, 160th Brigade. At this juncture Companies A and B, 313th Machine Gun Battalion, and 2nd Battalion 320th Field Artillery were attached. At 4:00 A. M. orders were received to attack in direction of Buzancy, and gain the subsequent army objective, within the limits of the division boundary. Troops of the 2nd Division were reported to be in woods north, west and south of Malmy. The 319th Infantry at that time in position on the general line from Hill 298 extending in a southerly direction was ordered to attack the woods extending through squares K80 and K81 and to halt on western edge of same.

On account of the unusual extent of our front and the fact that both flanks were in the air, it was deemed wise to attack with two battalions in line, and one in support. Company A, 313th Machine Gun Battalion and the Regimental One Pounder Platoon were attached to the 1st Battalion. Company D, 313th Machine Gun Battalion and one accompanying gun of the 2nd Battalion, 320th Field Artillery, were attached to the 3rd Battalion. The Regimental Machine Gun Company was attached to the 2nd Battalion, which was designated as the support battalion. The remaining field artillery and regimental Stokes mortars were kept under regimental control and the above assignments did not change during these operations.

At 4:10 A. M. the regiment moved by battalions and took up a position of readiness. The advance began at 10:00 A. M., encountering slight machine gun fire, which was quickly overcome until the leading elements began nearing the vicinity of Buzancy, where they were met by heavy machine gun fire on ridges north and northeast of Buzancy. These machine gun emplacements were successively attacked and silenced and our troops pushed forward to a new line.

This line was organized and held despite heavy machine gun and artillery fire during the night of November 2nd-3rd. Machine guns were echeloned in depth and placed on each flank, Company H, 2nd Battalion, went into position south of Hill 287, Company G in ravine north of Fme de Charmes and the remaining two companies on reverse slope north of Sivry. Regimental Headquarters was established at Sivry and contact was established and maintained with the 2nd Division on right and the 77th Division on left. The supporting artillery was not able to get into position in time to assist our initial advance, but was successfully used, however, on the night of the 2nd-3rd against machine gun nests and for harassing fire. At 7:00 P. M. the regiment was relieved from assignment to 160th Brigade.

Attacks made on machine gun nests during the night of the 2nd-3rd were generally unsuccessful, and the front line was not materially advanced. In the course of the day's operations we occupied Sivry, Bar and Buzancy. On the night of the 2nd-3rd the 318th Infantry was ordered to move into position on our left. The advance was continued on the morning of November the 3rd by the entire brigade. The regiment advanced at daybreak with two battalions abreast, direction of attacks, northeast, the 1st Battalion attacking along the entire regimental sector within the division boundaries. The 3rd Battalion had instructions to keep its left on the division east boundary and to extend its right flank sufficiently to maintain contact with the 2nd Division on its right. The 2nd Battalion was designated as Brigade Reserve and moved under orders of the Brigade Commander. The advance was preceded by a short but successful artillery preparation. Contact had been established with the 318th Infantry on the left, when they moved into position.

The leading battalions advanced rapidly, at first encountering only slight machine gun fire which was speedily overcome. At about 11:00 A. M. the left battalion was held up temporarily, by heavy machine gun fire from the La Garenne woods and again at 1:55 P. M. by heavy fire from Hill 297 and heights southeast of Vaux. At 4:30 P. M. the right battalion was definitely checked, by organized machine gun resistance and



severe artillery fire. In the face of continued machine gun fire the battalion managed to push on and Regimental Headquarters reached Hill 271. During the afternoon there was unusual aeroplane activity, both friendly and hostile the greater part being hostile. During the night heavy hostile machine gun fire was continued, although several were successfully attacked by our patrols.

During the early hours on the morning of November the 3rd Battalion was relieved by the 2nd Battalion, the former becoming Brigade Reserve. The advance was begun again at daybreak and rapidly ahead, meeting only slight resistance. The left battalion moved forward vigorously and at 10:00 A. M. had occupied Sommauthe, encountered some enemy resistance which increased to the north of the village. The advance of the battalion was temporarily halted to allow troops of the 77th Division on the left to come up but resumed at 2:00 P. M. Patrols were sent out and attempts made to take the machine gun positions on the ridges in the southwest corner of V14 from the east. The attempts were, however, only partially successful and strong enemy resistance continued through the remainder of the afternoon and night.

The 2nd Battalion which was on the right pushed its advance and occupied Vaux en Dieulet at 7:00 A. M. with comparative ease, opposition, but was held up temporarily on the high ground just north of Vaux. The advance was continued and pushed ahead to the north of the Bois du Four where it halted and the companies were reorganized. Regimental Headquarters was established in Vaux about noon of the 5th. Attached artillery was used to good effect on Thuillerie, Petite Feuille, Beau Sejour farms. At 9:00 P. M. the 3rd Battalion was ordered to take up support position immediately in rear of the 2nd Battalion.

At 2:30 A. M. the morning of the fifth of November the 2nd Battalion pushed rapidly forward, meeting only with slight opposition and occupied Beaumont at 4:30 A. M. and capturing prisoners there. The left battalion which was on the left advanced at dawn after a short trench preparation and moved quickly forward to the Regimental Objective, Thibaudiere Fme-Beaumont Road, which was reached at 9:00 A. M., unable to establish contact with troops on our left until midday.

At approximately 3:30 P. M. both battalions again advanced to a new objective which was the Yoncq-Beaumont road. Little resistance was met, and the 2nd Battalion reached its objective by 6:00 P. M. The 1st Battalion was held up in a ravine west of La Harnoterie Farm by heavy machine gun fire from well concealed emplacements. The resistance came so intense that the battalion was forced to withdraw. While patrolling toward the Meuse was carried out through the night by both battalions, and a small detachment of Corps Cavalry rendered valuable service, by definitely locating hostile machine guns and enemy positions.

At dawn on the morning of the 6th the 2nd Battalion took over the entire regimental sector, relieving the 1st Battalion, and establishing itself on the Yoncq-Beaumont road with its right flank including Beaumont. At 6:30 A. M. the 1st Division leap-frogged our forward elements along the Yoncq-Beaumont road, and at 9:15 A. M. it was reported that they were progressing rapidly toward the Meuse, advancing more than 1,500 yards without meeting opposition. Upon relief the regiment marched by companies to area one kilometer north of Sommauthe, where it assembled and went into bivouac. We were told upon arriving here that our rest was for only forty-eight hours, at the end of which time we would resume the attack. On the second night when our rest was nearly ended, the glad news was given us that the division stood relieved, and we would march back to the vicinity of Le Claon. This news was inspiring and coupled together with the thoughts of our accomplishments our spirits soared sky high.

During the four days covered by this operation the division advanced twenty-five kilometers in an air line, and the 317th had nearly half of the twenty-five to its credit not to mention the six towns it had captured. The number of prisoners captured was comparatively small.

bering only fifty, but this is accounted for by the exceedingly rapid retreat conducted by the Germans. The material captured by our regiment alone amounted to forty-five heavy machine guns, 117 light machine guns, twenty-three minenwerfers, nine 77 field guns, five 155 field guns, two 210 howitzers and three anti-tank guns, also vast dumps and supplies of ammunition, which could not be counted. Other captures in the way of material were four automobile trucks, forty-eight gas drums, one caisson and wagon of signal supplies, five harvesting wagons and aeroplane accessories, one first aid station complete, one steam shovel and ten small railroad cars, two medical carts, one transport wagon, two kitchens and large stores of ammunition, grenades, pyrotechnics and blasting powder. The above mentioned captured material does not include rifles, or rifle ammunition, as the regiment did not have an opportunity for salvage work in territory occupied.

Our casualties were extremely light considering the great advance that was made; having only two officers and twenty-three enlisted men killed, four officers and 191 men wounded, making our total for killed, wounded and missing six officers and 217 enlisted men. The casualties for the entire division in killed, wounded and missing from October the 30th to November the 6th was forty-four officers and 1,015 enlisted men. The division had been opposed in this operation by the 45th Bavarian Division, 52nd Division, 31st Division, 115th Division, 240th Division, 236th Division and the 10th Division, making a total of seven divisions offering resistance on our front. The division had taken prisoners, thirty-eight officers and 793 enlisted men, including one entire battalion staff. Material captured by the division amounted to fifty-five guns of varying calibres, twenty-two minenwerfers, 238 heavy machine guns, 269 light machine guns, eight anti-tank gun rifles and 1,160 infantry rifles, with vast quantities of ammunition for all guns, not to speak of wagons, limbers, motor trucks, armored automobile, kitchens, telephones and wire, steam shovels, railways and various other items.

On the morning of November 8th, the division having been relieved, began the arduous march back toward Le Claon, and on November the 11th were between Chatel Chehery and Le Claon, when the glorious news reached us that the Armistice had been signed. A long ringing cheer traveled along the column and that was all that was heard from our boys who had now become veterans. The news could hardly be believed even though it was official. Our weary feet became lightened with the thought that the war was over, and we marched into Le Claon that evening with heads high and thoughts of home across the sea. That night we had a great celebration, the band played "Pop Goes the Weasel" to remind us of our Camp Lee days, and we gathered all pyrotechnics available and turned it into a Fourth of July celebration.

**March to 15th Training Area  
And Later Move to Le Mans Area in Preparation  
For Return to the United States**

The regiment was partly billeted in houses, but some of the men were bivouacked in pup tents, and the weather now was becoming quite crisp. We remained in this area until the 18th of November and during this time, football and various other athletic sports were indulged in. The first Sunday after the Armistice the whole regiment was assembled and thanksgiving and prayers were offered for the successful conclusion of hostilities. The names of all the men killed in action were read to the assemblage by the Regimental Commander, after which the band played "The Star Spangled Banner" and the battalions marched back to their billets.

The following is a true copy of General Orders No. 18, Headquarters Eightieth Division, 30th of October, 1918, which fits in appropriately at this setting of the stage. It cites our Regimental Commander and shows the appreciation and value of his service by the Division Commander:

### HEADQUARTERS EIGHTIETH DIVISION AMERICAN EXPEDITIONARY FORCES

GENERAL ORDERS No. 18

France, October 30th.

1. It is not within the power of the Division Commander to make awards for valor on the field of battle, other than through recommendations to higher authority, nor is it construed that commendation is due for the performance of normal duties, however high the standard of requirement, for every officer and every man in the 80th Division must do his duty, and does—or goes.

It is his desire, however, to officially express his high appreciation of exceptional services rendered, and it gives him great pleasure to honorably mention:

Lieutenant Colonel Charles Keller, 317th Infantry, for the courage, poise, and soldierly qualities, which enabled him to take over command of his regiment and reorganize it, under fire, after the execution of two unsuccessful attacks; and which made possible the taking and holding of the Bois des Ogons.

The thanks of the Division Commander are also due every officer and every man who has done his full duty, and especially to those who have performed acts of personal valor, entitling them to consideration for distinguished service.

The names of those so distinguished may not be made public, but they are known to their comrades in arms, and in due time will receive the reward merited.

What you have already accomplished is well known to your relatives and friends at home, and they are proud of your successes.

What you shall accomplish in the future, depends only upon the demands which shall be made upon you.

You have had experience in action, the results of which you will apply in future operations. You are better clothed, better fed, better equipped, than ever before, and your spirit is invincible.

The 80th Division always moves forward.

By command of Major General Cronkhite:  
W. H. WALDRON,  
Colonel, General Staff.

Official:

CHARLES M. JONES,  
Major, A. G. D.,  
Adjutant.

### HEADQUARTERS EIGHTIETH DIVISION AMERICAN EXPEDITIONARY FORCES

GENERAL ORDER No. 19.

France, November 11, 1918.

TO THE MEMBERS OF THE 80TH DIVISION

The 80th Division only moves FORWARD.

It not only moves forward against the enemy, but it moves forward in the estimation of all who are capable of judging its courage, its fighting and its manly qualities.

In the operations for the period of November 1st-5th, the Division moved forward fifteen and five-eighths miles in an air line.

It always led.

It captured two Huns for every man wounded.

It captured one machine gun for every man wounded.

It captured one cannon for every ten men wounded, besides large quantities of munitions and other stores.

It accomplished these results, of vast importance to the success of the general operation, with a far smaller percentage of casualties than any other Division engaged.

It has learned by hard training and experience.

The appreciation of the Corps and Army Commanders is expressed in the following:



Telegram from the Commanding General, First Army:

"The Army Commander desires that you inform the Commander of the 80th Division of the Army Commander's appreciation of his excellent work during the battle of today. He desires that you have this information sent to all organizations of that Division as far as may be practicable this night. He fully realizes the striking blow your Division has delivered to the enemy this date."

Telegram from the Commanding General First Army Corps:

"The Corps Commander is particularly pleased with the persistent, intelligent work accomplished by your Division today. He is further desirous that this congratulation reach General Lloyd M. Brett, commanding your Brigade, which has borne the brunt of the burden."

Letter from the Commanding General, First Army Corps:

"The Corps Commander desires that you be informed and that those under your command be informed that in addition to other well deserved commendations received from the Army Commander and the Corps Commander, he wishes to express his particular gratification and appreciation of the work of your Division from the time it has entered under his command."

It is necessarily a great honor to be allowed to command an organization which earns such commendation.

It is likewise a great honor to belong to such an organization.

I do not know what the future has in store for us.

If it be war, we must and shall sustain our honor and our reputation by giving our best to complete the salvation of our Country.

If it be peace, we must and shall maintain our reputation and the honor of our Division and the Army, as soldiers of the greatest country on earth, and as right-minded, self-respecting men.

The 80th Division only moves FORWARD.

A. CRONKHITE,  
Major General.

The following is a true copy of a memorandum from Division Headquarters dated seventh of October, 1918:

#### HEADQUARTERS EIGHTIETH DIVISION AMERICAN EXPEDITIONARY FORCES

October 7, 1918.

##### TO THE OFFICERS AND MEN OF THE 159TH BRIGADE

The Division Commander wishes to express his great appreciation of the highly important successes gained by General Jamerson's 159th Brigade, and Major Montague's attached Battalion of the 319th Infantry.

Continually under effective artillery fire on your flank, as well as machine gun fire from your front and flanks, you nevertheless returned again and again to the attack, until your objective was gained and held.

Your success has earned the repeated congratulations of your Corps Commander as well as the thanks of your Country.

ADELBERT CRONKHITE,  
Major-General, Commanding

The following endorsement is from the Brigade Commander showing his high appreciation of the splendid work accomplished by the entire Brigade:

#### HEADQUARTERS EIGHTIETH DIVISION AMERICAN EXPEDITIONARY FORCES

October 6, 1918.

The Brigade Commander desires to add to the above his expression of appreciation of the work accomplished by the Brigade and Major Montague's Battalion, 319th Infantry, during the three days' fight for the Bois

des Ogons, and his pride in the command of an organization possessed of that iron will and determination which alone could win success in the face of such odds.

G. H. JAMERSON,  
Brigadier General, Commanding.

On the morning of the 18th of November, the regiment moved out by battalions en route to the 15th Training Area. The weather was fair and the roads were exceedingly good, making the conditions ideal for such a movement. It is not possible to go into the details of every camp, or stop, during this long, hard march, but the following are the names of the different towns that the regiment passed through which terminated with a distance covered of two hundred and twenty-one kilometers. The towns were: Triacourt, Auzecourt, Robert Espagne, Hoericourt, Laneuville, Nully, Jaucourt, Beurey, Recey Haute Rive, arriving in the 15th Area on the night of November 29th. The regiment was pretty widely separated, being assigned to the following towns: Regimental Headquarters and Headquarters Company in Jully, Les Forges, First Battalion Le Maine, Le Loge and Jully, Second Battalion Fontaines and Planay and the Third Battalion Savoisy and Etais. The Machine Gun Company was located in Cestre and the Supply Company in La Folie.

We remained in this area a long four months, drilling and maneuvering. Toward the latter stages of this period Post Schools and athletics were given more time, and the drill period was cut down to four hours a day. Time passed pretty slowly, and the long winter nights dragged heavily for the first two months, but finally a little feeling of spring crept into the air, and everybody knew then that it wouldn't be long before the division would be moving to the coast. About the fifteenth of March instructions were received that the division would pass to the S. O. S. on March the 20th. This meant that preparations for return to the United States would begin without delay.

When we passed from command of the First Army Corps, Major General Wright commended the division very highly in General Orders No. 12, Headquarters First Army Corps, eighteenth of March, 1919, and the following is a true copy of these orders:

#### HEADQUARTERS FIRST ARMY CORPS AMERICAN EXPEDITIONARY FORCES

##### GENERAL ORDERS No. 12.

March 18, 1919.

1. The 80th Division, having been instructed to prepare for return to the United States, will pass from the command of this Army Corps on March 20, 1919.

2. The 80th Division arrived in France about June 5, 1918. This Division trained with the British Troops and was on active duty with them in the Artois sector near Arras in July. The Division was in reserve at the battle of St. Mihiel, except the 320th Infantry and 315th Machine Gun Battalion which took part in the operations of the 2nd French Colonial Corps. From September 26th to 29th, inclusive, the Division attacked at Bethincourt with the 3rd Corps and advanced nine kilometers in two days. The Division was withdrawn from the line for five days and again attacked on October 4th at Nantillois. In nine days of heavy fighting through the Bois des Ogons an advance of four kilometers was made. The Division was withdrawn from the line October 12th for re-equipment and replacements. The Division moved forward on October 29th and on the 30th re-entered the line St. Georges-St. Juvin.

3. The 80th Division passed under the orders of the 1st Corps on October 23rd in the Le Claon-Le Neufour area, west of the Argonne Forest. On November 1st the Division attacked as the right division of the 1st Corps, and in six days advanced a depth of twenty-four kilometers. The Division was relieved from the line on November 6th, with its patrols on the west bank of the Meuse. From the 18th of November to December 1st, the Division marched 221 kilometers to the 15th Training Area, at Ancy-le-

The artillery of the Division was part of the time detached from the Division and was in action at all times from September 26th to November 11th.

The Division has remained in the 15th Training Area until its departure in order to prepare for embarkation to the United States.

The 80th Division was given difficult tasks on the front line and in accomplishing them made a splendid record. The Corps Commander particularly to express his appreciation for the soldierly achievements of the division during the time it served with the 1st Army Corps. Returning to the Training Area where living conditions were not easy and the work difficult, the spirit of the division has been excellent and has been manifested at all times. The Division leaves on the first part of its journey with the Corps Commander's congratulations for its excellent record and wishes for a speedy return to the United States and a successful

By command of Major General Wright:

W. M. FASSETT,  
Chief of Staff.

W. M. FASSETT,  
Colonel, A. G. D.,  
Adjutant.

On April 3, 1919, the regiment entrained for Le Mans, at Nuits-Ravieres, leaving the area the following proclamation was issued by the Mayor of Fontaines les Seches, which will ever reflect credit upon the members of the 317th Infantry.

Fontaines les Seches, March 31, 1919.

#### TO THE 317TH INFANTRY

The Mayor being the interpreter of the inhabitants of Fontaines les Seches wishes to congratulate and thank the officers and soldiers who have been amongst us for the last four months, for their good behavior, courtesy and courtesies and the excellent "souvenir" they all shall

and with pleasure the entire population of this village extends to you and wishes for a happy return to your own families.

The name of us all "Bon Voyage," "Au revoir" to our friends and

(Signed) MOTENOT,

Mayor of Fontaines.

The trip was made without incident, and the regiment arrived in the town of Ecommoy and Mayet on the night of the 4th-5th of April. The question this trip was the most comfortable one the men have had. Straw was provided for the cars which enabled them to sleep comfortably using their two blankets. On detrainment hot chocolate was served by the Y. M. C. A. before starting the march to the various towns which had been allotted. The regiment was again pretty widely separated, being located in the following towns: Regimental Headquarters, Headquarters of the 1st and 2nd Battalions in Yvre le Polin, the 2nd Battalion with Companies E, F, G in Requeil and Company H in Chateau L' Hermitage, the 3rd Battalion in Mansigne and Machine Gun and Supply Company in St. Germain. The time of officers and men was completely taken up with preparations for embarkation to the United States, but the high standards of discipline and efficiency were not relaxed.

On the 26th of March, 1919, the entire division passed in review before General Pershing in a downpour of rain, but even though the weather was inclement a splendid showing was made. The Commander-in-Chief expressed that he was proud of the division and its splendid record and wished it God speed and a happy return to our homes and families.



## Summary of Activities—Three Hundred and Fourteenth Machine Gun Battalion, Eightieth Division

Organized at Camp Lee, Va., in September, 1917 and trained there until May, 1918. Left Camp Lee May 24th and marched to City Point. Embarked on steamer *New York*, for Newport News, and there boarded transport *Mercury*, which sailed May 26th. Disembarked at Bassens, France, June 9th and marched to Camp Genicart. Marched to Carbon Blanc June 16th and entrained for Calais, which was reached on the 18th. Left Calais June 21st for Samer, marching thence to Frencq and billeting. Battalion trained in this area with the British. Marched to Etaples July 25th and entrained for Doullens. Marched thence to Beauquesne, thence to Puchevillers. Left this point July 29th and marched to Kay Camp, Quesnoy Farm, in the Artois sector. Served in front line trenches in this sector. Left for Bonneville August 19th. Moved to Agenville on the 20th and on the 23rd entrained at Bernaville for Poincon. Detrained there and marched to Chatillon-sur-Seine. Moved to Recey-sur-Ource August 25th. Proceeded to Aubepierre on the 31st. Marched to Latrecy September 2nd and entrained for Nançois, marching thence to St. Martin's Farm. Moved to Guerpont September 7th/8th. Remained in reserve during the St. Mihiel operation. Embussed September 15th for Osches Woods. Moved to Bois de Landrecourt September 20th/21st and to Bois de Sartelles September 24th/25th. Participated in Meuse-Argonne offensive. Relieved November 6th and left next morning for the south. Reached Les Vignettes on the 11th. Left on November 18th, proceeding through Senard, Noyers, Vassincourt, Saudrupt, Allischamps, Rochecourt sur Blaise, Mertrud, Fresnay, Spoy, Couteron, and arriving at Sennevoy le Haut, in the Fifteenth Training Area, November 29th. The battalion spent the winter there. Marched to Poincon April 1, 1919, and entrained for the Le Mans area. Detrained at Chateau du Loir April 3rd and went into billets at Thoire-sur-Dinan and Beaumont Pied de Bouef. Embussed for Le Mans May 10th. Proceeded to Brest May 12th and marched thence to Pontanezen. Embarked May 20th on battleship *New Jersey* and reached Boston, Mass., June 7th. Entrained for Camp Devens at Ayer, Mass. Split into detachments here and sent to home camps to be mustered out. Virginia detachment proceeded to Camp Lee.

# History of the Three Hundred and Fourteenth Machine Gun Battalion

[EDITOR'S NOTE: Compiled from the History of the 314th Machine Gun Battalion, prepared by Lieutenants Herman R. Furr, Robert A. Horner, Walter L. Lukens and Mr. Aaron R. Merritt.]

## Prior to Organization

The officers of one of the new national army divisions, the 80th, organized at Camp Lee, near Petersburg, Va., began to arrive the 27th of August, 1917. They came mostly from Virginia and New Jersey, fresh from the First Officers' Training Camp at Fort Myer, Va., with, however, a generous sprinkling of field officers from the old army. The camp was far from being completed. Nevertheless, by September 5th, the date of the arrival of the first recruits of the selective draft system, order had begun to come out of chaos.

The recruits came from Virginia, West Virginia and Western Pennsylvania; the general plan being to put the Virginia men in the 159th Brigade (317th and 318th Infantry Regiments and 314th Machine Gun Battalion); the Pennsylvania men in the 160th Brigade (319th and 320th Infantry Regiments and 315th Machine Gun Battalion); and the West Virginia men in the 155th Field Artillery Brigade. No officers, at first, were assigned to the proposed machine gun organizations, and all of the first recruits went to the infantry and artillery regiments.

## The Beginning

On a morning early in September, a Major of the 317th Infantry Regiment was sent for by the Commanding General of the 159th Brigade, and the following question was asked: "What do you know about machine guns?" The Major replied: "Sir, I don't know which is the dangerous end of the thing."

A few days later, to be exact, the 14th of September, Special Order No. 16, Headquarters 80th Division, was issued transferring fourteen infantry officers, including the Major referred to, from the 317th and 318th Infantry Regiments to the 314th Machine Gun Battalion.

General Order No. 1, Headquarters 314th Machine Gun Battalion, Camp Lee, Va., September 19, 1917, announced the organization of the battalion as follows:

### Headquarters:

Major Richard Stockton, Jr., Commanding.

First Lt. Robert T. Crowder, Adjutant.

First Lt. Hinton J. Baker, M. R. C., Surgeon.

First Lt. Daniel F. McCarthy, D. R. C., Dental Surgeon.

### "A" Company:

Captain Thomas W. Reilly.

Second Lt. Samuel L. Buracker.

Second Lt. Harvey L. Lindsay.

Second Lt. Herman R. Furr.

### "B" Company:

Captain Harry Lee Maynard, Jr.

Second Lt. Donald D. Hand.

Second Lt. Edward L. Burrell.

Second Lt. Thomas W. Clark.

### "C" Company:

Captain Edward T. Davant.

Second Lt. Alexander M. Brownley.

Second Lt. Richard J. Alfriend.

Second Lt. J. Edward Cole, Jr.

The first recruits arrived about noon Sunday, the 23rd of September, practically all of whom came from the cities of Norfolk and Portsmouth, and the counties of Norfolk and Princess Anne, Eastern Virginia. They were excellent material for machine gunners, but several weeks later, 202

of them were transferred to the Machine Gun Company of the 318th Infantry, leaving only a skeleton organization. Nevertheless, the battalion was fortunate enough to hold several very good men who came among the first recruits, notably Sergeant-Major Randolph Macon, Supply Sergeant-Major Leo. P. Kilpatrick and Sergeant Clyde W. Rodgers, all of Norfolk, Va.; also from the same city, Private Jung Sam, who was the first Chinaman to land at Camp Lee for military service. From the moment of his arrival, Jung Sam proved a source of unfailing amusement to the members of the battalion, and after a few days on the drill field he was happily transferred to the officers' kitchen, where he served industriously and faithfully during the training period at Camp Lee.

For a time there was little activity in the battalion, outside of the machine gun school conferences, which were conducted daily for the officers. Very soon, too, divisional machine gun classes were organized under Major John Dunlop, Machine Gun Corps, British Army, assisted by Sergeant-Major Benj. A. Fairhurst, also of the Machine Gun Corps, British Army. During the training period at Camp Lee, a majority of the officers and non-commissioned officers attended the Divisional School for thirty-day courses in machine gunnery.

The latter part of October, officers of the battalion were called upon to take charge of the 1st Provisional Recruit Battalion of 750 men, which was being trained and equipped for early service overseas as replacements. On the 26th of November, all officers were released from duty with the 1st Provisional Recruit Battalion.

Meantime recruits were again being assigned to the 314th Machine Gun Battalion, the first arriving on the 15th of November, 1917. The following list will be of interest in showing the number of men from the several different States at the time the Battalion started overseas, as compared with its personnel, with reference to states, at the time it returned to America:

May, 1918		May, 1919	
Pennsylvania	111	Pennsylvania	102
Virginia	209	Virginia	166
West Virginia	24	West Virginia	27
Alabama	1	Alabama	2
Arkansas	--	Arkansas	1
California	--	California	7
Connecticut	1	Connecticut	1
Delaware	1	Delaware	1
District of Columbia	2	District of Columbia	2
Georgia	--	Georgia	1
Idaho	--	Idaho	1
Illinois	5	Illinois	4
Indiana	1	Indiana	7
Iowa	--	Iowa	1
Kentucky	1	Kentucky	6
Maryland	3	Maryland	4
Massachusetts	3	Massachusetts	1
Minnesota	--	Minnesota	2
Montana	--	Montana	1
New Jersey	4	New Jersey	2
New Mexico	--	New Mexico	8
New York	3	New York	3
North Carolina	9	North Carolina	5
Ohio	4	Ohio	33
Rhode Island	1	Rhode Island	--
South Carolina	1	South Carolina	2
Tennessee	3	Tennessee	1
Texas	--	Texas	1
Washington	--	Washington	1
Wisconsin	1	Wisconsin	2



### Many Changes Come

On the 24th of November, 1917, Major Richard Stockton, Jr., was relieved from duty with the battalion, and Major Jennings C. Wise, of the 318th Infantry, was named as commanding officer. December 11th, Captain Robert J. Halpin was ordered to take command, Major Wise having been sent on detached service with the American Expeditionary Forces in France. Captain Halpin was promoted to the grade of Major, December 31, 1917.

From December 13th to 15th, eight first lieutenants reported for duty from the second training camps at Fort Myer and Fort Sheridan.

In February, 1918, a War Department change in tables of organization required brigade machine gun battalions to be increased to four companies, and the divisional machine gun battalion to be reduced to two companies. This change was brought about in the 80th Division by G. O. No. 13, which transferred C Company of the 314th Machine Gun Battalion to the 315th Machine Gun Battalion; the 314th Machine Gun Battalion, consisting then of A Company, B Company, Headquarters and Medical Detachments, was made the divisional machine gun battalion. The 313th Machine Gun Battalion, up until that time the divisional battalion, was transferred to the 159th Brigade. According to the new tables of organization, the brigade battalions and regimental machine gun companies were to have horse-drawn transportation, while the divisional battalion was to be motorized.

Needless to say, the 314th was greatly pleased to be the divisional battalion, and more than pleased at the prospects of motorization, which meant no more "hiking"—a ride for every man! But alas! its dreams were fated to fall short, when later it "hiked" all over France with just enough motor transport to carry the equipment of the battalion. Many a jest with reference to the motorized outfit was made as it hit the trail "via hobnail."

### Preparing to Leave

The training of the battalion had been pushed with vigor; first, in the school of the infantry soldier then in the new machine gun drills, next in the mechanism of the machine gun, and lastly in target practice on the range. The battalion was sadly lacking in equipment for the latter part of the training. Only a few old Colt machine guns were available throughout the winter, but towards the latter part of April, the American Vickers was issued, and every man had the opportunity of shooting it on the range and learning something of its rather complicated mechanism.

During the first part of May, rumors were rife concerning early service "overseas." May 12th, the battalion was quarantined in its own area. May 22nd, barrack bags and company property were loaded on freight trains and shipped.

During the period of the quarantine, neither officers nor men were allowed to leave the battalion area without special leave being granted. It was arranged, however, for the friends of the soldiers to visit at the barracks anytime between reveille and taps. To relieve the monotony of being restricted to the area, A and B Companies arranged a series of dances, and both officers and men participated in and enjoyed these informal affairs.

In the meantime, on May 3rd, Major Robert J. Halpin was transferred to the 318th Infantry, and Captain Leland B. Garretson was transferred from the 313th Machine Gun Battalion to the 314th, and was assigned to B Company, but assumed command of the battalion as senior officer present. At the same time, Captain Harry Lee Maynard, Jr., was transferred to the 313th Machine Gun Battalion.

### Off for Europe

The battalion left its camp at 33rd Street, at 1:50 A. M., Friday, May 24, 1918, marching by way of Divisional Headquarters, across the large parade ground to the artillery section. Here at 2:30 A. M., it fell in

behind the 313th Machine Gun Battalion and marched to the Petersburg-Hopewell concrete road, thence to City Point, passing through Dupont City and Hopewell.

It was a dark march, but a lively one. The pace was brisk, and the men sang nearly all the way; the long expected adventure overseas had begun. At Hopewell and City Point, the singing column brought many inhabitants to their windows and doors, and soon they began to appear on the sidewalk, many in very scanty attire.

At the City Point wharf, the 314th Machine Gun Battalion straightway marched aboard the *New York*, a N. Y. P. & N. steamer. It was very early, scarcely daylight, when the battalion arrived, but the word quickly spread around that part of the Blue Ridge Division was leaving for Europe. Presently, a large crowd had gathered to bid goodbye to the troops. Many of the officers and men recognized friends in the crowd, as no attempt was made by the military authorities to keep the people from gathering on the wharf. They stood at the gang planks and along side the steamers, as the troops marched on board, bidding them a sincere God-speed and good luck.

Five steamers were required to carry the troops, about 3,000 in all; viz., 313th and 314th Machine Gun Battalions, 3rd Battalion 320th Infantry, the 305th Signal Battalion, and the 305th Sanitary Train, all under the command of Major Oscar S. Foley.

After about thirty minutes, this, the first troop convoy to pass down the James since the War between the States headed down stream.

At 12:15 P. M., the steamers docked at Newport News and the troops marched to an open park near the water in front of the Warwick Hotel. A large crowd of civilians gathered and mingled quite freely with the men. Several hours later all of the troops who had arrived on the five river steamers marched to the pier and boarded the U. S. transport *Mercury*, formerly the North German Lloyd Liner *Barbarossa*.

### Crossing the Atlantic

The *Mercury* remained at the pier until 3:00 P. M. Sunday, when she cast off, slowly steamed out of Hampton Roads, dropped the pilot, passed through the Capes, and by 7:00 P. M. had taken a northeasterly course in the Atlantic ocean. At the start the convoy consisted of six transports and the battle cruiser *North Carolina*, but somewhere off the New York coast, five additional transports were picked up from Hoboken, N. J. The torpedo boat destroyer *Kearney* joined the convoy May 28th and continued across with it; the cruiser *North Carolina* left the convoy off the New England coast.

The sea was comparatively calm during the whole voyage, which, nevertheless, did not prevent many from suffering from seasickness. "Abandon ship" drill was held at 2:00 P. M. each day. All of the transports, except the *Mercury* and the *Von Steuben* (Eitel Frederick), were camouflaged so that they resembled crazy-quilts. These two were painted a battleship grey, and throughout the greater part of the voyage, the *Von Steuben* held the extreme right flank of the convoy and the *Mercury* the extreme left. The night of the 5th-6th June, the convoy entered the submarine zone, and eleven torpedo boat destroyers joined the convoy as an escort through the danger zone, and from then on no one was allowed to be without a life preserver at any time. Early on the morning of the 7th of June, the Bay of Biscay was entered; it was as smooth as glass, though ordinarily it is considered a rough body of water. At 5:00 P. M., this date, the convoy split: six transports headed towards Brest and five, including the *Mercury*, continued towards Bordeaux.

At 12:45 P. M. on the 8th of June, a large dirigible was sighted approaching the convoy. A French lieutenant aboard recognized it as a French type; it passed directly over the *Mercury* signaling the word "Welcome," and, together with French airplanes, continued that day to scout from above for submarines. By 2:45 P. M. land was sighted, and



before dark the transport was inside of the protecting submarine net at the mouth of the Gironde River, anchoring off Royen, a fashionable watering place.

The afternoon of the 9th of June, the ship proceeded up the river about sixty miles through a beautiful country. Visible all along the banks were white houses with red roofs, extremely picturesque, with French country people waving their welcome from the banks of the river. Arriving at Bassens, four miles from Bordeaux, the men disembarked at 8:45 P. M., and immediately marched to Camp Genicart, a French rest camp, arriving at midnight. Although it was dark, the French people lined up along the route and welcomed the incoming Americans with "vive L'Amerique," and at several places French girls did not hesitate to come into the road and show their welcome by hearty handshakes. While at Camp Genicart, opportunity was given both men and officers to visit the old city of Bordeaux, which is one of the largest in France.

### Calais—on the English Channel

Early on the morning of the 16th of June, the battalion marched to Carbon Blanc, a station nearby, and entrained for Calais, 500 miles to the north, where it arrived at 10:00 A. M., Tuesday the 18th of June, straightway marching to British rest camp No. 6. This was a tent camp on the edge of the town, with sand bags piled around each tent to give some protection from German bombing expeditions, which frequently came that way. Here the battalion had the refreshing but cool experience of being marched over and told to take a bath in the English Channel; here they also got their first close-up view of the British "Tommy." They were not slow to find out that the trim-looking girls thereabouts, dressed in khaki, were members of the famous "W. A. A. C.'s." Here, too, all excess clothing, barrack bags and personal belongings were turned in; British gas masks and a few British rifles were issued, and the battalion began to draw British instead of American rations. It was plain to everyone that the 80th Division was to go in on the British front. British officers and non-commissioned officers bluntly told the Americans that the British Army had done all it could, that the French had done their best, and now it was clearly up to the Americans. To the hopeful American, this seemed to be rather a pessimistic view; however, it was at a time when things had not been going well with the Allies.

### Training With the British

On June 21, 1918, the battalion entrained at Calais and detrained the same day at Samer, which had been selected as Division Headquarters. After a march of nine kilometers, the battalion arrived at Frencq, a town just east of Camiers, where it was billeted. On the 27th of June, the Division Commander, Major-General Adelbert Cronkhite, with the Chief of Staff, Col. W. H. Waldron, inspected the battalion area, and, finding the billets unsatisfactory, had the command pitch "pup-tents" in a nearby orchard.

All except four of the officers, and most of the non-commissioned officers, were immediately sent to schools at Camiers, Haut Tingry and Langres. Sergeant-Major Fairhurst, of the British Army, had been attached to the command before it left Camp Lee, and now several additional British non-commissioned officers joined the battalion to assist in instructing on the British Vickers Machine Gun, which had been issued upon arrival at Frencq, together with British horse-drawn transport.

On June 26th, Captain Louis J. Lampke was sent to take command of the battalion in the absence of senior officers, and with him also came Lieutenant Laurence Dodge and Lieutenant Harry A. Eitelberg, both of whom had come across with the First Division, nearly a year previously.

By the middle of July, officers and non-commissioned officers were returning from schools, and the men by dint of hard work were becoming very efficient in the use of the British machine gun. A detachment of



officers and non-commissioned officers was sent to the front to get first-hand experience in the trenches with the British.

On the 16th of July a contest was held at Frencq between all of the machine gun companies in the division. The judges of this competitive test were British machine gun officers. Out of fourteen companies represented, a platoon of B Company of the 314th took second place, a platoon of A Company of the 315th Regiment, holding first place by a small number of points.

In this area the battalion saw the first real evidence of war in the shape of German airplanes, which often came over in the day time, and nearly every clear night bombing planes passed over on their way to bomb Etaples, Boulogne and Camiers.

### In Line on the Western Front

The last night spent at Frencq was one to be remembered. The night was clear with a full moon. The German planes came over in force, bombed the hospital at Etaples, killing twenty-seven men and wounding a number of others. Their planes flew so low that they were visible from the ground; and, as usual, the British "Archies" opened up with shrapnel, some of which fell among the tents in the orchard, one piece hitting a boiler of coffee which the cooks were preparing for an early breakfast.

At 6:40 A. M., July 25th, the battalion marched to Etaples, and at 10:30 A. M., boarded the usual "8 Chevaux 40 Hommes" cars, but the bombing expedition of the night before had torn up track and derailed railroad equipment to such an extent that the departure of the train was delayed until 2:40 P. M. On arrival at Doullens at 9:00 P. M., the men detrained and marched 14 kilometers to Beauquesne. On July 27th, in a heavy rain, they moved on to Puchevillers, remaining there two days, during which time German bombing planes came over several times, but this time his bombs missed the town entirely, falling in the open fields on the outskirts.

The battalion left billets in Puchevillers on the afternoon of July 29th, and marched to Kay Camp, Quesnoy Farm, about one mile southwest of the town, this camp being previously occupied by the machine gunners of the 63rd (Naval) Division, British Army. The battalion was entering upon the last phase of its training. From Kay Camp, the roar of artillery could be heard, and at night the flashes of the guns were visible along many miles of the front. During the day, the large British observation balloons could be seen, five of which were brought down by the Germans while the battalion occupied Kay Camp.

Meantime, on July 26th, Captain Lampke had been transferred to the Divisional Staff; July 29th, Captain Thomas W. Reilly was transferred to the 318th Infantry; August 1st, Captain L. B. Garretson was transferred to the command of the 315th Machine Gun Battalion. The same date, Lieutenant W. M. Whittle was transferred to the 314th Machine Gun Battalion and assigned to A Company, but took command of the battalion as senior officer present.

The work of getting front line experience in the trenches was now carried on systematically; first, officers and non-commissioned officers went with small detachments of privates, and finally the companies each took a tour of duty in the trenches. The first detachment to go in was from A Company, on July 31st, in command of Lieutenant Robert A. Horner; B Company followed on August 2nd, with a detachment commanded by Lieutenant Wylie R. Cooke. These detachments consisted of platoon leaders, eight sergeants, fourteen corporals and twelve privates, the latter being the number one men on each gun. Though this was rated as a quiet sector, those going in found no lack of excitement. The normal artillery fire was usually coming over, and the men soon commenced to "get wise" to the methodical policy pursued by the Germans in the use of their artillery. The "old timers" among the "Tommies" could forecast pretty accurately when and where a shell would land, except in a barrage, when all rules were off.

On the night of July 31st, German airplanes violently bombed Toutencourt, a town about one-half mile from Kay Camp, killing ten civilians, one French soldier home on leave, two British soldiers doing guard duty, injuring a number of others, and killing ten horses. Next day the battalion helped bury the horses, and a British officer took charge of digging the remains of the dead out of the wrecked buildings.

The night of August 1st, members of the battalion in line opposite Albert saw and took part in their first barrage. The British arranged a raid on the enemy's trenches. H. hour was at 9:10 P. M. The machine gun and artillery barrages started promptly, the infantry went over and returned successfully with prisoners. But at 1:30 A. M. the Germans took a turn and had their inning by putting over a violent barrage, which completely destroyed some of the British trenches.

On August 6th, the various detachments having returned to Kay Camp from the front line, Company A moved into the sector on Hill 142 before Englebelmer, a little north of Albert, for forty-eight hours. Moving up in British lorries and arriving at Headquarters, Company B, 38th Machine Gun Battalion, British Army, at 9:30 P. M., they had a two-mile hike to the gun positions, entering the trenches under artillery fire and gas. The next night, the transport brought up supplies, but in the darkness it got mixed up with a British transport and "thoughtlessly" the "Tommies" removed a large part of the company's rations. Private Sampson received a shrapnel wound in the thigh on this tour.

The night of the 8-9th of August, B Company relieved A Company; coming in lorries to Company Headquarters, from there they too had the two-mile hike to the gun positions. The relief, however, was delayed, as the road being used by B Company was violently shelled. No lorries being available, A Company hiked the entire distance back to Kay Camp, arriving at 3:00 A. M. After forty-eight hours in the trenches, B Company returned to Kay Camp. While the battalion was on this front, Albert was taken and the Germans began to withdraw. The function of the machine guns here was largely to place harassing fire on lines of communication.

On the night of the 10-11th of August, a five-engine German airplane, measuring 144 feet from tip to tip of wings, and carrying seven passengers, came over and dropped a bomb on the headquarters of General George Jamerson, commanding the 159th Brigade, completely wrecking the building. Fortunately, no one was in the building when the bomb struck. An English plane went up in pursuit and with machine gun fire, forced the German plane down. One of the bombs that the machine was carrying exploded when the plane hit the ground and the occupants were blown to bits. The machine was brought down in the vicinity of Kay Camp. This was one of the first of the new giant type of German bombing planes to be destroyed by the Allies.

From the 11th to the 18th of August, the battalion remained at Kay Camp, carrying out an intensive training schedule. The morning of the 18th, Company A left for a tour of duty in the trenches, but at Varennes, at 4:00 P. M., received orders to return to camp, the 80th Division having been relieved from the Artois Sector.

The first replacements to the 314th Machine Gun Battalion were received August 19, 1918, while at Kay Camp. Thirteen men came from the 322nd Machine Gun Battalion, 83rd Division.

During this final training with the British, in addition to the non-commissioned personnel, there were attached to the battalion Major J. H. Roxburg, Lieutenant Corder and Lieutenant DeJoghn, all of the Machine Gun Corps, British Army. Major Roxburg, especially, was a sincere friend of the battalion, and it was with great regret that we later heard that he was killed in action near Cambrai, on October 3rd.

#### Farewell to the English

Up to the middle of August, American divisions had been in line on every part of the Western Front; the new divisions for their last phase of



training, the older divisions holding fronts of their own. But now the policy of an all-American sector began to be realized. The Blue Ridge (80th) Division was one which had completed its training, and was now to be placed in the First American Army. While on the English front it had formed a part of the Fifth Corps, Third British Army.

On the 19th of August the pleasant relationship of the 314th Machine Gun Battalion with our British Allies was terminated, and the battalion began its long trip to the American sector. Marching on the 19th from Kay Camp to Bonneville, the battalion turned in its British machine guns and other ordnance, but the British transport equipment was taken to the American sector. On the 20th the command reached Agenville, remaining until the morning of the 23rd of August, when the battalion entrained at Bernaville at 4:00 A. M., going via Amiens, St. Omer, Beauvais and Paris to Poincon; there it detrained and marched to Chatillon-sur-Seine, camping for the night of 24-25th of August. Sunday, the 25th, the outfit marched to Recy-sur-Ource, camping on the banks of the river that night, arriving at Beneuvre the 26th; and on the 27th, Battalion Headquarters and A Company were billeted at Santenoge, and B Company at Villars-Montroyer, about 2 kilometers distant, both affording very comfortable billets.

On August 29th, Captain Robert H. Cox, of New Jersey, formerly with the 313th Machine Gun Battalion, but coming directly from British Headquarters Machine Gun School, at Camiers, France, was assigned as Commanding Officer of the battalion. Lieutenant Thomas W. Clark, who had been in charge of gas instruction for the battalion, was appointed Adjutant and Lieutenant W. M. Whittle, who commanded the battalion on the English front, now took command of Company A.

At Santenoge, American Vickers machine guns, several motorcycles and Ford "Special" machine gun trucks were issued, the first of the long-looked-for motor transport; a little later, at Guerpont, horse transport was turned in and additional Ford "Specials" and seven G. M. C. one-ton trucks were received.

#### With the First American Army

At 4:00 P. M., on the 30th of August, 1918, the division passed under the command of the First American Army. The 31st saw the battalion again on the move, arriving at Aubepierre early Saturday afternoon. Sunday was spent there and before daylight Monday, September 2nd, the battalion "hiked" to Latrecy, where it entrained. Detraining at Nancois, near Bar le Duc, at 7:00 P. M., the same day the command marched to St. Martin's Farm, arriving about 2:45 A. M. and camped in the woods. Some of the more fortunate officers put up at the farmhouse, others slept on straw in the barn, their blankets not yet having arrived. The men were so tired that they were not required to pitch tents, but slept under the trees, wrapped in their blankets. The transport, with the kitchens, did not arrive until late the next morning, and the farmer's wife was kept busy filling "special" orders for breakfast, which, at the best, was very meager.

From then on, all movements were made at night. American troops were being secretly concentrated for the St. Mihiel drive. On the night of 7-8th, the battalion marched to Guerpont, and was there quartered in a large shoe factory, the officers being provided with billets in the town.

On Sunday, the last day at Guerpont, the Overseas Theatre League, represented by Will Cressy's Players, paid us a visit. Chaplain James P. Laughton had just finished his morning sermon, delivered in a little meadow beside a brook, when the players arrived. Mr. A. R. Merritt, the Y. M. C. A. Secretary, who had recently joined the battalion, introduced them, and they proceeded to give a little comedy, and many songs; all of which, the sermon, the play and the songs, found an appreciative audience.

At Guerpont, also, came the first call upon the battalion to furnish an



anti-aircraft guard, of one officer and one platoon (four machine guns) for Division Headquarters. Thereafter this became a part of the regular duty of the Divisional Machine Gun Battalion. Each platoon in the battalion took its turn on this duty.

### Moving Up Northwest of Verdun

In the meantime, the St. Mihiel offensive had come to a successful conclusion. In this battle, the 80th Division was in the army reserve, with the exception of the 320th Infantry Regiment and 315th Machine Gun Battalion, which moved up to actively support the Second French Colonial Corps.

At 6:15 P. M., the 15th of September, the 314th Machine Gun Battalion embussed on French camions and proceeded to the Osches Wood, between the towns of Ippecourt and Osches. Here strict orders were issued against appearing in the open during the daytime. On the night of the 20-21st of September, the battalion moved to Bois de Landrecourt, near Lempire; and on the night of 24-25th of September moved to the Bois de Sartelles, north of Baleycourt.

On September 23rd, Captain Robert H. Cox, Battalion Commander, Lieutenant W. M. Whittle, commanding Company A, and Lieutenant Donald D. Hand, commanding Company B, made a reconnaissance at the front of Cote de l'Homme Mort (Dead Man's Hill). Information had come that the First American Army would shortly make an assault against the Hindenburg Line, northwest of Verdun, and that the 80th Division was to be one of the assaulting divisions.

Lieutenant Walter C. Rhodes, with Lieutenants Lukens and Eitelberg and a detail of fifty men from each company, hauled ammunition to the front during the night of the 24-25th of September, and all the next day. This was taken as far as Chattancourt in trucks, then through various trench systems to the "Hamburg" Trench, from which position it was proposed to fire a barrage against the Germans on the opposite hill.

After figuring firing data, late in the afternoon of the 25th, the platoon leaders, together with a number of their sergeants and corporals, went to locate the gun positions before dark. Battalion Headquarters and the companies moved up shortly afterwards under cover of darkness. The gun squads were busy until midnight improving gun positions, laying guns by compass and preparing details for the following day's action.

The guns were located on the forward slope of the famous Dead Man's Hill. Here in 1916, both Frenchmen and Germans had been slaughtered by the thousands, as they struggled for possession of this dominating hill. At one time the Germans succeeded in capturing it, but later the French, by desperate fighting, retook it. Chattancourt, of course, was a total wreck, with not a house standing—a few old foundations and rock piles where once a fair-sized town had been. All of the trees in that part of the world had been shot to pieces, only splintered stumps left; not a foot of ground on Dead Man's Hill that had not been plowed up by bursting shells. Desolation was complete.

### The Attack

Operation Order No. 1, 25th of September, 1918, P. C. Hibbard (Code name for the 314th Machine Gun Battalion), gives the mission of the attack as follows:

"This battalion will take position on night of 25-26th as indicated on attached sketch, employing barrage and harassing fire, as indicated on table A, and will assist in the attack. This battalion will move forward by echelon during the action, beginning when it is necessary to lift fire from first position of enemy and continue by advancing to new positions, to assist the infantry throughout the attack until it reaches Le-Bois Rond, where it will emplace guns, Company A on the right, Company B on the left, and assist the infantry in consolidating their positions."

At about 1:00 A. M. the artillery began to open up on the German posi-

tions. Starting very deliberately, as morning approached, the violence of this bombardment increased until about four A. M., when it reached the proportions of a terrific barrage. Big shells, little shells, gas shells and shrapnel, all screamed and whined, as they sped over the heads of the infantry and machine gunners in the forward trenches, into the German lines beyond.

The machine gun barrage opened up promptly. The artillery barrage began to roll at 5:30 A. M. The 319th Infantry on the right, the 320th Infantry on the left were ready. It was not yet daylight when the first wave went over, quickly followed by a second wave and then a third. The machine gun platoons of the battalion ceased indirect overhead firing and went forward behind the third wave of the infantry. Each platoon leader, under the direction of the company commander, was allowed to choose his own route in leading his platoon forward, it being his duty to get into action anywhere the infantry might be held up, thus assisting the infantry to advance by applying direct or indirect fire on strong points or machine gun nests. Each platoon leader knew from the map what the final objective was, and where his guns were to be placed when that objective was reached.

The fog was so heavy that it was constantly necessary to use a compass in order to keep the right direction. This fog was quite a help to the infantry in getting through the various trenches of the Hindenburg system, as it was possible for the German machine gunners, holding the forward trenches, to see but a few yards ahead, being too late then for them to make an effective resistance at such close quarters.

Three platoons of B Company crossed the Forges Brook near Bethincourt over some lengths of bridging which the engineers had brought forward; the second and third platoons of A Company crossed into Bethincourt over an old German foot bridge; the first platoon of A Company crossed a foot bridge first used by the infantry, to the east of Bethincourt, and proceeded directly north through the fields towards the objective, capturing prisoners on the way who had been passed over by the infantry. The B Company platoons and the second and third platoons of A Company advanced north on the trail leading out of Bethincourt into Gercourt. The Battalion Commander, accompanied by the Adjutant and runners, joined the leading platoons at Bethincourt and directed the movement northward.

By this time the fog had lifted, prisoners were coming back in large numbers, and the forward elements of the infantry could be seen advancing steadily onward. Before noon, the front line had pierced more than five miles into the German lines.

#### Action at Bois Jure

The assault so far had been successful, almost unbelievably so. When the battalion (less the first platoon of A Company) reached the southern edge of the Bois Jure at 12:30 P. M., a message came from the leading Battalion Commander, stating that a counter-attack was being made by the Germans and requesting assistance from the machine guns. The Battalion Commander went forward, returned in about twenty minutes, and ordered the platoons to prepare to go into action about 500 meters west of the road, in a clearing extending from Bois Sechet to the southwestern edge of Bois Jure; B Company on the left and A Company on the right. A woods was pointed out by the Battalion Commander about 1,400 meters away, from which the Germans were reported to be attempting to advance. Instructions were given to platoon leaders to fire when a suitable target presented itself.

No time was to be lost, for the guns were no sooner in position than a thin line of Germans was seen advancing several hundred meters out of the woods toward the American positions. All machine guns immediately opened on them and a number of the Germans were killed or wounded; a number temporarily fell to the ground, and later ran back into the woods. The American infantry was in a skirmish line in a slight valley about



three hundred meters in front. There was no time to warn them that the machine guns would fire over their heads, as is usually done in a case of this kind, for the reason that a machine gun bullet has a nasty "crack" to it when passing over one's head, even at a safe distance, and it is rather annoying to the infantry to have this happen, unless they have been warned. Again and again the Germans tried to advance, but always unsuccessfully. They located the machine gun positions, and their bullets were soon striking close around them, but mostly passing over head. The infantry seeing that the machine gunners were fully able to stop any advance by the Germans at this point, gradually worked through the tall grass and underbrush toward the left, and finally began to enter the woods from the flank. Machine gun fire was then suspended to let them finish the job at close hand, due to the danger of hitting the American infantrymen.

In this action the first casualty occurred: Corporal George Myers, of B Company, hit by a machine gun bullet.

As this particular job of stopping the Germans, and also of assisting the infantry to gain the woods, had been accomplished the battalion was now given a short breathing spell. The fight having started too early in the morning for breakfast, and no time having been given for dinner, at this time (5 P. M.), everyone was ready to make a good meal on the two days' reserve rations which had been issued each man the day before. This ration consisted of two boxes of hard bread, a can of corned beef (bully beef) and a can of beans.

All along the southern edge of the Bois Jure, which had been taken by assault by the infantry shortly prior to the time the 314th Battalion moved to the left of it to go into action, was a trench averaging from six to eight feet in depth, which had been held by machine guns placed at fairly regular intervals; these guns could either shoot over the parapet or through port holes below. The whole trench being well concealed in the underbrush at the edge of the woods, at a distance of 200 meters from the front, it could not be detected that such a strong defensive line existed. Behind the trench, and connected with it by short communicating trenches, were deep dugouts, the plan being that while two men were in action with a machine gun, the balance of the squad or gun team could remain in the dugout in comparative safety, unless a large shell should make a direct hit on the dugout. These guns had caused many casualties in the infantry because they had to advance through an open field which the guns covered. In most cases the German gunners lay dead at the gun or a few paces behind it; in some cases a bayonet had done the work, but more often a hand grenade had been the weapon used by the Americans in this close work.

While the battalion rested in the southern edge of the Bois Jure one lone American airplane came over. He showed great daring, though possibly poor judgment, as immediately several enemy planes drove toward him, and in less than ten minutes brought him down in a corn field to the south, dead. Early in the day, as the battalion passed through the Hindenburg line, our own planes had been thick in the air above, but as night approached the situation was reversed. Now the enemy swooped down, machine-gunning troops on the ground, and caused a number of casualties in the infantry by dropping bombs along the line of forward skirmishers.

#### Advance to Objective

The sun was getting low in the west when orders came to assemble the platoons for the purpose of taking up positions at the final objective. The battalion retraced its steps to the Gercourt-Dannevoux Road, which ran north through Dannevoux to the Meuse River. The Bois Jure lay to the west and the Bois Rond to the east of it, just south of Dannevoux. While advancing up the road word came from the Battalion Commander that the Germans had a few moments before swept the road with machine gun fire, and it was expected that this fire would be repeated at intervals and to get the men in the woods on the left of the road. After waiting about



ten minutes without any repetition of the fire, the battalion proceeded up the road to the northern edge of the woods.

The 1st platoon of Company A arrived in the Bois Rond early in the afternoon. While the other guns of the battalion were engaged in the action previously described, Lieutenant Tom Barker had pushed his guns boldly into the woods. He engaged a very good target in the shape of enemy artillery, which the Germans were making a desperate effort to save.

The platoons consolidated on the ground gained, from right to left, as follows: 1st platoon, A Company, Lieutenant Tom Barker, in the eastern edge of Bois Rond, facing east, field of fire across the Meuse River; 2nd platoon, A Company, Lieutenant Herman R. Furr, in northern edge of Bois Rond, about three hundred meters south of Dannevoux, facing north; 2nd platoon, B Company, Lieutenant Edward L. Burrell, covering the Dannevoux Road; 3rd platoon, A Company, Lieutenant Harvey L. Lindsay, and the third platoon of B Company, Lieutenant Walter L. Lukens, in the northern edge of Bois Jure, west of the road; 1st platoon, B Company, Sergeant John B. Hartman, drawn back and echeloned in depth supporting the forward guns.

The general situation at that hour was as follows: The infantry had withdrawn a short distance for the purpose of reorganizing. The Germans were only a few hundred yards to the north and they also held the east bank of the Meuse, which placed them directly on the right flank of the battalion as the Division faced north: the 314th Machine Gun Battalion being on the extreme right of the divisional sector. The problem of the Division at this hour was to make a swinging movement to the right, using the extreme right flank near Dannevoux as a pivot or hinge, thus clearing the west bank of the Meuse River of all the enemy in the sector of the Division. This was accomplished during the next two days.

By dusk the German artillery had begun to show some activity, throwing over a number of gas shells. Up to this time they had put over but a few shells on our immediate front, due, no doubt, to the fact that they had been forced into a hasty withdrawal by the breaking of their front line system of trenches. The first gas that came over was of the "sneezing" variety, and caused no damage, except to start several of the officers and men, who had pulled off their masks very soon after the alarm was given, to sneezing violently.

Battalion and Company P. C.'s were established in a dugout in the Bois Rond, the former headquarters of a German commandant, and orders given by the Battalion Commander that the machine guns would not open fire, due to the small supply of ammunition, unless the enemy started a counter-attack.

### Night Attack

The night was dark and the troops were very tired, having already penetrated the enemy positions to a distance of about eight kilometers, and it was taken for granted by the machine gun officers who had taken up defensive positions at the farthest point of advance, that the infantry would not renew the attack before morning. Such was not to be the case, however, as word soon came from the infantry that the advance would be resumed that night.

At 10:00 P. M. battalions of the 319th Infantry moved up and forming in front of the machine gun positions made no little noise, so the Germans soon got wind of what was happening, and up went the S. O. S. signal of their artillery. In short order a German barrage came down in the woods, but fortunately the attacking infantry had left. Advancing across the open captured Dannevoux, and before daylight the high hills north of Dannevoux commanding the Meuse Valley were also taken. In Dannevoux they captured four pieces of artillery trained on the woods and on the hill just north of the town a number of machine guns.

The barrage proper lasted about thirty minutes, but throughout the night the German artillery continued to throw shells into Bois Jure and Bois Rond. Private Addison D. Pendleton was killed by one of these shells about 11:00 P. M., on the Gercourt-Dannevoux Road.

Private Pendleton was an A Company scout, and carried one of the few rifles which the battalion possessed. In the afternoon's engagement he had shown a steady nerve as he sniped at individual Germans from a sitting position, although the enemy bullets were constantly hitting around him. Early in the night Private Theodoric Webb, of Company B, was wounded by a minnewerfer shell and sent back to a dressing station; during the night Private Walter N. Ritter, of Company B, was also wounded and evacuated. In fact, that night the Dannevoux Road was full of wounded men, mostly from the infantry, with but one medical officer to take care of the situation.

### Filling a Gap

The next day, September 27th, finding that rations had been exhausted, and the battalion transport having been unable to get through, due to congested roads, there was issued, or rather taken, from a captured German storehouse in the Bois Rond a day's rations for the battalion, which consisted of excellent hard bread, good canned meats, poor coffee and a number of different varieties of bottled spring water. Another thing which the Germans left was a barrel of good beer, complete with pump, spigot and glasses. One can easily imagine how long the beer lasted with a crowd of thirsty and hungry men. Some of the canned meat was stamped "1914," showing that the German army was still feeding meat prepared the year the war broke out. This day the low supply of ammunition was also replenished by bandoleers collected from the dead and wounded.

The Germans having been cleared away on the north by the night attack, the battalion faced east to confront the enemy on the east bank of the Meuse River. Orders from the Divisional Machine Gun Officer were to take position on the extreme right flank of the Division, for the purpose of protecting that flank from enfilade fire from the woods west of Sivry, across the Meuse River. Reconnaissance revealed the fact that there was a gap of about one kilometer between the right of the 80th Division and the left of the 33rd Division. On the 27th the only troops in this gap were the companies of the 314th Machine Gun Battalion.

When the order came later from the Division for the battalion to withdraw to the trenches at Cote 281 (Hill 281), the guns occupied an old German trench on the hillside 500 meters from the Meuse River, east of Bois Rond. At dusk the enemy began to shell with renewed vigor the Bois Rond, as well as the positions on the hillside, and although the locations of his batteries across the river, were disclosed by the flashes of the guns as they fired, no effort was made to reply with machine guns, because our mission was to repel infantry and machine gun attacks rather than to undertake an unequal duel at long range with hostile artillery.

Not all of the shelling, however, came from the section immediately across the Meuse River, for the bend in the river made it possible for the Germans to fire into the 80th Division sector both from the north and the east, and at least fifty per cent, of the shells were coming from the north of Dannevoux.

Just after dark the 2nd platoon of Company A was on the plank road in the Bois Rond, which ran due east through the woods from the Gercourt-Dannevoux Road. The platoon was engaged in carrying ammunition and equipment to gun positions on the hillside above the Meuse when the enemy's high explosive shells killed Section Sergeant Roy T. Mitchell, mortally wounded Private Charles Hillard and wounded Corporal John R. Young, Privates Sandy M. Wood, Ernest G. Hoover, Joseph A. Mullins, Ray C. Toot, Benjamin Merkle and James McMahon. The battalion surgeon was nearby at the Battalion P. C., located in the brick house in the eastern part of the woods, to which it had moved when the battalion



faced the east, and he arrived within a few minutes after the platoon had suffered these casualties. All the wounded were placed in a dugout nearby to secure immediate protection from shelling, which continued at short intervals throughout the night. After first aid had been applied, the wounded men were moved to a dressing station established by the 319th Field Ambulance Company in the dugout in the woods about three hundred meters south of the plank road, previously the Battalion P. C.

#### In Trenches at Cote 281

Upon receiving orders from the Division Machine Gun Officer to withdraw to Cote 281, the Battalion Commander sent runners to the commander of the forward right flank infantry battalion of the 80th Division and the commander of the left battalion of the 33rd Division, 132nd Infantry, advising that the 314th Machine Gun Battalion had, in accordance with orders, withdrawn from the gap between the two Divisions. Private George R. James, Headquarters Detachment, while carrying the message to the 1st Battalion, 319th Infantry, was knocked down by a shell about 9:30 P. M. and did not regain consciousness until shortly before daylight, when he was discovered in a dazed condition by a soldier of the 319th Infantry.

The withdrawal was completed shortly after midnight, and the battalion spent the night in the Hindenburg trenches. When we moved forward on the 25th, the transport had been left in the woods north of Baleycourt, and Lieutenant Rhoades, Battalion Supply Officer, had been having his troubles trying to get rations up to the battalion. Early on the morning of the 28th food at last arrived and found a hungry crowd of soldiers, as by that time the German rations had been finished.

#### The Medical Detachment

The Battalion Surgeon, Lieutenant George G. Dixon, on the night of the 25th-26th of September, when the battalion entered the trenches, immediately established a dressing station in the rear of the 314th, on the reverse slope of Dead Man's Hill. This station was established in conjunction with the left battalion of the 33rd Division. Wounded started arriving at 7:00 A. M., and by 9:00 A. M. there was a continual stream pouring back. Stretcher bearers had more than they could do, and the wounded were not being taken back fast enough. Prisoners were passing over the hill toward the rear in large numbers, forty of whom were impressed into service by Lieutenant Dixon and assigned to litters, and they began a long day's work carrying the wounded back to safety and medical care. Both American and German wounded were cared for by this station.

The lines had advanced so far during the day that before night this dressing station was closed. Early on the morning of the 27th, while moving forward to find the battalion, the Medical Detachment found a wounded officer and a number of wounded men at Gercourt, including three from the 314th Machine Gun Battalion and a large number from the 319th Infantry, who had not had medical attention. After being given such treatment as was possible, they were turned over to the Commanding Officer of the 305th Ambulance Train for transportation back to field hospitals.

The surgeon joined the battalion in the Bois Rond about 8:00 A. M. on the 27th, and thereafter adopted a policy of remaining with the Battalion P. C. at the front, taking care of casualties as they occurred, rather than establishing a semi-permanent station at any particular point. After going through the severe shelling of the 26th and 27th there were twelve cases of shell shock in the battalion, but upon getting back to the protection of the trenches they were carefully treated with opiates, and only two, Sergeant David R. Bevan and Private Culbert E. Smith, both of Company B, finally had to be evacuated to the hospital.



### Satisfactory Work of Machine Gunners

This was the second time the battalion had been under fire—the first being on the British front. This time the men had been subjected to direct fire from snipers, to machine gun fire, gas, close range nerve-racking “whizz-bangs,” and to violent high explosive artillery shelling. When the test had come there had not been a straggler, not a man had left his place of duty. After this there never was a question—if there ever had been—from the Battalion Commander down to the last private, that if the 314th Machine Gun Battalion was placed in a position with orders to hold, hold it would with characteristic American tenacity.

In connection with the work of machine gunners during the operations from September 26th to 29th the Division Operations Report states:

“A captured German officer reports that the machine gun barrage and fire during this operation was the most effective he had encountered in his four years’ experience.”

During the fighting on the 28th of September the 80th Division gained its army objective and was relieved. Next day it was assembled in the vicinity of Cuisy for use elsewhere.

### Moved Across Corps Front

On the afternoon of the 29th of September the battalion was moved from Cote 281, due west, to trenches in the Ravine Couleuvre D’Argent (Ravine of the Silver Adder), one kilometer south of Cuisy.

With reference to the first night spent here the official battalion diary states:

“Shelled practically all night. Ten casualties.”

At dusk, just after the battalion had arrived, the Germans suddenly opened up with “77’s,” and before cover could be gained Corporal Hinton A. Darden was killed and Corporal August J. Lippman and Private Ralph J. Michaelfelder were mortally wounded; Privates Homer F. Gunter, Claybourne Raines, Madison P. Akers, Filomeno Marano, Edward Schuhmacker, Harry G. Myers and Charles E. Nease, all of the 2nd Platoon, B Company, were wounded.

A battery of heavy French artillery was in action in the ravine, and the casualties occurred immediately in front of a dugout being used by the French as a first aid station. The French medical officer assisted the Battalion Surgeon in taking care of the wounded.

The Battalion remained here from the 29th of September until the morning of the 4th of October, during which time the shelling continued intermittently, but no further casualties occurred. It was necessary to keep the men in the trenches, as the Germans had direct observation on the hill from the east of the Meuse River.

At night the gas alarms came thick and fast, but many of these started at the outposts and were passed back from sentry to sentry by the heavy German gongs to which the Americans had fallen heir. The gas itself was usually dispersed before it reached our trenches.

During this period the German planes also made frequent visits. One day our Y. M. C. A. Secretary, Mr. Merritt, who had moved up from Baleycourt woods with the transport, crawled out of his “hole in the ground” in order to get a better view of a German aviator circling overhead. The thing looked harmless enough, and Mr. Merritt wanted to see all of the war he could, but the German suddenly decided to make him get back into his hole, so made a swoop downward and at the same time opened fire with his machine gun. The Hun’s aim was not bad, as the bullets were entering the ground only a few inches from the secretary’s feet. He decided that war might be dangerous after all, and ducked for his hole “toot sweet.”

Captain Robert H. Cox, received his promotion to major while in the dugouts south of Cuisy.

In the evening of the first night spent here, the stove in the dugout,

selected by the Major as Battalion P. C., exploded with great force. Though the stove was blown to bits, no one was seriously hurt.

#### Nantillois-Cunel Sector

The Blue Ridge Division took over the front line at Nantillois on the night of the 3rd-4th of October. On the morning of the 4th American divisions from the Meuse to the Argonne resumed the offensive. This time it was to be no surprise attack, as on the 26th of September, but simply bitter pushing all along the line.

Foreseeing the bitter nature of the fighting on this front, the Divisional Machine Gun Officer gave orders to be ready to move up on moment's notice. At 6:40 A. M. on the 4th, the battalion moved up, passing through Cuisy and Montfaucon to a railroad cut, approximately one kilometer northwest of Montfaucon. This five and one-half kilometer march was made under shell fire, B Company leading. Just out of Montfaucon Sergeant James C. Good, who had been doing excellent liaison work, was struck in the head by a shell which burst close by, the fragment passing through his steel helmet. He died a short time afterwards. Private Clifford M. Foust was wounded also by the same shell.

Both the Allied and German air fleets showed great activity that morning; four German planes were brought down within an hour. The evening planes swept low, machine gunning the railroad cut and the hill on which the battalion was located, and incidentally inciting everyone in the vicinity to take a shot back at them—"Archies," machine guns and the "dough-boy" with his rifle.

The battalion remained here in support of the attacking infantry all day, but no opportunity for using overhead machine gun fire presented itself. The fighting had resolved itself into almost a hand-to-hand struggle between the forward elements of the two armies for the possession of the woods called Bois des Ogons. At 5:00 P. M. we drew back about 300 meters and dug in for the night.

At 8:00 P. M. orders came from Colonel James M. Love, commanding the 319th Infantry, stating the battalion had been attached to his regiment by Brigadier General Jamerson, commanding the 159th Brigade, and that he was taking up defensive positions on the hill south of Nantillois and wanted the assistance of the Divisional Machine Gun Battalion on that line. Owing to the sanguinary nature of the day's fighting, it had been necessary to establish a strong defensive supporting line in rear of the 317th and 318th Infantry Regiments. For this purpose the 319th Infantry had been pushed forward, and with the 314th Machine Gun Battalion formed the second line.

The night was inky black and rain was falling, but the men were ordered out and the battalion and company commanders set out to make a reconnaissance. Company B was attached to the 3rd Battalion, and Company A to the 1st Battalion of the 319th Infantry, but later it was decided to place Company A in support of the general line. The battalion was kept on the alert for several hours, but nothing developed outside of the usual artillery shelling, which included a great many gas shells. In the early morning of the 5th, our own artillery increased in violence, and following this the forward infantry again attacked the Bois des Ogons, but, due to heavy machine gun resistance, was unable to clear the Germans from the woods, although the infantry had forward elements in the woods. The attack, supported by the artillery, was resumed at 6:00 P. M., and continued under cover of darkness. This attack was completely successful, and after two days of bitter fighting the divisional line was established along the northern edge of the Bois des Ogons.

After 12:00 noon the 5th, while the battalion was still with the 319th Infantry, pursuant to orders from Colonel Oscar Foley, Divisional Machine Gun Officer, the Battalion Commander issued orders to the companies to assemble and withdraw to south of Montfaucon. Later in the afternoon the battalion returned to its old trenches south of Cuisy.



On the night of the 6th-7th the 160th Brigade, with the 315th Machine Gun Battalion, took over the front and the 159th Brigade was drawn back south of Cuisy.

### Airplane Activity

The German airplanes were unusually active and bold during the October fighting. One platoon was kept constantly on anti-aircraft duty at the Division P. C., north of the Cuisy-Bethincourt Road, about one kilometer northwest of Bethincourt. On October 3rd the 1st Platoon of Company B, Lieutenant A. M. Brownley commanding, was on this duty when three "Jerry" planes appeared about 6:00 P. M., flying within 200 feet of the ground, indiscriminately spreading bullets with their machine guns. Many officers and soldiers were coming and going in the neighborhood of the Division P. C., but as the tat-tat-tat from above came on everyone, from the Chief of Staff to the lowest "buck," scattered and ducked for shelter. The machine guns opened up, but the Germans had no sooner come than gone.

Five times during Sunday, 6th of October, German planes forced the observer in a big balloon near Division Headquarters to descend in his parachute. The last time, near dusk, the tracer bullets from the "Hun's" machine gun succeeded in setting the balloon on fire, completely consuming it in a few moments. The Hun then attacked the descending parachute and placed a number of bullets through it, but the observer, a first lieutenant, landed smiling and unshaken by the experiences of the day. The machine gun anti-aircraft guard this day consisted of the four guns of the 1st Platoon of A Company, in command of Lieutenant Robert A. Horner, and although each gun fired a belt and a half, about 1,500 shots in all, the German plane got away. Tracer bullets would have been of great assistance in this work, but they were never furnished to the battalion.

### Near Nantillois Again

On the 8th the battalion moved to dugouts north of Malancourt and remained there during the 9th and 10th of October.

During the night of the 9th-10th, the attacking brigade reached and held positions along the Cunel-Brieuelles Road, but the right flank pushed ahead and occupied the enemy's trenches several hundred meters north of the road. Not to be outdone, the companies of the left, on a dark rainy night, entered the enemy's line at Cunel and returned to the American lines with the Cunel garrison as prisoners.

The attack all along the divisional front was ordered resumed at 7:00 A. M. on the morning of the 11th. Division Field Order No. 20, ordered the 314th Machine Gun Battalion and the 317th Infantry to report to the Commanding General of the 160th Brigade, Company A, of the 314th Machine Gun Battalion, was ordered up to support an attacking battalion of the 319th Infantry. The company moved forward at midnight, the men carrying only their packs; six Ford "Specials" followed with ammunition, machine guns and equipment, arriving on the hill just south of the Bois des Ogons about 7:00 A. M.

Concerning the situation that existed on this front at that hour, the Division Operations Report states:

"At 7:00 A. M. on the 11th, the hour set for the resumption of the advance, the troops formed up in the rear of a barrage. However, just prior to H. hour, the enemy laid an annihilating artillery fire on the left of our lines and decimated two companies of the attacking troops, seriously cutting up two others."

The company halted on the southern edge of this zone of severe artillery fire. Captain Whittle went forward with two runners, and after some delay in locating the Commanding Officer of the 1st Battalion of the 319th Infantry, reported to him. The heavy enemy fire made a reorganization of the left of the line necessary before the attack could be



resumed, and it was decided to place the twelve guns of Company A in echelon on Hill 274, south of the woods, within easy reach of the infantry commander when needed. There was no doubting the seriousness of the fire, as the wounded were being carried back toward Nantillois on stretchers in a constant stream.

The machine gun squads were placed in "fox holes" for protection against the artillery fire. In these positions one of the guns of the 3rd platoon was completely destroyed by a direct hit, but the marvel of it was that Corporal L. B. Smith and two men lying in the same hole with the gun, were uninjured. A battery of German artillery seemed to have a particular spite against the 100 meters of ground occupied by this platoon, as it had no more than taken up the position when shells began falling here, and continued throughout the whole day to hit in approximately the same area. After the gun was blown up the platoon was moved a few hundred yards to the east and remained there without further mishap. As usual, toward dusk, the artillery increased in activity and the hills south of Bois des Ogons were given a general shelling, firing continuing until early morning. The men were well dug in, however, and were more fortunate than the artillery several hundred meters in the rear of the company, which had several casualties during the night.

Meantime, during the morning of the 11th, B Company was ordered forward to report to Colonel Charles Keller, commanding the 317th Infantry, which was in reserve at Cote 274, and remained there until the morning of the 12th. The Battalion P. C. remained south of Cuisy. Early the morning of the 12th, the 5th Division relieved the 80th, which was marched back for replacements and a well-earned rest, having been under continuous fire since the 25th of September.

#### To Rest Area

The 314th Machine Gun Battalion was assembled in the northeast corner of the Forêt de Hesse, about 17 miles behind the front, before dark on the evening of the 12th of October, remaining there over Sunday, the 13th. It is worthy to note the whole battalion had a much needed hot bath here, using a French shower bath nearby. On the 14th the battalion marched 15 miles to the northern edge of the Bois d'Ahaye, near Souilly, First Army Headquarters.

During the march Second Lieutenants Robert M. Hall and Thomas A. Swift, from the 27th Division, with twenty replacements from the 40th Division, joined the battalion as it marched through the village of Ippecourt. The following day we proceeded to the little village of Beaulieu, arriving there at 1:00 P. M.

The Germans had occupied Beaulieu on their onward sweep during the early part of the war. The 314th Machine Gun Battalion was the first American organization to be billeted there. The inhabitants were uniformly kind and accommodating, but were keen on telling of the days when the "Boche" occupied the billets which the battalion was then enjoying.

On the 22nd of October the American Vickers machine guns were turned in and in their place were issued the Browning machine guns. This was the gun that the American machine gunner had long waited for, and it immediately became a favorite with the men.

#### Back to the Front

At 7:30 A. M. on the 23rd, the battalion bade goodbye to Beaulieu, marching to Waly and there embussing at 10:00 A. M., arriving at Le Nefour at 2:00 P. M., where it occupied French barracks in the woods.

Here Lieutenant Louis Agee, with 35 replacements from the 39th Division, joined the organization on October 25, 1918.

It was rumored that another big smash along the line would take place, that the 80th Division would be among those "going over," and that it was to relieve the 82nd Division in the St. Juvin-St. George's sector. However, the battalion remained in Le Nefour until noon of the 30th of

October, during which time both men and officers were kept busy studying the mechanism of the new Browning gun and firing it on the range. The battalion marched from Le Nefour at 12:00 noon, the 30th of October, through the Argonne Forest, camping in an orchard one kilometer southwest of Apremont. The battalion was placed on the reverse slope of a steep hill and ordered to make no lights, as shrapnel was occasionally bursting near the selected camp.

### Putting Over Another Barrage

Prior to the 31st, the Battalion Commander, accompanied by the company commanders, had made a reconnaissance of the front to be covered by the battalion. On the afternoon of this date the platoon commanders proceeded to the front and selected gun positions from which to fire a barrage, under cover of which the infantry was to attack on the morning of November 1st.

Field Order No. 27. P. C. Hamilton, dated November 27th, stated that the 313th and 314th Machine Gun Battalions, under direction of the Divisional Machine Gun Officer, would execute long range, overhead and indirect fire from H-1 hour to the time limit of safety in the infantry advance. After the execution of the fire the battalions would not move forward, but revert to the divisional reserve.

Late in the afternoon word came back to the battalion of a serious mishap. The ammunition trucks, accompanied by several lieutenants, going up to reconnoiter, had reached an old barn 300 meters east of the St. Juvin Road when enemy shells wounded Lieutenant H. A. Eitelberg, Private Floyd D. Schadt and Wagoner Harry B. Propst. Private Schadt had his right arm blown off and died in a hospital. The two trucks were rendered useless.

Immediately after dark the platoons began to move up into position, about two kilometers east of St. Juvin, in a slight valley south of the St. Juvin-St. George's Road. Ammunition was carried by hand from the dump near the old German barn, and guns were dug in and set up with the correct elevation and direction. It was 2:00 A. M. before all the platoons were ready to fire. The Battalion P. C. was located about 500 meters to the rear of the gun positions, and liaison by means of runners was established. The 160th Infantry Brigade had moved up to the jumping off place and lay ready to go over; the artillery, which had been doing just enough firing throughout the night to keep the Germans from getting suspicious, opened up in dead earnest at 3:30 A. M. The machine guns of the 2nd Division, immediately on the right of the 80th Division, opened up early with a machine gun barrage (French Hotchkiss guns), and the 72 Browning machine guns of the 313th and the 314th Machine Gun Battalions joined in the terrific noise and din at 4:30 A. M., firing for over one hour.

The German artillery seemed inclined to let well enough alone, until the violence of our own fire drove them into retaliation. When the American barrage let loose they came back with a fair barrage, and it was fortunate that the gun squads were so well dug in, as there was not a gun that did not have bursting shells strike within a few yards of it. Many of these shells contained gas, and five men had to be sent to the rear on account of being gassed. However, four of them returned to the battalion shortly afterwards. Private Hoy Pullin, being more seriously affected, was evacuated. Private Robert L. Marshall was wounded in the foot by shell fire.

The barrage had been put over, and the new Browning machine gun had measured up in every respect. Of the 24 guns of the battalion only one stopped functioning before the end of the firing, and that one on account of a broken part. Lieutenant Browning, son of the inventor, had come up to the line to see how the Browning would perform, and after this everyone was fully satisfied that the gun was "up to the mark."

After the barrage the battalion was withdrawn to the neighborhood of the Battalion P. C. and reverted to the divisional reserve.



### The Infantry Breaks Through

On the 1st of November the 319th Infantry, made good progress from the start on the right of the line, but the 320th Infantry, on the left, was having a difficult time at the Ravine aux Pierres, and continued in severe action there throughout the day. The effect of the right advancing and the left being held up resulted in a prolongation of the divisional front, and by night the division was facing almost due west instead of north; the right on the Buzancy-Bayonville Road, and the left in liaison with the 77th Division, just north of Champigneulle-St. George's Road.

On the morning of the 2nd this situation was met in a most effective manner by the Division Commander. The 319th Infantry was ordered to attack the German lines by the flank, due west, and the 159th Brigade, with the 317th Infantry, disregarding the flank situation, to attack due north. These operations were completely successful. The 160th Brigade soon cleared the enemy out of its own sector and sent patrols out into the sector of the 77th Division, assisting that division to move forward. By 6:00 P. M., of November 2nd, the attack by the 317th Infantry had pressed north and captured Buzancy, and on the night of the 2nd-3rd the other regiment of the 159th Brigade, the 318th Infantry, was sent in to take the left of the division sector. These two regiments, with the 313th Machine Gun Battalion and regimental machine gun companies, furnishing the forward machine guns, throughout the 3rd, 4th and 5th, pressed the attack, keeping contact day and night with the enemy and overcoming and capturing hundreds of his machine guns. Early in the morning of the 6th the patrols of the 80th Divisions were on the west bank of the Meuse River.

The 1st Division, at 6:30 A. M., this date, relieved the 80th, which was assembled on the 7th in the vicinity of Sommauthe. The total advance since the 1st of November had been 24 kilometers on an air line.

### Picking Up Stragglers

The 314th Machine Gun Battalion remained in the ravine east of St. Juvin during the 2nd and 3rd of November—the men in good spirits and splendid shape for further action, but from the way the Germans were being forced back all along the line, it looked as though the end was in sight.

Late the night of the 3rd, the Battalion Commander was ordered to report to the Chief of Staff, when verbal orders were issued to form a skirmish line across the divisional sector, advancing northward, bringing in all stragglers and all men who could not show written authority for being where they were. Early the next morning the line was formed and a number of men were picked up on the advance to Buzancy. These men came from six different divisions. Upon reporting at the Divisional P. C., the Chief of Staff ordered that the men picked up be put to work immediately burying the dead horses and dead Germans in the vicinity.

The night of the 4th was spent in shell-torn billets at Buzancy, Divisional P. C. also being there. German planes came over and bombed the town; luckily their bombs fell only on empty houses, but everyone in the place had an uneasy hour or so while they were overhead. The roads were full of vehicles of all sorts, and the Boche airmen did not fail to use their machine guns. The battalions, Ford "Specials" and G. M. C.'s started from camp in the orchard near Apremont, but made very poor progress owing to the traffic jams. However, enough trucks got through to keep the battalion in rations.

The morning of the 5th, German airmen again came over and attacked with machine guns the transport moving through the town. To put a stop to this the Chief-of-Staff ordered that one whole company of the 314th Machine Gun Battalion be placed on anti-aircraft work. Company B was picked for this duty.

On the morning of the 6th, the battalion moved on to Sommauthe. The Battalion P. C. was located in the town, but the companies camped in pup-tents on a hill just outside. At Sommauthe a large number of refugees



were being taken care of and returned to the rear by the Americans. These people, after a long period under the German invader, had been released by the rapid advance of the Americans.

### The Armistice

That night the retreating Germans gave Sommauthe a few farewell shots in the shape of shrapnel. Early the next morning the battalion started to march south with the Division.

One of the French officers attached to the Division stated that it was the belief of the French that the Germans were ready to make any kind of peace that the Allies would give them, and that within a very short time an armistice would be announced.

Doubtless the last German shell the members of the 314th Machine Gun Battalion heard explode in the war was one single shell which, on the morning of the 8th, hit in an open field a few hundred yards south of the Sommauthe-St. Pierremont Road, as the battalion was starting on its march south to the next camp, which was on the west side of the road, midway between Moulin de Champignue and Champiegnuelle. The outfit remained in this camp, in tents, on the 9th, and on the 10th marched twelve miles, camping for the night near the edge of the Bois du Bel Orme, on a road running west, one mile from Varennes. On the 11th the battalion marched fourteen miles to Les Vignettes, resting there in billets.

The first actual news of the armistice was received this date. As the battalion marched through the Argonne Forest, an officer on horseback was met, who stated that an armistice had been signed at 7:30 A. M. On the 12th Lieutenant H. Chauvin, of the French Army, liaison officer with the Division, came over to the Victory Dinner given by the Major in the chateau.

### Hike to the Fifteenth Training Area

The battalion was soon to start on its long march to the Fifteenth Training Area. The war was over, and a new phase of the battalion's life in Europe was starting. During a march of over 200 kilometers, only two nights were spent in pup-tents. The Billeting Officer, Lieutenant R. T. Crowder, accompanied by Sgt. Max Bugnard, French interpreter, would precede the battalion each morning and by the time it had arrived billeting arrangements had been completed. The motor transport, carrying all equipment, proceeded to the destination each day independently of the marching battalion. This transport consisted of nineteen Fords, seven G. M. C. trucks, two solo motorcycles and two motorcycles with side cars.

The first night, November 18th, was spent at Senard; the 19th, at Noyers, Maison du Val; 20th, Headquarters and A Company at Mussey, B Company at Vassincourt; 21st Saudrupt; 22nd, Allischamps; 23rd, in shelter tents at Rochecourt sur Blaise, remaining there over Sunday, the 24th; the 25th, at Mertrud; Fresnay on the 26th; Spoy, the 27th; Thanksgiving Day, the 28th, at Couteron; arriving at Sennevoy le Haut, Department of Yonne, American Fifteenth Training Area, on the 29th; Division Headquarters at Ancy le Franc.

Up to Thanksgiving Day the marches had not averaged more than thirteen miles per day, but on Thanksgiving Day the battalion marched twenty-two miles, and on the following and last day of the march covered even more ground.

### Life at Sennevoy

At Sennevoy le Haut the battalion quickly settled down for the winter. The French Mayor of the town was "tres gentil" and did what he could to make the stay of the Americans pleasant. The town hall was turned over to the battalion for entertainment and school purposes.

Soon after arriving, Sergeant Bugnard got leave to visit his wife and little daughter, who had been in Belgium throughout the war. He had been separated from his family for four years, and, indeed, had never seen

his daughter, as she was born after he went to the colors. The interpreter had become quite a part of the battalion, and upon his return from leave it was with regret that we learned, owing to the fact that he spoke the German language fluently, he had been transferred to the American Army of Occupation.

Both A and B Companies got up theatrical shows and later combined the talent into one show and toured the Division. In return the battalion received shows from nearly every other outfit in the Division besides a number which came to the Division from the outside, mostly from the Overseas Theater Department of the Y. M. C. A. Christmas Day, Company B gave two performances of its show, "Bully Beef Follies." It went well. All of the men of the battalion, that day, had turkey and other delicacies for dinner; each company still had a good part its mess fund accumulated at Camp Lee left and proceeded to spend it.

In January the Battalion School started under the following organization:

Lieutenant H. R. Furr, School Officer.  
 Mr. A. R. Merritt, Assistant, and French Instructor.  
 Sergeant J. R. Thomas, Registrar.  
 Lieutenant E. L. Burrell, Instructor Civics.  
 Sergeant W. W. Smith, French Instructor.  
 Sergeant J. M. Swofford, French Instructor.  
 Sergeant J. M. Johnson, Instructor French History.  
 Wagoner James L. Miller, Instructor Advanced Arithmetic.  
 Wagoner C. P. White, Instructor Elementary Grades.  
 Private H. F. Phillips, Instructor Elementary Grades.  
 Private L. K. Johnson, Instructor English Grammar.

On the 22nd of January influenza appeared in the battalion and for over a week men and officers wore the "flu" mask. This prompt action on the part of the Surgeon, Lieutenant Dixon, soon banished the epidemic, although not until five men had been lost—three from B Company and two from A Company. Prior to this, in the month of December, the battalion had been quarantined for ten days on account of spinal meningitis. One man in B Company died from this disease.

Taking advantage of leave privileges, during the winter, many of the men and offices enjoyed trips to Paris, Nice, Monte Carlo, Lyons, and Aix le Baines, in France, and to Scotland and England.

From time to time dances were arranged at the town hall, the battalion being indebted to Y. W. C. A. girls of the Division, and the Red Cross and Army Nurses from the Camp Hospital at Laignes, for the success of these dances.

On March 20th the 80th Division passed from the command of the 1st Corps, 1st Army, the first step in preparing for the return to America. On the 26th the Division was reviewed on the plains near Gland, Yonne, by General Pershing.

On the first day of April farewells were said to the villagers, and at 7:00 P. M. the battalion hiked 17 kilometers to Poincon, the same station at which it had detrained on arriving from the British front, the previous August. Entraining there at 11:30 P. M., in American box cars, drawn by American engines, Chateau du Loir, Le Mans area was reached on the 3rd of April, 9:00 A. M., the command immediately marching to the new billets, some nine kilometers distant. Battalion Headquarters and Company B going to Thoire sur Dinan, and Company A to Beaumont Pied de Bouef, four kilometers apart. The time there was devoted largely to preparations for embarkation. In the forenoon a drill schedule was carried out and in the afternoon athletics, principally baseball, occupied the attention.

#### Bound for America

The next step toward home was taken on May 10th, in the afternoon, when the battalion boarded trucks for Le Mans. That night was spent at the forwarding camp, and at 1 P. M., on Sunday, the men entrained for

Brest, port of embarkation. Upon arrival at Brest early on the morning of the 12th, the battalion marched to Camp Pontanezen, and was placed in tents, six men to each tent. Here the men were equipped with new clothing, and final inspections were made preparatory to sailing. Pontanezen, that picturesque relic of the military system of the first Napoleon, was a busy place. The last of the 33rd Division was embarking for America; the 80th and 89th were starting, and the 36th Division was moving in. Casuals, Y. M. C. A. secretaries, Red Cross workers and nurses—all were awaiting ships going westward.

On the 20th of May, at 2:45 P. M., the 313th and 314th Machine Gun Battalions, and Casual Company, 318th Infantry, boarded the battleship *New Jersey*, from a lighter. Next day, at 6:50 P. M., the *New Jersey* steamed out of the harbor and the battalion had its last look at the hills of France. Five days later, noon the 26th, we entered the harbor of Ponta Delgada, San Miguel, one of the Azore Islands, for the purpose of coaling. In this harbor was found the "N. C. 4," naval seaplane, which had just made a record by being the first aircraft to cross the Atlantic Ocean. On the morning of the 27th members of the battalion saw the "N. C. 4" start on the second lap of her long trip. In the afternoon, shortly after 7 o'clock, a wireless message came with the good news that the "N. C. 4" had reached Lisbon, and all the boats in the harbor joined in celebrating by repeated long blasts of their whistles. A limited number of shore leaves were granted at Ponta Delgada, and Portuguese merchants were allowed to bring their wares aboard the *New Jersey* for the benefit of those who did not go ashore.

At 4:30 in the afternoon, on the 28th of May, the *New Jersey* left Ponta Delgada, steaming almost due west under orders to go to Hampton Roads. For the next five days rather slow progress was made due partly to a heavy sea and partly to engine trouble. On June 4th wireless orders came directing the *New Jersey* to go to Boston. Accordingly, a northwesterly course was taken, the *New Jersey* making about 11 knots an hour.

Early on the morning of June 7th, just 12 months and 12 days after the battalion sailed for Europe, Boston harbor was entered, but the men did not disembark until noon. While waiting in the harbor the people of Boston sent out committees in small boats with flags flying and bands playing to welcome the returning soldiers. The battalion was transferred to a barge and landed at the Commonwealth pier and entrained shortly afterwards for Camp Devons, at Ayer, Mass. On June 10th the battalion was split into detachments and sent to home camps to be mustered out; the largest detachment, 168 men, going to Camp Lee, Virginia, with 105 men, including Battalion Headquarters, going to Camp Dix, New Jersey. The colors of the battalion were sent to Richmond, Virginia, there to remain in the custody of the Governor of the State.



## Summary of Activities—Three Hundred and Nineteenth Ambulance Company, Eightieth Division

First organized at Richmond, Va., in August, 1917, as Ambulance Co. No. 46. Drilled at Richmond until September 27, 1917, entraining on that date for Camp Lee. Redesignated Ambulance Company No. 319, November 13, 1917. Trained at Camp Lee until May, 1918, entraining on the 25th of that month for Lambert's Point, Va. Embarked the next day on the *Siboney*. Arrived at Bassens, France, June 9th, marching thence to Camp Genicart. Entrained for Vitrey June 14th, marching thence to Chauvirey-le-Chatel and started training. Moved to Charmoy July 28th and entrained for Warluzel. Trained in Artois sector with the British until August 22nd, entraining on that date at Boquemaison. Detrained at Poincon and marched to Busseaut. Entrained at Poincon September 2nd and arrived at Ligny on the 4th. Remained in reserve during St. Mihiel operation. Left for Chattencourt September 15th. Took part in Meuse-Argonne offensive. Relieved November 7th and proceeded to Aubreyville. Left for Pimelles November 18th, reaching that point on the 30th. Remained there until April 1, 1919, entraining on that date for Marigne in the Le Mans area. Moved to Brest on May 12th. Embarked on the *Rotterdam* May 19th and arrived at Hoboken May 31st. Entrained for Camp Dix May 31st. Mustered out of service June 9, 1919.

# History of the Three Hundred and Nineteenth Ambulance Company

By Captain Julius J. Hulcher

Ambulance Company 319 of the 80th Division was originally organized and known as "Ambulance Company 46." The company owed its genesis to the efforts and generosity of the Richmond, Virginia, Chapter of the American Red Cross. Soon after the United States entered the war, this chapter, through its president, Mr. Henry W. Anderson, made an offer to the Government to equip, according to its Tables of Organization, a Base Hospital and an Ambulance Company. This offer was accepted and plans were laid early in the summer of 1917. The organization of the Ambulance Company took definite form when Lieutenant Charles H. Lewis, M. R. C. was assigned to active duty for the purpose of enlisting the personnel of Red Cross Ambulance Company 46, in accordance with the following order:

"WAR DEPARTMENT,  
Washington, August 25, 1917.

## SPECIAL ORDERS,

No. 198,

94. First Lieutenant Charles H. Lewis, Medical Reserve Corps, is assigned to active duty at Richmond, Virginia, for the purpose of enlisting the personnel of Red Cross Ambulance Company No. 46.

By Order of Secretary of War,  
H. L. SCOTT,  
Major General Chief of Staff.

## OFFICIAL:

H. P. MCGAIN,  
The Adjutant General."

Actual enlistment began August 30, 1917. Young men of every calling from the city of Richmond and vicinity volunteered. Care was exercised in selecting such men as would make an efficient organization. Most of the men had had experience in handling motor cars. All were given rigid physical examinations by the Medical Reserve officers in charge.

During the formative period, Lieutenant Charles H. Lewis, M. R. C., was assisted by Lieutenant Julius J. Hulcher, M. R. C., and Lieutenant Oliver C. Brunk, M. R. C., of Richmond, Virginia, Lieutenant George S. Hurt, M. R. C., Roanoke, Virginia, and Lieutenant Ray A. Moore, M. R. C., of Phenix, Virginia. Early in September, sufficient men had enlisted for drilling to commence. Drills were held daily, at Byrd Park, in Richmond, some few of the men in uniform but most of them in civilian clothes.

Pursuant to orders from the War Department, Ambulance Company 46 was mobilized and left Richmond for Camp Lee, Virginia. Following is copy of the telegraphic orders referred to:

## "CONFIDENTIAL

WAR DEPARTMENT,  
Washington, September 24, 1917.

## ORDER

No. 77,

PAR. 25. Upon the completion of the mobilization of Red Cross Ambulance Company No. 46, First Lieutenant, Charles H. Lewis, M. R. C., together with the enlisted personnel of this company, will proceed to Petersburg, Virginia, and report in person to the Commanding General, Camp Lee, Virginia, for the purpose of equipping and training his command. The travel directed is necessary in the military service.

By Order of the Secretary of War:  
TASKER H. BLISS,  
Major General, Chief of Staff.

## OFFICIAL:

H. P. MCGAIN,  
The Adjutant General."

In compliance with the foregoing order the company, ninety-four (94) men and five (5) officers, entrained at Richmond, Virginia, September 27, 1917, for Camp Lee, Virginia.

Partially equipped with uniforms, this company of untrained men was not soldierly in appearance, but this deficiency, it might be added, was compensated for by a spirit and determination which always characterized this organization. Equipment and supplies were provided by the Richmond Red Cross Chapter as rapidly as they could be procured; the principal items being one complete uniform and three blankets for each man, litters, dressing station equipment, twelve "G. M. C." ambulances, three "G. M. C." two-tons trucks, one touring car and three motorcycles with side cars, totaling an expenditure of approximately \$46,000.00.

After its arrival at Camp Lee the identity of Red Cross Ambulance Company No. 46, was soon lost, it having been assigned to Ambulance Company "A," a Regular Army organization, and Red Cross Ambulance Company No. 43, the latter having been equipped by the Raleigh, N. C., Chapter of the American Red Cross. The last mark of identification of Red Cross Ambulance Company No. 46 was officially destroyed by a Divisional Order designating it as Ambulance Company No. 319. It was apparent that the volunteer organization was about to become a unit in the great National Army which was finally effected by a General Order, War Department, dated November 13, 1917. It may be of interest to note that the service records of those of the Company who volunteered bear this endorsement "Enlisted at Richmond, Virginia, by First Lieutenant Charles H. Lewis, M. R. C., Assigned to Ambulance Company, No. 46, 305th Sanitary Train, 80th Division, at Camp Lee, Virginia, September 25, 1917. Transferred to M. D. U. S. N. A., per 3, General Order 142, W. D., November 13, 1917.

The winter months of 1917-1918 were spent in training at Camp Lee. The equipment and personnel were brought up to the required strength. Lieutenant Charles H. Lewis, M. R. C., soon after arrival at Camp Lee, was promoted to the grade of Captain. He was relieved of command March 7, 1918, and succeeded by Captain Howard I. Vail, M. R. C., who remained in charge until relieved on March 15, 1918. First Lieutenant George S. Hurt, succeeded him in command, and retained same until First Lieutenant Julius J. Hulcher, M. R. C., received the grade of Captain, April 10, 1918, and was placed in command.

In May, 1918, orders were transmitted verbally, by the Division Commander, for Ambulance Company 319 to entrain on May 25th, for Lamberts Point, Virginia. There they embarked on the same day, on the transport *Siboney*, which put to sea on May 26th. The *Siboney* reached Bassens (near Bordeaux), France, June 9th, where the troops disembarked, and repaired to Camp Genicart.

This marked the beginning of a period of intensive activity in training, travel and service. The history through this period must necessarily be a recitation of changes in location, in chronological order, with a brief statement of events.

June 14-16th. Having entrained at Genicart, after two days travel, detrained at Vitrey (Haute Saone) and proceeded overland to Chauvirey-le-Chatel.

June 16-July 28th. Here the company was billeted, and training and instruction were resumed.

July 28-August 4th. Leaving Chauvirey-le-Chatel, the company proceeded overland to Charmoy where it entrained, and reached Warluzel after five (5) days travel.

August 4-22nd. The interval of time was spent in the Artois sector, training with the British, and working along with them at the front. Here the company was issued horse equipment, and were loaned motor ambulances which were returned upon leaving.

August 22-31st. Leaving the British sector, the company entrained at Boquemaison and proceeded to Poincon (near Chatillon-sur-Seine) and then proceeded overland to Busseaut. The horse equipment was moved with the company, a part of which was turned in here, and American ambulances issued.



September 2-4th. Entrained again at Poincon and arrived at Ligny September 4th.

September 4-15th. Living in the field; held in reserve during the St. Mihiel offensive.

September 15-27th. Proceeded overland and by ambulances to Chatten-court for the American sector northwest of Verdun (Meuse-Argonne offensive). The first advanced dressing station established here on the 24th, began operation with the offensive on the morning of the 26th. About thirty-five wounded were dressed and evacuated from this point. The infantry was followed up and two more stations were established. One at Bethincourt, another farther advanced in a German dugout. Approximately one hundred and fifty (150) wounded passed through these two stations.

September 27-30th. Following up the advance a dressing station was established at Gercourt, one between Gercourt and Dannevoux, and still another between Gercourt and Cuisy, and the following day one at Dannevoux. Approximately six hundred and fifty (650) wounded were evacuated from these stations. Transportation of the wounded by the company's own ambulances, twelve in number, would not have been possible. United States Ambulance Service Units No. 590 and No. 599 assisted in the evacuation. At Gercourt a German ambulance was captured, drivers were detailed from the company, and this car was also used in the evacuating.

September 30th. After five days strenuous service, the company was relieved at 9:00 P. M., and returned to Bethincourt. The Division having reached its objective, was replaced by the 33rd Division.

September 30th-October 4th. Bethincourt was not an ideal place to rest, as it was under shell fire at sometime each day. The men slept in shell holes. Here a hand grenade buried in the ground, was exploded by a fire built over it and five men of the command were wounded.

October 4-5th. The company again went into action, this time establishing an advanced dressing station at Nantillois. Private Charles L. McCoull, of the command was wounded here by shrapnel. Approximately four hundred (400) wounded were evacuated from this station.

October 5-6th. Relieved by Ambulance Company 320, and returned to Bethincourt to remain overnight.

October 8-9th. Returned to Nantillois and again established a dressing station. Private Lang of the command was wounded by shrapnel. On the night of October 8th, the station was struck several times by shrapnel, and once by a high explosive shell direct. First Lieutenant Alonzo Saunders was killed. Lieutenant Saunders was a graduate of the Medical College of Virginia, Class of 1913. First Lieutenant Robert L. Ferguson and seven enlisted men were wounded. Of the wounded, Private Daniel A. McIntosh died upon arrival at the Field Hospital. Others wounded were Private Hayes, Breit, Bauerlie, Watson, Dunn and Armstrong. The last two named died subsequently, of their wounds. While on duty at this station, Privates Cardozo, Morris and Motherwell were gassed and evacuated. From this station approximately 400 wounded were evacuated under the direction of Ambulance Company 319. While the litter bearers, and dressing station personnel, with officers, operated through this drive as indicated by marginal dates, the ambulances were in operation continuously until October 12th.

October 9-31st. Relieved by Ambulance Company, 320 on October 9th. The whole division was relieved on the 12th, and withdrew to a rest area. The Sanitary Train complete, rested at Waly and in the woods near Le Claon.

October 30th. Headquarters, 80th Division, G. C. 18 Ambulance Company 319, was cited for its special devotion to duty and in effective maintenance of dressing station as well as continuous evacuation of the wounded under practically constant fire.

October 31st-November 7th. On the night of October 30th, the company was moved to Fleville where a dressing station was established, preparatory to the offensive of November 1st. Litter bearer, Private Sigmond Wyoski of the command was killed in action at Sommerance. Approximately 350 wounded were handled through this station. As the in-

fantry advanced, a second station was established at Immeccourt on November 2nd, through which approximately 150 wounded were evacuated. The advance was very rapid, the next station being at Vaux, established November 4th, Wagoner Dalton was wounded by shrapnel while returning with a load of wounded. Evacuation from here numbered about seventy-five. On November 6th stations were established in Beaumont and Sommauthe. From these two stations approximately forty wounded were evacuated.

November 7-31st. The 80th Division having reached its objective, was withdrawn, the Ambulance Company moving to the rear, by ambulance, to Aubreyville where it rested in tents from November 9th to 18th, when it proceeded overland to Pimelles (Yonne), which was reached November 30th. The company was billeted in the town of Pimelles and intensive training was again resumed.

December 1, 1918-April 1, 1919. Winter quarters were established at Pimelles, near Division Headquarters at Ancy-le-Franc.

April 1-May 12th. On April 1st, the company, together with the Division, moved to the Le Mans area, the company being stationed at Marigne.

May 12-19th. On May 12th, the company moved to Brest to prepare for embarkation, leaving on S. S. *Rotterdam* on May 19th.

May 31st. Arrived at Hoboken and entrained for Camp Dix.

May 31st-June 9th. Arrived at Camp Dix, May 31st, and remained until mustered out of service on June 9, 1919.

#### Summary

Briefly, the events in the history of Ambulance Company, 319 may be summarized as follows:

Duration of service: Twenty-one months and thirteen days.

Service in ARTOIS sector: Eighteen days.

In reserve, ST. MIHIEL offensive: Three days.

Service in MEUSE-ARGONNE offensive: Twenty-five days.

Number of Casualties:

Killed	2
Wounded (of whom three died subsequently)	11
Gassed	3

Total 16

Total number of wounded evacuated 2,250

Headquarters, 80th Division  
American Expeditionary Forces

France, October 30, 1918.

#### General Order

##### No. 18

1. It is not within the power of the Division Commander to make awards for valor on the field of battle.

It is his desire, however, to officially express his high appreciation of exceptional services rendered, and it gives him great pleasure to honorably mention:

8. Ambulance Companies, 318, 319, 320 and Ambulance Section 590 for their especial devotion to duty, and the efficient maintenance of dressing stations as well as the continuous evacuation of wounded, under practically constant fire.

By command of Major General Cronkhite.

W. H. WALDRON,  
Colonel, General Staff,  
Chief of Staff.

#### "CITATION"

CAPTAIN JULIUS J. HULCHER.

For exceptionally meritorious and conspicuous services as Commanding Officer, Ambulance Company 319, American Expeditionary Forces.

In testimony thereof, and as our expression of appreciation of these services, I award him this citation.

(Signed) JOHN J. PERSHING,  
Commander in Chief.

## "DISTINGUISHED SERVICE CROSS"

CORPORAL VIVIAN S. LAWRENCE, Jr., 1842297,

319th Ambulance Company, 305th Sanitary Train,

distinguished himself by extraordinary heroism in connection with military operations against an armed enemy of the United States at Gercourt, France, September 29, 1918, and, in recognition of his gallant conduct, I have awarded him, in the name of the President, the Distinguished Service Cross.

(Signed) JOHN J. PERSHING,

Commander in Chief.

Awarded November 19, 1918.

## "SILVER STAR CITATION"

GEORGE R. JONES, No. 1842334, Wagoner, 319th,

Ambulance Company, 305th Sanitary Train.

For gallantry in action on road from Vaux to Buzancy, France, November 4, 1918. He applied first aid to wounded men and removed them to a place of shelter under intense shell fire.

Awarded May 31, 1923.





# PART IV

---

## Virginia Coast Artillery Units in the World War

## TABLE OF CONTENTS

---

Outline of Origin and Service of Virginia Coast Artillery Units-----	Page 337
Summary of Activities of Battery B-----	339
History of Battery B. By Major Marshall M. Milton-----	340
Summary of Activities of Battery F-----	350
History of Battery F. Compiled from the accounts by Captain C. C. Walton and William H. Phillips-----	351
History of Battery A. Revised from the Account by Captain P. T. Jamison -----	355
History of Battery B. -----	356
History of Battery C. Revised from the Account by Lieutenant John Crafford -----	357
History of Battery D. Revised from the Poster and History of Battery D, by Captain J. V. Thompson-----	358
History of Battery E. Revised from the Account by Captain Henry C. Stuart -----	359
History of the Sixth Company -----	360
History of the Eighth Company -----	361
History of the Tenth Company. Revised from the Account by Captain Alward L. Johnson-----	362
History of the Eleventh Company-----	364
History of the Twelfth Company. Revised from the Account by First Sergeant F. W. McKee-----	365



# Outline of Origin and Service of Virginia Coast Artillery Units

At the time war was declared with Germany there were only two companies of coast artillery in the Virginia National Guard.

The First Company had been organized at Roanoke, in December, 1915, but was not mustered into state service until April, 1916. The Second Company was organized in Lynchburg but was not mustered into state service until October, 1916. Both companies were called out in the spring of 1917 for guard duty in the vicinity of their home stations. In April, 1917, the companies were ordered to Fortress Monroe and continued there in training until the middle of August, 1917, when they became the 117th Trains Headquarters and Military Police of the 42nd or Rainbow Division. Probably no other Virginia unit served in as many sectors or had a more varied career. The activities of these companies are treated in detail in Part II of this volume.

---

Batteries B and F of the 60th Regiment, C. A. C., were originally the Fifth and Ninth Companies of Virginia Coast Artillery. The Fifth Company was organized at Roanoke, in June, 1927, and the Ninth Company at Richmond, in July, 1917. Both of these companies were ordered to Fortress Monroe in August, 1917, and started training. When the 60th Regiment was organized in December, 1917, the Fifth Company was redesignated Battery B and the Ninth Company Battery F. These companies went overseas in April, 1918, as part of the 60th Regiment, C. A. C., and served with distinction until the end of the war.

---

There were five batteries of Virginia Coast Artillery in the 35th Regiment, C. A. C. Battery A was formerly the Eleventh Company from Roanoke, Battery B, the Twelfth Company, from Richmond; Battery C, the Thirteenth Company, from Richmond; Battery D, the Fourteenth Company, from South Boston, and Battery E, the Tenth Company, from Bristol. These companies were organized during the summer and fall of 1917. Considerable difficulty was experienced in getting the War Department to extend Federal recognition to these companies and a vigorous correspondence (which is set forth in detail in the report of the Adjutant-General of Virginia for 1918), ensued before the Department finally agreed to take these organizations into Federal service. This was done on May 1, 1918, and on the 10th the five companies were ordered to Fortress Monroe. After training there for some weeks, they were ordered to various shipbuilding plants and industrial establishments for guard duty. On November 7, 1918, the five companies were redesignated as above and three were ordered to report at Fort Howard, Md., and the other two at Fort Du Pont, Del., where the two battalions of the 35th Regiment, C. A. C. were to be organized. The Armistice was signed, however, before the companies could move from their respective stations, so they were ordered to Camp Meade, Md., and mustered out of service there in December, 1918.

---

The Coast Defenses of Chesapeake Bay contained five Virginia Coast Artillery units. The Sixth Company was formerly the Sixth Company of Danville, the Eighth Company, formerly the Fourth Company, of Grundy; the Tenth Company, formerly the Third Company of Fredericksburg; the Eleventh Company, formerly the Seventh Company, from Richmond, and the Twelfth Company, was formerly the Eighth Company, from Gloucester. These companies were mustered in at their home stations and ordered to Fortress Monroe for training. They were then attached to different batteries and served until mustered out as training reservoirs to which re-

cruits would be sent and whipped into shape and then assigned to other units.

---

The so-called histories of certain of these units are in no respect adequate, but they represent all the information it has been possible to accumulate concerning the respective organizations.

It has not been thought necessary to provide summarized accounts of the activities of any of these units except the Fifth and Ninth Companies. (The activities of the First and Second Companies are summarized on Page 208, of this volume, under the head of "117th Trains Headquarters and Military Police".) The narratives of the other ten companies are but little more than summaries in themselves.

## Summary of Activities—Battery B, Sixtieth Regiment, Coast Artillery Corps

First organized at Roanoke, Va., in June, 1917. Mustered into state service July 2, 1917, and into Federal service July 25th. Left for Fortress Monroe August 16th and started training. Redesignated Battery B, 60th Regiment, C. A. C., on December 24, 1917. Embarked at Old Point, April 2, 1918, for Newport News, and went into barracks at Camp Stuart. Embarked on transport *Siboney*, April 21st, and sailed the next day. Arrived at Brest May 6th and marched to Pontanezen Barracks. Entrained on May 8th and after three days' travel reached Le Bourne, marching thence to St. Emilion and billeting. Ordered to camp de Souge July 17th and two days later pitched camp at St. Jean Duloc. Followed training schedule until September 7th, leaving on that date for Toul. Moved guns into firing positions near Pont au Mousson September 11th. Remained there through the 14th. Moved back to woods near Jaillon September 16th. The light column left for the Argonne sector September 17th and reached Les Islettes two days later. Heavy column reached a wood south of Clermont on the 20th and placed the guns in position at Bertram Farm on the 23rd. Left for Neuville September 27th and on the 28th moved into position near Varennes. Moved to vicinity of Fleville October 11th, leaving on November 1st for Imecourt. Proceeded to Buzancy November 3rd and opened fire on the 4th. Battery ordered to Sommauthe on the 6th. Moved to La Basace November 8th and later in the day to Flaba. Started back to Buzancy November 11th and on the 12th proceeded to Brioules. Ordered to Lissey on the 17th. Left for the Eighteenth Training Area November 26th, arriving on the 28th and going into billets at Rosieres. Entrained at Wassey December 26th and arrived at Brest on the 30th, marching thence to Camp Pontanezen. Embarked on the *Cedric* January 28, 1919. Reached New York February 5th and proceeded to Camp Merritt, N. J. Left there two days later for Fort Howard. Mustered out February 21, 1919.



# History of Battery B, Sixtieth Regiment, Coast Artillery Corps

(Formerly Fifth Company Virginia Coast Artillery)

By Major Marshall M. Milton

Steps to launch this company were taken by Marshall M. Milton, of Roanoke, in May, 1917, after a telephone conference with the Adjutant General in Richmond.

With the help of the Roanoke papers, twenty-five recruits were secured in that city. These men gathered on the night of June 11, 1917, and elected the following officers: Captain, Marshall M. Milton; First Lieutenant, Lawrence S. Woods; Second Lieutenant, J. C. Holmes. An aggressive recruiting campaign was started, Milton working in the counties along the Shenandoah and J. C. Holmes, of Pulaski, covering the counties in the southwestern part of the state. A sufficient number of men had been recruited by the 26th of June to comply with state requirements, so on July 2nd the unit was mustered into the service of the state by Colonel Jo Lane Stern and inspected for Federal service by Major Phillip Ward, of the United States Army. The members of the organization then returned to their homes to await the call of Federal authorities. Temporary officers were appointed and the men drilled regularly at their home stations. Harrisonburg and Christiansburg were the communities most largely represented in this company.

On the 25th of July, 1917, the command, consisting of three officers and 110 men, was mustered into Federal service. At first the men were quartered at the Stratford Hotel, using their own cooks and kitchen police. The company opened its own barber shop and also started a laundry, which was named the "Lily White Laundry." A quartette was organized as well as an orchestral club, and an oratorical society, all of which provided entertainment for the men. The equipment for the unit finally arrived, with the exception of the khaki uniforms, which had been lost in transit. Training was vigorously pushed and daily drills were held as well as practice in the Manual of Arms, while calisthenics and athletics were also part of the regular program.

Orders came on August 16th to proceed to Fortress Monroe for further training preparatory to service overseas. Before boarding the train the unit paraded in Roanoke with Colonel Leedy of the 2nd Virginia Infantry at the head of the column. Fortress Monroe was reached the morning of the 6th at 11:30 A. M. The company committed a serious breach of military etiquette by placing its buglers at the head of the column and marching through the post grounds to the tune of "Dixie," incidentally running into the daily guard mount ceremony. Captain Milton was called before the commanding officer of the fort and reprimanded.

A comparatively short time had elapsed when orders were received to furnish twenty-one men from the organization for the 1st and 2nd Companies of Coast Artillery, which were to become part of the 42nd or Rainbow Division. The question of how to select these men was a difficult one. After a conference with Lieutenant Holmes, the company was lined up and the following men were picked at random:

Lacy Powers, Corporal, Roanoke, Va.; Henry L. Bowyer, Corporal, Emory, Va.; Robert F. Bane, Private, 1st Class, Roanoke, Va.; Everett H. Rinker, Private, 1st Class, Harrisonburg, Va.; William J. Bowser, Private, Tazewell, Va.; Harry S. Campbell, Private, Hot Springs, Va.; William B. Crockett, Private, Wytheville, Va.; Samuel H. Cooke, Private, Roanoke, Va.; James S. Hargis, Private, Hansonville, Va.; Ellis F. Hargis, Private, Lebanon, Va.; Ritchie S. Hudnall, Private, Roanoke, Va.; Willie W. Lovell, Private, Roanoke, Va.; Grant W. Lowe, Private, Roanoke, Va.; John J. Martin, Private, Buchanan, Va.; Charles W. Muse, Private, Roanoke, Va.; Troy D. Rorrer, Private, Dublin, Va.; Posey J. Ross, Private, Ferrum, Va.; Reynolds S. Shoemaker, Private, Hansonville, Va.; William W. Watkins,

Private, Indian, Va.; Isaac E. Williams, Private, Christiansburg, Va.; Roy D. Whitlock, Private, Riner, Va.; Lawrence S. Woods, 1st Lieutenant, Roanoke, Va.

The departure of this contingent left the remaining members of the company in very low spirits. Everybody was homesick, too. In a few days though, replacements were received to fill the places of the men who had left, and uniforms and other equipment issued, so there was but little time for anything save work. Sergeant B. F. Henson, of the Regular Army, was detailed to the unit as instructor. He was efficient and very popular. So interested and apt were the men that before long he was proud of the outfit, as were the officers.

Captains Earl Douglas and John McCaslin, who had just graduated from the first officers' training camp at the fort, were assigned to the company. These officers were responsible for the instruction of the men in the handling of the big guns at Battery Church. The 5th Company had been placed in charge of this battery and several hours each day were devoted to practice with the two 12-inch disappearing guns.

Life at Fortress Monroe was very pleasant after a familiar routine had been established. The men took pride in the company and did their best to make it the finest organization at the post. The outfit had an excellent football team, which won the championship of the Chesapeake Bay Coast Defense area. As month after month passed, however, and still orders for movement overseas did not come, the men began to grow impatient and restless.

The 1st Virginia Coast Artillery Regiment was formed at Fortress Monroe on August 28, 1917, and included the 3rd Company from Fredericksburg, 4th from Grundy, 5th from Roanoke, 6th from Danville, 7th from Richmond, 8th from Gloucester, and 9th from Richmond. Lieutenant Colonel Henry Fairfax Ayres was appointed to command the regiment, and on his staff were Major Richard F. Bierne, Major Caesar Massei, First Lieutenant Foster Witt, and Lieutenant Phillip Taliaferro. The 1st Regiment was broken up on December 24, 1917, when the 60th was organized. The latter was the first artillery regiment to be formed in the Chesapeake Bay area, for service abroad. The Fifth Company was designated as Battery B. The strength of the battery was increased to 232, the recruits coming from Columbus Barracks, Ohio, Jefferson Barracks, Missouri, and from other national guard companies. Training was pushed and so faithfully did the men work that the commanding officer of the 60th commended them highly.

The command left Fortress Monroe on April 2, 1918, by boat, for Newport News, and went into barracks at Camp Stuart. There it was compelled to open and repack all of its equipment, because of changes in embarkation rules, before the inspector in charge would give it his official O. K.

Just prior to the time for departure overseas, scarlet fever broke out in one of the barracks occupied by Battery B, which resulted in the building being quarantined and the men quartered therein being left behind. The company was formed on the morning of April 21st and joining the rest of the regiment, marched around the outskirts of Newport News to the pier, where, after the Embarkation Officer had been furnished with a complete list of the men, the transport *Siboney* was boarded. Besides the 1,850 men of the 60th Regiment, there were approximately 1,200 other men on board belonging to various arms of the service. Battery B was lucky, in that it was quartered on the second deck, which was above the water line and very desirable.

The ship did not get away until the next morning. Steaming up the Atlantic coast close to the three-mile limit, the convoy, which consisted of seven ships and the battleship *North Carolina*, was sighted on the second day.

On the third day out, life preservers were issued, with orders to wear them around the neck at all times. "Abandon boat" drills were held at unexpected hours. Lookouts were on duty constantly and the men were assembled on deck at dusk and dawn every day, so as to be ready to abandon ship in case it was struck. Two ships of the convoy rammed each other the third night out and were so badly damaged they had to put back to Halifax. The night before reaching the destination, a submarine was encountered,



which was put out of commission by a depth bomb. Nine submarine chasers came out to meet the convoy the morning before Brest was reached and at this point the *North Carolina* turned back to America. Brest was reached shortly before noon on May 6th, much to everyone's joy and relief.

The next day the various units disembarked and the 60th Regiment marched to Pontanezen Barracks, outside the city. Very few preparations had been made to receive these particular troops evidently, for while tents and kitchens had been set up there was no food and everybody went supperless that night.

On the morning of the 7th, various details were ordered to assist in handling baggage, building roads and the like around Brest. The following day the command left Pontanezen Barracks and entrained for an unknown destination. Three days of traveling through an interesting country brought the regiment to Le Bourne, a town of about 30,000 people, where the regiment spent the night of May 10th. The following morning the 60th was divided into battalions and headquarters companies and sent to outlying towns to be billeted. This was to be the training sector of the regiment for an indefinite period. When the 1st Battalion, which included Battery B, arrived at Saint-Emilion, the men were allotted to billets, which consisted mainly of stables, shops, and houses. As a rule, these places were very filthy and had to be cleaned up. Kitchens and mess quarters were established under a canopy by the side of an old cathedral. One of the most celebrated champagne factories and some of the largest cellars in the world are located in this town. The people of Saint-Emilion were diffident at first, but became very friendly after a little while.

The training here consisted of studying the mechanism of the guns (French G. P. F. 155 mm.) and also practice in the actual handling of the same. These guns weighed fifteen tons each and were hauled by caterpillar tractors at a speed of approximately six miles an hour. Infantry and gas mask drills, bayonet practice and long hikes also constituted part of the daily routine for the next two months.

As the Fourth of July drew near it was decided to hold a celebration on that date. A committee was appointed to arrange for athletic events and also for a competitive infantry drill. The regiment assembled at Saint-Emilion on the morning of the 4th and exercises appropriate to the day were held, including an address by Colonel Wallace, to which M. Thibscourd, representing the Mayor of Saint-Emilion, responded. The picnic and band concert were attended by the French people from far and near. Battery B won the competitive infantry drill.

While at Saint-Emilion it was learned that the thirty-five men left under quarantine at Newport News when the battery sailed, had at last arrived in France. Efforts were made to obtain their assignment to Battery B, but without avail, as they had been sent to the 54th Replacement Regiment for duty. In their stead, seventy-four men from the 54th Coast Artillery Regiment joined the command.

On the 17th of July, 1918, orders were received to move to Camp de Souge and take up heavy firing practice on the range there. Two days later the battery was established in "pup" tents at Saint Jean Duloc, two miles from the target range.

The town of Bath and the country surrounding it were different from Saint-Emilion. The people were a mixture of French and Spanish and were inclined to be pro-German. The camp was put in ship-shape condition—in fact, such pains were taken to make it perfect that the medical corps officers pronounced it a model, and it was visited by officers from other departments in various parts of France to secure ideas. Firing practice by observation from the ground as well as from airplanes and balloons was carried on. Class work in firing problems was given by instructors from the French artillery schools.

On the morning of September 7th the light column left Bath for Pieroton, where, by 4:00 o'clock the train had been loaded and was on its way to Toul, which was reached at 3:00 A. M. the 10th of September. The Headquarters Company had preceded the rest of the regiment by a day and had established headquarters at Jaillon, four miles outside of Toul. After the battery was unloaded, orders came to wait until dark, then send the light



column to Jaillon, and proceed with the heavy column after dark to Pont au Mousson, there to take up positions.

The heavy column left Toul after 5:00 o'clock, under Lieutenant Robert Gooch. Captain Milton, who had gone on ahead to see that everything was ready, met the column outside of Toul. Rain was falling in torrents and it was very difficult to get the trucks and equipment along a strange road. Reaching a small town about 8:00 P. M., it was found that troops being brought up from another direction had the right of way over the bridge outside of town and that it would probably be the next day before the battery could get over. Captain Milton investigated and found that by squeezing close to the right side it would be possible to pass the troops going the other way. He communicated this fact to the M. P. officer, who stated that under no condition would the battery be allowed to cross, as it was General Pershing's orders that the right of way be given the other troops. On being asked to produce this order in writing, he refused, whereupon Captain Milton took the chance of hearing from it later and had him put aside while the battery, by close squeezing, crossed the bridge. St. Jean, a small town within the firing area and just back of the gun positions was reached at 4:00 A. M. on September 11th. Traffic was so congested there that it did not seem possible to get through, but by herculean efforts, the task was accomplished and the gun positions were reached about 7:00 A. M. The men were so exhausted that they fell asleep in a pouring rain.

After resting for four hours the work of getting the guns into position was started and by nightfall the battery was ready to commence firing. Captain Milton had returned to Jaillon that afternoon to see why ammunition and provisions were not being brought up. He found that both were on their way, so, with Lieutenant Coffen, Orientur Officer, and Lieutenant Hayden, Gas Officer, started on the way back to the battery. It was found impossible to get through St. Jean because of the large number of troops ahead, so a detour by way of Mamie was made. It was midnight before the outskirts of this village was reached. The town was under heavy shell fire, so the car was deserted and everybody took to shell holes. After the bombardment let up a bit the town was entered and several hours were spent in a concrete stable waiting until it was light enough to return to the battery. The position of the latter was reached at 4:30 A. M. and Lieutenant Gooch reported that he had just fired his first salvo, having been ordered to open fire at 4:30.

The guns were placed in a large woods and had been thoroughly camouflaged. No one was allowed outside the woods, automobile tracks and all indications of a new position covered up in order to prevent the air photographers from getting wise to the position. The Germans must have had an idea that some battery was occupying this position, as shells fell in the vicinity all the morning. The guns being new, did not work at all well, and two went out of commission before long. The firing objectives were German ammunition dumps and the railroad center at Verny, where the enemy was bringing up supplies. Observation was very poor but one dump was reported blown up, as well as the dropping of a number of shells on the station at Verny. The battery continued firing intermittently that day and through the 12th, 13th, and 14th of September. A number of gas attacks were experienced and the men did not get much rest at night, because of having to wear their masks. Supplies and ammunition were brought up regularly by a detachment in charge of Sergeant Byrd.

Lieutenant Gooch kept in close touch with a nearby French battery which had been in the war three years and was told by their commander that Battery B was doing very fine work. Just before opening fire it had been discovered that the trees in front of the battery were in the line of fire so the men had to work like demons to get them cut down. Battery B was the first American artillery unit to open fire in the St. Mihiel offensive due to the untiring energy and superhuman efforts of the men.

On the morning of the 13th radio communications were established with a French balloon pilot who stated that there were a number of German convoys coming along a road several miles to the left and that if telephone connections could be established with him some pretty shots could be obtained. The telephone detachment got busy and soon made

connections with this observer. About the middle of the afternoon he gave us directions to open fire on a cross roads where German troops were passing in large numbers. Before long the observer advised that they were scattering in all directions. The German airplanes came out about this time to bomb the balloon so he descended, which ended the firing for that day.

About 8:00 P. M. orders were received to prepare to move two of the guns back with the light column to Jaillon at 2:00 A. M. but to leave two guns in position to continue firing in order to cover the retirement. Due to the fact that the telephone wires to headquarters became disconnected in some way orders to move the last two guns did not arrive, so they continued firing until a courier arrived with orders for the rest of the battery to join the section which had already gone to the rear. At 7:00 A. M. the morning of the 16th the two guns under command of Lieutenant Gooch started back. The battery established itself in a wood outside of Jaillon where it rested until the night of the 17th, repairing damages and overhauling equipment. The men got their first bath since September 6th.

The light column broke camp at 7:00 o'clock on the night of the 17th and traveling all night arrived at La Croix Jurre the next morning. The heavy column consisting of guns and ammunition trucks under the command of Lieutenant Gooch proceeded along a different road. The afternoon of the 18th the light column was ordered to proceed by way of Ligny en Barrois, Bar-le-Duc, Erize-La-Petite, Clermont-en-Argonne, Les Islettes. After an all night march quarters were taken near a French chateau just outside of Les Islettes to await the heavy column. In two days the light column had covered 105 miles from the St. Mihiel to the Argonne. On arriving at Les Islettes the column drew up alongside the road and after camouflaging its equipment in a nearby wood, erected its kitchen and prepared breakfast.

After a two hours rest the battalion officers were ordered to conduct a reconnaissance in the neighborhood of Bertram Farm and pick out positions for the guns. Four positions were chosen which kept the enemy's territory in view and were yet protected from his airplanes. As soon as the positions were selected the orientur section proceeded to lay out and determine the co-ordinate positions marked off for the guns, and the telephone section began laying their wires to the trunk lines connecting the various army headquarters. By the evening of the 19th everything was in readiness to receive the guns into position and to open fire when called upon. The heavy column of the battery arrived at a wood south of Clermont the morning of the 20th and encamped in a forest awaiting orders. On the following day a courier brought orders to detach the caterpillar tractors from the guns and use the French Renault tractors to pull the guns into position on the night of the 22nd. This was done in the interests of secrecy as the caterpillar tractor is very noisy and drops sparks from its exhaust which could be seen at night by enemy lookouts. Captain Milton made arrangements with French artillery headquarters in this sector on the morning of the 22nd to have the guns moved that night so about 9:30 P. M. the tractors picked them up in a valley about two kilometers north of Clermont and passed around the Aubreville road to Bertram Farm. By daybreak the guns were in position and camouflaged from view. By the following day ammunition had been brought up and all preparations completed for opening fire.

In preparing for artillery firing the regimental order is transmitted to the battalions, battalion commanders send orders to the batteries, from which the orders are executed to the different detachments. Each battalion maintains a liaison officer with the infantry who is supposed to keep artillery battalion headquarters in touch with the advance of the infantry.

On the afternoon of September 25th orders were received that the offensive would open the following morning at 5:30. Promptly at the designated hour thousands of pieces of artillery hurled forth their message of destruction to the Germans. The fire was very effective and one German prisoner remarked that the "Americans did not pull off a barrage but simply threw over an ammunition dump."

Firing was continued at intervals until 8:00 A. M. on the morning



of September 27th when orders came to move to Neuville. The guns and trucks arrived with the light column at midnight and stopped on the side of the road to get some much needed rest. At 10:00 A. M. the next day the battery was ordered to take a position near Varennes. The guns were placed late that evening during a pouring rain, and later ammunition trucks commenced to arrive and unload by the side of the road. Just before midnight a courier brought a message from Brigadier General Altman's headquarters that it was imperative to open fire at 4:00 o'clock on the morning of the 29th. By working all night the battery was enabled to start firing at the specified hour. The guns continued to fire all that day and night. Food at last arrived on the 30th, after the men had been without anything except field rations for two days.

The battery position was behind the bridge from Varennes in a triangle fronting on of the main road leading from Montfaucon. About two miles away was Hill No. 240, a very strong German position which overlooked all the surrounding territory. This hill strongly resembled "Little Round Top" the hill at Gettysburg which was so bitterly contended for during the Civil War. The Germans had built great caves lined with concrete under these hills in which they had lived for several years in most luxurious fashion.

Firing by the battery went on day and night, using high explosive shells part of the time and gas shells when the direction of the wind was such as not to endanger the American troops. Observation from the ground was very poor because of the heavy rains and the mist arising from the terrific firing then going on over the whole front, so most of the targets were spotted by the airplanes. There was constant fighting by French and American squadrons against German airmen, who were very aggressive and who gave a great deal of trouble by dropping bombs on the battery positions besides coming so close as to spot the exact locations.

The morning of October 4th a concerted artillery movement was made along the whole front in an effort to dislodge the German batteries which had been giving so much trouble. Targets of Battery B were the towns of St. Juvin, Marcq and Bantheville, also a number of cross-roads. Fairly good results were obtained.

A large squad of German planes made a raid in the neighborhood of Varennes the night of October 6th and dropped bombs over the whole district. No casualties occurred in the battery although a bomb fell very close to the trail of one of the guns.

The battery continued to fire day and night until the 11th when orders were brought to move the guns. The battalion commander in company with Captain Milton and another battery commander went forward to reconnoiter and select a new position. A location between two hills just east of Fleville was chosen. The telephone, radio, and camouflage sections were sent on in the morning and that afternoon the guns proceeded back across the bridge into Varennes over the Cheppy road to Chatel Chehery and from there to Fleville about twelve miles from the former station of the battery. Targets were received that same afternoon and firing was started at once, continuing through the next day. The enemy put over a heavy bombardment of 155 mm. high explosive shells, wounding two men and killing a third. A gas attack of unusual severity followed a shelling. Battalion headquarters were compelled to move to dugouts on the side of a hill. The battery continued to fire on October 15th using both high explosives and gas.

The enemy airplanes received so little resistance from the allied squadrons that it was very hard to keep firing detachments at the guns. The battery had two machine guns stationed at advantageous points which helped keep them off to a certain extent. However, it was practically impossible to keep an observation balloon in the air as the Germans would send out planes to shoot them down. Three were lost in one day, the pilots being forced to the ground in parachutes.

It was decided on the 18th to try and locate terrestrial observation point close to the enemy lines. Three positions were picked on hill tops overlooking the towns of Thenorgues and Mort Homme. Telephone lines were established and on the 19th a number of good targets were located.



The center of Thenorgues was torn up and a number of convoys were landed on and scattered.

Battery B had one man slightly wounded on the 20th, by a German shell landing between two of the guns. On the 22nd adjustments were attempted by airplanes and balloons, but without success due to poor observation. Advance parties were sent out to reconnoiter for new positions in the triangle between Fleville, Sommerance and St. Juvin, but no satisfactory location was found. There was no firing on the 24th, but during the morning of the 25th the meridian line of fire was changed so as to pass through Thenorgues. Firing continued at intervals through the 26th and on the next day having secured good adjustments from both airplanes and balloons a considerable amount of damage was done behind the enemy lines. On the 29th a change was observed in the reaction of the enemy and the roads were full of his convoys in retreat. The battery again changed its meridian line of fire to pass through the town of Fosse.

It was learned that a big new offensive would be launched on the morning of November 1, 1918 at 3:30 A. M. The targets given the battery were German strongholds in the woods of Hagois where were located numerous machine gun nests. Very careful data was assembled on these woods on the 31st so that all guns could open up promptly and clean them out in short order for the drive by the infantry. All four guns were trained on different points in the woods and a reconnoissance after the offensive showed that the entire forest of fifty acres had been destroyed. The artillery fire the morning of November 1st was said to have been the greatest concentration ever known in the history of the world. About 10,000 guns were massed on a ten mile front and the noise and flames were terrific. It seemed as if a veritable hell had been turned loose. No human thing could have lived within the zone of fire covered by the American guns. The firing continued until 1:00 P. M. that day when orders were received to move to Imecourt and there await further instructions. The battery was on the road by 7:30, arriving at Landres St. Georges in a pouring rain where it halted for the night.

The next morning Captain Milton left for Imecourt ahead of the battery to pick out a suitable parking place. He found heavy firing going on between the American infantry and the Germans just outside of the town. The 80th Division which was advancing in this area lost very heavily here, the dead being piled everywhere. Finding an old laundry large enough to hold the entire battalion, Captain Milton posted a notice stating that it would be occupied by Battery B, and then returned to Landreth St. Georges and ordered the battery forward. The light column arrived during the day one truck at a time due to the congestion of traffic and the fact that the roads were mined. It was the middle of the night before the heavy column reached Imecourt.

Orders were received on the morning of November 3rd to proceed to Buzancy. This point was reached by 7:00 P. M. on the evening of the 4th, with the exception of the guns which did not get in until after midnight. Firing positions were taken on the road leading west and south from Buzancy. The battery had gotten separated from the regiment, and as the headquarters of the 80th Division were established at Buzancy firing targets were requested from General Cronkhite, commanding the above division. These being given the battery opened fire the night of the 4th on the towns of Beaumont and Stonne. Major Norton having been ordered to General Headquarters Captain Milton took command of the battalion temporarily, leaving Lieutenant Gooch in charge of Battery B.

Communications were at last established on the morning of the 6th with regimental headquarters and the battery was ordered to advance to Sommauthe and park along the side of the road until the receipt of further instructions. Sommauthe was reached just before daybreak on the morning of the 7th. At 1:00 P. M. orders came from the Aisne Grouping to send one battery to Beaumont and the other to Flaba. By 2:30, both light and heavy columns of Battery B were on the road to Flaba, while Battery A started for its position which was just across the Meuse River from Beaumont.

Battery B was compelled to take a road north of Sommauthe which had

been torn up by the German retreat and was well nigh impassable. Only a short distance had been covered when the road was found completely blocked by ammunition trucks, ambulances, and all sorts of vehicles which had gotten stuck in shell holes and were unable to get out. The ambulances numbering nearly fifty, and loaded with wounded, had been stalled there for ten or twelve hours and the wounded were in a terrible state. After surveying this stretch of road which extended for nearly a mile it was decided that the only way to get through would be to park the convoy and proceed to pull out the vehicles which were stuck with the tractors. After six hours of work the road was cleared and the battalion resumed its advance, rebuilding bridges as it came to them. La Basace was reached on the morning of the 8th where a halt was made for breakfast. The men had been subsisting on field rations since November 1st and had had only a few hours rest. At 11:00 A. M. the column moved along the road northwest of La Basace to Flaba and there established headquarters in an old farm house which had been used by the Germans as an ammunition station for their artillery. The guns were placed in firing positions in an orchard after which the men rested. All communications had been severed and as no one knew where the infantry lines were, no firing could be done.

Telephone communications with regimental headquarters were restored on November 10th. Orders for promotion and assignments were brought up by Captain Booth and it was found that Lieutenants Gooch, Coffin, Haggart and Christmas had been made Captains and ordered to return to the United States at once. Captain Milton was promoted to Major and placed in command of the 1st Battalion, and Lieutenant Taliaferro was made First Lieutenant and appointed Battalion Adjutant. These promotions had been made on the 2nd of November, but because of the battalion's rapid advance the officers had not been notified.

Telephone connections were established with the 77th Division and Battery B was attached to this division for orders. The battery rested on the 10th. Orders were received late that day that there would be no firing after 11:00 A. M. on November 11th and the battery was ordered to move to Buzancy.

The position which the battery left on the morning of November 11th was violently shelled by the enemy until after Battery B reached Beaumont. Buzancy was reached on the afternoon of the 11th, and the battery parked amidst the glow of the first lights seen for a long time. The whole countryside for miles around was illuminated by bon fires.

Battery B it is said, was the furthest toward the front of any artillery in the First Army on the morning of November 11th. Citations were received by the battery from the Commanding General of the 77th Division and also from the Commander of the Aisne Grouping for its heroic work in the last phase of the Meuse-Argonne offensive.

Under the terms of the Armistice the Germans were to evacuate captured territory and retreat towards their own country at so many miles per day followed by the allied armies at a distance of 500 yards.

Orders came for the battery on the morning of November 12th to proceed from Buzancy to Dun-sur-Meuse and there await further orders. Briulles was reached that afternoon. This town had been a German railroad center and had been so heavily shelled by the allied artillery during the war that it was difficult to find buildings in which to quarter the battalion. However, a few sheds and one larger building were located and here the command remained until the 17th of November. New clothing was issued and the equipment generally rehabilitated.

The battalion was ordered to Lissey on the 17th and notified to remain there for the time being, the 148th Artillery taking its place with the Army of Occupation. Lissey was reached that night. This town was so far to the rear of the German lines that it had not been bombarded, so the buildings were all intact. The Germans had left it in very filthy condition though, so it had to be cleaned up and gotten into habitable condition. Nearly a week was required to accomplish this.

Orders were issued on November 25th for the battalion to move to the 18th Training Area preparatory to returning to the United States. Copy of the order is reprinted herewith.



## HEADQUARTERS 1st BATTALION, 60th ARTILLERY.

25 November, 1918,

## March Orders:

## Distribution of Battalion:

(a)

Light Convoy: Capt. Safford,  
Commanding.

## Will consist of:

- 1 Staff Car.
- 2 Dodge Cars.
- 1 Motorcycle.
- 3 Trucks, Dennis.
- 29 Quads.

1. This Battalion will leave its present position at 9:00 A. M., 26 Nov., 1918, to proceed by convoy to the 18th Training Area. The following route will be followed:

Dun  
Charpentry.  
Varennes  
Neuville  
Clermont  
Bar-le-Duc  
Montplanne  
Pancey  
Joinville

## Position in line:

Headquarters Company  
Supply Company  
First Battalion

2. The First Battalion column will clear the northern edge of Lissey at 9:00 A. M. Space of fifty (50) meters will be maintained between each section of eight (8) trucks and an interval of three (3) meters between the trucks of each section.

3. Two officers will accompany the light convoy of the Battalion, one riding on the leading truck and one on the rear truck. They will maintain march discipline, and see that trucks which break down are attended to.

4. Halt for the first night will be at ROMAGNE. Convoy will take the road again at 7:00 A. M., Nov. 27, 1918. The movements will be so regulated as not to enter the Bar-le-Duc area (beginning three kilometers to the north of the town) before 4:00 P. M. and that the head of the column reach MONTPLANNE by 12:00 noon. If column is not clear between these points between 9:00 A. M. and 12:00 noon, it will be held up at MONTPLANNE and conducted through at the same time the following day.

5. Guides will be placed on the streets of BAR-LE-DUC to direct the movement of convoy through the town.

6. The area occupied by the First Battalion in LISSEY will be thoroughly policed and inspected before leaving.

7. Reveille and breakfast will be *one hour earlier* than regular schedule.

By order of MAJOR MILTON:

Philip B. Taliaferro,  
1st Lieutenant C. A. C.,  
Adjutant.

The command reached Romagne about 5:00 P. M. and camped for the night. Leaving Romagne the next morning the battalion passed through Bar-le-Duc and arrived at Montplanne around 8:00 P. M. After resting for several hours the remainder of the night was spent on the road, the 18th Training Area being reached on the morning of November 28th. The battalions were separated there and billeted in towns about six miles apart, Battery B being stationed at Rosieres. Instructions relating to the disposition of property were received on December 2nd and the organizations were ordered to hold themselves in readiness for embarkation to the United States.

By the 26th of December all property having been turned in and new uniforms having been issued the battalion entrained at Wassey for Brest. The three battalions of the 60th Regiment traveled in separate sections. Brest was reached on December 30th and the men detrained in a pouring rain and marched to Camp Pontanezen. Tents were pitched along the side of the road. After four days there the men were finally moved into barracks in the cantonment. Camp Pontanezen was not adequate to comfortable care for the 50,000 troops quartered there and the men of the 60th suffered worse hardships between December 30th and January 25th than



at any time during the war. Members of the regiment had to do stevedore work, coal ships, and other such onerous tasks. While at Brest John P. Inscor who had been with Battery B since it was organized at Roanoke died of pneumonia. He was buried in the military cemetery outside of Brest with full military honors, the battery attending his funeral in a body.

On the morning of the 26th the command boarded the White Star liner *Cedric* which left Brest at 8:00 P. M. for America. After an uneventful trip the *Cedric* arrived in New York harbor, February 5th. Two days were spent at Camp Merritt and then the organization entrained for Fort Howard, Md. There, all equipment was turned in, physical examinations were gone through and the various requirements incident to demobilization complied with. Just before the mustering out a last review was given for the Commanding Officer of the post. The night before the return to civil life a banquet was staged in Baltimore, which all members of the battery attended. The final steps in the process of demobilization were taken on the morning of February 21, 1919, and the men returned to civil life after nearly two years of faithful service.

## Summary of Activities—Battery F, Sixtieth Regiment, Coast Artillery Corps

Organized first at Richmond, Va., in July, 1917. Mustered into state service as the 9th Company, Virginia Coast Artillery August 2nd and into Federal service the following day. Proceeded to Fortress Monroe August 30th and started training. Redesignated Battery B, 60th Regiment, C. A. C., December 23, 1917. The battery entrained for Camp Stuart, at Newport News, Va., March 20, 1918. Embarked April 22nd, on the transport *Siboney* and arrived at Brest May 6th. Entrained on the 9th for Le Bourne, marching thence to St. Laurent des Combes and billeting. Proceeded next to Camp de Souge and started target practice August 5th. Left for Toul September 9th and marched from there to Pont au Mousson. Placed guns in position and fired steadily until September 17th. Proceeded to Les Islettes on the 19th and on the 21st moved into position at Neuville. Moved to Varennes October 6th and on the 11th to Exermont. Established gun positions at Fleville October 26th. Advanced to Buzancy November 6th. Moved on November 11th and located the guns in position at Bertram Farm. Remained there until November 26th, leaving that date for the Eighteenth Training Area. Passed through Lisse, Romagne, Varennes, Neuville, Chermont, until Anglus was reached, where battery remained until December 27th. Entrained at Wassey on the 27th and arrived at Brest on the 30th. Embarked on the *Cedric* January 26, 1919, and reached New York February 4th. Proceeded to Camp Merritt, N. J. Left on February 9th for Fort Washington, Md., where the battalion was demobilized February 18, 1919.

# History of Battery F, Sixtieth Regiment, Coast Artillery Corps

(Formerly Ninth Company, Virginia Coast Artillery)

Compiled from "History of Ninth Company, Virginia Coast Artillery," by Captain Charles Cortlandt Walton, Jr., and "War Record, Battery F, Sixtieth Regiment, C. A. C.," by William H. Phillips.

Preliminary steps in the creation of this company were taken in July, 1917, by C. C. Walton, of Richmond, Va., after a conference with Adjutant General W. W. Sale. An advertisement was inserted in the Richmond papers by Walton, in which "The Volunteer" from Robert W. Service's "Rhymes of a Red Cross Man," was quoted. Applications poured in and the actual organization of the company began on July 23, 1917.

Realizing the necessity of securing high grade men for First and Second Lieutenants, Walton conferred with Colonel Jo Lane Stern, who recommended John B. Cary and William A. Stuart, both of whom were then at Fort Myer, in the Officers' Training School. Mr. Cary declined, because he preferred the infantry, but Mr. Stuart accepted. The name of William E. Sale was then suggested for Second Lieutenant. The latter was in Staunton but when communicated with by telephone, he at once accepted and reported in Richmond that evening. The company having recruited sufficient members by July 28th, to meet state requirements, an election of officers was held. C. C. Walton was chosen Captain, William A. Stuart, First Lieutenant, and William E. Sale, Second Lieutenant.

The following day the Adjutant-General was notified that the company was ready for inspection and muster into state service. This inspection was conducted on the night of August 2, 1917, in the Capitol Square, by Colonel Stern, after which both he and General Sale made inspiring talks. The organization was designated as the 9th Company, Virginia Coast Artillery Corps, National Guard, in General Order No. 32, A. G. O., 1917.

The next night the men assembled again in the same place at the same time and were inspected for Federal recognition by Colonel Phillip R. Ward, C. A. C., United States Army. After the ceremony the tobacco warehouse which had been secured as an armory, was inspected. This proving satisfactory, Federal approval was extended. So far as is known, this was the only company mustered into service in the Capitol Square.

The first man enlisting in the 9th Company was Edward R. Estes, on July 24th, and the last man (name unknown), joined on August 4th. Every man was present in line the three nights the company was assembled, which is evidence of the enthusiasm pervading the organization. As the company had officially become part of the United States Army on August 5th, the question of housing and feeding the men had to be taken up. Arrangements were made with the Lexington Hotel for quarters and a catering company was engaged to ration them. Military discipline and drills were inaugurated at once as well as long hikes. Equipment commenced to arrive and the men were fitted with uniforms.

Telegraphic orders were received from the War Department on August 17th, directing that twenty picked men, who were good horsemen, be sent to Fortress Monroe for immediate overseas duty. The company was assembled and volunteers were asked for. As everybody stepped forward it was necessary for Captain Walton to select twenty names. This detachment in charge of Acting Sergeant W. W. Shelton, left the next day. At Fortress Monroe they were assigned to the 1st and 2nd Companies of Virginia Coast Artillery, which became part of the 42nd or Rainbow Division. One of this group, Corporal Wade H. Miller, was killed July 14, 1918, on the Champagne front, and another, James I. McRee, was awarded the Croix-de-Guerre for conspicuous bravery in action. Corporal Bailey L. Tucker, of this de-



tachment, was badly gassed on the Alsace Lorraine front while taking German prisoners to the rear.

On August 27th the company was ordered to report at Fortress Monroe on the 30th and left the C. & O. station at 4:00 P. M. that day. Lieutenant Earl B. Wilkinson met the company on its arrival and led the way to the barracks. There they were greeted with coffee and sandwiches prepared by the 3rd Company of Coast Artillery of Fredericksburg.

The company remained in barracks three weeks and then went into camp at Battery Anderson, a battery of twelve-inch mortars, situated on Chesapeake Bay, about two miles from Fortress Monroe. There the men were required to study artillery drill regulations and were given practice in the handling of the mortars. Colonel Lundeen, commander of the fort, designated three reserve officers to drill the men and infantry drill was held every morning. All National Guard officers were ordered to attend the Artillery School, which course was in addition to their regular company duties. Quite a number of men soon qualified as First and Second Class Gunners. Athletics were encouraged and considerable rivalry developed between the Virginia companies. The football team of the 5th Company of Roanoke had not sustained a single defeat, but when it met the team of the 9th Company, the contest broke up in a free-for-all fight. After this exchange of hostilities a warm friendship sprang up between the two commands.

Captain Walton was relieved as Commanding Officer of the 9th Company on November 13, 1917, and attached to the staff of Colonel Lundeen for duty. After serving on his staff in sundry capacities, he was detailed as Personal Officer and Assistant Adjutant, being later sent to Camp Eustis as Personnel Adjutant. Lieutenant William A. Stuart assumed command of the company when Captain Walton was transferred, but was relieved on January 2, 1918, and assigned to Headquarters Coast Defense of Chesapeake Bay as Assistant Artillery Engineer. Second Lieutenant William E. Sale was detailed for special duty as Instructor for Virginia National Guard companies, on May 16, 1918. He was subsequently attached to the air service as an artillery observer.

Special Order No. 291, Headquarters Coast Defense of Chesapeake Bay, of December 23, 1917, designated the 9th Company as Battery F, 60th Regiment, C. A. C. This regiment was slated for early overseas service and was to be composed of the following units:

- Battery "A," regulars from Fort DuPont, Delaware.
- Battery "B," 5th Company of Virginia Coast Artillery.
- Battery "C," regulars from Fort Washington, Md.
- Battery "D," National Guard from the District of Columbia.
- Battery "E," 6th Company from Fortress Monroe.
- Battery "F," 9th Company of Virginia Coast Artillery.
- Headquarters Company, 8th Company from Fortress Monroe.
- Supply Company, National Guard from Washington, D. C.

The regiment was to be commanded by Colonel Elmer J. Wallace, with Captain John Izard as Adjutant. On February 27, 1918, Captain Dulaney Logan was appointed to the command of Battery F. The following officers were also assigned to the battery: First Lieutenant Frank G. Millard, and Second Lieutenants, Charles A. Firth, Albert J. Ansel, and Clarence W. Hendrickson. Battery F left Fortress Monroe for Camp Stuart on March 20, 1918. On the 22nd of April, the transport *Siboney* was boarded at Newport News and the following day the battery was bound for France. The voyage was uneventful except for one submarine scare and a collision between two of the ships, which had to put back to port.

Brest was reached on May 6th and the command disembarked the next morning and marched to Pontanezen Barracks, where two days were spent. On the 9th the battery entrained and traveled south to Le Bourne, a little town in Gironde d' St. Emilion, a region famous for its champagne. From Le Bourne Battery F went to St. Laurent des Combes, where it was billeted. There four 155 mm. G. P. F. guns were issued. The battery along with the rest of the regiment, moved to Camp de Souge, just outside of Bordeaux for target practice. The first shot was fired on the range on August 5, 1918, and from then until the departure for the front target practice was held daily.

The time was divided between firing, drilling and painting the equip-

ment for purposes of camouflage. The regimental mark was a red diamond. An American observer flying overhead during operations in the Argonne, noticed the activity of the regiment below and dropped a note, saying, "For God's sake get under cover, you look like a circus." From that time on the 60th was known as "Wallace's Red Diamond Circus."

The battery left Camp de Souge on September 9, 1918, for the front, and detrained the morning of the 12th at Toul, then in active range of the Germans guns. Pont-au-Mousson was reached that day and at midnight the guns opened fire. The whole regiment was actively engaged in continuous firing from September 12th to 17th. A move was made on the 17th and Les Islettes reached on the 19th. On the 21st Battery F went into position at Neuville. By superhuman efforts the guns were gotten into position in time to take part in the Meuse-Argonne offensive. After remaining here until October 5th, the battery was moved by night under a continuous air-plane bombardment to Varennes, which was reached the morning of October 6, 1918. There, a position was taken behind a hill and the guns opened fire as soon as they were gotten into place. Varennes had been one of the railheads of the German army and a great deal of railroad equipment was captured when they evacuated the town. This position was held until October 11th, when the guns were moved forward to Exermont, where the battery remained under almost constant shell fire until the 25th. October 26th saw the command established in a new position at Fleville, with battalion headquarters at Chateau Chehery. The Germans had laid out a number of gardens and had even built a merry-go-round. The battery was now located on the right of the Argonne Woods, in which German machine guns were still located. While there it was reported that the enemy was attacking in force and every man in the command was called into line.

Comparatively little was done from October 27th to November 1st. All ammunition details were rushing ammunition to the front as fast as possible for use in the big drive which started on the latter date. From 3:00 A. M. to 7:00 A. M. on the 1st of November, the American bombardment continued and so devastating was the curtain of fire that the infantry gained all of its objectives. The German retreat became so rapid that trucks had to be commandeered in order to keep up with them.

The battery moved forward to Buzancy on November 6th, where, due to traffic congestion, it had to park on the side of the road. There it remained until the morning of the 11th, when hostilities ceased. The Americans did little to celebrate the halting of fighting. Not a building was standing, all business except that of war had long ago ceased, there was no wine to be had—so in reality, there was no way to relieve the tension. Most of the amusement of the American soldiers came from watching the antics of the French, who tossed themselves to and fro in the air, shouting, "La guerre est finie." They turned somersaults in the mud and slush, and gave many other demonstrations of unbounded joy.

Reliable observation for firing purposes was practically unknown. Neither airplanes nor balloons often supplied accurate information and terrestrial posts were difficult to locate in the brief time spent at each position. At Fleville, however, very good results were obtained. All battery positions in France seemed to be underlaid with a rocky soil and this rendered the digging necessary to getting the guns, which weighed fifteen tons each into position very arduous indeed.

Moving orders came at 1:00 P. M., on November 11th and after an all night ride Peuvillers was reached and a new gun position taken at Bertram Farm. There the battery remained until the 26th, when orders were received to proceed to the 18th Training Area. The mail censorship had been lifted, trucks were running with lights at night, bonfires could be seen wherever Americans were gathered, and conditions were rapidly becoming normal again. The battery passed through Lissey the morning of November 26th, and arrived at Romagne that afternoon, where the night was spent. Leaving Romagne the next morning the towns of Varennes, Neuville and Cherfont, all of which had but recently served as gun position, were passed through. The convoy moved practically day and night on the 27th and 28th and after thirty hours of continuous driving, with very little food

of any kind, reached its destination, the town of Anglus. Due to the small supply of gasoline, trucks dropped out all along the way.

The men were billeted in stables and houses at Anglus, where they remained until December 27th. On that date all trucks were ordered turned in at Wassey. After this was completed, American box cars, which had been filled with straw and left standing on a nearby siding, were boarded and the journey to the port of embarkation commenced.

The train arrived at Brest at 9:00 A. M. the morning of December 30th, and the command moved to the outskirts of the camp at Pontanezen. There were 50,000 men quartered there at that time and the place was in a horrible condition. It has been described as "the Hell Hole of France," which most of the men thought was expressing it mildly. After three days delay the regiment was billeted in barracks without floors and with the beds arranged in tiers.

There were numerous night details and working parties, but finally, on the 26th of January, 1919, the regiment left camp and boarded the *Cedric* at Brest. New York was reached on February 4th and from there the command proceeded to Camp Merritt. Leaving Camp Merritt on the 9th, the regiment arrived in Washington at 8 P. M. that night. Marching down Pennsylvania Avenue with the band playing, to the Seventh Street wharf, the regiment boarded ship and after an hour's ride, arrived at Fort Washington, Md. All records and property pertaining to the unit having been turned in to the Headquarters Coast Defenses of the Potomac, in accordance with General Orders No. 8, from the above Headquarters, Battery F was demobilized on February 18, 1919.



# History of Battery A, Thirty-Fifth Regiment, Coast Artillery Corps

(Formerly the Eleventh Company, Virginia Coast Artillery)

Revised from the account by Captain P. T. Jamison.

**Sources:** History of the Eleventh Company, Virginia Coast Artillery, by Captain P. T. Jamison. Virginia Coast Artillery Companies, by General Jo Lane Stern. Sketch of the 10th, 11th, 12th, 13th and 14th Companies of Virginia Coast Artillery, by Captain S. K. Funkhouser. Report of the Adjutant General of Virginia for 1918. Militia Bureau Records, Organization Records, Returns, Regimental D. R. C., Orders, Training Reports, Miscellaneous Section A. G. D.

---

This company was organized in Roanoke and was composed of men from that city and vicinity, and from various communities in southwest Virginia and West Virginia.

The organization was inspected at Roanoke, on December 12, 1917, with three officers and 102 men present and two men absent, but accounted for.

Dr. Linwood H. Justis was elected Captain; Robert W. Cutshall, First Lieutenant; and Charles H. McHugh, Second Lieutenant. Dr. Justis resigned very shortly thereafter to accept a commission in the Medical Reserve Corps. He was succeeded by Peyton T. Jamison, of the class of 1906, at V. M. I., who commanded the company until it was mustered out. No other changes occurred among the enlisted personnel.

Regular drills were held at the Roanoke Armory, which was used as the company rendezvous, until the 1st of May, 1918, when the company was mustered into Federal service.

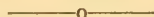
In accordance with orders from the War Department the 11th Company reported at Fortress Monroe on May 10th. The officers were ordered to school and the enlisted personnel launched on a course of intensive training. After six weeks of this the command was order to Chester, Pa., to guard the plant of the Sun Shipbuilding Company. Just before leaving Fortress Monroe for Chester the company was inspected by General Mann, commanding the Department of the East. He was loud in his praises of the excellence of the organization and especially commendatory in his remarks as to the personnel. After this inspection the commanding officer at Fortress Monroe requested that the company be allowed to remain there to complete its training and then go overseas with organizations then at the fort. This request was refused. While stationed there Sergeant Wright, of Lawrenceville, and Privates Fitzhugh L. White, of Pulaski, and A. W. Tinnell, of Poage's Mill, died of influenza.

The command was transferred on October 20, 1918, to Gilmerton, Va., On the 7th of November the 11th Company was redesignated Battery A and assigned to the 35th Regiment, which was scheduled for early service overseas. The sudden ending of the war changed these plans, however, the company being ordered to Camp Meade, Md., very shortly after this where it was demobilized on December 5, 1918.

# History of Battery B, Thirty-Fifth Regiment, Coast Artillery Corps

(Formerly the Twelfth Company, Virginia Coast Artillery.)

**Sources:** Virginia Coast Artillery Companies, by General Jo Lane Stern. Sketch of the 10th, 11th, 12th, 13th and 14th Companies of Virginia Coast Artillery, by Captain S. K. Funkhouser. Report of the Adjutant General of Virginia for 1918. Militia Bureau Records, Organization Records, Returns, Regimental D. R. C., Orders, Training Reports, Miscellaneous Section A. G. D.



The 12th Company was inspected in Richmond, on December 14, 1917. Three officers and 109 men were present. There was also an excess enlistment of fourteen men in this company.

Henry C. Franklin was elected Captain; John R. Diggs, First Lieutenant; and Stuart Ragland, Second Lieutenant.

The members of the organization reported to the company rendezvous on May 1, 1918, in response to the call of the President, dated April 25th. On May 8th the command was mustered into Federal service and on the 10th entrained for Fortress Monroe, arriving there the same date. The company started at once on a comprehensive training program.

On November 7, 1918, the 12th Company was drafted into Federal service by proclamation of the President. The designation of the company was changed to Battery B of the 35th Regiment, C. A. C.

The company was demobilized on December 19, 1918, at Camp Meade, Md.

# History of Battery C, Thirty-Fifth Regiment, Coast Artillery Corps

(Formerly the Thirteenth Company Virginia Coast Artillery.)

Revised from the account by Lieutenant John Crafford.

**Sources:** History of the Thirteenth Company, Virginia Coast Artillery, by Lieutenant John Crafford. Virginia Coast Artillery Companies, by General Jo Lane Stern. Sketch of the 10th, 11th, 12th, 13th and 14th Companies of Virginia Coast Artillery, by Captain S. K. Funkhouser. Report of the Adjutant General of Virginia for 1918. Militia Bureau Records, Organization Records, Returns, Regimental D. R. C., Orders, Training Reports, Miscellaneous Section A. G. D.

---

Recruiting for this unit known as the "Blues" Company, was started at Richmond in the fall of 1917, by Louis Heindl, Herbert Harris and Pembroke Taylor, and was later pushed to completion by other members of the company, assisted by Judge William Crump Taylor.

The company was inspected at the First Regiment Armory, December 12, 1917, with one officer and 109 men present. There was also an excess enlistment of ten men.

The promoters of the company were non-commissioned officers in the Blues Battalion at Camp McClellan, who had received furloughs from Camp McClellan for the purpose of returning to Richmond and organizing the new command. The War Department refused to allow them to be discharged to accept commissions in a National Guard organization so it became necessary for the Governor to appoint officers for this company.

Samuel K. Funkhouser was appointed Captain. He was a Virginian, having been educated at the Virginia Military Institute and held the rank of Lieutenant-Colonel in a Missouri regiment. John C. Crafford who had been very active in the organization of the company was made First Lieutenant, and James Bernard Grant, who had been a student at V. M. I. was commissioned Second Lieutenant.

It was not until May, 1918, that the company received orders for mobilization, which was effected on the 10th of that month at the Blues' Armory in Richmond. Leaving Richmond the same afternoon on a special train with the 12th Company, also of Richmond, and the 14th Company from South Boston, Fortress Monroe was reached in time for supper. There the company was equipped and drilled as infantry.

On the 18th of June, after some weeks of intensive training, the 13th Company was dispatched to Sparrow's Point, Mr., to guard the shipyard there. Five months were spent at this station, the command drawing rations during that time from Camp Halabird and receiving medical attention from Fort Howard. Three men died from influenza while at Sparrow's Point. People in the neighborhood were very kind and did all they could to make things pleasant for the men. The men themselves were hard and faithful workers and performed their duties in satisfactory fashion at all times.

On November 7, 1918, the 13th Company was assigned to the 35th Regiment, C. A. C. and designated as Battery C. The 35th Regiment was scheduled for early departure for France, but the signing of the Armistice on the 11th resulted in the cancellation of these plans. The 13th Company was ordered to Camp Meade, Md., and mustered out of Federal service on December 4, 1918.



# History of Battery D, Thirty-Fifth Regiment, Coast Artillery Corps

(Formerly the Fourteenth Company, Virginia Coast Artillery.)

Revised from the "Roster and History of Battery D," by  
Captain J. V. Thompson.

**Sources:** Roster and History of Battery D, by Captain J. V. Thompson. Virginia Coast Artillery Companies, by General Jo Lane Stern. Sketch of the 10th, 11th, 12th, 13th and 14th Companies of Virginia Coast Artillery, by Captain S. K. Funkhouser. Report of the Adjutant General of Virginia for 1918. Militia Bureau Records, Organization Records, Returns, Regimental D. R. C., Orders, Training Reports, Miscellaneous Section A. G. D.

---

Authority to organize this company was granted, by Governor Henry C. Stuart, on November 29, 1917, on condition that it be recruited to a strength of three officers and 100 men by midnight of December 14th.

The time being so short concerted efforts were made in South Boston and Halifax County and in less than twelve days the company was reported ready. This, in itself, constituted an enviable achievement as no military company had been so quickly organized in Virginia since 1871.

On the morning of December 13th the men of the company, 109 in all, met in the Big Four Warehouse and elected the following officers: John V. Thompson, Captain; John D. Evans, First Lieutenant; and Donnan E. Gray, Second Lieutenant. At eleven o'clock the company assembled at the Planters Warehouse where it was inspected by Lieutenant-Colonel Stern, Inspector General of Virginia, and Captain Eli Bennett, C. A. C., representing the War Department. The organization was highly praised by these two officers and Federal recognition was extended upon their recommendation.

From that date on until early spring it was expected that the company would be called into Federal service. On April 27, 1918, orders for mobilization at South Boston on May 1st were received and from then until ordered to Fortress Monroe, on May 10th, every member of the command was kept busy drilling.

The owners of the Planters Warehouse turned the building over to the company and the people of South Boston provided meals and lodging.

Orders having been received for the 14th Company to report at Fortress Monroe, on the 10th of May it left that morning at eight o'clock on special cars over the Southern Railway. The departure brought out one of the biggest gatherings ever seen, in South Boston, to bid the boys farewell.

The company arrived at Richmond at 12:45 P. M., where it was reviewed by Governor Westmoreland Davis and Acting Adjutant-General Stern. After this ceremony the South Boston unit, together with the 12th and 13th Companies of Richmond, boarded a special train over the C. & O. for Fortress Monroe.

After five weeks of intensive training the company was ordered to proceed to Baltimore, by boat, and join the 50th Infantry, which was engaged in guarding the Ordnance Depot of Curtis Bay.

On August 16, 1918, the command received orders to report at Hampton, Va., for similar duty at the Hampton Shipbuilding Co.

The 7th of November the 14th Company was charged to Battery D and assigned to the 35th Regiment of C. A. C. Major Willson H. Cralle, of Virginia, was placed in command of the Virginia battalion, which comprised the 10th, 11th, 12th, 13th and 14th Companies and established his headquarters with Battery D, at Hampton. The men lived now in daily anticipation of orders for the movement overseas, but due to the signing of the Armistice, on November 11th, no such orders ever came. Six days later the 14th Company was ordered to Camp Meade for demobilization and arrived there on November 19th. By December 4, 1918, the mustering out of the command was completed and the members were on their way home.

# History of Battery E, Thirty-Fifth Regiment, Coast Artillery Corps

(Formerly the Tenth Company, Virginia Coast Artillery)

Revised from the account by Captain Henry C. Stuart.

**Sources:** History of the Tenth Company, Virginia Coast Artillery, by Captain Henry C. Stuart. Virginia Coast Artillery Companies, by General Jo Lane Stern. Sketch of the 10th, 11th, 12th, 13th and 14th Companies of Virginia Coast Artillery, by Captain S. K. Funkhouser. Report of the Adjutant General of Virginia for 1918. Militia Bureau Records, Organization Records, Returns, Regimental D. R. C., Orders, Training Reports, Miscellaneous Section A. G. D.

---

The 10th Company was organized at Bristol, Va., and consisted of three officers and 102 men. The company was inspected and mustered into state service on December 11, 1917. The officers were as follows: Henry C. Stuart, Jr., Captain; W. W. Fain, First Lieutenant; Joseph E. Duff, Second Lieutenant.

This company was called into service at Bristol, Va., on May 1, 1918, where it remained for the next ten days, occupying the armory of Company H of the 116th Infantry which had long since left for camp.

On May 11th the 10th Company entrained for Fortress Monroe, reaching there the following day. Five days later orders were received to proceed with the 14th Company to Curtis Bay, Md., where both were attached to the 50th Infantry. The 10th Company remained there until the 17th of August when it was ordered to proceed to Newport News for guard duty at the Port of Embarkation. On November 7th the command was drafted into the Regular Army and changed from the 10th Company to Battery E, 35th Regiment, Coast Artillery.

The company was ordered to Camp Meade, Md., on the 19th of November where it remained until demobilized on December 6, 1918.

# History of the Sixth Company, Coast Defenses of Chesapeake Bay

(Formerly the Sixth Company, Virginia Coast Artillery)

**Sources:** Report of the Adjutant General of Virginia for 1918. Virginia Coast Artillery Companies, by General Jo Lane Stern. Militia Bureau Records, Organization Records, Returns, Regimental D. R. C., Orders, Training Reports, Miscellaneous Section A. G. D.

---

The organization of the 6th Company was begun on July 1, 1917, in Danville, and in two weeks the company was recruited to full war strength.

The company was inspected on July 14, 1917, by Major Phillip Ward, U. S. A., Colonel Jo Lane Stern being unable to attend. Three officers and ninety men were present and twelve men were absent, but accounted for. Two men in the company were not eighteen years of age, but desired to remain in the organization on the condition that if the latter should be called into service before they became eighteen the proper consent for them to enlist would be produced. The average age of men in the company.

The armory provided by the city of Danville for its national guard organizations was used by the 6th Company.

The following officers were elected: Warren W. Ferrell, Captain; Archibald M. Aiken, First Lieutenant; Chesley M. Haden, Second Lieutenant.

The company was mobilized in Danville, on the 5th of July, 1917. On the 18th, General Orders No. 30, Commonwealth of Virginia, gave official state recognition to the unit. On July 31st the company was mustered into Federal service by Major J. K. Parsons.

Eleven men were transferred to Company A and ten to Company B, of the 117th Trains Headquarters and Military Police, on August 18, 1917. These units were formerly the 1st and 2nd Companies of Virginia Coast Artillery and had been assigned to the 42nd Division which was scheduled for early departure overseas.

The 6th Company, under the instruction of Captain Ferrell, developed into a remarkably well-drilled organization.

Orders were received to leave for Fortress Monroe on August 26th. The company was escorted to the train by Company M, of the 1st Virginia Infantry, and was given an enthusiastic send-off by the people of Danville.

At Fortress Monroe the company was assigned to Battery de Rusey, which consisted of three twelve-inch guns.

It was announced in December, 1917, that the 60th Regiment, C. A. C., would be immediately organized at Fortress Monroe for service in France. The 5th Company of Virginia Coast Artillery, from Roanoke, became the nucleus for Battery B of the new regiment. On the 5th of January, 1918, seventy-one enlisted men of the 6th Company were transferred to Battery B. Captain Ferrell resigned his commission, but the other two officers went into Battery B.

The 6th Company, Virginia Coast Artillery was redesignated the 6th Company, Coast Defenses Chesapeake Bay on February 1, 1918. From that time on the personnel of the company changed frequently, new recruits being received and trained, and then sent to other organizations.

Gains by transfers and enlistments gave the company an enlisted strength of 181 men on March 18th. From that date to October 31, 1918, the company lost 169 men by transfers, giving a strength of twelve men on the latter date. Of the above forty-five men went to the 41st Regiment C. A. C., fourteen to the 74th Regiment, C. A. C., twenty to the 4th Anti-Aircraft Detachment at Camp Eustis and forty-five to the 14th and 15th Companies, Coast Defenses Chesapeake Bay. The remainder were sent to replacement drafts and other coast defense companies. The enlisted strength of the command was increased by transfers and assignment to forty-six by December, 1918.



# History of the Eighth Company, Coast Defenses of Chesapeake Bay

(Formerly the Fourth Company, Virginia Coast Artillery)

**Sources:** Report of the Adjutant General of Virginia for 1918. Virginia Coast Artillery Companies, by General Jo Lane Stern. Militia Bureau Records, Organization Records, Returns, Regimental D. R. C., Orders, Training Reports, Miscellaneous Section A. G. D.

---

The 4th Company was inspected by Colonel Jo Lane Stern, Assistant Inspector General of Virginia, and Major Phillip Ward, U. S. A., at Grundy, Va., on June 18, 1917.

Three officers and seventy men were present at the inspection. One man who was unable to be present at the muster subsequently reported and was counted in. Three other men reported, but as no papers had been made out for them they were not counted at the time, being later added to the company along with other recruits.

The men were formed in line for inspection on the bridge spanning the creek that runs through the little town. The personnel was excellent, the men being physically well developed and mentally alert. The average age was twenty-two.

Captain Thomas B. Bowers had devoted a great deal of time and energy to recruiting this company and had succeeded in enlisting sixty-five men. When the War Department announced that no company with less than 109 men would receive Federal recognition, he and his friends were greatly shocked. This decision was subsequently modified, however, and the 4th Company was received into Federal service.

Captain Bowers had served in the C. A. C., U. S. A., and was well equipped to lead the company.

The company reported for duty on July 25, 1917. Five men were transferred to Company B of the 117th Trains Headquarters and Military Police on August 18th. There was only one married man in the outfit. He had served one enlistment in the 15th U. S. Infantry, with terms of duty in China and the Philippines. The public school building was used as quarters for the company. General Orders No. 24, Commonwealth of Virginia, dated June 25, 1917, officially recognized the command.

On the 1st of February, 1918, the outfit was redesignated the 8th Company, Coast Defense of Chesapeake Bay, and it served as such until the men were discharged after the Armistice.

Twenty-two men were transferred to the 14th Company, Coast Defense of Chesapeake Bay, on May 17, 1918, and on June 22nd, two were sent to the Headquarters Company and ten to Battery F of the 74th Regiment of C. A. C.

# History of the Tenth Company, Coast Defenses of Chesapeake Bay

(Formerly the Third Company, Virginia Coast Artillery)

Revised from the account by Captain Alward L. Johnson.

**Sources:** History of the Third Company Virginia Coast Artillery, by Captain Alward L. Johnson. Report of the Adjutant General of Virginia for 1918. Virginia Coast Artillery Companies, by General Jo Lane Stern. Militia Bureau Records, Organization Records, Returns, Regimental D. R. C., Orders, Training Reports, Miscellaneous Section A. G. D.

—o—

The 3rd Company was mustered into state service, at Fredericksburg, Virginia, on the 18th of May, after it had been inspected and approved by the Assistant Inspector General of Virginia and Major Phillip R. Ward, U. S. A.

Captain Alward L. Johnson had put forth very strenuous efforts to organize a cavalry troop, but without success. Authorization was extended him to change the organization into a company of Coast Artillery and although Fredericksburg had already furnished one company of infantry which had taken practically all the young men of military age in the community, Captain Johnson's persistent efforts resulted in raising a company of sixty-five men. When application was made to the War Department for recognition, information was received that no company with less than 109 men would receive Federal recognition. However, after representations had been made to the War Department as to the hardship such a change in the minimum number of men required would work, the company was received into the Federal service.

There were three officers and forty-three men present and twenty-two men absent when the company was mustered in, all but five of the latter being reported at work. None of the officers of the company had had any previous military experience with the exception of the first lieutenant who had spent one month at Plattsburg.

The company was officially designated the Third Company of Virginia Coast Artillery in General Orders No. 23, Commonwealth of Virginia, dated June 17, 1917.

The company was ordered to report at Fortress Monroe for training, and reached there on the 3rd of August, 1917. On the 18th of that month, eight enlisted men of the company were transferred to Company A and seven to Company B, 117th Trains Headquarters and Military Police, which was slated to go overseas with the 42nd or "Rainbow" Division.

On September 15th, the company was ordered to Fort Story. On arrival there it was found that the barracks had not been completed, so the company was forced to establish itself in tents. The location proved to be very sandy, the only hard ground being on the beach at low tide, which rendered it necessary for most of the drilling to be done there.

In the fall, a recruiting party, in charge of Lieutenant Bailey, worked Fredericksburg and the entire Rappahannock River Valley very thoroughly and a number of new men were secured.

The officers of the company were ordered to the Artillery School at Fortress Monroe, in January, 1918, where they remained until March. During this period Privates John Portch and Mason Saunders died from pneumonia, which plunged the company into gloom for awhile.

February 1, 1918, the company was redesignated the Tenth Company, Coast Defenses of Chesapeake Bay. On the 4th of February, twenty-nine enlisted men were transferred to the Second Trench Mortar Battalion at Fortress Monroe. From that time on, the company became a sort of reservoir wherein recruits were received and put through a course of training, then sent to various organizations.

Arrangements were made with the Commanding Officer, of the Ordnance Detachment, to permit the men to assist in assembling a number of five- and six-inch rifles which had been shipped to the fort. The working knowledge of the guns gained from this practice was of great value.

Every member of the company was required to be familiar with the General Orders by number, and had to be able to render an intelligent explanation of each before he could obtain a pass. The Articles of War were read aloud one by one and discussed until their meaning was absolutely clear.

On March 4, 1918, two enlisted men were transferred to Battery F of the 60th Regiment, Coast Artillery Corps. Four men were transferred on June 22, 1918, to Battery F of the 74th Regiment Coast Artillery Corps. When the war ended there were not more than six of the original members of the Third Company left in the organization. First Lieutenant Bailey had received his discharge and Second Lieutenant Jackson had been transferred to the Second Trench Mortar Battalion. Captain Johnson had been detached from the company in September, 1918, and ordered to join the 50th Regiment of Coast Artillery, at Camp Stuart, near Newport News. He was assigned to the Headquarters Company and reached France on the 15th of October. When the Armistice was signed, Captain Johnson was attending the Artillery School, at Angers, along with the other officers of the regiment. The latter part of November he was appointed Assistant Provost Marshal, at Angers, where he organized the 232nd Company of Military Police. He was appointed Judge Advocate of the Special and General Courts Martial, at Embarkation Camp No. 1, at St. Nazaire, and remained there until September, 1919, when he sailed for the United States.

The following men from the Third Company won their commissions: Arthur B. Bellwood, Chesterfield County, Va., Captain, Field Artillery; John W. Elliott and Frank B. Smoot, of Bowling Green, Va., Lieutenants Field Artillery; William A. Smith and Robert E. Howe, of Fredericksburg, Va., Lieutenants, Field Artillery and Quartermaster Corps, respectively.

The company received a letter, before it was demobilized, from the Commanding Officer at Fortress Monroe, expressing his appreciation of the soldierly bearing and qualifications of men forwarded from this organization.



# History of the Eleventh Company, Coast Defenses of Chesapeake Bay

(Formerly the Seventh Company, Virginia Coast Artillery)

**Sources:** Report of Adjutant General of Virginia for 1918. Virginia Coast Artillery Companies, by General Jo Lane Stern. Militia Bureau Records, Organization Records, Returns, Regimental D. R. C., Orders, Training Reports, Miscellaneous Section A. G. D.

—o—

The 7th Company was recruited in South Richmond and at the time it was inspected, on the night of July 20, 1917, numbered three officers and seventy-nine men, all but six of whom were present.

The captain of the company at the time of muster was an enlisted man in the 1st Virginia infantry and all of the officers had seen service as non-commissioned officers in the Regular Army.

The men averaged about twenty-three years in age and their appearance was very good.

The building used for an armory was twenty-five by seventy-five feet and provided sufficient space for the company's needs. On the 25th of July the company reported for duty in response to the call of the President.

The company was officially recognized as the 7th Company, Va. C. A. C., by General Orders No. 35, Commonwealth of Virginia, dated August 4, 1917.

On the 18th of August, eleven enlisted men were transferred to Company A and nine to Company B of the 117th Trains Headquarters and Military Police of the 42nd or Rainbow Division.

The entire strength of the company became the 11th Company, Coast Defenses, Chesapeake Bay, on February 1, 1918. On the 4th of the same month, twenty-nine men were transferred to Battery A of the 2nd Trench Mortar Battalion. Three men were sent to Battery F of the 74th Regiment of C. A. C. A total of fifty-two of the original National Guard men were transferred from this company.

# History of the Twelfth Company, Coast Defenses of Chesapeake Bay

(Formerly the Eighth Company, Virginia Coast Artillery)

Revised from the account by First Sergeant F. W. McKee.

**Sources:** History of the Eighth Company of Virginia Coast Artillery, by First Sergeant F. W. McKee. Report of the Adjutant General of Virginia for 1918. Virginia Coast Artillery Companies, by General Jo Lane Stern. Militia Bureau Records, Organization Records, Returns, Regimental D. R. C., Orders, Training Reports, Miscellaneous Section A. G. D.

---

The 8th Company, composed of men from the counties of Gloucester and Mathews and recruited largely by Captain Beverly D. Harwood, was inspected and mustered in at Gloucester on the 23rd of July, 1917. Three officers and seventy men were present with two men absent but accounted for.

Captain Harwood was a veteran of the Regular Army Coast Artillery with more than eleven years of active service to his credit, being for a considerable part of that time first sergeant of his company.

The first lieutenant had been a student for four years at a military school, but the second lieutenant had had but little military experience.

Sergeants G. E. Cary, F. W. McKee, J. E. Taliaferro, J. G. Young, and Private (later second lieutenant) J. N. Tabb rendered valuable assistance in drilling the men.

The Woman's Club building, a brick structure of fourteen rooms, at the Gloucester County fair grounds, was turned over to the company for use as an armory.

The organization was officially designated as the 8th Company of Coast Artillery, in the Virginia National Guard in General Orders No. 35, Commonwealth of Virginia, under date of August 4, 1917.

Very shortly afterwards the company was inspected and mustered into Federal service, reporting at Fortress Monroe, on August 17th, for training. The following day seven enlisted men were transferred to Company A and six to Company B of the 117th Trains Headquarters and Military Police of the 42nd Division, and the remainder of the company were assigned to Fortress Monroe.

Recruits came in more or less continuously. These would be instructed and drilled in the handling of five-inch rapid fire and six-inch disappearing gun, then examined in first and second class Gunners' School, after which they would be transferred to Battery Rusey and the process repeated with guns of larger caliber. After qualifying as first and second class gunners the men would be transferred to overseas organizations.

Five men of the company were transferred to Battery B and three to Battery F of the 60th Regiment, C. A. C., on the 8th of January, 1918.

On February 1, 1918, the designation of the 8th Company was changed to the 12th Company, Coast Defenses, Chesapeake Bay. Nineteen men were transferred to Battery A, 2nd Trench Mortar Battalion, on February 4th, and two men to Battery E, 60th Regiment, C. A. C.

Due to the coming and going of recruits the number of men on the rolls greatly exceeded 106 at times, while at other the total was considerably less. In October, 1918, the outfit had only eleven men and no officers at all. Someone facetiously styled the unit the "Lonesome Dozen" which name stuck until the close of the war. From July, 1917, until February, 1919, over 400 men passed through the company. At first these men were volunteers, but later on they were drafted men. All sections of the United States were represented. Out of the original company came one captain, one first lieutenant, three second lieutenant, five first sergeants, twenty-nine sergeants, twenty-six corporals, three mechanics, five cooks,

three buglers, eight gun commanders, eight gun pointers, three first class observers, two second class observers and four plotters.

Six men were transferred on June 22, 1918, to Battery F, 14th Regiment, C. A. C. Captain Harwood was transferred to East Camp, Potomac Park, Washington, D. C., on August 22, 1918.

From September, 1917, until after the Armistice the company was in charge of Fort Wool. During the severe winter of 1917-1918, great hardships were suffered by the men. Stoves were not allowed because of some old order, so the cook's quarters and the recreation center of Chaplain Prudin were about the only warm spots on the island.

The quiet and isolation held no terrors for the original members of the company, most of whom were fishermen, sailors or farmers.

Fish were very plentiful which not only helped to vary the rations, but also provided a great deal of sport for the men.

In the Second Liberty Loan of 1917-1918, the 8th Company ranked second in the total amount of money subscribed by enlisted men of all organizations at Fortress Monroe.

The record of the command was excellent. There were no court-martials, only one non-commissioned officer was reduced, the guard house was never occupied, and over eighty per cent of the "delinquent sheets" in the service records were blank. Four-fifths of the original company got into action in France, one of whom was killed, and three of whom died from disease.

Sergeant Bernard M. Lewis, the last man of the old company still in service, was discharged on February 15, 1919, and the company as a unit was mustered out of Federal service that year.



# PART V

---

## Virginia Medical Units in the World War

## TABLE OF CONTENTS

---

	Page
Outline of Origin and Service of Virginia Medical Units.....	369
Summary of Activities of Base Hospital Number 45.....	370
History of Base Hospital Number 45. Compiled from the "History of U. S. Army Base Hospital No. 45, in the World War".....	371
Summary of Activities of Base Hospital No. 41.....	382
History of Base Hospital No. 41. Compiled from "A Brief Sketch of Base Hospital No. 41," by the commanding officer.....	383
Summary of Activities of Section Sanitaire Unie No. 516.....	392
History of Section Sanitaire Unie No. 516, by Staige Davis Blackford..	393
Summary of Activities of Section Sanitaire Unie No. 517.....	395
History of Section Sanitaire Unie No. 517, by William Hudson Rogers..	396
Summary of Activities of Section Sanitaire Unie No. 534.....	399
History of Section Sanitaire Unie No. 534, by Forrest Fletcher.....	400

# Outline of Origin and Service of Virginia Medical Units

Virginia furnished five medical units (two base hospitals and three ambulance sections), which were not integral parts of any division.

Base Hospital Number 45 (the Medical College of Virginia unit), was an expansion of Hospital Unit E, Richmond's first organized medical effort. Unit E, which had been organized by Dr. Robert Bryan in the early summer of 1917, was abolished as a unit in the reorganization plans of the War Department, but the personnel was used as the nucleus for Base Hospital Number 45. Dr. Stuart McGuire was appointed director and because of this fact the organization became popularly known as the "McGuire Unit."

Base Hospital 45 was organized under the auspices of the Richmond Chapter of the Red Cross and was financed and equipped by that chapter. The unit went overseas in July, 1918, and returned in April, 1919.

Base Hospital Number 41 was organized at the University of Virginia in the summer of 1917, Colonel William H. Goodwin being appointed director. The unit was financed and equipped by the Elks, through the influence of Mr. Fred Harper, of Lynchburg, an alumnus of the University and at that time Grand Exalted Ruler of the order. Base No. 41 was mobilized at the University and proceeded to Camp Sevier, Greenville, S. C. Major (later Lieutenant Colonel), Julian M. Cabell, was appointed to command the unit there. After training at Camp Sevier, until June, 1918, the unit left for Camp Mills. Sailed July 5th on the *Scotian* and landed at Colasgow. Moved thence to Southampton and embarked for Havre. Proceeded thence to Paris and from there to St. Denis, where the hospital was established. Remained at this location until February, 1919. Left St. Nazaire in April, 1919, reaching Newport News on the 25th, and was demobilized by May 1st.

Two ambulance sections were organized at the University of Virginia in May, 1917. The two units reported at the ambulance training camp at Allentown, Pa., in June, and were given the numbers 516 and 517. Section 517 left on August 5th and sailed from Hoboken on the *San Jacinto*. Disembarked at St. Nazaire August 20th. Moved to Paris September 23rd and took over the work of the field service at the American hospital at Neuilly. Attached to French army on Alsace front in November. Moved to Flanders in March, 1918, and to Ypres sector in June. Moved to Champagne sector in July. Left for the Argonne August 18th. Served in Germany until February, 1919. Sailed from Brest in March, reaching Newport News April 1st, moving thence to Camp Lee to be mustered out.

Section 516 trained at Allentown, Pa., until October, 1917, when it moved to Tobyhanna. Left Hoboken, N. J., on the *Pastores* December 25th. Disembarked in France January 13th and moved to St. Nazaire.

The section proceeded to Sandricourt two weeks later and was there assigned to the 66th French Division. Served with this division in the Vosges until April 2nd, moving to Compiègne on that date. Ordered into line south of Amiens on April 4th. Moved next to the Chemin des Dames and in October, 1918, got into action on the Oise-Sambre Canal. After the Armistice 516 remained at Enghien-les-Bains until December 20th, proceeding thence to Belgium, staying there until February, 1919. Moved next to Lille, thence to Ferrieres and Brest, sailing from the latter point April 13th. Reached New York April 20th and was mustered out at Camp Dix April 23rd.

The Washington and Lee ambulance section was organized in May, 1917. Reported at Allentown, Pa., in June, where it was assigned the number 534, and trained there until January, 1918. Sailed on the 9th of that month and docked at Liverpool. Left for France February 2nd and landed at Havre, proceeding thence to St. Nazaire and from there to Paris. Moved to Versailles March 8th, where it was assigned to the 12th French Infantry Division. Served in the Somme campaign, then relieved and moved to the Lorraine sector. Went into action again in July, with headquarters at Vierzy. Later moved to Hartennes and on September 6th joined in the assault on the Chemin des Dames. Relieved September 15th and rested until October 7th, when 534 moved to Belgium and established headquarters at Thielt. Armistice was signed while the section was at Chreushautem.



## Summary of Activities—Base Hospital Number Forty-Five

Organized at Richmond, Va., in the summer of 1917. Enlisted personnel mobilized at Richmond, February 28, 1918. Reported at Camp Lee March 1st. Base Hospital 45 trained there. Seventeen officers left Camp Lee July 1, 1918, for Newport News, where they boarded the *Hwah Jah* and sailed for France. The remainder of the organization left Camp Lee July 3rd and proceeded to Newport News. Remained at Camp Hill seven days, then embarked on the *Aeolus* and sailed July 10th, arriving in Brest on the 21st. The *Hwah Jah* reached St. Nazaire the same day. The officers on the latter disembarked and proceeded across France to Autun. The main body of the unit reached Autun July 30th. Base Hospital No. 45 left Autun August 20, 1918, and detrained at Toul the next day. The contingent of nurses joined the unit on September 9th. Thousands of patients were handled from early September until immediately after the Armistice. The unit remained at Toul until February 16, 1919. Nurses and detached officers proceeded to Brest and embarked March 3rd on the *Agamemnon*, which reached Hoboken, N. J., on the 11th. Nurses were mustered out by March 20th. The rest of the organization moved to Nantes, remaining there for some time. Finally orders came to proceed to St. Nazaire, where the unit embarked on the *Walter A. Luckenbach* and sailed for home. Docked at Hoboken, proceeding thence to Camp Merritt, N. J. All the Virginians in the unit were sent to Camp Lee and mustered out on April 29, 1919.

# History of Base Hospital Number Forty-Five

Compiled from the "History of the U. S. Army Base Hospital  
No. 45 in the Great War."

Hospital Unit E, Richmond's first organized medical effort, came into existence in the early summer of 1917, soon after the formal entry of the United States into the war. Its organization was entrusted to Dr. Robert C. Bryan, who had already been in the French service at the front and who consequently added valuable experience to the influence he would ordinarily have exerted in such a movement.

The unit idea was a development of the Red Cross system sanctioned by the War Department, the function of such a unit being to furnish the human material for an active mobile hospital, to operate in the field. The working staff consisted of twelve doctors, thirty nurses and fifty enlisted men. Dr. Bryan gathered around him a harmonious group—Doctors Greer Baughman, F. M. Hodges, W. B. Hopkins, A. L. Herring, J. F. Geisinger, C. H. Lewis, J. T. McKinney, F. C. Pratt, W. B. Porter, and J. E. Warinner.

An efficient corps of nurses was enrolled under the leadership of Miss Evelyn Page Edmunds. The enlisted personnel was composed largely of college graduates and was recruited chiefly from prominent Richmond families. Enthusiasm was unbounded, as everyone anticipated early departure for overseas.

Then, suddenly, the hospital "unit" as a type was abolished, the surgeon general having found that it did not fit into his scheme of organization. Only the larger "base hospitals" were desired and but a limited number of these were authorized. Richmond seemed to have but little chance and Unit E appeared on the verge of extinction. Dr. Bryan was advised that his services were desired upon a mission of great importance, but that the remainder of the organization could not be used at that time. Similar units were in the same plight throughout the country.

The Richmond Red Cross, which had by this time effected a very powerful organization, marshaled all its forces behind a movement to preserve a definite medical organization of some type identified with the capital of the Confederacy. The War Department agreed to permit the expansion of Unit E into a base hospital under Red Cross auspices. Dr. Bryan was appointed chief medical adviser to the commission to Roumania, then about to start upon its labors. Dr. Stuart McGuire was appointed director of the base hospital and also designated to organize the ambulance company.

Thus came into existence the Medical College of Virginia Base Hospital, subsequently to be known as United States Base Hospital No. 45. The public meeting at which Dr. Bryan bade the organization farewell and Dr. McGuire assumed command was one of the most stirring ever held in Richmond. At a gathering held just before the meeting, the entire staff offered to resign and enter the service as individuals. Dr. Bryan refused to permit this, however, as he did not wish the organization to be broken up. Dr. McGuire was firm in his desire to use the existing organization as the nucleus for his base hospital, and he generously offered to act as director of the unit until Dr. Bryan returned from his Roumanian mission and then either retire in his favor or else surrender the command and act as his second. However, Dr. Bryan never rejoined the unit.

Dr. McGuire hardly had time to do more than confer very hastily with several of the leading spirits in the base hospital group when he was summoned to Washington to act as aide to the surgeon-general. This complicated the situation in Richmond somewhat, as strenuous efforts were necessary to prepare the base hospital for service overseas, and the enforced absence of the director was a matter of serious concern.

When Dr. McGuire departed for Washington he left Dr. Joseph F. Geisinger in charge of affairs in Richmond. Young men immediately commenced seeking enlistment as privates, while doctors from a dozen states endeavored to make a connection with the new organization. Nurses trooped to the standard and the Richmond Red Cross started that tremendous

effort which culminated in one of the finest achievements in the United States.

Major McGuire returned to Richmond ten days later to find that his organization had developed to the point where it could have left on short notice—on the Red Cross basis in existence at that time. This basis was later to undergo some very radical changes. Dr. Geisinger gave up his practice when Dr. McGuire returned and went into the latter's office as his adjutant. Shortly afterwards he was called into service, but was permitted to remain in Richmond as aide to Dr. McGuire. The latter not only directed the organization of the base hospital but also continued his private practice and his work as dean of the Medical College of Virginia.

The exigencies of war made many readjustments necessary, but the organization of the unit made steady progress. The balance of the professional staff had to be selected from nearly 200 applicants. Various problems arose in connection with the nurses, and the enlisted personnel was being constantly broken up by the draft. The ambulance company had to be organized, a large undertaking in itself. Dr. C. Howard Lewis was designated for this work and his efforts resulted in the creation of an efficient company.

About the time things had gotten in fairly satisfactory shape it was announced from Washington that each base hospital organized under Red Cross auspices must raise \$40,000 for its own equipment and that it must purchase this equipment. This created new difficulties. The money was raised promptly, but securing the manifold articles of equipment was another matter. In the first place the government was unable to furnish a list of what was required and in the second place it was not possible to purchase this material if the list had been available.

The hospital was first planned on a 1,000-bed basis, then on a 500-bed basis. Expendable supplies such as drugs, etc., were first required in quantities sufficient for one year, then for three months, then one month, and finally not at all. First it must have a laundry and an ice plant, then it must not have them. It must do this, that and the other, and then undo it all and start over again on some other basis. A delegation from Richmond visited New York and inspected several model base hospitals for the purpose of securing ideas. The director, the adjutant, and the purchasing agent made a number of trips to Washington in an attempt to secure information. Confusion was the order of the day.

Finally, order began to emerge from chaos in the medical department and Base Hospital No. 45 reaped some of the benefits of this. Authority was granted to muster the enlisted personnel into the service, thus preventing further inroads by the draft. The professional staff was completed and assigned to work in various camps, the roster of nurses stopped changing too often. More specific instructions were received from the equipment branches, and the purchasing agent was at last enabled to go ahead. Dr. McGuire exercised a general supervision over the work, Major John Garnett Nelson handled the recruiting of the enlisted personnel, Miss Ruth J. Robertson had charge of the nurses, and Mr. Richard Gwathmey was entrusted with assembling the equipment.

The ease with which the \$40,000 required by the government was raised was due to the Richmond chapter of the Red Cross. This chapter, which had raised such an unparalleled sum in the first Red Cross drive as to arouse national comment, now adopted Base Hospital No. 45 and devoted its energies to turning out vast supplies of surgical dressings and supplies.

Several days after the \$40,000 was raised, the acting adjutant went to Washington and delivered a check for that amount to the treasurer of the equipment division. This procedure was necessary in order that the fund might be recorded on the books at Washington and administered from that end. The fund was promptly certified back to Richmond, however, to be expended by the local purchasing agent.

It soon became evident that the \$40,000 was but a beginning. Dr. McGuire conferred with the executive committee and was soon able to



advise Washington that so far as money was concerned it would be available, whether the equipment cost \$40,000 or a quarter of a million. As a matter of fact, the final cost of the base hospital was approximately \$140,000, and the cost of the ambulance company was \$40,000. This was the chapter's contribution in cash—of other things it gave still more. Mr. Coleman Wortham its president, and his associates, both men and women, gave prodigally of time and labor to promote the interests of the hospital unit. There were many opportunities for misunderstanding, yet the progress of the work was characterized by the utmost friendliness.

Washington could now state in a fairly definite way what the equipment should be. The money was in hand, so upon Mr. Gwathmey devolved the task of purchasing this equipment. After several months of incessant activity, during which time his private business took care of itself, Mr. Gwathmey had fourteen carloads crated and ready for shipment to Europe.

The government had requisitioned all the available stocks on hand and as foreign sources were cut off, the supply houses were overwhelmed with orders they could not fill. Business associates with powerful connections rallied behind Mr. Gwathmey and not only opened up sealed channels to him but often secured for him maximum quality for the minimum price. The firm of Powers and Anderson was of great assistance to him in purchasing the requisite equipment of surgical instruments. Beds, chairs, tables, drugs, kitchen outfits, ambulances, and the countless paraphernalia of a modern hospital began to gather, records of the purchases of all these having to be kept in detail. By the time the equipment had been assembled, the personnel had also been completed and Base Hospital 45 was ready.

Then ensued many long months of waiting and training. Dr. McGuire, with the aid of several of his officers, continued his work in Richmond. The rest of the staff were either already on active duty elsewhere, or were quickly sent to camps and cantonments throughout the country. With the co-operation of the surgeon-general, these assignments were made with especial reference to the future requirement of the base hospital. This system worked out well in the main, and many acquired experience destined to be invaluable at a later date. The lines seemed to converge towards Camp Lee, and one by one the officers after periods of duty at other posts began to gather there. Major Peple became chief of the surgical service at the Camp Lee Hospital; Major Nelson, assistant chief of the medical service; Captain Smith, assistant adjutant; Lieutenant Warinner, registrar; Captain Baughman, registrar and later commanding officer of the contagious hospital; Captains Geisinger and Herring, operating surgeons; Captain Wright in the throat and nose clinic; Captains Harrison and J. B. Williams in the dental department. Some of these had already been through the grind at Oglethorpe, others had undergone special instruction in great cities. Captain Hodges was in Richmond and New York, Captain E. G. Hopkins and Lieutenant Phillips studied war bacteriology at the Rockefeller Institute, Captain Anderson was at the Neurological Institute in New York, Captain Porter was first in one place and then in another, finally winding up in England; Lieutenant Carrington Williams was holding things in shape at the Richmond headquarters, and Lieutenant R. G. Willis and Q. H. Barney were at training camps.

The nurses had been divided into small detachments and scattered through thirteen cantonments. In many instances they faced more serious problems than they had ever encountered before. The cantonment hospitals were cold and cheerless, surrounded by mud, scantily supplied with equipment, crowded with patients, swept by epidemics, buried under tons of army paper, and entangled in army red tape, about which civilians knew little and cared less. Not only the burden of this fell upon the nurses but much of the correction also. Many misfits resulted from a lack of intelligence in making assignments to service. Grim determination and untiring labor triumphed over these numerous handicaps, and there emerged a real hospital—clean, comfortable and efficient.

The last week of February, 1918, witnessed the calling into service of the enlisted personnel. The men were mobilized at Richmond on February 28th and went through the usual experiences of a green outfit. After several stirring days the detachment reported at Camp Lee on March 1st, in charge of Captain Smith and Lieutenant Warinner, and the members of Base 45 felt a glow of pride in these boys.

The detachment was promptly absorbed into the personnel of the Camp Lee hospital. At first they were apprenticed to the more experienced workmen, but soon they were in complete charge of many of the activities about the hospital. These men, added to the group already holding responsible positions there, caused the unit to become recognized as the backbone of the Camp Lee hospital organization.

For some time the question of a commanding officer for the base hospital had been of the greatest interest. While Dr. McGuire was designated as director of the unit and was regarded as its guiding spirit, it was known to be the intention of the surgeon-general to place at the head of each base hospital organization some regular army officer who combined medical skill with a knowledge of army methods and regulations. Members of the unit were so impressed with the vital importance of having the right sort of man chosen that they had made a tentative selection of their own and had contrived to apprise Washington of their wishes in an indirect manner. These suggestions were tolerated but not welcomed, so no further attempts were made.

In April, 1918, Major Alexander Williams of the Regular Army, a young southerner, presented himself at Camp Lee as the commanding officer of Base Hospital No. 45. It became evident soon after his arrival that he contemplated the establishment of the unit as a separate organization. After a conference with Dr. McGuire, in Richmond, he returned to Camp Lee and established his office. Captain Smith was withdrawn from the Camp Lee hospital and made adjutant of Base Hospital No. 45. From then on the members of the unit were detached a few at a time, as any other method would have seriously crippled the camp hospital. Many of the officers located elsewhere, including Major McGuire and Captain R. C. Fravel, began to report at Camp Lee, and in a few weeks the entire unit except the nurses was assembled under its own standard and Base Hospital 45 became a reality instead of a paper organization composed of several hundred widely scattered individuals.

The character of the work now became largely military. Major Williams was a strict disciplinarian. He personally drilled and conducted classes for officers and then sent them out to do the same for enlisted men. The work was dull and tedious, but eventually it resulted in the creation of something resembling a military machine.

Two independent hospital organizations existing side by side inevitably resulted in friction. The commanding officer and adjutant of the Camp Lee Hospital were regular army men to whom military regulations and technical details were of prime importance. The attitude of the former showed a tendency to encroach upon the prerogatives of Base Hospital 45. Major Williams met these encroachments with a firm and unyielding front, and as a result of this and of certain other factors the Camp Lee hospital soon found itself with a new commanding officer.

Base Hospital No. 45 was transferred to barracks in the woods adjoining the camp. Life there was not unpleasant, especially when one remembers the authorized and occasionally, unauthorized absences from bounds. The Y. M. C. A., the Knights of Columbus, the hostess house, the camp theater and post exchanges—all these contributed diversion of one sort or another. Religious services were available for all who cared to attend them. The unit's own chaplain had not arrived, but "Bob" Nelson, who, lonely and unknown, strolled into the camp one day, constituted himself the temporary spiritual adviser of the men, and enforced a spiritual regimen all his own. He was not a member of the organization, but no record of it would be complete without the mention of his tireless devotion and of the astounding influence he wielded.

Major Williams, now become a lieutenant-colonel, had kept in



constant touch with the Richmond Red Cross regarding equipment. Captain Baughman and a detail of twelve men were sent to the Fair Grounds in Richmond, where the equipment was crated and prepared for shipment.

Approximately forty men from Camp Meade, Md., and General Hospital No. 1 in New York were added to the unit at this time by the War Department. Certain of these men displayed unusual ability later. The unit also lost some members of its personnel, among whom was Parker Burbank, who had made such an excellent job of collecting the kitchen equipment, R. C. Wight, R. L. Gray, V. A. Gravatt and J. A. Tignor. Harold Calisch and Elmore Hotchkiss secured commissions in other branches of the service.

Changes were also taking place in the staff. The army plan of organization provided that an officer of the sanitary corps should be adjutant of each base hospital, so Lieutenant Thomas C. Boushall arrived to fill this place, Captain Smith going over to the medical staff. Captain Page Mauck was released as orthopedist to accept an appointment elsewhere and was succeeded by Captain Raymond Voisiniet, of New York. Lieutenant B. F. Eckles, an old friend, came to the unit from a northern post. Lieutenant John Boyd was with the organization for a short while, but was then detached and sent elsewhere. Lieutenants C. J. Corcoran and F. G. Scharmann, of the Camp Lee hospital, were transferred to the unit. Lieutenant T. H. Van Camp, came from Iowa, Lieutenant L. F. Barrier from Georgia, and Lieutenant Perry J. Manheims from New York. Lieutenant C. O. Jensen became quartermaster of the organization and Captain W. W. James took over the important job of feeding the men. Much to the regret of everyone and without his consent, Lieutenant J. E. Warinner was transferred from the unit.

So far as anyone could tell, Base Hospital No. 45 was now ready for service. The staff (with one or two exceptions), was on the ground, the whole detachment was well-rounded, and the equipment was complete. Time passed and nothing happened. Drills, lectures, inspections, physical examinations—these the unit had with them always.

On July 1, 1918, sudden orders were received detaching seventeen officers for "extended field service." At 5:00 the next morning, they departed, leaving heavy hearts behind them. Then came orders for the entire organization to move at once. Immediately there ensued a day of the wildest excitement, but gradually, order emerged from the chaos and the stir subsided. At 2:00 o'clock the following morning the men marched out, each with his straw mattress on his head. A huge pile was built and in a few minutes was ablaze. Then the men swung into line and marched out of the camp.

The seventeen officers who had left in advance, went to Newport News, where they boarded the *Hwah-Jah*, a Chinese freighter, which proceeded up the coast and joined a large convoy bound for Europe. The remainder of the organization also went to Newport News, where seven days were spent at Camp Hill. Two new enlisted men were added to the unit there. At 2:00 A. M., July 10, 1918, Base Hospital No. 45 embarked on the U. S. S. *Aeolus* and a few hours later was at sea.

The men were crowded into the baggage hold of the *Aeolus*, but the officers fared somewhat better. The food was good. Eleven days were required for the crossing. The seventeen officers who were on the *Hwah-Jah* were eighteen days on the way over. There were staterooms for all on this boat, but the food was bad, the crew untrained, and the voyage was a harrowing experience. Both ships traveled in convoys. Two freighters in the fleet with the *Hwah-Jah* sank after a collision, but the crews were rescued. On approaching the shores of Europe, the convoys were met by a number of destroyers. The *Aeolus* went to Brest and the *Hwah-Jah* to Havre. Singularly enough, although the former sailed a week behind the latter, both reached port on the same day, July 21, 1918.

Several days later the two detachments, neither being aware of the other's whereabouts, began to move toward the interior of France. The group from the *Hwah-Jah* proceeded in leisurely fashion through Paris and a beautiful section of the country; but they were haunted always by the fear that they had been permanently separated from the rest of the organi-



zation. They halted at Autun, as they had been advised at Havre that the main body of the unit would join them there. In the meantime, the men from the *Aeolus* were experiencing all the hardships of life in the war zone and were becoming acquainted with the prevailing French mode of transportation. Long marches, rough food and rougher travel, rendered their first contact with France anything but pleasant. At last, however, on the evening of July 30th they pulled into the little station at Autun and were joyfully received by the waiting seventeen.

At that time Camp Hospital No. 47 was stationed at the Caserne Billard, in Autun, and Base Hospital No. 45 was directed to relieve this command, which had been ordered elsewhere for duty. This relief was effected on the 31st of July and at last it seemed as if the organization had commenced to function actively as an independent unit. There were no patients to be cared for, so the time was utilized in a survey of the buildings and equipment, and in an exploration of the surrounding country.

The caserne was an ancient monastery not very well suited for the purposes of a modern hospital. But by now members of the unit had begun to learn another of the great lessons the war taught, to take what was at hand and shape it into the thing it was supposed to be. Oftentimes in this army game, as was seen more specifically later on, one was appalled at a curt order demanding what appeared the impossible, asking much, providing little or nothing for its accomplishment, summarily requiring results and quick results. Doubtless more judgment could have been displayed in some of these orders; but one always recalls that in war the enemy fails to await the convenience and complete and leisurely preparation of his antagonist. Hence one may suddenly be required to act with speed and precision without opportunity for adjustment, and without accessories formerly considered essential. Soon one becomes accustomed to view huge obstacles without display and to rely upon himself and his fellows.

The work at Autun was trivial compared with what came later. There was little to do, although it bulked large at the time. If there had been any rush of patients the problem of getting the hospital into condition might have been more serious. The beds were empty, however, so the task of making the place over could be given undivided attention. It was not long before the unit was prepared for eventualities. But none arose. Half a dozen patients came in from nearby outfits, but no battle casualties. Much time was taken up in planning the details of organization, making dressings, checking and re-checking the number of beds, and remedying some of the conspicuous physical defects in the place.

When Autun was first reached no one had any real conception of its relation to the front, but it was not long before it was discovered that Base Hospital No. 45 was practically buried in the central part of France, where the most that could ever be expected was an occasional train-load of wounded, already half well, on the way to the rear. Realization of this fact brought discontent and restlessness.

The question of bringing about a transfer was a perplexing one, for it is not customary to suggest such a thing to one's superior officers. In this instance as in many others, the influence of Major McGuire "put it over." He and Captain Baughman had been ordered, the day after Autun was reached, to Evacuation Hospital No. 7, at Coulommiers, behind the Chateau-Thierry line, for a week's observation. While there they saw some strenuous service and established contacts with certain high officials, who happened to be old friends, anxious to do something for Base 45, and sufficiently influential at that time to do a great deal. They promised Major McGuire a more active location than Autun, and before long things commenced to happen.

Meanwhile a most embarrassing and distressing situation, with respect to Lieutenant-Colonel Williams, had been developing. From the first it had seemed impossible for him to relinquish the handling of details to his subordinates, despite the fact that there were in the organization men of great ability, accustomed to handling large affairs. As the mass of detail accumulated and responsibilities increased, he seemed to think that it was necessary to give his personal attention to the minutest problem. This finally reached such a point that everyone became concerned for the future

of the organization, and several of his officers, putting aside proprieties, begged him to let up. The effort was futile, however, and the spectacle was witnessed of a brilliant and capable young officer collapsing because of his total inability to let go and relax. By the time the unit was ordered to active service, his nervous condition had become such that he conceived the idea that it was unfit for service and requested an inspection of the outfit by an officer from general headquarters. This officer came on August 17th, in the person of Colonel Hansell, who immediately approved the qualifications of the organization. At the same time he inquired into the nervous condition of Lieutenant-Colonel Williams and directed that he be placed in a hospital at Dijon for treatment. After a period there he was returned to active service and placed in command of Camp Hospital No. 27. On October 10th the members of the unit were greatly shocked to learn of his death. The stay at Autun resulted in nothing else of importance save the addition of two new officers to the staff who came directly from the United States for duty. One of these was Second Lieutenant Frank A. Sullivan, S. C., who became detachment commander but who was subsequently transferred; and the other was First Lieutenant Joseph T. McKinney, who was an old friend, and who remained with the organization until it was mustered out of service.

On August 20, 1918, Base Hospital No. 45 departed from Autun. Satisfaction at getting closer to the actual warfare was tempered with regret at leaving so pleasant a place, and the memory of the days spent there will linger long in the minds of the members of the organization. The command, temporarily in charge of Major McGuire, moved toward Toul. No one knew the exact destination, but everyone was assured that it would be sufficiently near the front to satisfy the most war-like cravings. On August 21st, at 9:00 P. M., after twenty-one hours en route, Base 45 detrained at Toul and set off for the Caserne La Marche. While proceeding to this point the organization experienced its first air raid. The trucks carrying the officers raced for the barracks and the men were hurried into dugouts. In a few moments, however, the sirens signaled "all's well" and soon the outfit was domiciled in its new home. The coming of day revealed Toul, with its moving troops, caravans of supplies and ammunition, airplanes circling overhead, and everywhere the bustle and stir of war. At last it seemed the work of "45" was at hand.

The caserne consisted of three large four-story barracks and a number of smaller ones, all enclosed within a high wall. At the time of the arrival of Base 45 the central building was occupied by Evacuation Hospital No. 14, the east building by Field Hospital No. 355, and the west building by a French hospital. The first departed on August 21st, three days later the field hospital left, and a week later the French unit moved out.

Orders were received almost immediately to prepare for the American drive which was about to begin in the Toul sector. The situation was difficult. From Autun nothing had been brought but personal belongings and enough food for the journey. The departing hospital units carried with them everything possible in the way of army property and hospital equipment. They left 300 patients in the east building and 350 more in the contagious annex, a half-mile distant, where were also left five officers, thirty nurses and sixty enlisted men, who were automatically attached to "45" for temporary duty.

Nothing at all resembling equipment was left—no drugs, thermometers, dressings or kitchen utensils—only a set of ancient French beds and mattresses and a few old French cooking stoves. With these, 650 American soldiers had to be fed and cared for, and preparation had to be made for the possible influx of 2,500 wounded—and this in a barren barracks without a heating plant, electricity, or a water system. It seemed impossible. Somewhere in France was the magnificent equipment assembled in Richmond. Somewhere between New York and Toul were 100 nurses trying to reach their unit, but none of this availed anything at all. For thirty-six hours even the question of food was acute. The quartermaster at the railroad asserted that Base No. 45 was out of bounds, being in evacuation hospital territory, and claimed to be without authority to furnish supplies. So rations had to be purchased as best they could. From the departing French



outfit everything possible was purchased at liberal prices. Most of the surgical instruments were "junk," and the balance of the stuff was antiquated, except a small supply of surgical gauze. Some of this had been donated by the Richmond chapter of the American Red Cross and here a Richmond hospital unit was buying it back from the French.

With this inadequate equipment the task of caring for the sick was taken up, as well as preparations for the coming battle. There was much administrative detail to be looked after, and it was here that the adjutant, Lieutenant Boushall, commenced to display the personality and ability that gained for him the affection and respect of the entire organization. Assisting him was an administrative detail of officers and men of the detachment.

The remainder of the outfit fell to on the tasks allotted to them. Departmental lines were abolished. The hand that formerly wielded a scalpel now handled a stethoscope, broom or jimmy; dentists suddenly became expert in expidemiology; nose and throat specialists and neurologists became internes overnight—no one ever knew what he would be doing from one day to another. Out of the apparent confusion gradually came order. Just how it was accomplished probably no one knows or cares. The 650 patients were cared for, even though two thermometers, six tin cups, and a few basins did sometimes constitute the equipment of a ward containing 200 sick men.

The daily expectation of an advance hung over the entire area. The advance affected a vital salient, with Mont Sec and Metz as distant objectives, and this first independent action of an American army at the front was regarded as of momentous importance. All France was watching to see what the American doughboy would do when he started forward with his own officers under his own flag. Days passed and nothing happened, until everyone began to wonder if there was going to be an advance at all.

At that time Base 45 was the base hospital closest to the front in France, being only about twelve miles distant. The unit was actually in evacuation hospital territory and in reality from then on exercised the functions of an evacuating hospital. A number of other base and evacuation hospital units soon arrived at Toul, with an aggregate of 15,000 beds, the whole being designated as the Justice Hospital Group.

From time to time equipment of a sort was gathered. Administrative details were perfected, operating rooms arranged, wards fitted up, and everything possible done to prepare the hospital for the coming test. Major McGuire took his officers into his confidence, discussed the various plans for the future, vested large responsibilities in his subordinates, and then let them alone. So long as they measured up to these responsibilities, there was no interference from headquarters. Results were demanded, but the method of achieving them was left to those who had to do the work. The accomplishments of the unit justify the course pursued by Major McGuire.

Shortly after September 1, 1918, Lieutenant-Colonel Maddux, M. C., arrived and took charge of the entire group of hospitals. He established his headquarters with Base 45. Fortunately he was a Virginian, a graduate of the University of Virginia, a former interne at the Memorial Hospital, in Richmond, and well known to many of the staff of "45." Being familiar with the ways of the service, he was able to tap supply sources unknown to the members of the organization and immediately commenced telegraphing all over France, setting forth the importance of the Justice Group in connection with the coming advance and demanding supplies and equipment. The response was very helpful, although by no means sufficient. At least some of the bare necessities of existence were acquired.

The most important event of the period was the arrival on September 9th of the contingent of nurses. Never were women more welcome anywhere or at any time. They had mobilized at New York, in July, 1918, sailed on the *Adriatic* on August 24th, landed at Liverpool, September 5th, and were immediately ordered to proceed to Toul. The detachment included the chief nurse, Miss Ruth J. Robertson, ninety-nine nurses and six civilian



employees. Fifteen nurses were sent at once to the nearby gas hospital and ten for temporary duty to Evacuation Hospital No. 14.

As the hour of the "big push" drew closer, the front lines were combed of all liabilities in the shape of sick men in the field hospitals. Trench life brought down many with pneumonia and influenza. As a result Base No. 45 was overflowing, having approximately 1,500 patients. Orders were received constantly to evacuate hundreds of them to make room for hundreds more crowding behind them, meaning that many more examinations, diagnoses, records, and beds to be made. It is small wonder that the nurses were received with great acclaim.

September 12th was the time set for the attack by the American army. The hospital was ordered stripped of all patients except those too sick to be moved. This was completed and then everybody waited. Finally there was a flash in the sky as the guns opened, and then began the incessant roar that was to last all through the night and the day that followed. The battle was on. Some of the staff were ordered to an evacuation hospital several hundred yards down the road. Hospitals of this type filled up first, then "45" and the others. The work was now chiefly surgical, and operating rooms were continuously in service for days. As fast as the hospital filled up, it was evacuated and filled up again—and so on *ad infinitum*. Except for those too seriously wounded to be moved, men were operated on one day and the next were speeding to bases in the rear. In a month's time over 8,000 patients passed through Base Hospital No. 45, the majority of whom were concentrated around September 12th. Ambulances brought them directly from the field dressing stations until the receiving wards and corridors were choked with them and at times the yards were covered with litters on which men lay awaiting their turn. The surgeons each had two tables and turned from one to the other, working with the utmost speed. Most of the patients were cheerful and begged to be "patched up" quickly so they could get back with their outfits before the advance came to a halt.

The work of the base hospital followed no set routine and was constantly undergoing readjustments to meet changing conditions at the front. War takes no account of plans or schemes of organization, and these are inadequate unless elastic enough to permit instantaneous revision.

Base No. 45 was supposed to have personnel enough to operate a hospital of 1,000 beds—in reality there were twice that many most of the time. It had been expected that the surgical cases would greatly outnumber the medical, but it worked out "the other way around." Numbers of officers and men who were sorely needed in the professional section had to be given to the administrative service. Nothing really happened as had been planned. Clearly defined duties had been anticipated, but a doctor of surgery found himself a doctor of medicine one day, a quartermaster clerk the next, a litter bearer the day after that. While all of this added to the variety of the life it also multiplied its problems. Yet no one complained when detached from his regular duties and thrust into situations strange and temporarily embarrassing.

Prior to the St. Mihiel drive the unit was concerned chiefly with the work of reconstruction of the hospital, preparations for the battle, and caring for an ever-increasing number of medical cases. During the engagement and immediately after it the surgical situation was uppermost of course. Just as this hectic period was coming to a close, Evacuation Hospital No. 3 packed up and moved forward after the army, unloading its patients on Base No. 45. This completely filled every bed in the hospital and the gates had to be closed to further admissions.

About this time the organization recovered the magnificent equipment assembled for it in Richmond. The manner in which Lieutenant Charles Phillips rescued this valuable lot of stuff, loaded it on a French train, and delivered it to "45" at Toul, constitutes a brilliant chapter in the history of the unit. Every minute that could be spared from caring for a hospital jammed with patients, was devoted to uncrating and distributing the

contents of the huge boxes. When this task was finally completed, "45" was a real hospital.

Before it was completed, however, another drive was on, there was a rush of evacuations and a corresponding rush of admissions, and the pressure on the surgical service again became acute. Then ensued a spell of comparative quiet and something resembling an orderly service was instituted. At this time an American command was gassed by the Germans, so the hospital was rapidly cleared and filled up with these victims, Base No. 45 becoming for the time being a gas hospital, with the ear, nose and throat department bearing the brunt of the work. No sooner was this siege over than another epidemic of influenza and pneumonia swept the armies, and this caused the medical section, already with their hands full, to be doubly pressed. Departmental lines were abolished and all wards were opened to chest cases.

Stories commenced to circulate of a collapse by the Germans and visions of home began to loom large upon the horizon. Occasionally there would transpire events of more than personal interest. Major McGuire had been made permanent commanding officer in mid-September and elevated to the rank of Lieutenant-Colonel. The contagious annex was made an independent hospital on October 1st, and placed in charge of Captain Barrier. He took with him five casual officers, thirty nurses, and ninety-five enlisted men from the enlisted personnel of Base 45. One hundred and thirty-six special training battalion men had been added to the unit for temporary duty. The Justice Group Medical Society was organized on October 28th, with Lieutenant-Colonel McGuire as its first president.

November 11th dawned and still the guns roared and an occasional ambulance came in with wounded. At 10:59 the cannon were still in action, but as 11:00 o'clock struck a new sound was on the air—the chant of bells ringing from every church in France that had a belfry left. The day was given up to celebration. Toul was thronged by a joyous crowd composed of many nationalities. That night the town was ablaze with light for the first time in years.

The relief of the French over the lifting of the long strain of war was pathetic and their antics brought many smiles. Doughboys and poilus marched in long lines up and down the streets singing "Tipperary," "Madelon," or anything that came to mind. While merriment prevailed outwardly, underneath it all was a spirit of deep thankfulness that the war was over. With the next day came reaction and the realization that many months would pass before the American troops could be gotten back across the ocean and demobilized. In the meantime there was plenty of work to be done. Time dragged interminably. There was no longer the stimulus of war, casualties now were from disease and automobiles and the careless handling of ammunition. These were the hardest days of all, for homesickness had everyone in its grip.

Just after the Armistice a stream of wounded poured into the hospital from the belated drive that took the Second Army over the top. "Wounded at 10:59 A. M. November 11th" frequently appeared on the patient's card. It has been said that commanders in the field did not know of the impending Armistice and continued fighting as a matter of course. It has also been stated that stubbornness and the desire for vainglory on the part of certain high officers was responsible for the peremptory commands to advance, when it was known all along the line that fighting would stop within a few hours.

The work commenced to slacken. Lieutenant-Colonel Maddux, detached on November 14th and sent into Germany with the Army of Occupation, was succeeded in command of the Justice Group by Colonel R. M. Thornburgh. The maximum number of patients in the hospital on November 23rd was 1908 and on the 1st of December "45" was designated as a "clean surgical" hospital and the medical service was practically discontinued. The same day a group triage consisting of a series of tents was established in the court of "45," which meant that admissions for all the hospitals in the group were presented here, assorted, tagged, and distributed to the different units. To "45" came the "clean" surgical cases



and for a while these were sufficient to keep everyone busy. On December 17th the bed capacity was reduced from 2,300 to 1,400.

Christmas provided a very welcome break in the monotony. Everyone had been secretly dreading it, but luckily for all some inspired individual suggested that the entire hospital be decorated and that a full stocking be placed at the bedside of every patient. The idea "made a big hit" and soon everybody was busily engaged in preparations of one sort or another. The finished result drew people from miles around. Wardmasters strove to outdo each other and the whole place was a riot of color. In the effort to provide a real Christmas for the patients the organization found one for itself.

On New Year's day orders were received from the chief surgeon of the A. E. F. for "45" to prepare to return to the United States. Instantly everything was in an uproar, and there was much useless hurrying to and fro. In a few days, though, everybody was back in the slough of despond. Some underground influence was at work, apparently, hindering the efforts of "45" to get away. Then Lieutenant-Colonel McGuire and several other officers were detached and started for home, leaving Major Nelson in command. When passing through Tours, one of these officers disregarded all intervening "military channels" and reported to the chief surgeon what seemed to be an attempt to circumvent the instructions for Base No. 45 to leave Toul. This resulted in the dispatch of a peremptory order at once and "things commenced to happen." After certain unpleasant incidents with the incoming organization, the transfer was finally completed and on February 16, 1919 the unit bade farewell to Toul.

The nurses and detached officers proceeded to Brest and embarked on March 3, 1919, on the *Agamemnon*, which docked at Hoboken on the 11th. By March 20th the nurses were mustered out and had returned to their homes. The rest of the organization went to Nantes, where it remained for some time. Headquarters were established near the University of Virginia Base Hospital. Captain Charles Phillips was detached and ordered to Brest to accompany the nurses to America. Shortly after this all officers except three were ordered to Brest. This left Lieutenant-Colonel John G. Nelson, commanding, Major John B. Williams, adjutant, Captain William B. Hopkins, detachment commander, and 348 non-commissioned officers and men. Inspections of every conceivable sort were held at all hours. Diversion of various sorts, such as vaudeville, baseball, band concerts, competitive drills, helped to pass the time. When orders at last came to entrain for St. Nazaire, even the crippled and sick got well miraculously. The personnel detachment worked all night in order that not a single man need be left in France. At St. Nazaire everything moved like clockwork and the *Walter A. Luckenbach* seemed to be the finest ship in the world.

After debarkation at Hoboken, Base Hospital No. 45 at once proceeded to Camp Merritt, where the men were divided into groups according to states. The Virginians were mustered out at Camp Lee on April 29, 1919.



## Summary of Activities—Base Hospital Number Forty-One

Organized at the University of Virginia in the spring of 1917. Enlisted personnel mobilized at the University and entrained for Camp Sevier, Greenville, S. C., on March 5, 1918. Base Hospital No. 41 was officially organized at Camp Sevier and Major (later Lieutenant Colonel) Cabell appointed to command. Trained at Sevier until June 18, 1918, leaving on that date for Camp Mills, Long Island. Embarked July 5th on the *Scotian*. The vessel docked at Glasgow and the organization entrained for Southampton. Embarked at latter point for Havre and reached Paris July 25th. Moved thence to St. Denis, where the park and part of the buildings of the school of the Legion of Honor had been turned over to Base 41. Nurses mobilized in New York and sailed on the *Lancashire* July 22nd and arrived in Liverpool August 3rd. Entrained for Southampton and embarked there for France. Proceeded from Havre to St. Denis, reaching there August 11th. Shortly after that the unit completed its preparations for handling patients. Between September, 1918, and January 28, 1919, when the organization ceased to function as a hospital, thousands of patients were cared for by Base 41. Part of the unit was ordered to Nantes February 2nd and the rest followed a week later. The nurses went to La Baule, while the officers and enlisted personnel were billeted at San Sebastian. Base 41 left for St. Nazaire April 9th and sailed on the *Rhindam* April 12th. Reached Newport News April 25th and proceeded to Camp Stuart. Numbers of the men were ordered to camps near their homes to be mustered out. The rest of the organization proceeded by boat up the James to City Point and from there by train to Camp Lee, where the unit was demobilized May 1, 1919.

# History of Base Hospital Number Forty-One

Compiled from "A Brief Sketch of Base Hospital No. 41" by the  
Commanding Officer.

Promptly after the declaration of war, Colonel William H. Goodwin, then associate professor of surgery at the University of Virginia, went to Washington to confer with the American Red Cross in regard to organizing a base hospital at the University. As a result of his consultation the authority to organize the hospital was granted, and on the recommendation of President E. A. Alderman, Colonel Goodwin was appointed the director. On June 23, 1917, the hospital was given the number 41. The position of director was one of great responsibility and required much time, energy and good judgment in selecting the personnel and in purchasing the supplies. The excellent results attained later in France show that the selection of both the enlisted and officer personnel was intelligently done. Among the older officers there were a number of distinguished surgeons. At least two of them, Major Gwathmey and Major C. S. Venable, were fully qualified for the position of chief of the surgical section of a base hospital. Unfortunately, the positions they filled in this hospital were not in keeping with the experience and distinction they had attained in civil life. The younger officers were carefully selected for the special duties they were to perform. They were all well qualified medical men and were thoroughly conscientious in the performance of their duties. The enlisted men were chosen with the idea in view that the unit might have men experienced and capable of attending to all of the many needs of a large hospital without being dependent on any outside assistance. There were forty-nine alumni and students of the University of Virginia and a number of men from other colleges among them. In addition to picking the personnel and arranging for the supplies, it soon became apparent that Colonel Goodwin was to have all of the responsibility of raising the funds necessary to purchase the equipment, as the War Department decided that only those hospitals that were fully equipped and supplied would be accepted for active service.

At this time the Benevolent and Protective Order of Elks of the U. S. had collected from its members a large sum of money as a war relief fund. Mr. Fred Harper, of Lynchburg, Virginia, was then the Grand Exalted Ruler of the order. Mr. Harper was a graduate of the Law School of the University class of 1895 and was a loyal alumnus. Colonel Goodwin went to Lynchburg to see Mr. Harper and found him keenly interested in financing the hospital. Mr. Harper consulted with the Elk's War Relief Commission in New York, and through his efforts the commission decided to finance the University of Virginia base hospital. This was distinctive, as no other contributions were to be received from other sources. The Elks deposited with the Red Cross the funds necessary for the equipment of the hospital. It was most unfortunate that the supplies and equipment were shipped from one port and the officers and men embarked from another. The medical supply officer in Washington was seen by the Commanding Officer personally, and he promised to do all he could. It would have been a great satisfaction to have had the equipment which was originally selected by the director, but under the circumstances of such pressure and stress, after much correspondence, this proved to be impossible.

All of the requirements of the War Department having been complied with, the enlisted personnel of the hospital, 149 in all, was mobilized at the University under Lieutenant Herbert F. Jackson. It is interesting to note that in the spring of 1861 two companies were formed from the students of the University for the C. S. A.

On March 5, 1918, a few days after the mobilization, the detachment en-trained for Camp Sevier, S. C. On the march to the station, much enthusiasm was shown by the people in and about Charlottesville.

The hospital was officially organized at Camp Sevier by Major (later Lieutenant Colonel), Julian M. Cabell, and ceased to be a Red Cross unit.

Colonel Cabell, a Richmonder, graduated at the University in 1886 and was commissioned in the Medical Corps of the Army the following year. He served in the Sioux campaign of 1890 and 1891, in the Spanish War in the Philippines and in the Philippine Insurrection, as the Assistant to the Chief Surgeon, 8th Army Corps. He was detailed as a member of the first faculty of the Army Medical School when it was organized in 1893. He also served with the Army of Occupation in Vera Cruz in 1914. He went to South Africa in the Boer War, 1899-1900, as Chief Surgeon of the Hospital Ship Maine. He had been an associate professor in the George Washington University and was on the medical staff of several hospitals in Washington.

At Sevier the organization was assigned to the base hospital for training. The Commanding Officer here and his personnel assisted in every possible way to expedite the preparations of the unit for overseas service. The officers and men were assigned as far as possible to such duties as it was expected they would have to perform in France. In France Base No. 41 was an independent establishment and had no central hospital headquarters to lean on. Intensive instruction was given in drill, discipline, military deportment and the duties of a soldier. As all were keenly interested, exceptionally good results were quickly attained. The organization was fortunate in having a most efficient first sergeant in Aubrey H. Harwood, who was a student at the University when he joined. He possessed a fine personality and a natural aptitude for handling and drilling men. Later at St. Denis, on a most sacred occasion, as the detachment was marching in column of fours around the old building, a general officer, who had just distinguished himself in the Argonne, turned to the commanding officer and said, "Colonel, you have a remarkably fine lot of men and they march splendidly, etc."

While at Sevier an adjutant and a supply officer were secured and through the influence of a friend in Washington, a registrar of experience and an excellent mess officer were obtained. Each of these staff officers was efficient and, in France, added greatly to the real usefulness of the hospital, in that they relieved the medical officers of much necessary red tape and enabled them to concentrate all of their energies on purely professional duties.

The food at Sevier was good, and in spite of the hard work the time was pleasantly spent. On May 8th the commanding officer reported to the Surgeon General that Base 41 was ready for overseas duty. The endorsement on this report by the commanding officer of the Sevier Hospital, Colonel T. E. Scott, was as follows:

1. Forwarded. It is believed that Base Hospital 41 is ready for overseas duty and will be able to perform any work entrusted to it satisfactorily. This unit is composed of the highest grade officers and men and they have applied themselves most earnestly in learning the routine of base hospital work. Since their assignment to the base hospital at Camp Sevier they have been placed in positions it is intended they will occupy in their own hospital in an effort to teach them in the shortest possible time the duties connected with such work. The results have been excellent. The Commanding Officer, Major J. M. Cabell, deserves a great deal of credit for his studious application to duty and for his ability and judgment in bringing about the conditions desired.

Moving orders were slow in coming, but finally they arrived and the unit left Sevier by train June 18th and arrived at Camp Mills, N. Y., the night of June 19th.

While at "Mills," from June 19th to July 5th, there was but little to do while awaiting orders to embark for France. Many had never seen New York before, and passes were issued to everyone who wished to visit that city. Major Goodwin was made a lieutenant-colonel, which was most fortunate, as promotions in the medical department after arrival in France were held up until late in the fall. When he reported to Base No. 41 he was the fourth in rank, but after the above promotion he ranked next to the Commanding Officer.



The adjutant, registrar and mess officer joined the unit at "Mills." At last, on the Fourth of July, embarkation orders were received and all were overjoyed. One of the men was confined in the guard-house at Mills at this time for over-staying his pass to town and on account of his condition when he returned. He was nearly heartbroken when he heard of orders and was very happy when it was arranged to have him restored to duty just before the unit embarked. He did good work in France.

Everyone was ready to go. Few, if any, slept a wink that night, but sat up around the camp fires with men from Base Hospital No. 40 until the hour of departure in the early morning. Base Hospital No. 40 was from Kentucky and occupied the next camp street to 41 at Mills. Many friendly ties had been established with them and the two organizations embarked on the same transport. Shortly before daybreak, July 5th, Base No. 41 marked to the railroad and entrained for Long Island City and from there went by ferry boat around South Ferry and up North River to the transport, the *S. S. Scotian*. The *Scotian* left during the night and the fleet assembled in the morning off Long Island. The convoy was made up of fifteen large steamers and among them were several of the largest trans-Atlantic liners. The ships moved in columns of fours and kept this position night and day. The convoy at first consisted of submarine chasers, then a battleship served as escort, and on the other side chasers came out to meet them. The food, the cooking and the accommodations were not all that could be desired, but these were trifles after all compared to getting across. There were no entertainments aboard and little diversion of any sort on the voyage. The weather was good, and setting-up drills and boat drills were held daily. No smoking was allowed on deck at night, and all lights were well screened to avoid detection by submarines. Target practice was held once on the way over. Towards the end of the voyage the battleship sailed completely around the convoy and then departed to joined another fleet. No one knew at what port the transport would dock until early one morning everyone awoke to find that during the night the ship had entered the Clyde. Dumbarton Castle was passed, as well as the beautiful green lawn of a hospital, and no end of destroyers under construction on both sides of the river.

The *Scotian* docked that night at Glasgow and the next day entrained for Southampton. The stay there was short, but it was rather interesting. Some of the men were entertained by the people of Southampton, but there was little they could do at that time. A cloud of gloom was cast over the unit when an order came directing that it be held in England. Later in the day this order was revoked and "41" was ordered to embark the next day. Zigzagging across the channel at night, Havre was reached the next morning. Then came a march up a long and steep hill to a British rest camp, but only one night was spent there. The unit left for Paris the next day and arrived there the morning of July 25th. Then out to St. Denis to the beautiful park of l'Ecole de la Legion d'Honneur, the park and a part of the school building having been assigned to Base 41. Steps were at once taken to equip the building and convert it into a hospital. This beautiful location, only five miles from the Place de l'Opera, Paris, was secured for "41" by the American Red Cross. The old building erected in the early part of the eighteenth century was, originally, a Benedictine monastery attached to the old Basilique de St. Denis, where most of the royalty of France were buried. In 1807, Napoleon took it from the church and converted it into a school for the children of the members of the Legion of Honor. Except in time of war, it has been used for this purpose ever since. It was a stately old building with a large and beautiful park laid out with broad gravel walks, shrubs and flowers, surrounded by a high wall. In a very short time many acres of this lovely park were covered with tent wards which were filled with more than two thousand soldier patients. The superintendent of the school, Mme. Huet, with her staff of teachers, remained in the building while we

were there. She and Mlle. Last, her secretary, were always courteous and kind and were of constant assistance in many ways. The curé of the old church next door gave a special service for the unit soon after it arrived and was always very friendly. Orders were at once issued to organize for work as rapidly as possible, until able to report that we were ready to receive patients. The five hundred heavy iron bedsteads, that were in use in the school had to be taken down and stored away, and the equipment of Base 41 had to be installed. What had been the dormitories of the school for five hundred pupils was soon converted into well equipped and appointed hospital wards. Unusual results were very rapidly accomplished through everyone's untiring efforts and whole-hearted co-operation.

On July 18th the Nurses' Corps and six civilian employees in charge of Miss Margaret B. Cowling, the Chief Nurse, were mobilized in New York. They sailed on the S. S. *Lancashire*, July 22nd, and arrived in Liverpool August 3rd. From there they went to Southampton, crossed to Havre, August 10th, and reported at St. Denis, August 11th. What a blessed comfort they proved to be. Before the war with Spain and in the early days in the Philippines the opinion in the army was that it would not be practical in time of war to have nurses at the front. Such notions were certainly shattered by their efficient service in France. They accomplished wonders through their enthusiastic and untiring application to work. So often with the nurses it was all night work, and night after night, including the days between. However, they were always efficient, ready and cheerful and a great comfort to the patients as well as to the surgeons.

After the nurses reported preparations for receiving patients went on very rapidly and the wards were soon in excellent order, so it was reported on August 12th that everything was in readiness. This meant not only the wards, operating rooms and laboratories, but all the machinery necessary to run a big hospital, including administration, and the arrangements for cooking and serving food.

The first convoy of patients was promptly and efficiently handled in the receiving ward. It was the first practical experience of this kind, but all details had been well worked out in advance. The patients were admitted to the receiving ward and from there assigned to the dressing station, operating room or wards, the transfer being effected without delay or confusion, though there were a hundred and thirty-six patients in the first convoy. The nurse in charge of the receiving ward showed unusual aptitude for her duties. The ward was always in perfect working order, night and day, and the patients were all cared for and promptly assigned and transferred. This was always true even when the convoys arrived at midnight or in the early morning hours. In a conversation between several ambulance drivers in the District of Paris one was heard to say, "There was never any delay out at Forty-One as there was a lot of college fellows out there who were right on the job."

In addition to the hard daily routine of caring for the patients new tent wards were being prepared. Base No. 41 kept on expanding in this way until the signing of the Armistice. However, when there were about fourteen hundred patients in the hospital information was received from the chief surgeon that facilities to care for battle casualties were needed and a report was requested as to the maximum number of patients Base 41 could care for. He was advised that twenty-nine hundred could be handled. It was a real crisis and all available space had to be used. At this time the advance was well under way and the battle casualties were heavy. Under these circumstances the hospital actually expanded to more than twenty-eight hundred patients without any increase in the number of nurses or of enlisted men. There were never more than two hundred and fifty-four enlisted men. At our best we had about twenty-eight patients to one nurse and eleven patients to one enlisted man. This ratio is far in excess of the average and is probably, excepting convalescent hospitals, the very best record of any base hospital in the A. E. F. In spite of this, however, the quality of the professional work was at all times excellent.



In this extreme emergency l'Abbe Nozais, the chaplain of the school, offered the use of the sacred old chapel of the school. L'Abbe Nozais belonged to the clerical staff of the Basilique de St. Denis and was serving as the Catholic chaplain of the unit at the time. The offer was promptly accepted, and the beautiful chapel was at once converted into a ward and speedily filled with wounded American soldiers.

During the time when the unit was expanding so rapidly the epidemic of influenza attacked a large percentage of both patients and personnel. This required more attention for the patients from greatly incapacitated personnel. Many had to go on the sick report, others kept going as long as possible who should have been in bed. One medical officer and three men died of pneumonia following influenza.

The situation became critical when there were 1,765 patients in the hospital and all the others in the District of Paris had stopped receiving patients which left it up to Base 41 to handle all the convoys of patients from the front. From four o'clock in the afternoon of October 19th to ten o'clock in the morning of October 22nd, 693 patients were admitted. Convoys came in continuously day and night and the entire personnel was well nigh exhausted. On this, however, as on all other occasions, Mrs. Lizzie G. Thurman, the very efficient dietitian in charge of the main dining-room, was always out to receive the convoys regardless of the time they arrived. She had hot coffee and chocolate and light food, and then cigarettes for the poor wounded fellows on their litters.

Even after there were more than twenty-eight hundred patients in the hospital they were always well cared for in every way. They seemed happy and always showed the keenest appreciation of what was done for them. They seldom, if ever, complained, except occasionally of the food or of some everyday trifle. Considering the circumstances the food was good and the cooking good, but of course it was impossible to have proper diet for the sick when it was often the case that only a dozen or two eggs a day and other such necessary delicacies in proportion could be obtained.

There were six hundred patients in the building and approximately twenty-two hundred in the tent wards. About five hundred of the latter were in French Besseneau tents, which were near the building. These tent wards were well arranged and comfortable. The remainder, about seventeen hundred, were in the Marquise tents farther out in the park. It was necessary to construct a field kitchen and mess tents for these tent wards.

The responsibility of Base 41 was great. The unit was practically an independent hospital, not being stationed in a center but under the surgeon of the District of Paris, who was five miles away and did not have the usual supply and other staff of a hospital center. As a matter of fact, "41" had nearly all of the responsibility of a hospital center as to administration, discipline and supply. Many hospitals were housed in the same building with the headquarters of a hospital center or in the same inclosure and their responsibility was reduced to a minimum by the staff of the center. The Red Cross rendered valuable assistance, but its special interest, of course, was in the hospitals in Paris.

Base 41 had a most efficient staff, which had been selected with great care before leaving Sevier. The easy working of the administration of the hospital, even after there were more than twenty-eight hundred patients, was probably never fully appreciated by the rest of the personnel. As few orders and circulars were issued as possible and practically all of the red tape was handled by the staff. In this way the medical officers were relieved of such work and were enabled to apply themselves exclusively to medical duties. In reference to the staff, the following letter may be of interest:

Dear Colonel Cabell:

Though I have not been able to acknowledge receipt of all the neurological reports that have come from the various hospitals, I nevertheless wish to send you a word of thanks for your very admirable and carefully prepared report, which is one of the neatest and most exact of these reports



which I have received and reflects a great deal of credit upon the character of work your hospital must have done throughout.

With all good wishes, I am

Most truly yours,

Harvey Cushing.

While the unit was actively functioning as a hospital the discipline and morale of the personnel was always the very best. This was true even when the work was hardest, and especially so of the enlisted men. Everyone was too busy to think of petty grievances if they had them, and there was no discontent that interfered in any way with the efficiency of the hospital. Few, if any, of the base hospitals of the A. E. F. had so little friction among their personnel. The cooperation between individuals as well as between the several departments was perfect, and everybody pulled together to accomplish the greatest good. This cooperation was especially marked between the commanding officer and the chief of the surgical service throughout the entire time there were patients in the hospital. Each did all he could to carry out the wishes of the other. It was due in great measure to this that such satisfactory results were achieved.

Colonel Larry B. McAfee, the surgeon of the District of Paris, always showed an earnest desire to aid in every way possible. He recommended the commanding officer for the D. S. M. for having "rendered distinguished service to the U. S. Army in the rapid organization and the administration of the above hospital at a period when accommodation for battle casualties were in a critical condition, etc." This, of course, was in appreciation and recognition of the results attained through the efficient services rendered by all of the unit's personnel.

The officials of the School of the Legion of Honor did all they could to aid, and Madame Huet, the superintendent, and her secretary, Miss Last, were constantly in the wards performing little acts of kindness for the patients.

Very soon after the unit's arrival at St. Denis, the use of the entire school building was requisitioned through an officer at headquarters without consulting the officials either of the Red Cross or of the Legion of Honor. This naturally caused a great deal of bitter feeling, as the use of the park and a part of the building had already been granted by the Legion of Honor at the request of the Red Cross. It should be explained that in the District of Paris most of the buildings used as hospitals were secured by the American Red Cross. This organization also served as the supply department for the hospitals. Up to this time the Red Cross had cooperated with Base 41 in a most friendly spirit. The commanding officer of the hospital was never informed officially of this requisition. Later General Duball, the Grand Chancellor of the Legion of Honor, courteously granted us the use of the building in reply to a written request from the commanding officer of the hospital in which the urgent need of bed space was explained.

Base Hospital 41 was visited and inspected at various times by a number of distinguished officers. Soon after the command's arrival, it was inspected by the Chief Surgeon, Major General Ireland and later by his successor, General McCaw, a Richmonder, and by General Glennon, of the Medical Corps. When General McCaw came the hospital had expanded nearly to its limit, and he expressed surprise and much appreciation of this fact. The commanding general of the District, General William W. Harts, made a very careful inspection and the immediate superior of the unit in that section, Colonel Larry B. McAfee, made a number of inspections and always expressed approval of the work. General Duball, the Grand Chancellor of the Legion of Honor, went carefully over the entire hospital and took great interest in every detail. He was greatly pleased with the results accomplished with the limited means at hand.

Admiral Andrew T. Long, Admiral Richard H. Jackson, and General J. R. Kean, the latter two alumni of the University, visited the hospital.

General Dennis E. Nolan was with us on a very sad occasion, the

funeral of his brother, Lieutenant Martin F. Nolan, who died of pneumonia following influenza. Lieutenant Nolan was in charge of our pneumonia patients and had worked most indefatigably while ill himself. He had endeared himself to all who knew him through his fine character and his earnest application to duties.

The chaplain, Beverley D. Tucker, conducted services on Sundays and week days and also visited the patients daily in the wards. L'Abbe Nozais was voluntary Roman Catholic chaplain. He spoke English fluently and was a charming gentleman.

The Red Cross, the Y. M. C. A. and the Knights of Columbus workers supplied the patients with stationery, literature, games, toilet articles, tobacco and sweets. They also arranged concerts and other entertainments in the wards and did much to cheer the patients and keep them happy and in good humor. The Red Cross equipped the theater of the school as a recreation hall and operated a free canteen. Moving pictures, dramatic performances and other entertainments were provided. These did much to maintain the high morale of all. Chaplain Tucker had general charge of the amusements.

Major L. E. Arnott, of the Red Cross, was on duty with Base 41 nearly the whole time it functioned as an active hospital and rendered efficient and useful service. E. M. Ashman, Miss N. A. Watts and Miss Poet, all of the Red Cross, did a great deal for the men's welfare.

The "Medaille d'Honneur des Epidemies" was awarded to four nurses, four noncommissioned officers and six privates of Base No. 41, by the French Government. This medal is one of several French decorations which are sometimes called the Medal of Honor. They all rank equally, but there is no distinctive medal of honor in France. Three officers were awarded certificates for exceptionally meritorious and conspicuous services by the commanding general A. E. F. On the recommendation of his immediate superior officer the commanding officer of Base 41 was made a Chevalier of the Legion of Honor and was recommended by him for the D. S. M. These decorations were awarded in recognition of the results attained by the entire personnel, for without the cooperation of everyone the hospital would not have functioned so smoothly. The high class men composing the personnel had much to do with this. The services of all were so unusual that it was difficult to decide as to who should be decorated. The chief nurse, Miss Margaret B. Cowling, would have been named for one of the above decorations except for the fact that the commanding officer was officially informed that she was to be awarded the Palmes (Officier d'Instruction Publique), which ranks next in France to the Legion of Honor. It was with this understanding that the medals of honor were accepted. The omission in awarding the decoration to Miss Cowling was due to the enormous rush of routine work at the time and was unavoidable, but it is expected that she will receive it in the near future.

The Surgeon General of the Army wrote to the authorities of the University after the war commending "the invaluable services rendered the nation by this splendid organization, and in this connection, I desire to invite your attention to the excellent work done by Lieutenant Colonel Wm. H. Goodwin, M. C., as director of Base Hospital No. 41, and to ask that you convey to him my sincere appreciation of the value of the service he gave to our country in its time of need."

Major Bernard B. Kyle, before joining "41," served with the Second Division. He was awarded the Croix de Guerre by the French Government and was recommended for the D. S. C. for heroic services while with this division. He received a letter of praise from Major General Bundy and one from Major General Lejeune for his conduct under heavy fire while rendering medical aid to the wounded.

Major Lomax Gwathmey, while on temporary duty with Evacuation Hospital No. 4, was wounded by a six-inch shell when the vicinity of the hospital was shelled. A number of the corps men were killed and wounded and Major Gwathmey was removing the wounded to a place of safety when he was struck by a fragment of a shell. The wound was serious, but he



had recovered sufficiently in six weeks to return to the United States. He received a complimentary letter from the Commander-in-Chief of the A. E. F.

Air raids were frequently experienced at night and occasionally in the daytime. The hospital was directly in the line of fire of the Big Bertha and the huge shells were constantly passing overhead.

The hospital ceased to function as such January 28, 1919. Part of the unit was ordered to Nantes to prepare to return to the United States February 2nd, and the rest followed a week later. The outfit was billeted at San Sebastian about five miles from Nantes, while the nurses were ordered to La Baule. A number of the latter remained in France and the others returned home.

Some of the officers were detached at St. Denis and others later, and sent to other organizations in the A. E. F., some of whom later saw service in Germany. All of the remaining officers, except five, were detached and returned home by way of Brest. Some of the enlisted men were detailed to study at French colleges, but most of them returned to the United States.

While at San Sebastian everyone was homesick and was glad when embarkation orders were received. Base 41 left San Sebastian April 9th and sailed from St. Nazaire April 12th on the S. S. *Rhindam*, arriving at Newport News April 25th, where it was quartered at Camp Stuart. From there a number of the men were ordered to stations near their homes.

On April 29th headquarters and the remaining members of the outfit, in accordance with orders, proceeded by boat up the James to City Point and from there by train to Camp Lee, where the organization was demobilized on May 1, 1919.

#### BASE HOSPITAL FORTY-ONE OFFICERS

*Cabell, Julian M. ....	Lieutenant Colonel, M. C., Commanding Officer
*Goodwin, William H. ....	Lieutenant Colonel, M. C.
*Tucker, Beverley D. ....	Chaplain
*Gwathmey, Lomax .....	Major, M. C.
*Old, Herbert .....	Major, M. C.
*Venable, Charles S. ....	Major, M. C.
*Burke, John W. ....	Captain, M. C.
*Carroll, John W. ....	Captain, M. C.
Hayes, Henry J. ....	Captain, M. C.
*Lankford, Burnley .....	Captain, M. C.
Lear, Allen L. ....	Captain, M. C.
*Lile, Minor C. ....	Captain, M. C.
*Miller, Edward H. ....	Captain, M. C.
*Thomas, John D. ....	Captain, M. C.
*Venable, Charles L. ....	Captain, M. C.
*Witt, Dan H. ....	Captain, M. C.
*Woodward, Charles A. ....	Captain, M. C.
Miller, Walter E. ....	Captain, D. C.
Sharp, Foster .....	Captain, S. C.
*Brooks, Edward B. ....	1st Lt., M. C.
*Caylor, Claude C. ....	1st Lt., M. C.
Dowd, Heman L. ....	1st Lt., M. C.
*Gage, Lucius G. ....	1st Lt., M. C.
*Green, Berryman, Jr. ....	1st Lt., M. C.
Hadfield, Jonathan P. ....	1st Lt., M. C.
*Hume, Joseph S. ....	1st Lt., M. C.
*Hyde, Leroy W. ....	1st Lt., M. C.
*Jackson, Herbert F. ....	1st Lt., M. C.
McFarland, Gordon B. ....	1st Lt., M. C.
Magruder, Levin F. ....	1st Lt., M. C.
Nolan, Martin F. ....	1st Lt., M. C.
*Pott, Walter G. H. ....	1st Lt., M. C.
*Setzler, John B. ....	1st Lt., M. C.
*Steele, Kyle B. ....	1st Lt., M. C.



*Wellford, Beverly R.	1st Lt., M. C.
*Woodberry, Hunter S.	1st Lt., M. C.
Parry, George C.	1st Lt., D. C.
Bouvier, Charles M.	1st Lt., S. C.
Owen, Alvin W.	2nd Lt., S. C.
Huff, Donald R.	2nd Lt., Q. M. C.

The following officers joined at St. Denis:

James, Harry M.	Lieut. Colonel, M. C.
*Kyle, Bernard H.	Captain, M. C.
Falk, Frederick	Captain, M. C.
Bruns, John B.	1st Lieutenant, D. C.

The following officers were on temporary duty with Base Hospital No. 85:

Gailey, Herman E.	1st Lieutenant, M. C.
Graham, Emmeth L.	1st Lieutenant, M. C.
Hunt, Samuel	1st Lieutenant, M. C.
Knight, Howard T.	1st Lieutenant, M. C.

Note: Names indicated by asterisk designate University of Virginia students and alumni.

#### ADMINISTRATIVE AND EXECUTIVE STAFF

Commanding Officer	Lieutenant Colonel Julian M. Cabell, M. C.
Adjutant	Captain Foster Sharp, S. C., until January, 1919, when transferred and then relieved by 1st Lieutenant (later Captain) Claude C. Caylor, M. C.
Commanding Detachment, M. D., and Personnel Officer,	1st Lieutenant Herbert F. Jackson, M. C., until September 9, 1918, when relieved, at his own request, by 1st Lieutenant Claude C. Caylor, M. C.
Registrar	2nd Lieutenant Alvin W. Owen, S. C.
Quartermaster	2nd Lieutenant Donald R. Huff, Q. M. C.
Mess Officer	1st Lieutenant Charles M. Bouvier, S. C.
Chief of Surgical Service	Lieutenant Colonel William H. Goodwin, M. C.
Chief of Medical Service	Major Herbert Old, M. C.
Chief of Laboratory	1st Lieutenant Lucius G. Gage, M. C.
Chaplain	Beverley D. Tucker
Chief Nurse	Miss Margaret B. Cowling, N. C.

## Summary of Activities—Section Sanitaire Unie Number Five Hundred and Sixteen

Organized at the University of Virginia in May, 1917. Mustered into Federal service May 28th/29th. Left for ambulance training camp at Allen town, Pa., June 5th. Trained there until October 24th, being transferred on that date to Tobyhanna, Pa. Entrained December 25th for Hoboken and sailed the next day on the *Pastores*. Reached France January 13, 1918. Assembled twenty Ford ambulances and proceeded to Sandricourt. Assigned there to 66th French Division. Began active work in Vosges mountains on February 11th and continued until April 2nd. Moved to Compiègne and went into reserve. Entered line again May 4th at Moreuil, remaining there for one hundred days. Moved August 25th to Chemin des Dames, remaining until September 20th, proceeding then to Compiègne for a month's rest. Moved into action again on Oise-Sambre canal October 17th. Relieved November 4th. Moved to Fluquieres, thence to Paris, thence to Enghien-les-Bains, remaining there until December 20th. Proceeded from there with 66th French Division to Maubeuge, remaining there until February 20th, when the 66th was demobilized. S. S. U. 516 moved to Lille several days later. Ordered to Ferrieres March 13th and moved from there April 3rd, reaching Brest on the 7th. Sailed from Brest six days later on the *Great Northern* and arrived in New York April 20th. Proceeded to Camp Dix and the unit was demobilized April 23, 1919.

# History of Section Sanitaire Unie Number Five Hundred and Sixteen

(Formerly University of Virginia Ambulance Section)

By Staige Davis Blackford

Ambulance Company No. 516 was organized at the University of Virginia in May, 1917, and was mustered into Federal service by Lieutenant L. H. Clapp, U. S. M. R. C., on the 28th and 29th of that month. On June 5th, in company with the other unit organized at the University, and under command of Acting First Sergeant John H. Bocock, the section left for the ambulance training camp at Allentown, Pa. There the unit was given the number 516. George E. Warren was made first sergeant, Luther W. Kelly and Latta Law, sergeants, and Charles E. Jenkins, corporal.

The first months at Allentown were spent in preparing the camp for later arrivals and in foot drill. On August 6th, Section 517 received overseas orders and was thereby permanently separated from Section 516. The period from early August until the 24th of October was spent by those left behind in hiking and drilling. On the latter date 1,000 men were transferred from Allentown to Tobyhanna, Pa., on account of the congested conditions at the former place. Section 516 was in this contingent, which was commanded by Major Joe Devereux, of Washington, D. C. The time from early November until Christmas was spent in daily expectation of sailing orders, which finally arrived on Christmas day.

During the seven months' sojourn of Section 516 in this country, the enlisted personnel and officers underwent many changes. Only fifteen members of the original outfit were left, their places being filled from replacements.\* The lieutenants in charge were many. Among those who commanded during this period were Lieutenants Hurley, Green, Cole, Kelly and Listoe. The last named was in charge at the time of embarkation. C. E. Jenkins, R. A. Chermiside and M. E. Carter were the noncoms, Warren, Law and Kelly having received commissions.

On the night of December 25th "Devereux's Own" entrained for Hoboken, sailing from that port the next day on the U. S. transport *Pastores*. On January 10, 1918, the shores of France were sighted after a voyage that was uneventful except for two submarine scares. On the morning of January 13th the contingent disembarked and entrained immediately for St. Nazaire. There Section 516 assembled the motors and bodies of twenty Ford ambulances and departed two weeks later in these cars for Sandricourt, at that time headquarters of the United States Army Ambulance Service with the French Army.

At Sandricourt the entire system was changed and the cars turned over with their *conducteurs* to the French army. Section 516, U. S. A. A. S., was immediately assigned to the 66th French Division, the famous Chasseurs Alps, and its official designation changed to Section Sanitaire Unie 516 (S. S. U. 516), by which name it was afterwards known.

On February 11th active work was begun in the Vosges mountains in Alsace. Until Easter day, April 2nd, the section evacuated wounded here, doing only light work. Then the division was removed to Compiègne, where it was held in reserve. On May 4th it returned to the line, this time fifteen kilometers south of Amiens at Moreuil, where it remained one hundred days before being relieved. However, 516 remained several days after the relief of its division with Debeney's army, collecting the wounded from the attack of August 8th. Finally, on August 18th, the section was given a week's rest near Amiens, going from there to a sector in the Chemin des Dames, remaining until September 20th, when it retired to the vicinity of Compiègne for a month's rest, while the division was refitting and receiving replacements.

---

\*On account of these changes no attempt will be made to give the personnel of the units organized at this University. The original enrollment is to be found in the *Alumni News*, Vol. V, page 212 (May 23, 1917).



On October 17th the 66th Division attacked again thirty kilometers northeast of St. Quentin on the Oise-Sambre canal. It was relieved on November 4th after advancing the line considerably. This marked the S. S. U. 516's last visit to the front.

Armistice day was spent at Fluquieres, near Ham. The section proceeded thence to Paris, where the Chasseurs were to act as guard of honor during the receptions of President Wilson, Kings George, Albert and Victor Emanuel. The next month, until December 20th, was spent at Enghien-les-Bains, ten kilometers north of Paris. Once more the division moved, this time afoot, the voitures sanitaires following them to Maubeuge, on the Belgian border, where 516 remained with its division until February 10th, when the 66th was dissolved.

General Bissaud visited the section on the day of its separation from the Blue Devils and inspected them in an informal way, shaking hands with each member individually. After he had finished his inspection, he approached Lieutenant R. A. Burrell, who had assumed command after the signing of the Armistice, and said to him in French: "Lieutenant, I do not see enough Croix de Guerre on your men to please me, give me the name of every man who has not received one and I will see to it that he does!" Previous to this, eighteen of the thirty men in the outfit had already won personal citations.

S. S. U. 516 moved from Maubeuge to Lille several days later and there remained doing civilian relief work until March 13th, when orders were received to report to the Ambulance Base Camp at Ferrieres to await transportation home. These orders arrived on April 3rd. The cars being already disposed of, the men left Ferrieres at once and arrived in Brest on the morning of April 7th.

Six days later the section sailed from Brest on the U. S. transport *The Great Northern*, arriving in New York on Easter morning, April 20, 1919.

On April 23rd the majority of its members were discharged from Camp Dix, the remainder being held a few days longer.

Briefly, the work performed by Section 516 during its period of war service was as follows: 13,417 wounded transported, 212,417 kilometers travelled. The casualties were: one killed (Steve Webster), and five slightly wounded. Every car in the section was hit by a shell fragment at one time or another and six were completely demolished by direct hits during the last week at the front.

Every man in the section received an individual citation for the Divisional Croix de Guerre and the section, as a whole, received two divisional citations for work on the Somme and in the Chemin des Dames, and one army corps citation for the Oise-Sambre canal attack.

## Summary of Activities—Section Sanitaire Unie Number Five Hundred and Seventeen

Organized at the University of Virginia in May, 1917. Left for ambulance training camp at Allentown, Pa., June 5th. Trained there until August 5th. Entrained for Hoboken, where the *San Jacinto* was boarded. Landed at St. Nazaire, August 20th. Followed training schedule until September 23rd, leaving for Paris on that date and taking over work of field service operating at Neuilly. Left for Alsatian front in the Vosges mountains November 7th and went into active service with French army near Thann. Remained there until March, 1918, moving to Flanders in that month and going into action at Ouderdom. Relieved May 14th and rested at Loon Plage until the 28th. Went into action again in Ypres sector on June 2nd. Relieved July 6th. Entered active fighting again in the Champagne July 14th. Moved into Argonne August 18th and took part in operations there. The company was at Vaux-le-Mouron when the Armistice was signed. Moved from there to Wiedensolen, near Colmar on the Rhine and remained there in Army of Occupation until February 15, 1919, leaving on that date for Darney, France. Remained there until March 15th. Moved to Ferrieres, thence to Brest and embarked on the *President Grant* for America. Arrived at Newport News April 2nd and marched to Camp Stuart. Proceeded up the James to City Point, and thence by train to Camp Lee, where the unit was demobilized.

# History of Section Sanitaire Unie Number Five Hundred and Seventeen

(Formerly University of Virginia Ambulance Section)

By William Hudson Rogers

This company was organized at the University in May, 1917, and mustered into Federal service on the 28th and 29th of that month. After ten days of training the company left for the ambulance concentration camp at Allentown, Pa., on June 5th, and was there redesignated Section No. 517.

From June 6th until August 5th the unit trained steadily for everything under the sun but driving ambulances. During this period the personnel was increased to forty-five. Rumors of early departure circulated constantly, and finally orders did come for 517, along with ten other favored companies, to prepare to leave. So at twelve o'clock one night the men were ordered to turn in their beds to the quartermaster department and then to entrain for the port of embarkation. Despite the utmost secrecy a number of friends were on hand at the train to bid the company farewell. By daybreak the men were stiffly unloading themselves and their baggage from the train on to a ferry boat that bore them through the mist to the wharf at Hoboken. There they boarded the *San Jacinto*, a coast wise fruit steamer which had been converted into a transport with a capacity of 2,000 men.

Immediately the *San Jacinto* slipped down the harbor and anchored just below the Statue of Liberty, waiting for the rest of the convoy. Two hours later a cruiser dropped down and anchored alongside, and soon four other transports, among them the *Finland* and the *Henderson*, with two destroyers, joined the party. At nine in the evening, the convoy started and Section 517 began its voyage.

After thirteen days of constant vigil submarines were sighted just off Belle Isle, in the Bay of Biscay, and Section 517 had its first taste of warfare. A torpedo barely missed the bow of the *Finland*, and the good work of the destroyer, which had been joined by four others, prevented a possible tragedy, so far as Section 517 was concerned. Over seventy-five shots were fired at the submarines, whose number even now is a matter of conjecture. The sight of the cliffs of Belle Isle, just off the coast of Brittany, at this juncture was perhaps the most joyful experience forty-five of the men on the *San Jacinto* ever had.

At St. Nazaire, August 20th, 517 and the accompanying sections went through another period of training and drill, including almost everything except driving ambulances, and on September 23rd four sections including 517, received orders to proceed to Paris for special duty, to take over the work of the field service then operating at the American Hospital at Neuilly. While at St. Nazaire Sergeant Bocock received his commission as First Lieutenant, and was given command of Section 539, which unit later gave an excellent account of itself. Sergeant Calloway was made First Sergeant.

November 7th, after much preparation and after a number of men were taken from two of the sections at Neuilly to form a third, Section 517, which had been recruited up to forty-five men before leaving Allentown, started for the Alsatian front, in the Vosges with thirty men. The unit first went into active service with the French army near Thann, just across the lines from Mulhouse, and remained on duty there until March, during which time several lively engagements took place with the enemy, and five boys received the Croix de Guerre for valorous services. No mention need be made of the hardships and pleasures of that severe winter high up in the Vosges mountains—a winter whose burdens would have



been unbearable, but for the hospitality of "Doc" Doniat and his wife, innkeepers of Masevaux, a rendezvous dear to the heart of each member of 517.

In March, 1918, when the Germans were hammering at the gates of Ypres and had compassed Kemmel Hill on three sides, seemed to be on the road to Calais, the French division to which 517 was attached was ordered to Flanders, to help stem the German tide. After a period in reserve behind the British at Amiens, 517 went into action at Ouderdom in Flanders, close to Poperinghe and in the shadow of Kemmel Hill, where in a brief ten days action the division was reduced to one-half its original strength. Ten days were enough, and they were ordered en repos to Dunkerque, and remained at the peaceful retreat of Loon Plage, on the North Sea, from May 14th to May 28th.

Again on June 2nd, 517 went into action on the Ypres sector in the vicinity of Dickebusch and Westoutre, and remained there until relieved on July 6th. Here five more of the personnel received the Croix de Guerre for unusual valor in action. Lieutenant Hurley had been relieved of command when 517 left Paris, and Lieutenant Dobes, whose experience in the American Field Service rendered him peculiarly fitted for leadership at the front, commanded the unit throughout this period.

When the Germans launched their last and greatest offensive against the allies from the Argonne to the North Sea on July 14, 1918, the division to which 517 was attached was thrown into action just southwest of Rheims in the Champagne. On that memorable day, perhaps the hardest the section had yet known from the standpoint of work and danger, 517 lost its first man. Suarez, who had been transferred from another section, and who had endeared himself to everyone in the unit was struck by a shell fragment in the stomach and instantly killed. He was buried in the little cemetery at Dillman, on the road from Chalons to Rheims.

August 18th Section 617 went into action in the Argonne at Le Four de Paris and Vienne-le-Chateau, before Ste. Menehould, where there was comparative calm until the grand offensive of September 25th when the German retreat began. The section and its French division advanced first to Ville-sur-Tourbe, then to Sechault, Challerange, Grand-Pre, and Vaux-le-Mouron, where they were when the Armistice was signed.

Immediately 517 received orders to depart, and before its destination was known it found itself at Wiedensolen, near Colmar, on the Rhine, where it remained in the Army of Occupation until February 15, 1919, when it again crossed the Pass into France. The company remained at Darney until March 15th, when orders came to proceed to Ferrieres to prepare for embarkation. Four days at Ferrieres, four days on the road to Brest, four days at the port of embarkation, thanks to the efficiency of the clerk, twelve days at sea on the good ship *President Grant*, and the section passed between the Capes off Newport News at midnight April 1st.

The company marched from the ship to Camp Stuart, where it went through the de-louser and the de-everything else, and then boarded a steamer for the trip up the James to Camp Lee. Four days at Camp Lee (four seemed to be a lucky number for 517) and the unit was no more!

The honors of 517 are many. Read the list of the recipients of the D. S. C. and the Croix de Guerre. Each original member wears a service medal bearing four bars. That is honor enough. Fourteen month of actual service at the front before the Armistice was signed, not to mention the period of occupation, where the army "sits on top of the world." Casualties were many, deaths just one; for which there is a feeling of mingled sadness and pride. Suarez lies in Champagne; "Duke" Fenwick wears the D. S. C. because of bravery in action in Flanders when a shell hit the road ten feet from his car, a fragment killing a Frenchman on the seat beside him, and another fragment entering his own mouth through the upper lip, taking two teeth with it, and lodging in the roof of his mouth. A second later another shell hit the other side of the road, a fragment hitting him in the hand. He came to camp for a car to carry his blesses to the dressing station. A roll call would be necessary to recount the number and names of those who were gassed in more than one engagement, while the

"near hits" and narrow escapes would require volumes. Jimmie Moore was the first to win the Croix de Guerre, but many of the others soon followed his example in this respect.

The company was lucky in its commanders. Lieutenant Hurley was noted for his efficiency, and it is to him that 517 owes its first lessons in the general art of soldiering. His successor, Lieutenant Dobes, knew how to handle men and how to get the best results from a section. He was generally liked and respected and loved by all. He was relieved of command when the section went into the Argonne and succeeded by Lieutenant Jefferson B. Fletcher, now Professor of English in Columbia University, than whom no officer in the whole American Army was more beloved by his men. After the Armistice he was relieved by Lieutenant King, who remained in charge of the section until embarkation. It is interesting to know that Section 517 went over under command of Sergeant Bocock, and came back under command of Lieutenant Bocock, who had charge of the several sections from the date of sailing until date of discharge.

## Summary of Activities—Section Sanitaire Unie Number Five Hundred and Thirty-Four

Organized at Washington and Lee University, Lexington, Va., in May, 1917. Moved to ambulance concentration camp at Allentown, Pa., in June and trained there until January, 1918. Sailed from New York January 9th, on the *Carmania*, by way of Halifax, and arrived at Liverpool fifteen days later. Moved to Morn Hill Camp, at Winchester. Proceeded to Southampton February 2nd and boarded the *Caesarea*, arriving at Havre the next morning. Entrained for St. Nazaire and remained there until March 2nd. Proceeded thence to Paris and on March 8th moved to Versailles, where the section was assigned to the 12th French Division of Infantry. Moved to Pt. St. Maxence March 20th. Ordered to Montdidier a week later and on the 28th to Broyes. Established headquarters next at Esquernay and then at Fellville. Relieved April 10th and moved to Lorraine sector, going into billets at St. Clements. Left on July 18th and moved by way to Neuville, Perth, St. Dizier, Meaux, and Villiers Cottrett. Established headquarters at Verte Feuille and next at Vierzy. Moved about August 1st to Hartennes. Relieved September 15th and billeted near Crouy-sur Ourcq. Left October 7th for Belgium. Established headquarters at Thielt, going into action on October 21st. The section moved to Chreushautem and was there when the Armistice was signed.



# History of Section Sanitaire Unie Number Five Hundred and Thirty-Four

(Washington and Lee Ambulance Section)

By Forrest Fletcher

President Smith, of Washington and Lee University, announced to the student body on May 12, 1917, that the War Department had requested thirty-six volunteers immediately. No sooner had the request been made known than a large number of students signified their desire to identify themselves with the cause. A faculty committee selected the following thirty-six from seventy-five candidates:

H. D. Baker, Jr.	G. J. Irwin	R. E. Moore
L. G. Benford	K. J. Johnson	J. L. Morris
L. P. Collins	A. S. Johnston, Jr.	R. B. Morrison
J. W. Cook, Jr.	A. C. Jones	P. D. Pickins
*T. H. Evans	R. A. Kelly	*T. M. Pitts
F. Fletcher	J. A. Kinnear	*G. W. Pole
*C. W. Gooch	*J. D. Knight	J. E. Richardson
J. P. Green	W. E. McKinney	J. A. Rowan
R. B. Grubb	E. L. Mason	*A. D. Swecker
*T. G. Hamilton	*C. C. Moore	*D. W. Thornburg
O. W. Hisle	H. L. Moore	R. G. Womeldorf
W. S. Hopkins, Jr.	L. L. Moore	T. G. Woodson

The following list is of the men who were assigned as replacements at Allentown, before leaving for France:

W. B. Blee	D. A. Metheny	R. C. Shelhammer
G. E. Hintz	J. A. Meyers	S. I. Sigman
L. Lyon	C. A. Olson	R. Zufall
G. W. Marshall	A. M. Riley	

By June 9th every member of the section had reported to the Commanding Officer at the concentration camp and had been mustered into the service of the United States.

The Washington and Lee section was one of the first to reach camp. By the middle of August there were one hundred similar organizations in Allentown undergoing instruction and training. On August 7th the first contingent, consisting of twelve sections, sailed from New York, and at intervals from that time until the following spring, others followed. The Washington and Lee section (later known as S. S. U. 534), was ordered to New York, and sailed on January 9, 1918, on the British transport *Carmania*, reaching Liverpool by way of Halifax after fifteen days of rough weather. The trip was uneventful save from the standpoint of scanty, ill-prepared food plus twenty-four degrees below zero weather.

Once in England, moves came rapidly. Soon after arriving in Liverpool the section was on its way to Morn Hill Camp, located at Winchester—one of England's largest and most efficient army centers, being only a few hours from Southampton and little farther from France. S. S. U. 534 was detained here for only a few days for necessary rest and re-equipment. On February 2nd, the order came to proceed to Southampton, where the section boarded the *Cacsarea*. At dusk she put out into the Channel and by dawn arrived at Le Havre. A string of box cars was waiting, rations were distributed, and the third lap was begun, which terminated three days later at Base 1, Camp 1, St. Nazaire. Base 1 was at this time in its formative stage. The troops had started the immense camp, and Americans were very much in evidence. The sojourn at St. Nazaire was taken up

---

\*Indicates men who were transferred from the section for various reasons (promotion, sickness, etc.)

with camp construction, which lasted six weeks. Houses were built, ditches were dug, and automobiles were assembled. Most of the work seemed out of keeping to those who had enlisted to drive ambulances for the French Army.

On March 2nd orders moved the section to Paris, where four days were spent in repainting, repairing and generally rebuilding twenty Ford ambulances, one Ford touring car, and one Ford truck, all of which had seen much service. On March 8th the section convoyed to Versailles where official connection was made with the French Army. The section was assigned for duty to the 12th Division of infantry of the French Army which division had the reputation of being one of France's finest fighting organizations.

Throughout the entire course of events up until this time S. S. U. 534 had been functioning as a component part of the U. S. Army. Now, however, it was separated from the American Army and became part of the independent organization consisting of all the S. S. U. sections under the command of Percy L. Jones, Col. M. C. U. S. A., who had his headquarters in Paris. Col. Jones was personally acquainted with a large number of the men of the different sections, and was not only an efficient leader, but was liked by every one in the service. Each section while serving with the French received and executed orders from the particular French organization to which it was attached and had no connection with the American Army except to draw from it pay and ration allowance.

On March 20th the section moved to Pt. St. Maxence and camped on the banks of the Oise. A week later it received orders to establish headquarters at Montdidier and join the division. It so happened that at this time began the great German Somme offensive. This move had been expected but the exact striking spot was not known until after the section had started for Montdidier. Upon arrival in this city, it was found that there had been a split in the lines between the French and the English (this being just prior to the effecting of unity of command under General Foch). Consequently there was great confusion and the section failed to get in touch with its division which had gone into action a little to the left.

Finally, about eleven p. m. on the 28th, after having been repeatedly warned by passing patrols to move back, orders were received to proceed to Broys, where the section began the hardest kind of work. From Broys it was moved to Esquernay, and the evacuation of wounded from Cantigny, Roquencourt, and nearby points went forward day and night. The Germans advanced steadily in spite of the most stubborn resistance, and section headquarters was forced to move to Fellville, a town afterward occupied by part of the American 1st Division, from which point all the wounded of the division from Grivesnes, Query le Sec, Le Plesier, and Coullemelle were evacuated. For its work here the section later received a divisional citation.

On April 10th the division was relieved and ordered to the Lorraine front, which was a quiet sector. By special request of General Penet, the division commander, the section remained with the division. General Penet was a very popular commander and was particularly friendly to the section, not only because of the way it had handled its work during its initial experience under fire, but because he was a great admirer of General Robert E. Lee and knew as much about Washington and Lee University as most of the members of the section. So, by way of Beauvais, Meaux, Nantieu, Troyes, Charnes, Chaumont, and Rambervilliers, St. Clement was reached on the 22nd and headquarters established.

Nothing of importance happened during the six weeks' stay here, but the rest was a welcome one and the boys of the section enjoyed themselves recounting their various experiences and close shaves during the retreat, and made the most of the opportunity to get ready for more efficient work in the next busy spell that should come. Every Sunday afternoon the Germans shelled the French observation balloons, but aside from that there was very little evidence of warfare. It was here that the section received the official citation for its conduct on the Somme, and along with the section citation came three individual Croix de Guerre for Hopkins, Jones, and Baker, who had particularly distinguished themselves.



The period of rest came to an end all too soon, and on July 18th a move was made. The division was to follow up the Chateau-Thierry offensive which the U. S. Marines had so ably started. The section conveyed by way of Neuville, Perth, St. Dizier, Meaux, and Villiers Cottret to Verte Feuille Ferme. Two days were spent in the woods of Villiers Cottret, and at midnight of the second night a dash was made to Verte Feuille. From this farm as headquarters the ambulance worked the sector with posts at Vierzy and Ferme La Grange. At Vierzy there was a huge cave which had been used by the Germans. This cave was an admirable place to keep concealed in and was used also as a resting place for advancing troops. The Germans, however, knowing the advantages of the cave so well and, of course, having its exact range, poured a continuous stream of shells over the entrance. When an ambulance was ordered out the driver would crank up, wait for a shell to burst, and then make a dash for the opening, hoping to get clear before the next shell arrived.

As the division advanced the section moved and about August 1st arrived at Hartennes on the big road between Soissons and Chateau-Thierry. This was an extremely uncomfortable location for headquarters, and the boys had a hard job getting straightened out. The office was set up in what had once been a very pretty chateau, but the grounds were scattered with old gas shells, dead Germans, Frenchmen, and Americans. One day a French captain came in the office and excused himself for intruding, but remarked that he was passing and wanted to look in, because it happened to be his home. A little church just across the road with an old graveyard behind, was a mass of ruins, the graves turned inside out and dead strewn everywhere. Only one living creature was discovered when the section moved in—an old French woman. This woman said that she had watched the Germans come and go three times, in 1870, in 1914, and this last time and that their behavior had been the same on all three occasions. They had made her wash their clothes for them without offering her any pay (she washed the section's clothes and refused to accept any), had made her cook for them, had taken almost everything she possessed and when the Twelfth had started shelling Hartennes over fifty had crowded into her cellar, which was all that was left of her house, and had stayed there for over thirty hours.

From Hartennes the section worked posts located at Fr. Conde and other points across the Aisne river, and the three posts of Mt. Soissons, Ferme Epritle, and Serches will never be forgotten by anyone who was under fire there. On Mt. Soissons the French gave up efforts to conceal movements along the roads because constant shelling was maintained by the Germans in spite of camouflage. Serches was a particularly unpleasant spot. It was a little village located in a hollow. The Germans dropped gas shells just often enough to keep it in a terrible condition. There was no passing in or out without masks, and when the night was dark driving with masks was almost impossible. It was here that several of the boys were put out of commission. During the night of August 9th, Morrison, Johnson, and Blee were severely gassed, and Benford was wounded by a shell striking the ground within a yard of where he was standing. He was standing just outside a dugout door by his machine when he heard the shell coming. A Frenchman with him dodged inside the dugout and was killed by a piece of the shell that went through the door, while Benford escaped with about ten slight body wounds.

At the beginning of this attack five drivers had been added to the section as reserves. Three of these new men were wounded during their first day and the other two were removed a couple of days later. However, the original members of the section had had remarkable luck, and with few exceptions this luck stayed with them throughout the war. It was early August before the first casualty occurred. Hisle had his arm broken when his ambulance back fired, and a few days later the same thing happened to A. S. Johnston. This, with the loss of Blee, Morrison, Johnson and Benford left the section short of men, and the steady strain of hard driving that never let up for a minute, day or night, was almost too much for the boys. Sometimes more than eighty kilometers were covered in a single trip. However, they kept going while the division slowly forged



ahead, and September 6th they crossed the Aisne when the assault on the Chemin des Dames was begun. On September 7th a shell struck a small shelter, where Marshall and three Frenchmen were lying. Two of the Frenchmen were killed and Marshall had his foot torn off. The other Frenchman who was unhurt carried Marshall a half mile on his back to a first aid station.

A week later, September 15th, while the division was hammering away on the heights of the Aisne it was relieved. Terrible losses were sustained during this period of fifty-five days, and the section carried out almost as many men as the entire numerical strength of the division at the start of the drive. Despite the large number of replacements which had been received, the division was still little more than a skeleton organization. Evidence that the enemy had also suffered frightfully was met with as the Aisne was crossed. One group of Germans surrendered, stating that they were so reduced in numbers that they could no longer continue the struggle. They said only twenty-seven men were left to a company, and displayed no reluctance in giving themselves up when their French captors assured them that they were even worse off than that. The division and section took their period of rest in and near Crouy sur Ourcq. The boys had their first bath for weeks, received their back pay, painted, repaired and fumigated their ambulance, and enjoyed life generally.

On October 7th another movement began. This time Belgium was the destination, and the convoy across country, with the stops at little villages at night was a real holiday. The route was by way of Compiègne, Beauvais, Abbeville, St. Omar, Rexpoude, Lion Belge, Ypres, Roullers, and Thielt. The division went into action again on October 21st and the section set up headquarters at Thielt. From Thielt ambulances were operated to posts at Wontergren, Machelin, and Chreushautem. The work during this offensive was short, but fast and furious while it lasted. The roads had all been mined, and the shelling and bombing was almost continuous. On the last night in October Womeldorf was badly wounded and gassed. He later lost his leg because of the fact that immediate attention was not to be had because of the rapidity of the advance. This was the last casualty of the section. The Armistice was signed while the section was at Chreushautem.



# PART VI

---

## Virginia Engineer Units in the World War



## Outline of Origin and Service of Virginia Engineer Units

There were two military organizations from Virginia which differed somewhat from the rest. These were the 510th and 511th Engineer Service Battalions. These units were composed of colored troops with the exception of the commissioned personnel. These battalions were not attached to the 80th Division, but were special engineer troops, reporting to the Chief of Engineers in the United States and to the commanding officer of Engineers, A. E. F. in France.

The 510th Battalion was organized at Camp Lee in January, 1918, from the 21st Training Battalion and trained there until March. Proceeded to Hoboken, N. J., in March, and embarked on the *Powhatan*. Reached Pauillac, France, April 7th. Companies A and B and the Headquarters and Medical Detachments were ordered to Base Section No. 1, at St. Nazaire, Company C to Jonchery and Company D to Liffolle-Grand. On April 20th two officers and 150 men were transferred to England, where they were assigned to work in the cement mills at Swanscombe in New Kent. Company C was transferred to Camp Montierchaume in August.

The 511th Battalion was organized at Camp Lee in January, 1918, and trained there until March, 1918. Left for Hoboken, N. J., on the 20th of that month and sailed on the *Martha Washington* for France, March 22nd. The battalion disembarked at Pauillac on April 7th. Companies C and D left for Nevers, which was reached on April 13th. From there they marched to Chaulny. Companies A and B proceeded to Chateauroux, where they remained until the Armistice. This battalion engaged in almost every conceivable variety of construction work during its stay in France.

---

The accounts that follow are meager, but they embody all the information the Virginia War History Commission has been able to secure from any source concerning these two battalions.

# History of the Five Hundred and Tenth Engineers' Service Battalion (Colored)

**Sources:** "History and Record of Events of the 510th Engineers' Service Battalion." Historical Report of the Chief Engineer (including all Operations of the Engineer Dept., A. E. F.), 1917-1919. Station Lists, Morning Reports, Returns, War Diaries, Regimental D. R. C., Orders, Training Reports, Camp Records, Organization Records, Overseas and G. H. Q. Records.

---

On the 13th of December, 1917, the 21st Training Battalion, consisting of the 81st, 82nd and 83rd and 84th Companies of 150 men each, was organized at Camp Lee and two days later the battalion was placed on the priority list for service abroad.

In order to increase the enlisted personnel to the necessary strength of an engineer service battalion, 532 privates were transferred from the 155th Depot Brigade to the 21st Training Battalion by Special Order No. 15, Headquarters 80th Division, on January 18, 1918. The same order transferred 214 privates who had not been found suitable for overseas service from the 21st Training Battalion to the 155th Depot Brigade.

By Special Order No. 21, Headquarters 80th Division, January 23rd, the 1,050 men of the 21st Training Battalion were transferred to the 510th Engineers Service Battalion. At the same time 110 white men from the various units of the 80th Division were assigned to the 510th Battalion to act as non-commissioned officers. Due to the fact that these men were not selected with proper regard to their previous experience in engineering work, the battalion was seriously hindered for awhile, because of the lack of proper supervision.

During the training period at Camp Lee the battalion was also employed in various kinds of fatigue work, such as the construction of roads and railroads, under the direction of Colonel Spaulding of the 305th Engineers. Such time as was not consumed in this work was devoted to drilling and instruction.

The majority of the enlisted men were farmers or unskilled laborers who could neither read nor write. They were anxious to learn, however, and responded readily to instruction and were amenable to discipline. The health of the men was very good, although there were several outbreaks of measles and meningitis.

The battalion left Camp Lee on March 20, 1918, for Hoboken. The following day the men of the command went on board the transport *Powhatan* which sailed on the 22nd. The *Powhatan* docked at Pauillac, France, on the 7th of April, after lying in the bay two days. The battalion went to Bordeaux by train, where it remained at Camp Genicart for three days.

Special orders No. 97, Headquarters S. O. S., transferred Companies A and B and the Headquarters and Medical Detachments to St. Nazaire with instructions to report to the Section Engineer Officer, Base Section 1. Company C was ordered to report to the detachment of the 15th Engineers at Jonchery, Department Haute Marne, and Company D to the detachment of the 15th Engineers at Liffolle Grand, Department of the Vosges.

Company A reached Camp No. 1, Base Section No. 1, at St. Nazaire on April 12th. Two days later it moved to Camp No. 9, Base Section No. 1, and remained there until June 19th, when it proceeded to Camp No. 3, Base Section No. 1.

Company C left Camp Genicart on the 11th of April and arrived at Camp Pittsburg, Jonchery, Advanced Ordnance Depot No. 4, on the 14th. On August 3rd, the company left for Montierchaume Depot at Chateauroux, which was reached two days later. No other change of station occurred.

The battalion, minus Companies C and D, reached St. Nazaire on the 12th of April and went immediately to Camp No. 1. Three days later it moved to what was then Camp No. 9, but which later became Camp Montoir. This camp had not been occupied before by any organization.

On the 20th of April, 1918, Special Order No. 38, Headquarters S. O. S., transferred two officers and 150 men to Base Section No. 3 in England. This detachment commanded by Lieutenant Gilbert P. Vulte, of Company A, left St. Nazaire on April 21st, and arrived at Havre the following day. Eight days were spent there at Rest Camp No. 2, Base No. 4, waiting for transportation across the channel. The crossing was finally made on April 30th, the men arriving at Southampton in good condition. Lieutenant Vulte was detached and sent to London on special duty and Second Lieutenant W. W. Sprague took command.

One hundred and twenty-eight men were supplied every day for work on camp and hospital construction from May 3rd to May 10th. On the latter date the detachment left Morn Hill Camp, at Winchester, and arrived at Waterloo Station, London. Conveying across London by motor trucks the command left Charing Cross Station at 4:30 P. M. and arrived at Swanscombe, New Kent, two hours later. The 11th and 12th of May were spent in cleaning camp, and on the 13th the men started work in the cement mills. This work consisted of sacking and weighing cement and loading the same on trains and barges. Three shifts were used, each in charge of a sergeant and two corporals, and about 600 tons of cement were sacked per day.

The officers of Company A and the remaining portion of Company B remaining at Base Section No. 1 were assigned to duties in keeping with their qualifications.

Company C had reported to Major Gibbs, of the 15th Engineers at Jonchery, Haute Marne (Advance Ordnance Depot No. 4), and was quartered in Adrian Barracks. The men of this company started in on railroad construction and for awhile did excavation and embankment work. Warehouse and water line construction was subsequently taken up by details in charge of the company's own non-coms and pushed forward successfully.

Lieutenant James L. Draper was detached and sent to the Gas Officer's School, at Langres, for one week. Non-commissioned officers' schools in engineering were held, and the men were given close order drill, semaphore drill, and bayonet practice.

On August 20th telegraphic instructions from the Commanding General of the Advance Section S. O. S. ordered Company C to Camp Montierchaume, Indrom, where it was assigned to railroad construction.

Company D had left Camp Genicart, Base No. 2, on April 11, 1918, and entrained at Carbon Blanc for Liffolle-Grand, Vosges. Arriving there on April 14th and reporting to Lieutenant-Colonel C. W. Sturtevant, of the 15th Engineers, the men were assigned to construction work on a Regulating Station at this point. This work consisted largely of grading and track laying. The company also built several bridges and laid a great deal of drainage tile.

None of the battalion units had received any of the equipment specified for Engineer Service Battalions before leaving the United States nor was any received in France prior to the first of November, 1918. Most of the tools and equipment had been furnished by the 17th Engineers. The medical officers of the Battalion were relieved during the stay at Camp Montoir, Base Section No. 1, medical service from then on being rendered by camp medical officers.



# History of the Five Hundred and Eleventh Engineers' Service Battalion (Colored)

**Sources:** Letters of Lieutenant-Colonel George E. A. Fairley. Historical Report of the Chief Engineer (including all operations of the Engineer Dept., A. E. F.), 1917-1919. Station Lists, Morning Reports, Returns, War Diaries, Regimental D. R. C., Orders, Training Reports, Camp Records, Organization Records, Overseas and G. H. Q. Records.

---

The 511th Battalion was organized in the early part of January, 1918, at Camp Lee, Virginia. The battalion was composed of four companies, headquarters staff, and medical detachment, and totaled 1,029 officers and men. The commissioned and non-commissioned officers were white, and the remainder of the personnel was colored. Over ninety per cent of the enlisted men were from Virginia.

The first of twenty-seven non-commissioned officers joined the organization on the 23rd of January, 1918. Clothing, blankets and other equipment were issued to the men and drilling was started at once. Detachments of the battalion were employed in various kinds of work around the camp, some at the coal yards, others at the incinerator and remount station, while details were almost constantly on duty at some of the warehouses. A considerable amount of ditching and road construction was done by the men of the 511th Battalion.

About the middle of March, 1918, preparations were begun for early departure overseas. The battalion entrained at Camp Lee on March 20th and reached Hoboken the following day. The command went on board the transport *Martha Washington*, which left the dock on the 22nd and anchored off Staten Island. The voyage over proved uneventful in the main. Three submarines were sighted, of which two were thought to have been destroyed.

The mouth of the Gironde River was reached on the 5th of April and the *Martha Washington* cast anchor about ten miles up the river. The transport was finally tied up at the docks at Pauillac, the men disembarking on April 7th. Company D was sent on a river steamer up to Bassens and marched from there to Camp Genicart. On April 11th, companies C and D left for Nevers, arriving there on the 13th, and marching to Chaulny. A great deal of grading and policing had to be done in the camp there to make it livable. Companies A and B proceeded to Chateauroux on April 11th, and remained there until the signing of the Armistice. Company D started grading for railroad tracks and Company C began laying rail. A number of caterpillar tractors and shovels were operated, so by the 30th of April 14,000 cubic yards of dirt had been moved, 610 feet of siding constructed and 4,900 standard gauge rails laid.

Orders came on the 24th of May to move to Montierchaume. The men entrained on May 29th, but did not get away until the following day, because no engine was provided for the train. Montierchaume was reached on May 30th, and the following day the men were sent on new railroad construction. Details were also assigned to the work of excavating for ash pits and pit tracks, building road crossings and unloading sand and gravel cars. The men were further engaged in building concrete forms for ash pits, in making fills, putting in culverts and in the construction of classification yards and departure tracks. Detachments of the companies were employed in clearing land for the engine house, building corrals, erecting water tanks, excavation for inspection pits, and pouring concrete for ash pits, also in unloading cement.

The construction work at Montierchaume Depot was in charge of Major E. A. Fairley, Commanding Officer of the 511th Battalion, from April 5, 1918, to June 5, 1918, and again from the 18th of October, 1918, until the termination of the work. Major Fairley was ordered to Paris on April 27, 1917, so did not return to the United States with the battalion.

The 511th Battalion served through the whole period of construction at Montierchaume and deserves especial mention for its share in this accomplishment.

## Distribution of Members of Virginia National Guard

STATE DESIGNATION	DATE OF CHANGE	FEDERAL DESIGNATION	REMARKS
<b>1st Infantry</b>			
Hdqrs. Co. (less band)	Oct. 4, 1917	Headquarters Co., 116th Infantry	2 enlisted men.
	Oct. 4, 1917	Co. A, 116th Infantry	12 enlisted men.
	Oct. 4, 1917	Co. B, 116th Infantry	1 enlisted man.
	Oct. 4, 1917	Co. D, 116th Infantry	2 enlisted men.
	Oct. 4, 1917	Co. G, 116th Infantry	2 enlisted men.
	Oct. 4, 1917	Co. L, 116th Infantry	2 enlisted men.
	Oct. 4, 1917	M. G. Co., 116th Infantry	2 enlisted men.
	Oct. 4, 1917	Supply Co., 116th Infantry	2 enlisted men.
	Oct. 4, 1917	Co. D, 110th M. G. Battalion	2 enlisted men.
	Oct. 4, 1917	Co. D, 110th M. G. Battalion	112th M. G. Battalion.)
Band	March 10, 1918	Band, 155th Depot Brigade	Entire strength. (The Band was attached to various units of the Division until March 10/18, when it was assigned to the Depot Brigade.)
M. G. Co.	Sept. 26, 1917	Co. D, 110th M. G. Battalion	Entire strength. (Co. D, 110th M. G. Battalion became Co. D, 112th M. G. Battalion on March 1/18, final designation.)
Supply Co.	Oct. 4, 1917	Supply Co., 116th Infantry	Entire strength (29 enlisted men.)
Co. A	Oct. 4, 1917	Headquarters Co., 116th Infantry	7 enlisted men.
	Oct. 4, 1917	Co. B, 116th Infantry	51 enlisted men.
	Oct. 4, 1917	Co. C, 116th Infantry	21 enlisted men.
	Oct. 4, 1917	Co. E, 116th Infantry	3 enlisted men.
	Oct. 4, 1917	Co. G, 116th Infantry	4 enlisted men.

Transfers shown above dispose of Co. A.

STATE DESIGNATION	DATE OF CHANGE	FEDERAL DESIGNATION	REMARKS
1st Infantry (Cont.)			
Co. B	Oct. 4, 1917	Co. B, 116th Infantry	Entire strength (100 enlisted men.)
Co. C	Oct. 4, 1917	Headquarters Co., 116th Infantry	3 enlisted men.
	Oct. 4, 1917	Co. A, 116th Infantry	4 enlisted men.
	Oct. 4, 1917	Co. B, 116th Infantry	41 enlisted men.
	Oct. 4, 1917	Co. C, 116th Infantry	12 enlisted men.
	Oct. 4, 1917	Co. D, 110th M. G. Battalion	3 enlisted men. (This unit became Co. D, 112th M. G. Battalion.) Transfers shown above dispose of Co. C.
Co. D	Oct. 4, 1917	Headquarters Co., 116th Infantry	9 enlisted men.
	Oct. 4, 1917	Co. C, 116th Infantry	5 enlisted men.
	Oct. 4, 1917	Co. H, 116th Infantry	82 enlisted men.
	Oct. 4, 1917	Co. D, 110th M. G. Battalion	2 enlisted men. Transfers shown above dispose of Co. D.)
Co. E	Oct. 4, 1917	Co. L, 116th Infantry	92 enlisted men.
	Oct. 4, 1917	Co. D, 110th M. G. Battalion	3 enlisted men. Transfers shown above dispose of Co. E.
Co. F	Oct. 4, 1917	Headquarters Co., 116th Infantry	10 enlisted men.
	Oct. 4, 1917	Co. B, 116th Infantry	47 enlisted men.
	Oct. 4, 1917	Co. C, 116th Infantry	18 enlisted men.
	Oct. 4, 1917	Co. D, 110th M. G. Battalion	2 enlisted men. (This unit became Co. D, 112th M. G. Battalion.) Transfers shown above dispose of Co. F.
Co. G	Oct. 4, 1917	Headquarters Co., 116th Infantry	9 enlisted men.
	Oct. 4, 1917	Co. A, 116th Infantry	56 enlisted men.
	Oct. 4, 1917	Co. C, 116th Infantry	15 enlisted men.
	Oct. 4, 1917	Co. L, 116th Infantry	42 enlisted men.
	Oct. 4, 1917	Co. D, 110th M. G. Battalion	2 enlisted men. (This unit became Co. D, 112th M. G. Battalion.) Transfers shown above dispose of Co. G.
Co. H	Oct. 4, 1917	Headquarters Co., 116th Infantry	2 enlisted men.
	Oct. 4, 1917	Co. H, 116th Infantry	141 enlisted men.
	Oct. 4, 1917	Co. D, 110th M. G. Battalion	2 enlisted men. (This unit became Co. D, 112th M. G. Battalion.) Transfers shown above dispose of Co. H.



STATE DESIGNATION	DATE OF CHANGE	FEDERAL DESIGNATION	REMARKS
Co. I	Oct. 4, 1917	Co. A, 116th Infantry	64 enlisted men.
	Oct. 4, 1917	Co. D, 110th M. G. Battalion	5 enlisted men. (This unit became Co. D, 112th M. G. Battalion.) Transfers shown above dispose of Co. I.
Co. K	Oct. 4, 1917	Co. A, 116th Infantry	98 enlisted men.
	Oct. 4, 1917	Co. D, 110th M. G. Battalion	5 enlisted men. (This unit became Co. D, 112th M. G. Battalion.) Transfers shown above dispose of Co. K.
Co. L	Oct. 4, 1917	Co. L, 116th Infantry	95 enlisted men.
	Oct. 4, 1917	Co. D, 110th M. G. Battalion	5 enlisted men. (This unit became Co. D, 112th M. G. Battalion.) Transfers shown above dispose of Co. L.
Co. M	Oct. 4, 1917	Headquarters Co., 116th Infantry	2 enlisted men.
	Oct. 4, 1917	Co. C, 116th Infantry	136 enlisted men.
	Oct. 4, 1917	Co. D, 110th M. G. Battalion	3 enlisted men. (This unit became Co. D, 112th M. G. Battalion.) Transfers shown above dispose of Co. M.
Med. Det.	Oct. 4, 1917	Med. Det., 116th Infantry	Entire strength, ( 13 enlisted men.)
<b>2nd Infantry</b>			
Headquarters Co.	Oct. 4, 1917	Headquarters Co., 116th Infantry	Entire strength ( 56 enlisted men.)
M. G. Co.	Oct. 4, 1917	M. G. Co., 116th Infantry	Entire strength ( 73 enlisted men.)
Supply Co.	Oct. 4, 1917	Supply Co., 116th Infantry	Entire strength ( 35 enlisted men.)
Co. A	Oct. 4, 1917	Co. G, 116th Infantry	Entire strength (151 enlisted men.)
Co. B	Oct. 4, 1917	Co. I, 116th Infantry	Entire strength (110 enlisted men.)
Co. C	Oct. 4, 1917	Co. D, 116th Infantry	Entire strength (126 enlisted men.)
Co. D	Oct. 4, 1917	Co. D, 116th Infantry	Entire strength (126 enlisted men.)
Co. E	Oct. 4, 1917	Co. F, 116th Infantry	Entire strength (111 enlisted men.)
Co. F	Oct. 4, 1917	Co. F, 116th Infantry	Entire strength (107 enlisted men.)
Co. G	Oct. 4, 1917	Co. G, 116th Infantry	Entire strength (111 enlisted men.)
Co. H	Oct. 4, 1917	Co. K, 116th Infantry	Entire strength (143 enlisted men.)
Co. I	Oct. 4, 1917	Co. I, 116th Infantry	Entire strength (123 enlisted men.)
Co. K	Oct. 4, 1917	Co. K, 116th Infantry	Entire strength (109 enlisted men.)
Co. L	Oct. 4, 1917	Co. M, 116th Infantry	Entire strength (101 enlisted men.)
Co. M	Oct. 4, 1917	Co. M, 116th Infantry	Entire strength (134 enlisted men.)
Med. Det.	Oct. 4, 1917	Med. Det., 116th Infantry	Entire strength ( 30 enlisted men.)

## REMARKS

## FEDERAL DESIGNATION

## DATE OF CHANGE

## STATE DESIGNATION

## 4th Infantry

STATE DESIGNATION	DATE OF CHANGE	FEDERAL DESIGNATION	REMARKS
Headquarters Co.	Oct. 4, 1917	Headquarters Co., 111th F. A.	25 enlisted men. (This includes the Band Section.)
	Oct. 8, 1917	Co. A, 104th Field Sig. Battalion	2 enlisted men.
	Oct. 8, 1917	Headquarters Co., 116th Infantry	4 enlisted men.
	Oct. 8, 1917	Supply Co., 116th Infantry	3 enlisted men.
	Oct. 8, 1917	Co. E, 116th Infantry	1 enlisted man.
	Oct. 8, 1917	Hq. Det., 104th Hq. Trn. & M. P.	2 enlisted men.
	Oct. 8, 1917	Field Hospital No. 116.	7 enlisted men.
	Oct. 8, 1917	104th Engineer Train	4 enlisted men.
		Transfers shown above dispose of Headquarters Co. (See note.)	
M. G. Co.	Oct. 4, 1917	Co. B, 112th M. G. Battalion	Entire strength (69 enlisted men.)
Supply Co.	Oct. 4, 1917	Supply Co., 116th Infantry	11 enlisted men.
	Oct. 8, 1917	116th Field Hospital	17 enlisted men.
	Oct. 8, 1917	104th Mob. Ord. Rep. Shop	2 enlisted men.
	Oct. 8, 1917	Co. L, 116th Infantry	3 enlisted men.
		Transfers shown above dispose of Supply Co. (See note.)	
Co. A	Oct. 4, 1917	Headquarters Co., 116th Infantry	16 enlisted men.
	Oct. 4, 1917	Supply Co., 116th Infantry	3 enlisted men.
	Oct. 4, 1917	Co. A, 116th Infantry	3 enlisted men.
	Oct. 4, 1917	Co. B, 116th Infantry	2 enlisted men.
	Oct. 4, 1917	Co. C, 116th Infantry	2 enlisted men.
	Oct. 4, 1917	Co. D, 116th Infantry	11 enlisted men.
	Oct. 4, 1917	Co. E, 116th Infantry	3 enlisted men.
	Oct. 4, 1917	Co. F, 116th Infantry	4 enlisted men.
	Oct. 4, 1917	Co. G, 116th Infantry	2 enlisted men.
	Oct. 4, 1917	Co. I, 116th Infantry	18 enlisted men.
	Oct. 4, 1917	Co. L, 116th Infantry	2 enlisted men.
	Oct. 8, 1917	Battery B, 111th F. A.	1 enlisted man.
	Oct. 8, 1917	Battery C, 111th F. A.	1 enlisted man.
	Oct. 8, 1917	Co. B, 104th Supply Train	1 enlisted man.
	Oct. 8, 1917	Co. C, 104th Supply Train	2 enlisted men.
	Oct. 8, 1917	Co. D, 104th Supply Train	2 enlisted men.
	Oct. 8, 1917	Co. E, 104th Supply Train	1 enlisted man.

STATE DESIGNATION	DATE OF CHANGE	FEDERAL DESIGNATION	REMARKS
4th Infantry (Cont.)			
Co. A (Cont.)	Oct. 8, 1917	Co. F, 104th Supply Train	1 enlisted man.
	Oct. 8, 1917	Hq. Det., 104th Trn. Hq. & M. P.	1 enlisted man.
	Oct. 8, 1917	104th Engineer Train	2 enlisted men.
			Transfers shown dispose of Co. A. (See note.)
Co. B	Oct. 4, 1917	Headquarters Co., 116th Infantry	7 enlisted men.
	Oct. 4, 1917	Supply Co., 116th Infantry	5 enlisted men.
	Oct. 4, 1917	M. G. Co., 116th Infantry	1 enlisted man.
	Oct. 4, 1917	Co. E, 116th Infantry	46 enlisted men.
	Oct. 4, 1917	Co. G, 116th Infantry	2 enlisted men.
	Oct. 4, 1917	Headquarters Co., 111th F. A.	2 enlisted men.
	Oct. 8, 1917	Co. B, 104th Supply Train	2 enlisted men.
			Transfers shown above dispose of Co. B. (See note.)
Co. C	Oct. 4, 1917	Headquarters Co., 116th Infantry	40 enlisted men.
	Oct. 4, 1917	Supply Co., 116th Infantry	3 enlisted men.
	Oct. 4, 1917	Co. E, 116th Infantry	1 enlisted man.
	Oct. 4, 1917	Co. G, 116th Infantry	2 enlisted men.
	Oct. 4, 1917	Co. I, 116th Infantry	3 enlisted men.
	Oct. 4, 1917	Co. K, 116th Infantry	12 enlisted men.
	Oct. 4, 1917	Co. B, 112th M. G. Battalion	20 enlisted men.
	Oct. 8, 1917	Field Hospital No. 116	2 enlisted men.
	Oct. 8, 1917	Co. B, 104th Supply Train	1 enlisted man.
	Oct. 8, 1917	Co. C, 104th Supply Train	1 enlisted man.
	Oct. 8, 1917	Co. D, 104th Supply Train	1 enlisted man.
	Oct. 8, 1917	Co. E, 104th Supply Train	1 enlisted man.
	Oct. 8, 1917	Co. F, 104th Supply Train	5 enlisted men.
	Oct. 8, 1917	104th Engineer Train	5 enlisted men.
	Oct. 8, 1917	Co. C, 104th Field Sig. Battalion	2 enlisted men.
	Oct. 8, 1917	Co. C, 115th Infantry	2 enlisted men.
	Oct. 8, 1917	Co. F, 115th Infantry	3 enlisted men.
			Transfers shown above dispose of Co. C. (See note.)
Co. D	Oct. 4, 1917	Co. B, 112th M. G. Battalion	84 enlisted men.
	Oct. 4, 1917	Co. K, 116th Infantry	6 enlisted men.
			Transfers shown above dispose of Co. D.



STATE DESIGNATION	DATE OF CHANGE	FEDERAL DESIGNATION	REMARKS
<i>4th Infantry</i> —(Cont.)			
Co. E	Oct. 4, 1917	Headquarters Co., 116th Infantry	41 enlisted men.
	Oct. 4, 1917	Co. C, 116th Infantry	6 enlisted men.
	Oct. 4, 1917	Co. D, 116th Infantry	5 enlisted men.
	Oct. 4, 1917	Co. E, 116th Infantry	5 enlisted men.
	Oct. 4, 1917	Co. G, 116th Infantry	1 enlisted man.
	Oct. 4, 1917	Co. H, 116th Infantry	1 enlisted man.
	Oct. 4, 1917	Co. K, 116th Infantry	4 enlisted men.
	Oct. 4, 1917	Co. L, 116th Infantry	1 enlisted man.
	Oct. 4, 1917	Co. C, 104th Field Sig. Battalion	1 enlisted man.
	Oct. 8, 1917	104th Engineer Train	9 enlisted men.
	Oct. 8, 1917	Co. C, 104th Supply Train	2 enlisted men.
	Oct. 8, 1917	Co. D, 104th Supply Train	1 enlisted man.
	Oct. 8, 1917	Co. E, 104th Supply Train	3 enlisted men.
Transfers shown above dispose of Co. E. (See note.)			
Co. F	Oct. 4, 1917	Co. E, 116th Infantry	Entire strength (144 enlisted men.)
Co. G	Oct. 4, 1917	Co. E, 116th Infantry	Entire strength (83 enlisted men.)
Co. H	Oct. 4, 1917	Headquarters Co., 116th Infantry	25 enlisted men.
	Oct. 4, 1917	Supply Co., 116th Infantry	17 enlisted men.
	Oct. 4, 1917	M. G. Co., 116th Infantry	38 enlisted men.
	Oct. 8, 1917	Co. A, 104th Supply Train	2 enlisted men.
	Oct. 8, 1917	Co. B, 104th Supply Train	1 enlisted man.
	Oct. 8, 1917	Co. C, 104th Supply Train	1 enlisted man.
	Oct. 8, 1917	Co. D, 104th Supply Train	3 enlisted men.
	Oct. 8, 1917	Co. E, 104th Supply Train	1 enlisted man.
	Oct. 8, 1917	Co. F, 104th Supply Train	2 enlisted men.
	Oct. 8, 1917	Hq. Det., 104th Supply Train	1 enlisted man.
Transfers shown above dispose of Co. H. (See note.)			
Co. I	Oct. 4, 1917	Headquarters Co., 111th F. A.	52 enlisted men.
	Oct. 4, 1917	Battery C, 111th F. A.	19 enlisted men.
	Oct. 8, 1917	Supply Co., 111th F. A.	1 enlisted man.
	Oct. 8, 1917	Battery D, 111th F. A.	1 enlisted man.
	Oct. 8, 1917	Battery D, 112th F. A.	1 enlisted man.
	Oct. 8, 1917	104th Mob. Ord. Rep. Shop	1 enlisted man.
	Oct. 8, 1917	Co. C, 104th Field Sig. Battalion	1 enlisted man.

STATE DESIGNATION	DATE OF CHANGE	FEDERAL DESIGNATION	REMARKS
<i>4th Infantry—(Cont.)</i>			
Co. I (Cont.)	Oct. 8, 1917	Co. A, 104th Amm. Train	1 enlisted man.
	Oct. 8, 1917	Co. D, 104th Amm. Train	2 enlisted men.
	Oct. 8, 1917	Co. A, 104th Supply Train	1 enlisted man.
	Oct. 8, 1917	Co. B, 110th M. G. Battalion	1 enlisted man.
			112th M. G. Battalion.)
	Oct. 8, 1917	Co. B, 110th M. G. Battalion	1 enlisted man.
	Oct. 8, 1917	Co. C, 111th M. G. Battalion	1 enlisted man.
	Oct. 8, 1917	Co. B, 112th M. G. Battalion	1 enlisted man.
			Transfers shown above dispose of Co. I.
			(See note.)
Co. K	Oct. 4, 1917	M. G. Co., 116th Infantry	50 enlisted men.
	Oct. 4, 1917	Headquarters Co., 116th Infantry	1 enlisted man.
	Oct. 4, 1917	Supply Co., 116th Infantry	1 enlisted man.
	Oct. 4, 1917	Co. A, 116th Infantry	1 enlisted man.
	Oct. 4, 1917	Co. C, 116th Infantry	3 enlisted men.
	Oct. 8, 1917	Battery F, 111th F. A.	1 enlisted man.
	Oct. 8, 1917	Co. F, 115th Infantry	1 enlisted man.
	Oct. 8, 1917	Co. G, 115th Infantry	1 enlisted man.
	Oct. 8, 1917	Co. K, 115th Infantry	3 enlisted men.
	Oct. 8, 1917	Co. M, 115th Infantry	1 enlisted man.
	Oct. 8, 1917	Co. B, 104th Supply Train	7 enlisted men.
			Transfers shown above dispose of Co. K.
			(See note.)
Co. L	Oct. 4, 1917	Headquarters Co., 116th Infantry	11 enlisted men.
	Oct. 4, 1917	Supply Co., 116th Infantry	14 enlisted men.
	Oct. 4, 1917	Co. A, 116th Infantry	1 enlisted man.
	Oct. 4, 1917	Co. B, 116th Infantry	1 enlisted man.
	Oct. 4, 1917	Co. C, 116th Infantry	2 enlisted men.
	Oct. 4, 1917	Co. E, 116th Infantry	1 enlisted man.
	Oct. 4, 1917	Co. F, 116th Infantry	1 enlisted man.
	Oct. 4, 1917	Co. G, 116th Infantry	1 enlisted man.
	Oct. 4, 1917	Co. H, 116th Infantry	1 enlisted man.
	Oct. 4, 1917	Co. K, 116th Infantry	4 enlisted men.

STATE DESIGNATION	DATE OF CHANGE	FEDERAL DESIGNATION	REMARKS
4th Infantry—(Cont.)			
Co. L—(Cont.)	Oct. 4, 1917	Co. L, 116th Infantry	2 enlisted men.
	Oct. 4, 1917	Co. M, 116th Infantry	4 enlisted men.
	Oct. 8, 1917	Battery C, 111th F. A.	1 enlisted man.
	Oct. 8, 1917	Ambulance Co., No. 116	1 enlisted man.
	Oct. 8, 1917	Co. B, 104th Amm. Train	1 enlisted man.
	Oct. 8, 1917	Co. D, 104th Supply Train	1 enlisted man.
		Transfers shown above dispose of Co. L (See note.)	
Co. M	Oct. 4, 1917	Supply Co., 111th F. A.	Entire strength (94 enlisted men.)
	Oct. 22, 1917	Battery F, 111th F. A.	30 enlisted men.
Medical Det.	Oct. 4, 1917	Field Hospital Co. No. 116	18 enlisted men.
	Oct. 4, 1917	Medical Det., 112th M. G. Battalion	10 enlisted men.
		Transfers shown above dispose of Med. Det.	
NOTE:—About October 5/17, the remain- ing members of the various companies of the 4th Virginia Infantry were transferred to the Virginia Detachment, 54th Depot Brigade, and about October 8/17, these men were transferred to the various units as shown above and on previous sheets.			
1st F. A.			
Headquarters Co.	Sept. 15, 1917	Headquarters Co., 111th F. A.	Entire strength (65 enlisted men.)
Supply Co.	Sept. 15, 1917	Supply Co., 111th F. A.	Entire strength (35 enlisted men.)
Battery A	Sept. 15, 1917	Battery A, 111th F. A.	Entire strength (189 enlisted men.)
Battery B	Sept. 15, 1917	Battery B, 111th F. A.	Entire strength (183 enlisted men.)
Battery C	Sept. 15, 1917	Battery C, 111th F. A.	Entire strength (116 enlisted men.)
Battery D	Sept. 15, 1917	Battery D, 111th F. A.	Entire strength (188 enlisted men.)
Battery E	Sept. 15, 1917	Battery E, 111th F. A.	Entire strength (189 enlisted men.)
Battery F	Sept. 15, 1917	Battery F, 111th F. A.	Entire strength (139 enlisted men.)
Medical Det.	Sept. 15, 1917	Medical Det., 111th F. A.	Entire strength (8 enlisted men.)
1st Sqdn. Cavalry			
Headquarters Troop	Dec. 4, 1917	Hq. Det., Horsed Battalion, 104th Amm. Train	Entire strength (7 enlisted men.)

NOTE:—About October 5/17, the remaining members of the various companies of the 4th Virginia Infantry were transferred to the Virginia Detachment, 54th Depot Brigade, and about October 8/17, these men were transferred to the various units as shown above and on previous sheets.



STATE DESIGNATION	DATE OF CHANGE	FEDERAL DESIGNATION	REMARKS
1st <i>Sqdn. Cavalry</i> — (Cont.)			
Supply Troop	Dec. 4, 1917	Co. E, 104th Amm. Train.	Entire strength (13 enlisted men.)
	Dec. 8, 1917	Hq. Det., Horsed Bn., 104th Amm. Train	6 enlisted men.
Troop A	Dec. 4, 1917	Co. E, 104th Amm. Train	Entire strength (95 enlisted men.)
Troop B	Dec. 4, 1917	Co. F, 104th Amm. Train	Entire stream (88 enlisted men.)
Troop C	Dec. 4, 1917	Co. G, 104th Amm. Train	Entire strength (92 enlisted men.)
Troop D	Dec. 4, 1917	Hq. Det., Horsed Bn., 104th Amm. Train	1 enlisted man.
	Dec. 4, 1917	Co. E, 104th Amm. Train	2 enlisted men.
	Dec. 4, 1917	Co. F, 104th Amm. Train	44 enlisted men.
	Dec. 4, 1917	Co. G, 104th Amm. Train	33 enlisted men.
		Transfers shown above dispose of Troop D.	
Med. Det.	Dec. 4, 1917	Med. Det., 104th Amm. Train	Entire strength (8 enlisted men.)
Co. A, Sig. Corps	Oct. 7, 1917	Hq. Det., 54th F. A. Brigade	49 enlisted men.
	Oct. 7, 1917	Hq. Co., 110th F. A.	9 enlisted men. (See note.)
	Oct. 7, 1917	Hq. Co., 111th F. A.	10 enlisted men. (See note.)
	Oct. 7, 1917	Hq. Co., 112th F. A.	6 enlisted men. (See note.)
		NOTE:—The 112th F. A. was redesignated the 110th F. A., and the 110th F. A. was redesignated the 112th F. A., on Nov. 27/17.	
F. H. Co., No. 1	Sept. 15, 1917	Field Hospital No. 115	Entire strength 79 enlisted men.)
	Oct. 6, 1917	Field Hospital No. 116	10 enlisted men.
	Oct. 6, 1917	Hq. Det., Field Hospital Section, 104th Sanitary Train	2 enlisted men.
Amb. Co., No. 1	Sept. 15, 1917	Ambulance Co. No. 116	Entire strength (156 enlisted men.)
	Oct. 6, 1917	Ambulance Co. No. 114	15 enlisted men.
Coast Artillery			
1st Co.	Aug. 18, 1917	Hq. Co., 117th Trn. Hq. & M. P.	5 enlisted men.
	Aug. 18, 1917	Co. A, 117th Trn. Hq. & M. P.	84 enlisted men.
		(This unit was redesignated Co. B, 1st Army Military Police Battalion, Oct. 29/18, and given its final designation as the 280th Military Police Co., about Feb. 8/19.	

STATE DESIGNATION	DATE OF CHANGE	FEDERAL DESIGNATION	REMARKS
<i>Coast Artillery</i> — (Cont.)			
2nd Co.	Aug. 18, 1917 Aug. 18, 1917	Hq. Co., 117th Trn. Hq. & M. P. Co. B, 117th Trn. Hq. & M. P.	3 enlisted men. 100 enlisted men. (This unit was given its final designation as the 42nd Military Police Co., on Oct. 29/18.)
3rd Co.	Aug. 18, 1917 Aug. 18, 1917 Feb. 1, 1918 Feb. 4, 1918 March 4, 1918 June 22, 1918	Co. A, 117th Trn. Hq. & M. P. Co. B, 117th Trn. Hq. & M. P. 10th Co., Chesapeake Bay Battery A, 2nd Trench Mortar Bn. Battery F, 60th Artillery, C. A. C. Battery F, 74th Artillery, C. A. C.	8 enlisted men. (For final designation of this unit see note on 1st Co.) 7 enlisted men. (For final designation of this unit, see 2nd Co.) Entire strength (91 enlisted men.) 29 enlisted men. 2 enlisted men. 9 enlisted men. 3rd Co. was given its final designation Feb. 1/18, other changes shown are transfers only.)
4th Co.	Aug. 18, 1917 Feb. 1, 1918 May 17, 1918 June 22, 1918 June 22, 1918	Co. B, 117th Trn. Hq. & M. P. 8th Co., Chesapeake Bay 14th Co., Chesapeake Bay Hq. Co., 74th Artillery, C. A. C. Battery F, 74th Artillery, C. A. C.	5 enlisted men. (For final designation of this unit, see 2nd Co.) Entire strength (80 enlisted men.) 22 enlisted men. 2 enlisted men. 10 enlisted men. 4th Co. was given its final designation Feb. 1/18, other changes shown are transfers only.
5th Co.	Aug. 18, 1917 Aug. 18, 1917 Aug. 18, 1917 Dec. 23, 1917	Hq. Co., 117th Hq. Trn. & M. P. Co. A, 117th Hq. Trn. & M. P. Co. B, 117th Hq. Trn. & M. P. Battery B, 60th Artillery, C. A. C.	3 enlisted men. 10 enlisted men. (For final designation of this unit, see 1st Co.) 7 enlisted men. (For final designation of this unit, see 2nd Co.) Entire strength (109 enlisted men.) 5th Co. was given its final designation Dec. 23, 1917, other changes shown are transfers only.

STATE DESIGNATION	DATE OF CHANGE	FEDERAL DESIGNATION	REMARKS
<i>Coast Artillery—</i>			
(Cont.)			
6th Co.	Aug. 18, 1917	Co. A, 117th Trn. Hq. & M. P.	11 enlisted men. (See 1st Co.)
	Aug. 18, 1917	Co. B, 117th Trn. Hq. & M. P.	10 enlisted men. (See 2nd Co.)
	Jan. 5, 1918	Battery B, 60th Artillery, C. A. C.	71 enlisted men.
	Feb. 1, 1918	6th Co., Chesapeake Bay	Entire strength (31 enlisted men.)
			6th Co. was given its final designation Feb. 1, 1918, other changes shown are transfers only.
7th Co.	Aug. 18, 1917	Co. A, 117th Trn. Hq. & M. P.	11 enlisted men. (See 1st Co.)
	Aug. 18, 1917	Co. B, 117th Trn. Hq. & M. P.	9 enlisted men. (See 2nd Co.)
	Feb. 1, 1918	11th Co., Chesapeake Bay	Entire strength (86 enlisted men.)
	Feb. 4, 1918	Battery A, 2nd Trench Mortar Bn.	29 enlisted men.
	June 22, 1918	Battery F, 74th Artillery, C. A. C.	3 enlisted men.
			7th Co. was given its final designation Feb. 1/18, other changes shown are transfers only.
8th Co.	Aug. 18, 1917	Co. A, 117th Trn. Hq. & M. P.	7 enlisted men. (See 1st Co.)
	Aug. 18, 1917	Co. B, 117th Trn. Hq. & M. P.	6 enlisted men. (See 2nd Co.)
	Jan. 8, 1918	Battery B, 60th Artillery, C. A. C.	5 enlisted men.
	Jan. 8, 1918	Battery F, 60th Artillery, C. A. C.	3 enlisted men.
	Feb. 1, 1918	12th Co., Chesapeake Bay	Entire strength (89 enlisted men.)
	Feb. 4, 1918	Battery A, 2nd Trench Mortar Bn.	19 enlisted men.
	Feb. 20, 1918	Battery E, 60th Artillery, C. A. C.	2 enlisted men.
	June 22, 1918	Battery F, 74th Artillery, C. A. C.	6 enlisted men.
			8th Co. was given its final designation February 1, 1918, other changes shown are transfers only.
9th Co.	Aug. 18, 1917	Co. A, 117th Hq. Trn. & M. P.	11 enlisted men. (See 1st Co.)
	Aug. 18, 1917	Co. B, 117th Hq. Trn. & M. P.	7 enlisted men. (See 2nd Co.)
	Dec. 23, 1917	Battery F, 60th Artillery, C. A. C.	Entire strength (110 enlisted men.)
	Feb. 11, 1918	6th Co., Chesapeake Bay	6 enlisted men.
			9th Co. was given its final designation December 23, 1917, other changes shown are transfers only.
10th Co.	Nov. 1, 1918	Battery E, 35th Artillery, C. A. C.	Entire strength.



STATE DESIGNATION	DATE OF CHANGE	FEDERAL DESIGNATION	REMARKS
<i>Coast Artillery</i> —			
(Cont.)			
11th Co.	Nov. 1, 1918	Battery A, 35th Artillery, C. A. C.	Entire strength.
12th Co.	Nov. 1, 1918	Battery B, 35th Artillery, C. A. C.	Entire strength.
13th Co.	Nov. 1, 1918	Battery C, 35th Artillery, C. A. C.	Entire strength.
14th Co.	Nov. 1, 1918	Battery D, 35th Artillery, C. A. C.	Entire strength.



# APPENDIX

---

Virginians  
of  
Distinguished Service

---

Supplement  
to  
Volume I



## Explanatory Note

This supplement to Volume I completes the record of all military and semi-military honors conferred upon Virginians in the World War that the War History Commission has up to this time been able to verify. The three hundred honors recorded in the following pages have been secured or certified since Source Volume I, "Virginians of Distinguished Service in the World War," was published in 1923. The editor stated in his foreword to that volume that the roster was not complete, and as soon as the volume was placed on sale additional citations began to come in. This was one of the chief reasons for publishing Volume I. Repeated efforts of the Commission to secure copies of citations had failed, and the publication of those records which had been secured was the means of getting many additional citations.

The Commission continued to solicit records from the local branches, and the files of the Adjutant-General of Virginia and those of the War Department in Washington were again carefully checked, with the result that 157 Virginians whose names did not appear in the first volume and 300 additional honors were secured and certified. Some of these honors belong to Virginians who were already recorded for other brave deeds in Volume I, as will be seen by reference to the following certified list.

This supplement, addeed to Volume I, records 1,428 honors awarded to 920 Virginians by fifteen nations. Of these honors 944 are American and 484 foreign. A summary of the honors recorded in both volumes is prefixed to the Certified List, and three summaries follow it. The first classifies the additional honors, the second segregates them and the names of the men to whom they were awarded into cities and counties, and the third shows the total number of honor men and the total number of awards by cities and counties as given in both volumes.

The Adjutant-General of Virginia is still receiving records of Virginians who enlisted from other States, and corrections and revisions are being made by the War Department. Therefore, it is not possible for the War History Commission to submit a complete and perfect report on this topic. No pains have been spared, however, to make the record of distinguished service in Virginia as complete and as correct as possible under the circumstances. It will be noted in a very few cases that the home addresses of soldiers named in both Volume I and the Supplement differ. Where this occurs without correction, the Commission has not been able to learn which address is the correct one. The War Department archives are not always consistent as regards the personal details of these records, and it is hoped that in these and other instances proper and authentic information may be furnished in order that the permanent archives of the Commission may be revised.

In addition to the certified honors there are twenty-eight honors recorded in the non-certified list given here with references. It will found that reference is made in some cases to the Navy League. We cannot, however, accept this reference as evidenc of official authority, since L. S. M. Robinson, Secretary of Department 6, Navy League of the United States, has written the Commission that citations sent in by his department have not been officially verified. A careful search of the War Department files failed to disclose any information corroborating these non-certified honors. However, it is believed that such verification will ultimately be found.

## Corrections and Additions to Volume I

Almond, Edward Mallory, page 4.

In third line, substitute for "Watt" "Walter Coles and Grace Popham."

Braxton, Elliott Musue, Jr., page 16.

In second line, substitute "First Lieutenant" for "Private" and "80th" for "18th."

Campbell, Arthur G., page 23.

In first line, insert "Lexington" before "Virginia," and in second line substitute "Lieutenant Colonel" for "Major."

Chrisley, William H., page 29.

In eighth line, substitute "June 3" for "June 1."

Coffman, De Witt, page 32.

In third line, substitute "Medal" for "Cross."

Cromwell, Joseph Purnell, page 36.

In eighth line, substitute "Captain" for "Lieutenant."

Daniels, Charles Ellis, page 39.

In first line, omit the "S" from "Daniels."

Davis, Thomas H., page 40.

In first line, insert "Colored" after "Thomas H."

Drake, James Hodges, Jr., page 47.

In eighth line, substitute "sector" for "section."

Ellingsworth, Walton Marshall, page 49.

In first line, substitute "Norfolk" for "Blacksburg."

Flannagan, Coke, page 54.

In third line, substitute "Dallos" for "Dallis."

Forward, Alexander, page 55.

In fourth line, substitute "Officer of the Order of the Crown of Roumania, with swords" for "Order of the Star of Roumania (officer)."

Gerow, Leonard Townsend, page 57.

In second line, substitute "Lieutenant Colonel" for "Colonel."

Hagan, Joseph Addison, page 66.

In first line, insert "Richmond" before "Virginia," and in second line substitute "Captain" for "First Lieutenant."

Handy, Thomas Troy, page 68.

In second line, substitute "Major" for "Captain."

Hazelgrove, William Perkins, page 72.

Name should be spelled "Hazlegrove," and not "Hazelgrove."

Hurdle, William Glenn (colored), page 80.

In first line, substitute "Nansemond County" for "Portsmouth."

Irby, Spirley E., page 81.

In first line, insert "Colored" after the name, and substitute "Lunenburg" for "Blackstone, Nottoway."

Johnson, Chauncey, page 84.

In first line, insert "Colored" after "Chauncey."

Joynes, James C., page 87.

In first line, insert "Colored" after "James C."

Kelley, Arthur Harold, page 88.

Spell name "Kelly" rather than "Kelley."

Kern, James William, page 89.

In first line, substitute "Jr." for "deceased."

Kern, James William, page 90.

In fifth line, substitute "Guillaume Nivait" for "Signature illegible."

Kimberly, Allen, page 91.

In first line, substitute "Elizabeth City County" for "Norfolk," and in second line substitute "Lieutenant Colonel" for "Colonel."

Lindsay, Clarke, page 98.

In first line, insert "deceased" after name.

McGuire, John, page 103.

In first line, substitute "Cedar Bluff," Tazewell County," for "Richmond."

Mackall, William W., Jr., page 104.

In first line, substitute "Nokesville" for "Haymarket," and in second line substitute "First" for "Second."

Maddux, Henry Cabell, page 104.

In second line, substitute "Lieutenant Colonel" for "Colonel."

Martin, Clarence Ames, page 106.

In second line, substitute "56th" for "55th," and in last line "27" for "21."

Mason, Horatio P., page 107.

In first line, substitute "Hampton" for "Newport News."

McGenny, Wilber Eugene, page 109.

The name should be written "Megenny," rather than "McGenny."

Ozlin, Robert Lucas, page 125.

In second line, insert "Battalion" after "16th."

Parks, Victor, page 126.

In second line, substitute "Captain" for "Major."

Perkinson, Allen Carlye, page 129.

In second line, substitute "Captain" for "Second Lieutenant."

Phelps, Wilbur M., page 131.

In third line, insert "with Palm" after "Croix de Guerre," and in fourth line omit "(then 1st Lieut.)."

Reed, Washington, page 135.

In second line, substitute "First" for "Second."



Reedy, George Coleman, page 135.

In first line, substitute "Madison County" for "Liberty Mills, Orange County."

Richards, Walter A., page 137.

In first line, omit "deceased."

Robertson, Archibald Gerald, page 139.

In first line, substitute "Gerard" for "Gerald."

Shackelford, Robert Baylor, page 146.

In first line, substitute "Taylor" for "Baylor."

Smith, Martin Xavifr, page 152.

In first line, change "Xavifr" to "Xavier."

Wood, Charles Perkinson, page 174.

In first line, substitute "Parkinson" for "Perkinson."

Wysor, Robert E., page 178.

In second line, substitute "Captain" for "First Lieutenant."

## Summary of Certified Honors

Total American Honors, Vol. I, 698; Vol. V, 246. Grand total.....	944
Total Foreign Honors, Vol. I, 429; Vol. V, 55. Grand total.....	484
<b>Total Honors, Vol. I, 1,127; Vol. V, 301. Grand total.....</b>	<b>1428</b>
Total Number of Virginians Honored, Vol. I, 763; Vol. V, 157. Total.....	920

### AMERICAN

#### Decorations

Congressional Medal of Honor, Vol. I.....	1
Oak Leaf Cluster, Vol. I.....	1
Distinguished Service Medal (Army), Vol. I, 46; Vol. V, 10. Total.....	56
Distinguished Service Medal (Navy), Vol. I.....	10
Distinguished Service Cross, Vol. I, 156; Vol. V, 7. Total.....	163
Navy Cross, Vol. I, 44; Vol. V, 10. Total.....	54
<b>Total, Vol. I, 258; Vol. V, 27. Grand total.....</b>	<b>285</b>

#### Citations

Cited by Commander-in-Chief, Vol. I, 47; Vol. V, 5. Total.....	52
Cited by Division Commander, Vol. I, 142; Vol. V, 109. Total.....	251
Cited by Brigade Commander, Vol. I, 51; Vol. V, 10. Total.....	61
Cited by Regiment Commander, Vol. I, 6; Vol. V, 1. Total.....	7
Silver Star Citations, Vol. I, 70; Vol. V, 23. Total.....	93
American E. F. Citations, Vol. V.....	5
Meritorious Services Citations Certificates, Vol. V.....	6
Second Division Citations, Vol. V.....	33
Miscellaneous Citations, Vol. I, 16; Vol. V, 6. Total.....	22
<b>Total, Vol. I, 332; Vol. V, 198. Grand total.....</b>	<b>530</b>

#### Commendations

Commended by Secretary of Navy, Vol. I, 54; Vol. V, 2. Total.....	56
Miscellaneous Commendations, Vol. I, 34; Vol. V, 5. Total.....	39
<b>Total, Vol. I, 88; Vol. V, 7. Grand total.....</b>	<b>95</b>

#### Recommendations

Rec. for Distinguished Service Medal, Vol. I, 8; Vol. V, 5. Total.....	13
Rec. for Distinguished Service Cross, Vol. I, 12; Vol. V, 9. Total.....	21
<b>Total, Vol. I, 20; Vol. V, 14. Grand total.....</b>	<b>34</b>
<b>Total American Honors, Vol. I, 698; Vol. V, 246. Grand total.....</b>	<b>944</b>

## FOREIGN

## British

British Military Cross, Vol. I.....	8
British Military Medal, Vol. I, 6; Vol. V, 1. Total.....	7
British 1914-1915 Star, Vol. I.....	2
Order of St. Michael and St. George, Vol. I.....	6
Order of the Bath, Vol. I, 2; Vol. V, 1. Total.....	3
Royal Red Cross, Vol. I.....	2
Commendation by C. O., 24th London Regiment, Vol. I.....	1
Total, Vol. I, 27; Vol. V, 2. Grand total.....	29

## French

Croix de Guerre, Vol. I, 217; Vol. V, 18. Total.....	235
Legion of Honor, Vol. I, 51; Vol. V, 5. Total.....	56
Medal of Honor, Epidemics, Vol. I, 21; Vol. V, 3. Total.....	24
Order of the Black Star, Vol. I.....	8
Military Medal, Vol. I.....	3
Order of the University Palms, Vol. I.....	13
Order of Agricultural Merit, Vol. I, 4; Vol. V, 1. Total.....	5
Commemorative Medal for the Great War, Vol. V.....	2
Cited by Petain, Vol. I.....	5
Miscellaneous Honors, Vol. I, 2; Vol. V, 1. Total.....	3
Total, Vol. I, 324; Vol. V, 30. Grand total.....	354

## Belgian

Order of Leopold, Vol. I.....	9
Order of the Crown, Vol. I.....	10
Croix de Guerre, Vol. I, 3; Vol. V, 1. Total.....	4
Loving Cup, Vol. I.....	1
Total, Vol. I, 23; Vol. V, 1. Grand total.....	24

## Italian

Order of St. Maurice and St. Lazarus, Vol. I, 2; Vol. V, 1. Total.....	3
Order of the Crown, Vol. I, 3; Vol. V, 1. Total.....	4
War Service Ribbon, Vol. I.....	3
War Cross, Vol. I, 11; Vol. V, 1. Total.....	12
Fatigue de Guerre, Vol. V.....	1
Commemorative Medal, Vol. V.....	1
Military Medal, Vol. I.....	1
Total, Vol. I, 20; Vol. V, 5. Grand total.....	25

## Other Foreign Countries

Czecho-Slovakia, Vol. I, 2; Vol. V, 1. Total.....	3
Finland, Vol. I.....	1
Greece, Vol. I, 2; Vol. V, 1. Total.....	3
Japan, Vol. I.....	1
Montenegro, Vol. I, 13; Vol. V, 1. Total.....	14
Panama, Vol. I.....	3
Poland, Vol. I, 6; Vol. V, 2. Total.....	8
Portugal, Vol. I, 1; Vol. V, 3. Total.....	4
Roumania, Vol. I, 4; Vol. V, 3. Total.....	7
Russia, Vol. I, 2; Vol. V, 3. Total.....	5
Serbia, Vol. V.....	3
Total, Vol. I, 35; Vol. V, 17. Grand total.....	52
Total Foreign Honors, Vol. I, 429; Vol. V, 55. Grand total.....	484



## Distinguished Service List—Certified

**ADDISON, TAYLOR G.**, of Vandyke, Buckingham County, Virginia.

Private, Company A, 16th Infantry, 1st Division.

**Cited by Division Commander.**

Citation: "For gallantry in action and especially meritorious services."

**References:** G. O. No. 1, 1st Div., 1-20-18; A. G. O. Records, W. D.; A. G. O. R.; W. H.

o o o o

**AMONETTE, HENRY L.**, of Madison Heights and Lynchburg, Virginia.

Private, 1st Cl., Section 649, S. S. U., 1st Division.

Son of W. F. Amonette.

**Cited by Division Commander.**

Citation: "For gallantry in action and especially meritorious services."

**References:** G. O. No. 1, 1st Div., 1-20-18; A. G. O. Records, W. D.; A. G. O. R.; W. H.

Note: This citation is in addition to that noted in Source Volume I, p. 4.

o o o o

**ANDERSON, HENRY W.**, of Richmond, Virginia.

Colonel, Chief of the American Sanitary Mission.

**Grand Officer of the Star of Roumania**, 12 June, 1920.

**Knight of the First Class of the Order of Regina Maria (Roumania)**, 21 August, 1919.

Citation: "Desiring to recognize the merit of Lieutenant-Colonel Henry W. Anderson, Chief of the American Sanitary Mission, for work full of affection for the needy and of great value to the Sanitary Service during the whole time of the War."

**Knight of the Second Class of the Order of Regina Maria (Roumania)** April 9, 1918.

Citation: "... for generous work and exceptional devotion, especially in regard to the feeding of the poor and orphans and to various hospitals in 1917-1918."

**Commander of the Order of the Crown of Roumania (with swords)**, August 29, 1919.

**Knight, Grand Cross of the Order of Saint Sava (Serbia)**, 27 October, 1920.

**Grand Officer of the Royal Order of Saint Sava (Serbia)**, 15 December, 1921.

**The Royal Serbian Red Cross**, August 22, 1919.

Citation: "In consideration of services rendered to our Society and to our wounded."

**The Order of Sainte Anne, Second Class (with swords)**, 12 February, 1918.

**Commander of the Order of the Saviour (Greece)**, 16 October, 1919.

**Commander of the Order of Danilo, Third Class (Montenegro)**, January 19, 1920.

Citation: "For special services which you have rendered to the Montenegrin people and to Us, it has pleased Us to confer upon you the third class (III) (Commander) of Prince Danilo I Institute, to commemorate the independence of Montenegro."

**The War Cross of the Czecho-Slovak Republic**, November 8, 1918; November 10, 1919.

The Cross was awarded to Col. Anderson as "an expression of the gratitude of a people who will never forget the sacrifices made for its liberties."

**The National Commemorative Medal for the War of 1915-1918 (Italy)**, February 14, 1919.

**The French Commemorative Medal for the Great War**, December 6, 1922.

**References:** Photostats in W. H. Files; Richmond Records, W. H.; Clip. Vol. 4, pp. 123, 151; Clip. Vol. 25, pp. 17 (cut), 39, 40 (cut); Clip. Vol. 26, p. 4; Clip. Vol. 32, p. 87; Clip. Vol. 24, pp. 109, 110, 116, 117; Clip. Vol. 39, p. 109; Clip. Vol. 40, p. 10.

° ° ° °

**ANDERSON, KARL BROOKE**, of Richmond, Virginia.

Private, S. S. U. 608, Ambulance Service with French Army.

Son of James Albert and Rebecca Binford Knibb Anderson.

**Recommended for Distinguished Service Cross.**

Recommendation: "Word had been received that a Lieutenant, with several others, was severely wounded and in need of help at a very advanced portion of the trenches. The enemy were laying down a heavy barrage, through which Private Anderson volunteered to pass to summon an ambulance. The regular runners were seeking shelter in dugouts. The area covered by the barrage was about one hundred yards in depth, shells falling about ten yards apart. Through this he made his way and summoned the ambulance."

Recommended by Percy L. Jones,

Colonel, Medical Corps.

**References:** Certified copies of original recommendation, W. H. Files.

Note: This honor is in addition to that noted in Source Vol. 1, p. 5.

° ° ° °

**BAILEY, JOHN E.**, of Keokee, Lee County, Virginia.

Private, Co. I, 1<sup>st</sup> Inf., 1st Division.

Son of Samuel Bailey.

**Cited by Division Commande.**

Citation: "For gallantry in action and especially meritorious services."

**References:** G. O. No. 1, 1st Div., 1-20-18; A. G. O. Records, W. D.; A. G.

O. R.; W. H.

° ° ° °

**BAKER, FRANK AUSTIN** (deceased), of Richmond, Virginia.

Private, Battery C, 6th F. A., 1st Division.

Son of John Eston and Bessie Francis Brandsford Baker.

**Cited by Division Commander.**

Citation: "For gallantry in action and especially meritorious services."

**References:** G. O. No. 1, 1st Div., 1-20-18; A. G. O. Records, W. D.; A. G.

O. R.; W. H.

Note: The above citation is in addition to that noted in Source Volume I, p. 7.

° ° ° °

**BAKER, HENRY SOUTHWORTH, JR.**, of Lexington, Virginia.

Private, Section No. 534, Ambulance Service.

**Croix de Guerre With Silver Star.**

Citation: "A very brave driver. On March 31 he displayed the greatest coolness in going in broad daylight into the front lines to remove the wounded in spite of the violent artillery and infantry fire."

**References:** W. D. letter, August 15, 1923; W. H.

Note: This honor is in addition to citation in Source Volume 1, p. 7.

° ° ° °

**BAKER, THOMAS**, of Virginia.

Private, Company M, 18th Infantry, 1st Division.

**Silver Star Citation.**

Citation: "For gallant conduct and self-sacrificing spirit displayed during the battles of Montdidier-Noyan defensive, Aisne-Marne offensive, St. Mihiel offensive, Meuse-Argonne offensive."

**References:** Sec. 3, Par. 9 of G. O. 5, 1st Inf. Brig. 6-1-19; W. H.

° ° ° °

**BARNETT, GEORGE**, of Huntly, Rappahannock County, Virginia.

Major-General, U. S. Marine Corps.

**Distinguished Service Medal (Navy).**

Citation: "For exceptionally meritorious service in a duty of great responsibility as Commandant of the Marine Corps in the administration of his high office and the organization and direction of the manifold and distinguished service of the Marine Corps at home and abroad."

**Legion d' Honneur (French) Commander**, Decree of March 29, 1919.

**Reference:** U. S. M. C. Records furnished by Major-General John A.

Lejeune; W. H.

**BAUGHER, CLARENCE A.**, of Elkton, Rockingham County, Virginia.

Sergeant, Company A, 1st Engineers, 1st Division.

Son of Mrs. Amanda C. Baugher.

**Cited by Division Commander.**

Citation: "For gallantry in action and especially meritorious services."

**References:** G. O. No. 1, 1st Div., 1-20-18; A. G. O. Records W. D.; A. G. O. R.; W. H.

o o o o

**BAXTER, HERBERT A.**, of Petersburg, Virginia.

Private, Company L, 28th Infantry, 1st Division.

Son of Mrs. Minnie D. Baxter.

**Cited by Division Commander.**

Citation: "For gallantry in action and especially meritorious services."

**References:** G. O. No. 1, 1st Div., 1-20-18; A. G. O. Records; W. D.; A. G. O. R.; W. H.

o o o o

**BEAMAN, JOSEPH HUNTER**, of Franklin, Southampton County, Virginia.

Sergeant-Major, 363rd Infantry, 91st Division.

Son of Mrs. Ellen B. Beaman.

**Recommended for Distinguished Service Medal.**

Recommendation: "During the Meuse-Argonne advance, when most of the officers of my staff had become casualties and were evacuated to the rear, Sergeant-Major Beaman proved himself invaluable, being untiring in his devotion to duty and fearless to the highest degree. Although suffering from a severe attack of dysentery, and being advised to go to the rear, he insisted on remaining with the Regiment during the entire time from September 16th to October 5th, 1918. He was uncomplaining and worked at all hours of the day and night under most adverse conditions and in many instances under heavy fire.

"During the Lys-Schelut advance he again proved his worth, being accorded the highest words of praise by officers and men alike, and I have no hesitancy in recommending him for this honor for his meritorious services.

This recommendation is made for his general gallant conduct under fire and the conscientious manner in which he performed his duty during the Meuse-Argonne and Lys-Schelut offensives."

(Signed) H. La T. Cavanaugh, Colonel 363rd Inf.

**Meritorious Service Citation Certificate.**

Citation: "For services in the Meuse-Argonne advance."

**References:** Clipping Volume 32, p. 49; A. G. O. Files, W. D.; A. G. 201; W. H.

Note: These honors are in addition to citation noted in Source Volume I, p. 9.

o o o o

**BEAR, JAMES MARTIN**, of Churchville, Augusta County, Virginia.

Corporal, 305th Trench Motor Battery, 80th Division.

**Silver Star Citation.**

Citation: "For gallantry in action near Nantillois, France, 9-12 October, 1918, in repairing telephone lines under terrific artillery fire."

**References:** Citation Orders No. 1, G. H. Q., 80th Div., France, 6-3-19; W. H.

Note: This citation is in addition to that noted in Source Volume 1, p. 10.

o o o o

**BELL, WILLIAM B.**, of Gordonsville, Orange County, Virginia.

Corporal, Company I, 125th Infantry, 32nd Division.

Son of Thomas A. Bell.

**Belgian Croix de Guerre.**

Citation: "For extraordinary heroism in action near Cierges, northeast of Chateau Thierry, France, July 31, 1918. When his company was forced to halt because of the machine-gun fire from the front and right flank, Corporal Bell went out in front of the line and carried a wounded man to a place of safety."



**References:** Clipping Volume 34, p. 54, A. G. O. Files, W. D.; A. G. 201; W. H.

**Note:** This citation is in addition to that in Volume 1, p. 11.

**BLOOM, LYNN ALLEN**, of Norfolk, Virginia.

Private, 75th Co., 6th Regt., U. S. Marines.

**French Croix de Guerre With Silver Star.**

**Citation:** "On October 9, 1918, near St. Etienne-a-Arnes, under a violent fire of artillery and machine gun, he went out of his dugout to the assistance of his platoon commander, who was severely wounded, and succeeded in bringing him to the rear for first aid. He then returned to the lines to bandage many of the wounded. Thanks to his courage and his contempt for danger under violent fire, the lives of several severely wounded men were saved."

**Silver Star Citation.**

**Citation:** "For gallantry in action near St. Etienne, France, October 9, 1918, in voluntarily leaving a place of comparative safety to give first aid to wounded under heavy enemy fire."

**Second Division Citation.**

**Citation:** (Similar to those above.)

**References:** Order No. 13, 504-D. G. H. Q. French Armies of the East, Feb. 14, 1919; Citation Order No. 8, p. 17; G. O. No. 88, p. 133; U. S. Marine Corps Files, Navy Dept.; W. H.

**BOGLE, ANDREW M.**, of Ceres, Bland County, Virginia.

Private, Company H, 18th Infantry, 1st Division.

Son of Andrew Bogle.

**Cited by Division Commander.**

**Citation:** "For gallantry in action and especially meritorious services."

**References:** G. O. No. 1, 1st Div., 1-20-18; A. G. O. Records, W. D.; A. G. O. R.; W. H.

o o o o

**BONNIVILLE, DAVE E.**, of Perrin, Gloucester County, Virginia.

Private, Company M, 28th Infantry, 1st Division.

Son of Thomas J. Bonnaville.

**Cited by Division Commander.**

**Citation:** "For gallantry in action and especially meritorious services."

**References:** G. O. No. 1, 1st Div., 1-20-18; A. G. O. Records, W. D.; A. G. O. R.; W. H.

o o o o

**BOWLES, AUBREY L.**, of Louisa, Louisa County, Virginia.

Private, Company E, 1st Ammunition Train, 1st Division.

**Cited by Division Commander.**

**Citation:** "For gallantry in action and especially meritorious services."

**References:** G. O. No. 1, 1st Div., 1-20-18; A. G. O. Records, W. D.; A. G. O. R.; W. H.

o o o o

**BOYKIN, SAMUEL V.**, of Richmond, Virginia.

Sergeant, Company B, 105th Infantry.

Son of Mrs. S. V. Boykin.

**Distinguished Service Cross.**

**Citation:** "For extraordinary bravery in action east of Ronssoy, September 20th, 1918. During the operation against the Hindenburg line, Sergeant Boykin, with an officer and two other sergeants, occupied an outpost position in advance of the line, which was attacked by a superior force of the enemy. Sergeant Boykin assisted in repulsing the attack and in killing 10 Germans, capturing 5 and driving off the others. The bravery and determination displayed by this group was an inspiration to all who witnessed it."

**French Croix de Guerre with Gilt Star.**

**Citation:** "Occupying a small post with three other men, non-commissioned officers, he contributed to a large degree to the repulsing of an

enemy attack on their position, killing (himself) ten assistants and taking five prisoners."

British Military Medal.

Reference: Clipping Volume 32, p. 45; A. G. O. Files, W. D.; A. G. 201; W. H.

o o o o

**BRENT, IRL D'A.**, of Roanoke, Virginia.

Captain, 305th Engineers, 80th Division.

Silver Star Citation.

Citation: For gallantry in action at Buzancy, France, 3 November, 1918, in building a bridge under heavy enemy shell fire."

References: Citation Orders No. 1, G. H. Q., 80th Div., France, 6-3-19; W. H.

Note: This citation is in addition to that noted in Source Volume 1, p. 17.

o o o o

**BREWSTER, DAVID L. S.**, of Lincolnia, Loudoun County, Virginia.

Captain, U. S. Marine Corps.

Order de Avis (Portuguese), Order of February 24, 1919.

Reference: U. M. C. records furnished by Major-General John A. Lejeune; W. H.

o o o o

**BROOKS, CHESTER W.**, of Brokenburg, Spotsylvania County, Virginia.

Private, Company G, 16th Infantry, 1st Division.

Cited by Division Commander.

.....Citation: "For gallantry in action and especially meritorious services."

References: G. O. No. 1, 1st Div., 1-20-18; A. G. O. Records, W. D.; A. G. O. R.; W. H.

o o o o

**BROWNE, BEVERLY FIELDING**, of Accomac County, Virginia.

Lieutenant-Colonel (later Brigadier-General), 116th Field Artillery, 91st Division.

Distinguished Service Medal.

Citation: "For exceptionally meritorious and distinguished services. He organized and conducted schools for Artillery Information Service and the Counter Battery Service in France in October and November, 1917. He participated in preparation and execution of artillery plans of 1st Army for the St. Mihiel offensive in September, 1918, and commanded 166th F. A. Brigade in October, 1918, and the corps of artillery, 1st Army Corps, November 1 to 11, 1918, during the final assault of the first army. His high professional attainments, sound tactical judgment, and devotion to duty contributed materially to the successful operation of the American Expeditionary Forces."

References: A. G. O. R.; G. O. 9, 1923; W. H.

Note: This honor in addition to that listed in Source Vol. 1, p. 18.

o o o o

**BRUCE, HARRY G.**, of Elkton, Rockingham County, Virginia.

First Sergeant, Company E, 16th Infantry, 1st Division.

Son of Richard A. Bruce.

Cited by Division Commander.

Citation: "For gallantry in action and especially meritorious services."

References: G. O. No. 1, 1st Div., 1-20-18; A. G. O. Records, W. D.; A. G. O. R.; W. H.

o o o o

**BUCHANAN, FITZHUGH L.**, of East Stone Gap, Wise County, Virginia.

Captain, U. S. Marine Corps.

Second Division Citation.

Citation: "For gallantry in action against the enemy at Vierzy."

References: U. S. M. C. records furnished by Major-General John A. Lejeune; G. O. No. 64, p. 13; W. H.

o o o o

**BUMGARDNER, EUGENIA S.**, of Staunton, Virginia.

Daughter of Captain James Bumgardner, Jr.

**Silver Chest Medal on Ribbon of St. Stanislas' Order (Russia).**

"For Zeal" shown in volunteer service for Russian refugees, the order transmitting decoration being signed by General Wrangel, in charge of Russian elements evacuated from Crimea.

**Reference:** Certified copies of Order No. 4, Chief Commander of Russian Army, and letter of transmittal from the Russian diplomatic representatives at Constantinople; W. H.

**BURRESS, JAMES R., of Richmond, Virginia.**

Private, Company F, and M. G. Company, 164th Infantry; also 18th Infantry.

Son of Joseph A. Burress.

**Cited by Brigade Commander.**

**Citation:** "For gallant conduct and self-sacrificing spirit displayed during the battles of Eisne-Marne, St. Mihiel and Meuse-Argonne. The success of these engagements was due to the efforts and spirit of the officers and enlisted men engaged."

**References:** G. O. No. 5, Hqrs. 1st. Inf. Brig., 6-1-19; War Dept. letter 7-14-23; W. H.

**CABELL, JULIAN MAYO, of Richmond, Virginia.**

Lieutenant-Colonel, Base Hospital 41.

Son of Colonel Henry Coalter Cabell, U. S. A., and Jane Austin Cabell.

**Cited by Commander-in-Chief.**

**Citation:** "For exceptionally meritorious and conspicuous services at Base Hospital No. 41, District of Paris, France. In testimony thereof and as an expression of appreciation of these services, I award him this citation.

(Signed) John J. Pershing,

Commander-in-Chief. Awarded April 19, 1919.

**Recommended for Distinguished Service Medal.**

**Recommendation:** "Rendered distinguished service to the U. S. Army in the rapid organization and the administration of the above hospital at a period when accommodations for battle casualties were in a critical condition. This hospital efficiently handled the largest number of patients at any one period of any hospital in the Paris group.

(Signed) "Larry B. McAfee,

"Lieutenant-Colonel, Medical Corps, January 24, 1919."

**References:** Certified copies of official orders in W. H. files.

**Note:** These citations are in addition to those noted in Source Volume 1, p. 22, in which the citation by Commander-in-Chief is erroneously given under the Legion of Honor award.

**CAMMER, CLAUDE RICHARD, of Winchester, Virginia.**

First Lieutenant, Company D, 2nd M. G. Bn., 1st Division.

Son of Charles A. and Freddie M. Richard Cammer.

**Cited by Division Commander.**

**Citation:** "For gallantry in action and especially meritorious services."

**References:** G. O. No. 1, 1st Div., 1-20-18; A. G. O. Records, W. D.; A. G. O. R.; W. H.

**Note:** Above citation is in addition to those noted in Source Volume 1, p. 22.

**CAMPBELL, JOSHUA G. B., of Berryville, Clarke County, Virginia.**

First Lieutenant, Ambulance Service, Section 623.

Son of William W. and Christine Baker Campbell.

**French Croix de Guerre with Gilt and Silver Stars.**

**Gilt Star citation:** "By the example of his valor and his quiet courage, he obtained the maximum results from his unit. Since the offensive of May 27, 1918, every time there was an opportunity for a perilous mission he offered to accomplish it himself and succeeded amid violent bombardment and machine-gun fire in saving the lives of the wounded of the division."

**Silver Star citation:** "Under the energetic command of Lieutenant Campbell, Section No. 623, composed of American volunteers, participated



in all the actions of the division for one year and won the admiration of the whole division by the courage, the coolness and the entire disregard of danger displayed by its drivers, who evacuated the wounded from the front lines under the most difficult conditions. It particularly distinguished itself during the attack in Champagne (September-October, 1918) and during the evacuation of the civil hospital of Mezieres, which was bombarded and burned by the Germans November 10, 1918, when the drivers of the section rivaled each other in courage and devotion."

**References:** Order No. 11, 446 "D," dated Nov. 10, 1918, G. H. Q. French Armies of the North and Northeast; Order No. 12, 786 "D," dated January 9, 1919, G. H. Q., French Armies of the East; A. G. O. Files, W. D.; A. G. 201; Letter, Badge and Medal Section, W. D.; Report of Navy League, September, 1923; W. H.

**Note:** These citations are in addition to those noted in Source Vol. 1, p. 24.

o o o o

**CAPARELL, NICHOLAS A.**, of Fort Myer, Arlington County, Virginia.  
Corporal, Company A, 28th Infantry, 1st Division.

**Cited by Division Commander.**

**Citation:** "For gallantry in action and especially meritorious services."

**References:** G. O. No. 1, 1st Div., 1-20-18; A. G. O. Records, W. D.; A. G. O. R.; W. H.

o o o o

**CAPPS, JESSE A.**, of Ben Hur, Lee County, Virginia.  
Bugler, Company G, 26th Infantry, 1st Division.  
Son of Mrs. Josie Capps.

**Cited by Division Commander.**

**Citation:** "For gallantry in action and especially meritorious services."

**References:** G. O. No. 1, 1st Div., 1-20-18; A. G. O. Records, W. D.; A. G. O. R.; W. H.

o o o o

**CARR, ARMEY B.**, of Ritchpatch, Alleghany County, Virginia.  
Private, Company F, 16th Infantry, 1st Division.  
Son of Mrs. Hester Carr.

**Cited by Division Commander.**

**Citation:** "For gallantry in action and especially meritorious services."

**References:** G. O. No. 1, 1st Div., 1-20-18; A. G. O. Records, W. D.; A. G. O. R.; W. H.

o o o o

**CASELL, DORSE H.**, of Kimballton, Giles County, Virginia.  
Sergeant, M. D., 5th Field Artillery, 1st Division.

**Cited by Division Commander.**

**Citation:** "For gallantry in action and especially meritorious services."

**References:** G. O. No. 1, 1st Div., 1-20-18; A. G. O. Records, W. D.; A. G. O. R.; W. H.

o o o o

**CHISM, JAMES F.**, of Ballston, Arlington County, Virginia.  
Private, Co. F, 16th Inf., 1st Division.  
Son of Leonard A. Chism.

**Cited by Division Commander.**

**Citation:** "For gallantry in action and especially meritorious services."

**References:** G. O. No. 1, 1st Div., 1-20-18; A. G. O. Records, W. D.; A. G. O. R.; W. H.

o o o o

**CHURCHMAN, CHARLES JOHNSTON**, of Staunton, Virginia.  
Captain, 6th Regiment U. S. Marines, 2nd Division.  
Son of the late Hon. J. W. Churchman.

**Second Division Citation.**

**Citation:** "For gallantry against the enemy in Vierzy."

**Second Division Citation.**

**Citation:** "Commanded the Trench Mortar Platoon in the operations in the Bois de Belleau on June 6th and 8th, 1918, contributing in large measure to the success of an attack on enemy machine gun placed in for-

midable position. The effectiveness of his fire was a great assistance to the infantry in reducing these strongholds. The mortars were operated at a range of two hundred yards from the enemy's position, and from the testimony of prisoners their fire had a demoralizing effect upon the enemy machine guns. He placed his guns in position on the night of June 6th upon an emergency order and remained with his guns without relief until our withdrawal on June 15th. The professional ability, the operation of the mortars within a stone's throw of position, the untiring efforts of this officer have been highly commendable at all times."

References: G. O. No. 64, p. 12, 2nd Div.; G. O. No. 44, p. 43, 2nd Div.; Letter, Badge and Medal Section, W. D.; W. H.

Note: The Vierzey citation is in addition to, and the latter citation in correction of, honors noted in Source Volume 1, p. 30.

o o o o

**CLAY, CHARLES HENRY**, of Norfolk, Virginia

Private, Co. A, 3rd M. G. Bn., 1st Division.

Son of John Joseph and Sarah E. Wharton Clay.

**Cited by Division Commander.**

Citation: "For gallantry in action and especially meritorious services."

References: G. O. No. 1, 1st Div., 1-20-18; A. G. O. Records, W. D.; A. G. O. R.; W. H.

o o o o

**COHEN, ABRAHAM**, of Norfolk, Virginia.

Private, Co. I, 16th Infantry, 1st Division.

**Cited by Division Commander.**

Citation: "For gallantry in action and especially meritorious services."

References: G. O. No. 1, 1st Div., 1-20-18; A. G. O. Records, W. D.; A. G. O. R.; W. H.

o o o o

**COLLINS, CHRISTOPHER CLARK**, of Lynchburg, Virginia.

Colonel, Commander Medical Corps, Base Hospitals Nos. 12 and 18.

Son of William J. and Mamie P. Collins.

**Distinguished Service Medal.**

Citation: "For exceptionally meritorious and distinguished services. As corps surgeon, 25 Army Corps, from February, 1918, to February, 1919, he displayed professional attainments of a high order in the training of the organizations of the corps for subsequent operations. During active operations the efficiency of his organization and arrangements for the care of the sick and wounded and their evacuation contributed in a high degree to the success of the operations of the corps."

References: W. D. letter, 7-4-23; G. O. No. 4 by W. D., 2-10-23, Par. 9., G. O. 4, 1923; W. H.

Note: This honor in addition to citation in Source Vol. 1, p. 33.

o o o o

**COMPTON, CECIL A.**, of Rappahannock County, Virginia.

First Lieutenant, Co. C, 115th Inf., 29th Division.

**Cited in Citation Orders No. 1, G. H. Q., A. E. F.**, dated June 3, 1919, and awarded a gallantry certificate by C. G., A. E. F.

Citation: "For gallantry in action near Sivry, France, 24 October, 1918, while commanding a combat liaison group."

References: W. D. Letter, 9-14-23, W. H. (See Vol. 1, Appendix, p. 235.)

o o o o

**COOK, ALLEN M.**, of Norfolk, Virginia.

Commander, U. S. Navy.

**Officer of the Order of the Crown of Italy.**

References: Clip Vol. 42, p. 132; U. S. Navy records, Navy Dept.; W. H.

o o o o

**COVINGTON, WILLIAM BYRON**, of New Church, Accomac County, Va.

Corporal, S. S. U. 649.

Son of William A. and Lydia L. Mason Covington.

**French Croix de Guerre with Bronze Star.**

Citation: "An intrepid ambulance driver. He rendered conspicuous service on the field of battle which facilitated the evacuation of the wounded."

Medaille Commemorative de la Grande Guerre.

Cited by Division Commander.

Citation: "Proceeded to a battery position which was being heavily shelled by the enemy and successfully evacuated the wounded where another ambulance had failed to do so; after returning to his post he volunteered to return to the battery position."

References: Certified copies in W. H. Files; W. D. letter, 8-15-23.

o o o o

**COX, CREED F.**, of Bridle Creek, Grayson County, Virginia.

Lieutenant-Colonel, 77th Field Artillery (formerly Colonel, F. A.)

Son of Mrs. Mattie E. Cox.

**Distinguished Service Medal.**

Citation: "For exceptionally meritorious and distinguished services in positions of great responsibility. As commander of one or more elements of the 4th Artillery Brigade, in addition to his own regiment, the 77th Field Artillery, in the Aisne-Marne, St. Mihiel and Meuse-Argonne operations, he rendered conspicuous services. In the Meuse-Argonne offensive, in charge of the barrage grouping of the 4th Artillery Brigade, his high technical skill contributed in a marked way to the successful operations of the American forces. His untiring energy and devotion to duty served as a stimulus to the officers and men under his command."

References: Clipping Volumes 42-114, and 32-65; G. O. 15, 1923; A. G. O. Files, W. D.; A. G. 201; W. H.

o o o o

**CROCKETT, MARVIN L.**, of Tangier, Accomac County, Virginia.

Private, Company C, 18th Infantry, 1st Division.

Son of Andrew L. Crockett.

**Cited by Division Commander.**

Citation: "For gallantry in action and especially meritorious services."

References: G. O. No. 1, 1st Div., 1-20-18; A. G. O. Records, W. D.; A. G. O. R.; W. H.

o o o o

**CUMMING, SAMUEL CALVIN**, of Hampton, Virginia.

Captain, 51st Company, 5th Regt., U. S. M. C., 2nd Division.

**Second Division Citation.**

Citation: "Exhibited great devotion to duty and extraordinary heroism in leading his platoon under heavy machine gun fire until he himself was severely wounded."

**Recommended for Distinguished Service Cross.**

Recommendation: "For extraordinary heroism in action near Beaumont on November 4, 1918. This officer, under the heaviest artillery bombardment and withering machine-gun fire, by his coolness, courage and utter disregard of his own safety, did his utmost to maintain and strengthen the morale of his men. It was a great inspiration to see him fearlessly and courageously expose himself, above and beyond the call of duty, time and time again, talking with and encouraging his men and seeing that his position was organized to the best of advantage and that his men were properly dug in."

Approved by

Frederick M. Wise,

Lt. Col. U. S. M. C., Commanding.

References: U. S. M. C. records furnished by Maj.-Gen. John A. Lejeune; G. O. No. 88, p. 73, A. G. O. File, W. D.; A. G. 201; W. H.

Note: These honors are in addition to those noted in Source Vol. 1, p. 3.

o o o o

**DALTON, HERBERT S., JR.**, of Richmond, Virginia.

Private, 1st Class, and Wagoner, 319th Ambulance Co., 305th Sanitary Train, 80th Division.

Son of Herbert St. Clair Dalton.

**Silver Star Citation**, awarded April 7, 1923.



Citation: "For gallantry in action at Vaux Buzancy Road, France, November 4, 1918. He assisted in removing severely wounded soldiers to a place of safety."

**Recommended for Distinguished Service Cross.**

Recommendation: Wagoner Dalton left Vaux, driving an ambulance containing one litter case and three sitting cases. The road was being shelled and was blocked about one kilometer south of Vaux. He left ambulance and walked ahead to assist in clearing traffic, but found that the drivers had left trucks for purpose of seeking shelter. He returned and while on his way to assist in removing litter patient from ambulance was wounded in leg by a shell fragment. His wound was dressed by Private George R. Jones, Orderly of the ambulance. He helped Private Jones clear from the front of the ambulance the remains of one man and two horses killed by a shell. He then drove the ambulance to Buzancy, about six kilometers, over a bad road and through heavy traffic, with two flat tires caused by a shell fragment. The Orderly wanted to drive, but Wagoner Dalton insisted on driving because he knew the road and it was a very dark night. When he reached Buzancy his shoe and sock were soaked with blood. Shells were falling frequently during occurrence described."

(Signed) Capt. Julius J. Hulcher,  
305th Sanitary Train.  
Nov. 6, 1918.

References: G. O. 14, April 4, 1923; War Dept. letter, July 14, 1923; A. G. O. Files, W. D.; A. G. 201; Clipping Volume 42, p. 144; W. H.

o o o o

**DANIELS, JAMES E.**, of Petersburg, Virginia.

Private, Co. K, 28th Inf., 1st Div.

Son of Elizabeth M. Daniels.

**Cited by Division Commander.**

Citation: "For gallantry in action and especially meritorious services."

References: G. O. No. 1, 1st Div., 1-20-18; A. G. O. Records, W. D.; A. G. O. R.; W. H.

o o o o

**DAYTON, JOHN H.**, of Portsmouth, Virginia.

Commanding Officer, U. S. S. Michigan.

Son of Almira L. and Frederick L. Dayton (deceased.)

**Navy Cross.**

Citation: "For exceptionally meritorious service in a duty of great responsibility as Commanding Officer of the U. S. S. Michigan in the Atlantic Fleet."

Reference: Navy Department records.

o o o o

**DERRICKSON, PAUL WAPLES** (deceased), of Norfolk, Virginia.

Second Lieutenant, Co. K, 28th Infantry, 1st Division.

Son of James I. and Mary G. Derrickson.

**Cited by Division Commander.**

Citation: "For gallantry in action and especially meritorious services."

References: G. O. No. 1, 1st Div., 1-20-18; A. G. O. Records, W. D.; A. G. O. R.; W. H.

Note: This honor is in addition to that noted in Source Volume 1, p. 42.

o o o o

**DICKERSON, THOMAS**, of Richmond, Virginia.

Private, Company H, 26th Infantry, 1st Division.

**Cited by Division Commander.**

Citation: "For gallantry in action and especially meritorious services."

References: G. O. No. 1, 1st Div., 1-20-18; A. G. O. Records, W. D.; A. G. O. R.; W. H.

o o o o

**DILLON, HENRY**, of Arcanum, Buckingham County, Virginia.

Private, Company K, 28th Infantry, 1st Division.

**Cited by Division Commander.**

Citation: "For gallantry in action and especially meritorious services."

References: G. O. No. 1, 1st Div., 1-20-18; A. G. O. Records, W. D.; A. G. O. R.; W. H.

o o o o

**DODSON, WILSON BROWN** (deceased), of Norfolk, Virginia.

Second Lieutenant, Company A, 16th Infantry, 1st Division.

Son of Leonidas Berry and Sarah Annabel Brown Dodson.

**Cited by Division Commander.**

Citation: "For gallantry in action and especially meritorious services."

References: G. O. No. 1, 1st Div., 1-20-18; A. G. O. Records, W. D.; A. G. O. R.; W. H.

Note: This citation is in addition to those noted in Source Volume 1, p. 44.

o o o o

**DRUM, ANDREW B.**, of Fort Myer, Virginia.

Major, U. S. Marine Corps.

**Croce de Guerra (Italian) Decree of March 17, 1919.**

References: U. S. M. C. records furnished by Major-General John A. Lejeune; W. H.

o o o o

**ELMORE, THEODORE**, of Danville, Virginia.

Private, 55th Company, 5th Regiment, U. S. M. C., 2nd Division.

**Second Division Citation.**

Citation: "The man above named was attached to Second Battalion Headquarters as runner during the attack on and occupation of the Bois de Belleau. His work was extremely dangerous, frequently requiring him to go through artillery and machine-gun barrages. Never was there the slightest hesitation in carrying these hazardous messages."

References: U. S. M. C. Records furnished by Major-General John A. Lejeune; G. O. No. 44, p. 33; W. H.

Note: This citation in addition to those noted in Source Volume 1, p. 50.

**EOFF, ROBERT GRIMSHAW**, of Christiansburg, Montgomery County, Va.

First Lieutenant, 2nd Aviation Instruction Center, U. S. Air Service.

Served also with French Aviation Service.)

Son of John R. Eoff.

**French Croix de Guerre.**

Citation: (Not available).

Reference: V. P. I. Records; A. G. O. Files, W. D.; A. G. 201; W. H.

**ETHERIDGE, CHARLES ANTONIO**, of Norfolk, Virginia.

First Lieutenant, 6th Marines, 2nd Division.

**Second Division Citation.**

Citation: "For gallantry in action against the enemy in Vierzy."

References: U. S. M. C. records furnished by Major-General John A. Lejeune; G. O. No. 64, p. 12; W. H.

Note: This citation is in addition to those noted in Source Volume 1, p. 51.

o o o o

**FLETCHER, FOREST**, of Lexington, Virginia.

Second Lieutenant, Motor Transport Corps.

Son of Sydney Smith and Emma Mary Gorby Fletcher.

**French Croix de Guerre with Bronze Star.**

Citation: "Filled with calmness and coolness, he was known by his influence upon his men, and thanks to his spirit of initiative, assured evacuations of the wounded in a zone constantly bombarded by the enemy."

References: A. G. O. Files, A. G. 201, W. D.; Order No. 11,000 "D," French Armies of the East; questionnaire, W. H.

o o o o

**FRAY, ALBERT N.**, of Advance Mills, Albemarle County, Virginia.

Second Lieutenant (then Corporal), Co. L, 317th Inf., 80th Division.

Son of J. M. Fray.

**Silver Star Citation.**

Citation: "For gallantry in action near Bois de la Cote Lemont, France,

September 28-29, 1918. Voluntarily leaving a place of safety and with complete disregard for his own safety he assisted in rescuing several wounded men who were lying exposed to intense artillery fire."

References: G. O. 16, 1923; W. H.

o o o o

**FULLER, EDWARD C.** (deceased), of Hamilton, Loudoun County, Virginia.

Captain, 6th Regiment, U. S. M. C., 2nd Division.

Son of Brigadier-General Ben H. Fuller.

**Navy Cross.**

Citation: "While fearlessly exposing himself in an artillery barrage for the purpose of getting his men into a position of security in the attack on Bois de Belleau on June 12, 1918, he was killed, and thereby gave his life in an effort to protect his men."

**Second Division Citation.**

Citation: "Killed in action at his post of duty, after exposing himself fearlessly to a terrific artillery barrage in order to superintend personally the assurance of shelter to his men. In action he proved a leader, and his cool demeanor under fire and incessant labors for the comfort of his men contributed in great measure to the successful operations of his battalion. His action is supreme proof of that extraordinary heroism which unhesitatingly exposes itself as an example to hitherto untried troops, and which has resulted in stemming the enemy's advance in this region and thrusting it back from every position occupied by this brigade from the 2nd to the 14th of June. This on the 12th of June, 1918."

References: U. S. M. C. records furnished by Major-General John A. Lejeune; G. O. No. 40, p. 29; W. H.

Note: These citations are in addition to those noted in Source Volume 1, p. 56.

o o o o

**FURY, WILLIAM H.**, of Moss Neck, Caroline County, Virginia.

Sergeant, U. S. Marine Corps.

**Distinguished Service Cross.**

Citation: "For extraordinary heroism in action near Chateau-Thierry, France, June 10, 1918. He remained in a building subjected to heavy shell fire and mustard gas and made coffee for wounded men until the building was almost entirely demolished by the enemy shell fire."

**Navy Cross** (citation same as above.)

**Second Division Citation.**

Citation: "Displayed great courage and coolness in the operations near Chateau-Thierry, June 10, 1918. Although located near the front line and direct artillery fire, Sergeant Fury remained in a building near the dressing station making coffee for the wounded until the building was almost demolished by shell fire. There was enough mustard gas in the vicinity at the time to make it necessary for him to wear his respirator."

**Second Division Citation.**

Citation: "During heavy shelling with high explosives and shrapnel he remained at his post almost continuously night and day for several days alone, making coffee for the wounded being evacuated to the rear."

References: U. S. M. C. records furnished by Major-General John A. Lejeune; G. O. W. D. No. 37, p. 126; G. O. No. 88, p. 140; G. O. No. 60, p. 60; W. H.

Note: These citations in addition to those noted in Source Volume 1, p. 56, where William H. Fury's rank is given as Corporal and his residence as Norfolk, Virginia.

o o o o

**GARDNER, EUGENE**, of Hillsville, Carroll County, Virginia.

Private, Company L, 317th Infantry.

**Silver Star Citation.**

Citation: "For gallantry in action near the Bois de la Cote Lemont, France, September 28-29, 1918. Voluntarily leaving a place of safety and with complete disregard for his own safety, he assisted in rescuing several wounded men who were lying exposed to intense enemy artillery fire."

References: W. D. letter, 7-19-23; G. O. 14, 4-4-23; W. H.



**GLUCKSMAN, SAMUEL**, of Portsmouth, Virginia.

Private, 78th Company, 6th Marines, 2nd Division.

**French Croix de Guerre with Gilt Star.** (Listed without citation in Source Volume 1.)

Citation: "On October 3, 1918, during the attack of Blanc Mont, having taken a prisoner, forced him to show the way to a dugout holding twenty of the enemy, whom he captured. Wounded, he regained the front line as soon as his wound was dressed, and remained with his comrades until infection set in which necessitated his evacuation."

**References:** W. D. letter, 8-15-23; W. H.

**Note:** This citation in addition to other honors listed in Source Vol. 1, p. 60.

o o o o

**GOLLIDAY, JOHN B.**, of Middletown, Virginia.

Private, Company M, 16th Infantry, 1st Division.

Son of Mrs. Annie R. Golliday.

**Cited by Division Commander.**

Citation: "For gallantry in action and especially meritorious services."

**References:** G. O. No. 1, 1st Div., 1-20-18; A. G. O. Records, W. D.; A. G. O. R.; W. H.

o o o o

**GORDON, LEWIS H.**, of Richmond, Virginia.

Sergeant, Company G, 26th Infantry, 1st Division.

Son of C. C. Gordon.

**Cited by Division Commander.**

Citation: "For gallantry in action and especially meritorious services."

**References:** G. O. No. 1, 1st Div., 1-20-18; A. G. O. Records, W. D.; A. G. O. R.; W. H.

o o o o

**GRAYSON, CARY TRAVERS**, of Culpeper, Virginia.

Rear-Admiral, U. S. N.

**Commander Legion of Honour (French).**

**References:** Navy Department Record in W. H. Files.

**Note:** This honor in addition to that noted in Source Vol. 1, p. 63.

o o o o

**GRAYSON, STEWART M.**, of Vienna, Fairfax County, Virginia.

Captain, Medical O. R. C.

Son of Joel Grayson.

**Cited in Orders No. 8, G. H. Q., A. E. F., dated 3-1-20, and awarded a gallantry certificate by the C. G., A. E. F.**

Citation: "For gallantry in action at Cierges, France, 10-4-18, in establishing a dressing station under enemy fire."

**References:** W. D. letter, 7-14-23; W. H.

o o o o

**GREENE, SAMUEL B.**, of Toms Creek, Wise County, Virginia.

Wagoner, Hq. Co., 1st Machine Gun Battalion, 1st Division.

Son of Mrs. Rachael Greene.

**Cited by Division Commander.**

Citation: "For gallantry in action and especially meritorious services."

**References:** G. O. No. 1, 1st Div., 1-20-18; A. G. O. Records, W. D.; A. G. O. R.; W. H.

o o o o

**GROVE, FRANK A.**, of Max Meadows, Wythe County, Virginia.

Captain, Battery D, 25th Field Artillery.

Son of F. A. Grove.

**Cited in General Orders No. 53, Hq., 2nd Division, June 21, 1918.**

Citation: "He adjusted the fire of his battery from a forward observation post within forty meters of a German machine-gun position and succeeded in destroying a machine-gun nest and German observation post, displaying coolness, judgment and disregard for personal danger. This near Bauresches, June 21, 1918."

**References:** W. D. letter, 7-14-23; W. H.

**GUERRIERI, NICK V., of Norfolk, Virginia.**

Private, Company B, 16th Infantry, 1st Division.

Son of Mrs. Lucis Guerrieri.

**Cited by Division Commander.**

Citation: "For gallantry in action and especially meritorious services."

References: G. O. No. 1, 1st Div., 1-20-18; A. G. O. Records, W. D.; A. G. O. R.; W. H.

o o o o

**GUTHRIE, JOHN D., of Charlotte Court House, Virginia.**

Captain, 310th Engineers.

Son of Eppa Dennett and Nancy Katherine Franklin Guthrie.

**Order of Saint Anne (Russia) (third class):** "In recognition of splendid work and valuable service rendered to Russia, June 26, 1919."

**Chevalier, Merite Agricole (France).** September 24, 1919. Encouragement au Devouement (France).

**Medaille d'Honneur Argent (France):** "For devotion and services rendered to humanity." (January 11, 1923.)

References: W. D. letter, 7-14-23; photostat records, W. H. Files.

o o o o

**GUYNN, MACK S., of Hillsville, Wythe County, Virginia.**

Private, Co. D, 26th Infantry.

**Cited by Brigade Commander.**

Citation: "For conspicuous gallantry in action during the operations 18-23 July, 1918, near Soissons. He advanced beyond our lines with his automatic rifle. Set up his rifle and by his coolness under intense fire enabled his platoon to reach the objective after four of his men had been put out of action."

References: Individual Record of Decoration (statement), A. G. O. R.; W. H.

o o o o

**HABURN, CHESTER, of Jonesville, Lee County, Virginia.**

Private, Company L, 28th Infantry, 1st Division.

Son of Frank Haburn.

**Cited by Division Commander.**

Citation: "For gallantry in action and especially meritorious services."

References: G. O. No. 1, 1st Div., 1-20-18; A. G. O. Records, W. D.; A. G. O. R.; W. H.

o o o o

**HAGAN, JOSEPH ADDISON, of Richmond, Virginia.**

Captain, U. S. Marine Corps.

**Distinguished Service Cross.**

Citation: "For extraordinary heroism in action at Bois de Belleau, France, June 6, 1918, when he rescued a platoon sergeant of his regiment from death or capture. In the face of heavy machine-gun and rifle fire he rushed across an open space of two hundred yards under full view of the entrenched enemy forces and within twenty-five yards of his lines, placed the wounded sergeant upon his back and returned under a withering fire to his own lines. His splendid act of devotion to duty and his utter disregard for his own safety inspired the men of his regiment with renewed courage and determination."

**Second Division Citation.**

Citation: "For extraordinary heroism during an attack on June 6. Led his platoon forward under heavy machine-gun fire, and when his platoon was forced to retire, due to heavy losses, he noticed the loss of his Gunnery Sergeant and returned through fire and brought this man back."

References: U. S. M. C. records furnished by Major-General John A. Lejeune; G. O. W. D. No. 9, p. 8, 1923; G. O. No. 40, p. 15; W. H.

Note: These citations in addition to those noted in Source Volume 1, p. 66, in which Joseph A. Hagan's rank is erroneously given as First Lieutenant.

**HAGAN, WILLIS C., of Roanoke, Virginia.**

First Lieutenant, 3d Bn. Hq., 60th Infantry.

Son of Mrs. Lucien H. Cocke.

**Cited by Brigade Commander.**

Citation: "For exceptional devotion to duty, courage and efficiency, during the St. Mihiel offensive, Sept. 12, 1918, Sept. 16, 1918, First Lieutenant Hagan, commanding Company F, 60th Infantry, personally directed his company in action in an exceptionally courageous and efficient manner, under a terrific barrage of gas, explosive, shrapnel and machine-gun fire, thereby breaking up a strong counter-attack at short range. During the Meuse-Argonne offensive he disregarded all personal danger, frequently leading patrols, and constantly setting a fine example of heroism and devotion to duty to his men. His constant loyalty and total disregard for his personal safety, coupled with his continuous jovial spirits, was an inspiration to everyone with whom he came in contact."

References: A. G. O. R.; W. D. Letter; G. O. No. 11, Hq. 9th Inf. Brig., 12-31-18; W. H.

o o o o

**HALL, JOHN T., of Gladys, Campbell County, Virginia.**

Private, Company F, 28th Infantry, 1st Division.

Son of John E. Hall.

**Cited by Division Commander.**

Citation: "For gallantry in action and especially meritorious services."

References: G. O. No. 1, 1st Div., 1-20-18; A. G. O. Records, W. D.; A. G. O. R.; W. H.

o o o o

**HAMILTON, THOMAS C., of Holland, Nansemond County, Virginia.**

Private, Company M, 16th Infantry, 1st Division.

Son of Mrs. Annie E. Wilkins.

**Cited by Division Commander.**

Citation: "For gallantry in action and especially meritorious services."

References: G. O. No. 1, 1st Div., 1-20-18; A. G. O. Records, W. D.; A. G. O. R.; W. H.

o o o o

**HARMON, RUSSELL ALBERT, of Floyd, Virginia.**

First Lieutenant, 104th Infantry.

Son of A. P. Harmon.

**Cited by Division Commander.**

Citation: "For marked gallantry and meritorious service in the capture of Torcy, Belleau, Givry, Bouresches Woods, Rochet Woods, Hill 190, Etrepilly, Bezeut, Epieds, Trugny, and La Fere Woods to the Jaulgonne-Fere-on-Tardenois Road, during the advance of this division against the enemy from July 18th to 25th, 1918, in the second battle of the Marne."

References: A. G. O. R.; W. H.

o o o o

**HARNER, WILLIAM R., of Ceres, Bland County, Virginia.**

Corporal, Company B, 5th Field Artillery, 1st Division.

Son of Mrs. Nancy Harner.

**Cited by Division Commander.**

Citation: "For gallantry in action and especially meritorious services."

References: G. O. No. 1, 1st Div., 1-20-18; A. G. O. Records, W. D.; A. G. O. R.; W. H.

o o o o

**HART, MURRAY E., of Danville, Virginia.**

Trumpeter, U. S. Marine Corps.

**Second Division Citation.**

Citation: "Carried important messages under heavy barrages and machine-gun fire."

References: U. S. M. C. records furnished by Major-General John A. Lejeune; G. O. No. 44, p. 28; W. H.



**HARTIGAN, JAMES S.,** of Lexington, Virginia.

Private, Company D, 28th Infantry, 1st Division.

Son of L. A. Hartigan.

**Cited by Division Commander.**

Citation: "For gallantry in action and especially meritorious services."

References: G. O. No. 1, 1st Div., 1-20-18; A. G. O. Records, W. D.; A. G. O. R.; W. H.

° ° ° °

**HARWOOD, FRANKLIN ANDREWS,** of Richmond, Virginia.

Lieutenant, Company E, 16th Infantry, 1st Division.

**Cited by Division Commander.**

Citation: "For gallantry in action and especially meritorious services."

References: Appendix, Source Vol. 1, p. 238; G. O. No. 1, 1st Div., 1-20-18; A. G. O. Records, W. D.; A. G. O. R.; W. H.

° ° ° °

**HAYNES, HARRIS,** of Alexandria, Virginia.

Private 1st Cl., Company I, 26th Infantry, 1st Division.

**Cited by Division Commander.**

Citation: "For gallantry in action and especially meritorious services."

References: G. O. No. 1, 1st Div., 1-20-18; A. G. O. Records, W. D.; A. G. O. R.; W. H.

° ° ° °

**HAZLEGROVE, WILLIAM PERKINS,** of Roanoke, Virginia.

Captain, Headquarters Troop, 80th Division.

Son of J. W. Hazlegrove.

**Silver Star Citation.**

Citation: "For gallantry in action 1-6 November, 1918, north of Thibaudine Farm, in remaining in front of the position and sending back valuable information."

References: Citation Orders No. 3, G. H. Q., 80th Div., France, 6-3-19; W. H.

Note: This citation is in addition to that noted in Source Volume 1, p. 72.

° ° ° °

**HECK, DANNA H,** of Damascus, Washington County, Virginia.

Corporal, Company L, 28th Infantry, 1st Division.

**Cited by Division Commander.**

Citation: "For gallantry in action and especially meritorious services."

References: G. O. No. 1, 1st Div., 1-20-18; A. G. O. Records, W. D.; A. G. O. R.; W. H.

° ° ° °

**HERNDON, LEWIS SIDNEY,** of Max Meadows, Wythe County, and Danville, Virginia.

First Lieutenant, Field Hospital No. 13, Medical Corps.

**French Croix de Guerre with Gilt Star.**

Citation: "On the 21st of July, 1918, he had just organized an advance dressing station for the storming party, when his detachment was subjected to a heavy bombardment of gas shells. As he could not very well care for the wounded, being hampered by his gas mask, he did not hesitate to carry them off the field and continue doing this work until he lost his sight and had to be evacuated."

**Silver Star Citation.**

Citation: For gallantry in action south of Soissons, July 21, 1918, while attending to the wounded during enemy bombardment."

**Cited in Citation Orders.**

Citation: "For gallantry in action on November 6, 1918, at Paurron, France, in establishing an operation station and attending the wounded under heavy shell fire."

**Cited by Division Commander.**

Citation: "He established a first-aid station in a sunken road near the front line and repeatedly, under shell fire, went out and cared for wounded men on the field. Although severely gassed, he stayed at his post until he could no longer perform his duty and had to be sent to a hospital."

**Recommended for Distinguished Service Cross.**

For act rewarded by Silver Star Citation.

References: Citation Orders No. 9, G. H. Q., Aug., 1920; Citation Orders No. 2, G. H. Q., A. E. F., 6-3-19; G. O. No. 47, 1st Div., 8-14-18; A. G. O. Files, W. D.; A. F. 201; A. G. O. R.; Clip. Vol. 42, p. 131; W. H.

**HILL, JAMES E.**, of Roanoke, Virginia.

Private, U. S. Marine Corps.

Second Division Citation.

Citation: "The above named is cited for gallantry in action against the enemy in Thiaucourt."

References: U. S. M. C. Records furnished by Major-General John A. Lejeune; G. O. No. 64, p. 18; W. H.

**HIRST, SAMUEL CARROLL**, of Purcellville, Loudoun County, Virginia.

Private, Company H, 5th Regiment, U. S. M. C., 2nd Division.

Son of Mrs. Katherine Hirst.

Second Division Citation.

Citation: "Displayed great bravery in assisting a comrade who had been detailed to move against a hostile machine gun. They succeeded in killing two Germans, destroyed the gun and fought their way back to our lines, bringing valuable information concerning hostile machine-gun positions."

Second Division Citation.

Citation: "The above named is cited for gallantry in action against the enemy in Blanc Mont."

References: U. S. M. C. records furnished by Major-General John A. Lejeune; G. O. No. 88, p. 93; G. O. No. 64, p. 35; W. H.

Note: These citations are in addition to those noted in Source Volume 1, p. 75.

o o o o

**HODGE, GEORGE N.**, of Williamsville, Bath County, Virginia.

Private, Company K, 18th Infantry, 1st Division.

Son of Mrs. Martha Hodge.

Cited by Division Commander.

Citation: "For gallantry in action and especially meritorious services."

References: G. O. No. 1, 1st Div., 1-20-18; A. G. O. Records, W. D.; A. G. O. R.; W. H.

o o o o

**HOLLAND, WILLIAM H.**, of Suffolk, Virginia.

Corporal (then Private, 1st Class), Co. E, 116th Inf., 29th Division.

Son of Joe J. Holland.

Silver Star Citation.

Citation: "For gallantry in action near the Bois de la Grand Montagne, France, October 23, 1918. Under a concentration of enemy high explosive shell fire Private Holland voluntarily carried a message from his battalion post of command to his regimental headquarters, all telephone lines having been destroyed by enemy fire. Upon his arrival at that place he again volunteered to carry another important message to the regimental reserve, although the duty involved extreme danger owing to an intense enemy artillery barrage. Private Holland successfully accomplished his important mission, and thus enabled the regimental commander to reinforce his sorely pressed assaulting companies."

References: G. O. 14, 1923; A. G. O. Files, W. D.; A. G. 201; W. H.

o o o o

**HONAKER, ZED S.**, of Honaker, Russell County, Virginia.

Private, Headquarters Company, 28th Infantry, 1st Division.

Cited by Division Commander.

Citation: "For gallantry in action and especially meritorious services."

References: G. O. No. 1, 1st Div., 1-20-18; A. G. O. Records, W. D.; A. G. O. R.; W. H.

o o o o

**HOOKE, KARL M.**, of Lynchburg, Virginia.

Sergeant, Company F, 16th Infantry, 1st Division.

**Cited by Division Commander.**

Citation: "For gallantry in action and especially meritorious services."

References: G. O. No. 1, 1st Div., 1-20-18; A. G. O. Records, W. D.; A. G. O. R.; W. H.

o o o o

**HORN, GRANVILLE M., of Skeggs, Buchanan County, Virginia.**

Private, Machine Gun Company, 16th Infantry, 1st Division.

Son of James Horn.

**Cited by Division Commander.**

Citation: "For gallantry in action and especially meritorious services."

References: G. O. No. 1, 1st Div., 1-20-18; A. G. O. Records, W. D.; A. G. O. R.; W. H.

o o o o

**HUDNALL, JAMES SNOWDEN, of Sunnybank, Northumberland Co., Va.**

First Lieutenant, Company G, 319th Infantry, 80th Division.

Son of W. M. Hudnall, Sr.

**Silver Star Citation.**

Citation: "For skillful handling of his platoon on the morning of Sept. 26, 1918, whereby he relieved pressure on the First Battalion, 319th, and reduced machine-gun nests, killing three and capturing twenty-two Germans with a loss of but one man wounded."

References: Randolph-Macon College records; Hdqrs. 160th Inf. Brig., G. O. No. 4, 15th May, 1919; Letter, Badge and Medal Section, W. D.; W. H.

o o o o

**HULBERT, WILLIAM P., of Middleburg, Loudoun County, Virginia.**

First Lieutenant, Section No. 515, Ambulance Service.

Son of Mrs. E. J. Hulbert.

**French Medaille d'Honneur des Epidemies (Argent).**

References: A. G. O. R., from letter of W. D. 4-18-23; W. H.

Note: This honor in addition to that listed in Source Vol. 1, p. 80.

o o o o

**HULCHER, FRANK G., of Richmond, Virginia.**

Private, Company E, 18th Infantry, 1st Division.

**Cited by Division Commander.**

Citation: "For gallantry in action and especially meritorious services."

References: G. O. No. 1, 1st Div., 1-20-18; A. G. O. Records, W. D.; A. G. O. R.; W. H.

o o o o

**HULCHER, JULIUS J., of Richmond, Virginia.**

Major (then Lieutenant), Ambulance Co. No. 319, Sanitary Train 305.

Son of Joseph H. Hulcher.

**Meritorious Services Citation Certificate.**

Citation: "For services in command of Ambulance Company No. 319."

References: W. D. Letter 7-14-23; W. H.

o o o o

**HUME, JULIAN R., of Norfolk, Virginia.**

First Lieutenant, 7th Field Artillery, 1st Division.

**Cited by Division Commander.**

Citation: "For gallantry in action and especially meritorious services."

References: G. O. No. 1, 1st Div., 1-20-18; A. G. O. Records, W. D.; A. G. O. R.; W. H.

o o o o

**JAMERSON, GEORGE HARISTON, of Martinsville, Henry County, Va.**

Brigadier-General, 159th Brigade, 80th Division, 72nd Brigade, 36th Division.

**Distinguished Service Medal.**

Citation: "For exceptionally meritorious and distinguished services. As Regimental Commander, 317th Infantry, and later as Brigade Commander of the 159th Infantry Brigade of the 80th Division, he rendered conspicuous service in the organization and training of these units, and in the command thereof during the operations of his Brigade in the Meuse-Argonne offensive. Displaying sound judgment, high professional skill,



untiring energy and devotion to duty, he contributed in a material way to the successful operations of his division and of the American forces in France."

References: W. D. letter, 6-11-23; W. H.

Note: This honor in addition to those listed in Source Vol. 1, p. 82.

**JEFFERS, GEORGE L.**, of Richmond, Virginia.

Second Lieutenant, 7th Field Artillery, 1st Division.

Son of George Jeffers.

Cited by Division Commander.

Citation: "For gallantry in action and especially meritorious services."

References: G. O. No. 1, 1st Div., 1-20-18; A. G. O. Records, W. D.; A. G. O. R.; W. H.

o o o o

**JENKINS, HOMER B.**, of Stanley, Page County, Virginia.

Sergeant, Company E, 18th Infantry, 1st Division.

Son of James M. Jenkins.

Cited by Division Commander.

Citation: "For gallantry in action and especially meritorious services."

References: G. O. No. 1, 1st Div., 1-20-18; A. G. O. Records, W. D.; A. G. O. R.; W. H.

o o o o

**JENKINS, LUTHER R.**, of Speers Ferry, Scott County, Virginia.

Private, Company K, 18th Infantry, 1st Division.

Son of James E. Jenkins.

Cited by Division Commander.

Citation: "For gallantry in action and especially meritorious services."

References: G. O. No. 1, 1st Div., 1-20-18; A. G. O. Records, W. D.; A. G. O. R.; W. H.

o o o o

**JOHNSON, CLYDE D.** (deceased), of Richmond, Virginia.

Private, M. G. Co., 5th Regiment, U. S. M. C., 2nd Division.

Son of Mrs. Susie M. Johnson.

Second Division Citation.

References: U. S. M. C. records furnished by Major-General John A. Lejeune; G. O. No. 64, p. 46; W. H.

Note: This honor is in addition to that noted in Source Volume 1, p. 84.

**JONES, ALLEN C.**, of Lexington, Rockbridge County, Virginia.

Private, Section No. 534, Ambulance Service.

Son of Mrs. Elizabeth Jones.

French Croix de Guerre with Silver Star.

Citation: "A very zealous driver. He was always ready for difficult missions and distinguished himself particularly during the period from March 29 to April 6, in effecting the evacuations with much courage and coolness."

References: W. D. letter, August 15, 1923; W. H.

o o o o

**JONES, ERNEST LESTER**, of Rixeyville, Culpeper County, Virginia.

Colonel, Air Service (Aeronautics).

Son of Charles H. and Ada Lester Jones.

S. S. Maurizio e Lazzaro, November 26, 1918.

Fatigue de Guerre (Italy), 1918.

Officer Legion of Honour.

Diploma of Honor—Aerial League of America, July 9, 1919.

Recommended for the Distinguished Service Medal, November, 1918.

Cited in person by General Pershing at Paris, December 14, 1918.

References: Photostatic Copies (official), W. H. Files.

o o o o

**JONES, GEORGE R.**, of Richmond, Virginia.

Private, 319 Ambulance Co., 305 San. Tr., 80th Division.

Son of George H. Jones.

Silver Star Citation; April 5, 1923.

Citation: "For gallantry in action on road from Vaux to Buzancy, France, November 4, 1918. He applied first aid to wounded men and removed them to a place of shelter under intense shell fire."

(See Appendix to Virginians of Distinguished Service, Source Vol. 1, p. 239.

References: A. G. O. R.; G. O. 14, 1923; W. H.

o o o o

**JONES, WILLIAM L.**, of Charlottesville, Virginia.

Driver, Ambulance Sec. 595, U. S. Army.

Son of W. J. Jones.

**French Croix de Guerre.**

Citation: "Excellent and very devoted driver. Distinguished himself by remarkable spirit and endurance during several days, insuring the evacuation of wounded on a road constantly under a heavy bombardment. Had previously distinguished himself."

Reference: Photostatic copy N. Y. Herald, Paris Edition, 6-22-18, p. 1, W. H. Files; A. G. O. Files, W. D.; A. G. 201; W. H.

o o o o

**JORDAN, RICHARD H.**, of Virginia.

Major (then Colonel), Quartermaster Corps.

Son of Charles E. Jordan.

**Distinguished Service Medal.**

Citation: "For exceptionally meritorious and distinguished services as senior assistant and executive assistant to the Chief of Transportation Service from January 11, 1918, to April 15, 1919. With untiring energy, rare administrative and executive ability, and unremitting devotion to duty, he rendered service of great value to the government in perfecting the necessary organization of the movement of troops from encampments throughout the United States to ports of embarkation and thence overseas."

References: G. O. 14, 1923; W. H.

o o o o

**KEYSER, RALPH STOVER**, of Thoroughfare, Prince William County, Va.

Major, U. S. M. C., Assistant Chief of Staff, 2nd Division.

Son of Charles Eugene and Mary Stover Keyser.

**Distinguished Service Medal.**

Citation: "For exceptional meritorious and distinguished services in a position of great responsibility as Assistant Chief of Staff, Second Division, G-2 from July 26, 1918, to July, 1919. With indefatigable zeal and excellent executive ability he so organized his section as to furnish prompt and comprehensive information of the enemy for the use of the Division in its operations in the battles of St. Mihiel, Blanc Mont Ridge (Champagne) and the Meuse-Argonne and in the march to the Rhine."

**Navy Cross.**

Citation: "While attached to the Fifth Marines, Major Keyser participated in the battles of the Chateau-Thierry Sector, June 10th, to July 10th; in the counterthrust southwest of Soissons, July 18th to 19th, and as a member of the General Staff of the Second Division he participated in the occupation of the Marbache Sector (just north of Nancy) August 12th to 16th; the battle of Blanc Mont Ridge, October 1st to 10th, and the battle of the Meuse-Argonne, November 1st to 11th; the march to the Rhine; the occupation of the Coblenz Bridge Head, and the return of the Second Division to the United States. In all these operations, Major Keyser directed the workings of his important department very efficiently, and with marked success. The services rendered by this officer were conspicuous; highly meritorious, and in duty of great responsibility."

References: U. S. M. C. records furnished by Major-General John A. Lejeune; G. O. W. D. No. 9, p. 37, 1923; certified copies of official orders; W. H.

Note: These citations in addition to those noted in Source Volume 1, p. 90.

**KIMBERLY, CLARKE OLER**, of Hampton, Virginia.

First Lieutenant, Field Artillery (12th), 2nd Division.

Son of Henry H. and Juliet Clarke Kimberly.

**Silver Star Citation.**

Citation: "For gallantry against the enemy in the Blanc Mont Sector."

**Cited by Division Commander.**

Citation: "Rendered valuable service to his country during the recent engagement (7-5-18) with the enemy."

References: Elizabeth City County records; A. G. O. Files, W. D.; A. G. 201; G. O. 64, p. 22, 2nd Div., June 25, 1919; G. O. 40, p. 66, 2nd Div., A. E. F.; 7-5-18; W. H.

Note: These citations are in addition to those noted in Source Volume 1, p. 91.

o o o o

**KING, ARTHUR J.**, of Norfolk, Virginia.

Private, U. S. Marine Corps.

**Croix de Guerre (Bronze Star).** Order No. 11, 547-D.

Citation: "He advanced under violent artillery fire, killing enemy soldiers who were seeking identification tags on the dead bodies of his comrades. Brought back important information of the enemy."

References: U. S. M. C. records furnished by Major-General John A. Lejeune; W. H.

o o o o

**KING, MARSHALL W.**, of Hopewell, Virginia.

Private, 1st Cl., Company F, 26th Infantry, 1st Division.

**Cited by Division Commander.**

Citation: "For gallantry in action and especially meritorious services."

References: G. O. No. 1, 1st Div., 1-20-18; A. G. O. Records, W. D.; A. G. O. R.; W. H.

o o o o

**KIVLIGHAN, EDWARD R.**, of Staunton, Virginia.

Corporal, U. S. Marine Corps.

**Croix de Guerre (Bronze Star).** Order No. 11, 548-D.

Citation: "Displayed indomitable courage and absolute indifference to danger in carrying rations and ammunition to his battalion depot in broad daylight and under violent bombardments from June 2 to 11, 1918."

**Second Division Citation.**

Citation: "Showed undaunted courage and disregard of danger . . . night after night delivering rations and ammunition to the dumps of the battalion, from the 2nd to the 11th of June, under heavy shell fire. On three occasions high explosive shells destroyed a ration cart and two gun carts, killing three animals and wounding the drivers."

References: U. S. M. C. records furnished by Major-General John A. Lejeune; G. O. No. 40, p. 58; W. H.

o o o o

**KYLE, BERNARD HEWETT**, of Lynchburg, Virginia.

Major, Medical Corps, 12th Field Artillery, 2nd Div.

Son of Joshua Warner and Ella Catharine Agee Kyle.

**Recommended for Distinguished Service Cross.**

"1. Major Bernard H. Kyle, Medical Corps (then Captain, Medical Corps), in his capacity as Battalion Surgeon, First Battalion, 12th Field Artillery, Second Division, A. E. F., on July 21st, 1918, accompanied his battalion before daylight into an advanced position at Montrembeuf Farm, in front of Vierzy. At daybreak they were under heavy fire from the enemy's artillery and machine guns, suffered heavy casualties and were forced to retire. Major Kyle (then Captain), inspired and exalted by a spirit of heroism, was not content to perform merely his required duty of dressing the wounded as they were brought back to him at an aid station, where protection was afforded. He went far beyond that duty. He brought his aid station forward to be near the men under fire, enabling him to give relief promptly to the injured and to save many who would otherwise have perished had assistance been delayed, calmly and courageously accepting the overwhelming danger to himself in a manner inspiring to all who witnessed



his unostentatious heroism. More than that: while the fire was heaviest and the bravest paled at the terrific bombardment, with high explosives and shrapnel bursting all around him, with machine-gun bullets zipping overhead and tearing up the ground on which he walked, Major Kyle (then Captain) went out upon the field not once, but many times, risking his life constantly in the fearful exposure attending wounded men where they had fallen, rescuing them, carrying them back to the ambulances also under fire, all of which was far beyond all call of duty. He risked his life repeatedly in promptly relieving the suffering and saving the lives of his men. He worked continuously, rapidly and untiringly, never leaving Montrembeuf Farm until the last wounded man had been evacuated and the last battery of his Battalion had retired out of the zone of the enemy's direct fire.

"2. For his courageous heroism far beyond all call of duty displayed on this occasion, Major Bernard H. Kyle is recommended for the award of the Distinguished Service Cross."

(Signed) O. R. Austin (former) Major, M. C.,  
Surgeon 12th F. A., 2nd Div.

Recommended for Distinguished Service Cross by Manus McCloskey, Colonel, General Staff.

Cited in General Orders No. 64.

Citation: For gallantry against the enemy in the Champagne Sector.

References: A. G. O. File, W. D.; A. G. 201; W. H.

Note: These citations are in addition to those noted in Source Volume 1, pp. 93-94.

o o o o

LACY, OSWELL F., of Bedford, Virginia.

Private, Company D, 16th Infantry, 1st Division.

Son of Oswell Lacy.

Cited by Division Commander.

Citation: "For gallantry in action and especially meritorious services."

References: G. O. No. 1, 1st Div., 1-20-18; A. G. O. Records, W. D.; A. G. O. R.; W. H.

o o o o

LAMBERT, GEORGE D., JR., of Richmond, Virginia.

Sergeant, 51st Co., 5th Regiment, U. S. M. C., 2nd Division.

Son of George D. and Annie Walker Lambeth.

American E. F. Citation.

Citation: "For gallantry in action near St. Etienne, France, October 3, 1918, while assisting a wounded comrade to safety under heavy enemy fire."

Second Division Citation.

Citation: "Brought in wounded under heavy bombardment by artillery and machine guns."

Second Division Citation.

Citation: "The above named is cited for gallantry in action against the enemy in Blanc Mont."

References: U. S. M. C. records furnished by Major-General John A. Lejeune; Citation Order No. 9, p. 26; G. O. No. 40, p. 26; G. O. No. 64, p. 34; W. H.

Note: These citations are in addition to those noted in Source Volume 1, p. 94.

o o o o

LANGLY, JAMES, of Hagan, Lee County, Virginia.

Sergeant, Company C, 18th Infantry, 1st Division.

Brother of Felix Langley.

Cited by Brigade Commander.

Citation: "For gallant conduct and self-sacrificing spirit displayed during the battles of Montdidier-Noyon defensive, Aisne-Marne offensive, St. Mihiel offensive, Meuse-Argonne offensive."

References: A. G. O. R.; G. O. No. 5, Hqrs. 1st Inf. Brig., A. E. F., June 1, 1919. A. G. O. Files, W. D.; Letter, Badge and Medal Section, War Dept.; W. H.

**LAWHORNE, DEWEY H.**, of Schoolfield, Pittsylvania County, Virginia.

Corporal, Co. G, 120th Infantry.

Son of Landon S. Lawhorne.

**French Croix de Guerre with Gilt Star.**

Citation: "While exposed to a very hot fire and accompanied by two privates he captured a machine-gun position, put the guns out of commission, and made an officer and three privates prisoners."

**Distinguished Service Cross.**

Citation: "For extraordinary heroism in action near Bellicourt, France, 29 September, 1918. In the face of heavy machine-gun fire, Private Lawhorne, with two other soldiers, attacked and put out of action an enemy machine-gun post, capturing a German officer and two soldiers."

**British Military Medal.**

References: Clip. Vol. 36, p. 37; A. G. O. Files, W. D.; A. G. 201; W. H.

o o o o

**LEDMAN, JOHN W.**, of Manassas, Prince William County, Virginia.

Private, 1st Cl., Company C, 2nd F. S. Battalion, 1st Division.

**Cited by Division Commander.**

Citation: "For gallantry in action and especially meritorious services."

References: G. O. No. 1, 1st Div., 1-20-18; A. G. O. Records, W. D.;

A. G. O. R.; W. H.

o o o o

**LINDSAY, JAMES B.**, of Boyce and Millwood, Clarke County, Virginia.

Corporal, 315th Machine-Gun Battalion.

Son of E. A. Lindsay.

**Silver Star Citation.**

Citation: "On the night of November 1-2, 1918, north of Sommerance, France, although suffering from serious gas burns, he carried dispatches without rest during the entire night over a most difficult terrain, swept by shell and machine-gun fire. He has distinguished himself for fearless devotion to duty and utter disregard of personal safety throughout all the actions in which this organization participated."

References: Excerpts from "Clarke Courier," W. H.; Letter, Badge and Medal Section, W. D.; G. O. No. 3, 160th Inf. Brig., May 15, 1919.

o o o o

**LUMSDEN, CLARENCE**, of Boone Mill, Franklin County, Virginia.

Private, Company G, 26th Infantry, 1st Division.

Son of Mrs. Roxie Lumsden.

**Cited by Division Commander.**

Citation: "For gallantry in action and especially meritorious services."

References: G. O. No. 1, 1st Div., 1-20-18; A. G. O. Records, W. D.;

A. G. O. R.; W. H.

o o o o

**LYLE, ARCHIBALD G.**, of Millboro, Bath County, Virginia.

Private, 17th Company, 5th Regiment, U. S. M. C., 2nd Division.

Son of Winfree Lyle.

**Second Division Citation.**

Citation: "The above-named is cited for gallantry in action against the enemy in St. Etienne."

References: U. S. M. C. records furnished by Major-General John A. Lejeune; G. O. No. 64, p. 46; W. H.

Note: The above citation is in addition to that noted in Source Volume 1, p. 100.

o o o o

**McCLANAHAN, REECE**, of Big Rock, Buchanan County, Virginia.

Sergeant, Company K, 317th Infantry, 80th Division.

**Silver Star Citation.**

Citation: "For gallantry in action at Fosse, France, November 3, 1918. By his courage and heroism he maintained the confidence of his men and repeatedly led his platoon against machine-gun nests."

References: G. O. No. 10; W. H.

**McCLELLAN, JOHN MURRAY** (deceased), of Richmond, Virginia.

Second Lieutenant, 5th Regiment, U. S. M. C., 2nd Division.

Son of Abram L. and Mary Davis McClellan.

**American E. F. Citation.**

Citation: "For gallantry in action at Vierzy, France, July 19, 1918, in voluntarily finding a more sheltered position for his battalion."

**References:** U. S. M. C. records furnished by Major-General John A. Lejeune; Citation Order No. 3, p. 38; W. H.

**Note:** This citation is in addition to those noted in Source Volume 1, p. 101.

o o o o

**McCOY, CLAUDE**, of Portsmouth, Virginia.

Private, Company G, 28th Infantry, 1st Division.

Son of Joseph McCoy.

**Cited by Division Commander.**

Citation: "For gallantry in action and especially meritorious services."

**References:** G. O. No. 1, 1st Div., 1-20-18; A. G. O. Records, W. D.; A. G. O. R.; W. H.

o o o o

**McCOY, STEVE A.**, of Carterton, Russell County, Virginia.

Private, Company K, 16th Infantry, 1st Division.

Son of Harvey McCoy.

**Cited by Division Commander.**

Citation: "For gallantry in action and especially meritorious services."

**References:** G. O. No. 1, 1st Div., 1-20-18; A. G. O. Records, W. D.; A. G. O. R.; W. H.

o o o o

**McCREERY, VICTOR A.**, of Arrington, Nelson County, Virginia.

Sergeant, Company C, 1st Ammunition Train, and Co. B, 7th M. G. Bn.

Son of Mrs. Belle Thacker.

**Cited by Division Commander.**

Citation: "Near Villers Tournelle, France, May 4, 1918, volunteered to pilot a convoy of eight trucks loaded with ammunition and supplies over a road being heavily bombarded by high explosives and gas, and by good leadership successfully accomplished the mission."

**References:** G. O. No. 70, Hqrs. 1st Div., 8-19-19; War Dept. letter 7-14-23; W. H.

o o o o

**McGHEE, HUGH G.**, of Roanoke, Virginia.

Polish Commemorative Cross.

**References:** A. G. O. R., from W. D. letter 9-26-23; W. H.

o o o o

**McKINNEY, THOMAS G.**, of Danville, Virginia.

Private, Company E, 1st Ammunition Train, 1st Division.

Son of Mrs. Laura F. Foster.

**Cited by Division Commander.**

Citation: "For gallantry in action and especially meritorious services."

**References:** G. O. No. 1, 1st Div., 1-20-18; A. G. O. Records, W. D.; A. G. O. R.; W. H.

o o o o

**McLEOD, ALEXANDER**, of Glen Allen, Henrico County, Virginia.

First Lieutenant, Ambulance Companies 17 and 25, 5th Sanitary Train.

**Cited by Division Commander.**

Citation: "On October 19, 1918, while on duty at Ambulance Dressing Station at Ferme de Madelene, learned that ambulance and supplies were needed for care of wounded at Cunel and that the road leading to Cunel was impassable on account of heavy artillery fire, he immediately proceeded on foot to investigate the condition of the road, and then, returning, took ambulances and supplies for the relief of the wounded at that place. During all this time the road traversed was under heavy artillery fire."

**References:** War Dept. Letter, 7-14-23; W. H.



**MANNING, JAMES F., JR.**, of Purcellville and Leesburg, Loudoun Co., Va.  
First Lieutenant, 49th Aero Squadron, Air Services.

Son of J. F. Manning.

**Distinguished Service Cross.**

Citation: "For extraordinary heroism in action near Doulecon, France, October 4, 1918. While leading a patrol of seven planes Lieutenant Manning accepted combat with seventeen German machines (type Fokker) at an altitude of 1,200 meters. Through his ingenious leadership and skillful maneuver of his patrol, seven of the enemy planes were shot down."

Cited in G. O. No. 23, Hqrs. A. S., 1st Army, A. E. F., 11-5-18: Order announcing credit for bringing down plane and participating in aerial combat.

References: Clipping Vol. No. 32, p. 17; Letter, Badge and Medal Section, D. S. C. Files, W. D.; W. H.

o o o o

**MATHEWS, ALONZO R.**, of Penhook, Franklin County, Virginia.

Private, 26th Infantry, 1st Division.

**Cited by Division Commander.**

Citation: "For gallantry in action and especially meritorious services."

References: G. O. No. 1, 1st Div., 1-20-18; A. G. O. Records, W. D.; A. G. O. R.; W. H.

o o o o

**MATHEWS, PAUL E.**, of Petersburg and Prince George County, Virginia.

Private, Company B, 1st Supply Train, 1st Division.

Son of Mrs. T. J. Mathews.

**Cited by Division Commander.**

Citation: "For gallantry in action and especially meritorious services."

References: G. O. No. 1, 1st Div., 1-20-18; A. G. O. Records, W. D.; A. G. O. R.; W. H.

Note: This citation is in addition to that noted in Source Volume 1, p. 107.

o o o o

**MATTHEWS, HARRY A.**, of Richmond, Virginia.

Corp. Machine-Gun Company, 26th Infantry, 1st Division.

**Cited by Division Commander.**

Citation: "For gallantry in action and especially meritorious services."

References: G. O. No. 1, 1st Div., 1-20-18; A. G. O. Records, W. D.; A. G. O. R.; W. H.

o o o o

**MAURY, DABNEY HENDERSON, JR.**, of Millboro, Bath County, Virginia.

Private, No. 60/623, Ambulance Service.

Son of D. H. Maury, Sr.

**French Croix de Guerre with Bronze Star.**

Citation: "On the morning of May 27, 1918, he consented to remain alone in an advanced first-aid station in order to pick up the last wounded who might arrive. He performed his duty under a violent bombardment, in the course of which his ambulance was riddled with shell fragments. He continued to effect the evacuations in spite of the advance of the enemy, and was often exposed to the fire of machine guns during his work."

Reference: W. D. letter, 8/15/23; W. H.

o o o o

**MAYNARD, EDWIN BROOKS**, of Portsmouth, Virginia.

Major, Ambulance Corps, 1st Sanitary Train, 1st Division.

Son of Hon. Harry B. Maynard.

**Recommended for Distinguished Service Cross.**

Recommendation: "1. It is recommended that the Distinguished Service Cross be awarded to Maj. Edwin Brooks Maynard, Medical Corps, U. S. A., who 'during the 18th, 19th, 20th, and 21st of July, 1918, near Soissons, was conspicuous for his gallantry and devotion to duty. During these days, with utter disregard for his personal safety and welfare, denying himself any rest and necessary food, he continually exposed himself in

the most heavily shelled areas of the battlefield, searching for, locating and expediting the removal of the wounded.”

(Signed) F. G. Lawton, Colonel, Infantry,  
Commanding Division Trains.

**Commended by Major-General, U. S. A.**

Commendation: “During the time that I was in command of the First Division, which included the extensive operation of Soisson, St. Mihiel and the Meuse-Argonne, you were Director of the Ambulance Company of the Division. You were confronted with difficulties of the most serious nature and with tasks that required the highest ability and the most determined efforts. Your organization for the employment of the Ambulance Companies, your mastery of every detail concerning the transportation and care of the wounded, your dominating leadership over the commands, and your superb loyalty and zeal secured the maximum degree of comfort and treatment of our wounded. Your work was so conspicuous as to evoke at all times comments of admiration and approval from officers of the Division who observed it.”

(Signed) Charles P. Summerall,  
Major-General, U. S. A.

Sept. 7, 1919.....

**Recommended for the D. S. M. by Maj-Gen. Summerall, February 8, 1923,**  
for services noted in above commendation.

**References:** V. P. I. Records; A. G. O. Files, W. D.; A. G. 201; W. H.

**Note:** These honors are in addition to citations and honors noted in Source Volume 1, p. 108.

o o o o

**MAYNARD, HARRY LEE, JR., of Norfolk, Virginia.**

Captain, 315th Machine Gun Company, 80th Division.

Son of Hon. Harry Lee and Eleanor Brooks Maynard.

**Meritorious Services Citation Certificate** by the Commanding General, A. E. F., for services with 313th M. G. Bn.

**Reference:** W. D. letter, 8/15/23; W. H.

**Note:** This honor is in addition to that in Source Vol. 1, p. 108.

o o o o

**MELTON, HERBERT S., of Lynchburg, Virginia.**

Private, Company D, 16th Infantry, 1st Division.

Son of Peter W. Melton.

**Cited by Division Commander.**

Citation: “For gallantry in action and especially meritorious services.”

**References:** G. O. No. 1, 1st Div., 1-20-18; A. G. O. Records, W. D.  
A. G. O. R.; W. H.

o o o o

**MICHIE, HENRY C., Jr., of Charlottesville, Virginia.**

Major, Medical Corps, U. S. A.

Son of Captain H. C. Michie.

**French Medaille d'Honneur des Epidemies (Argent).**

**References:** War Dept. Letter, 7-14-23; W. H.

o o o o

**MILLS, MORGAN REAGAN, JR., of Richmond, Virginia.**

Captain, 6th Regiment, U. S. M. C., 2nd Division.

Son of Hon. Morgan R. and Willie May Brauer Mills.

**Regimental Citation.**

Citation: “While in the course of a determined attack by the enemy upon his company's lines, on the night of June 2-3, his company, weakened by the loss of its Company commander and next in command, he controlled two platoons of his company with rare judgment and coolness. The attack was beaten back through the accurate rifle fire of the company, and a splendid morale was maintained among the company during this trying period through the untiring efforts of 2nd Lieut. Mills.”

**References:** Certified copy of letter dated July 12, 1918, from Major General George Barnett to Mrs. Morgan R. Mills, Sr.; W. H.

**Note:** This citation is in addition those noted in Source Volume I, p. 112.

**MITCHELL, FRANK MAZYCK**, of Norfolk, Virginia.

First Lieutenant, 6th Field Artillery, 1st Division.

Son of J. Y. S. Mitchell.

**Cited by Division Commander.**

Citation: "For gallantry in action and especially meritorious services."

**References:** G. O. No. 1, 1st Div., 1-20-18; A. G. O. Records, W. D. A. G. O. R.; W. H.

**Note:** This citation is in addition to those noted in Source Volume 1, p. 113.

o o o o

**MONARCH, JAMES McK.**, of Richmond, Virginia.

Seaman, U. S. S. Victor, U. S. Navy.

**Navy Cross.**

Citation: "For display of good seamanship, nerve, and judgment in acting as coxswain subsequent to the explosion and resultant fire on board the U. S. S. Victor, February 10, 1918."

**Commended by Secretary of the Navy.**

Commendation: "For traveling seven miles to shore through lines of ice floes to obtain assistance when fire occurred upon the tug patrol, Victor, off Cape May, on February 10, 1918."

**References:** Appendix, Source Vol. 1, p. 240; Clip. Vol. 34, p. 15; Navy Dept. Records; W. H.

o o o o

**MONEYHUN, RALPH C.**, of Toms Creek, Wise County, Virginia.

Corporal, Machine Gun Company, 18th Infantry, 1st Division.

Son of Mrs. Lizzie Moneyhun.

**Cited by Division Commander.**

Citation: "For gallantry in action and especially meritorious services."

**References:** G. O. No. 1, 1st Div., 1-20-18; A. G. O. Records, W. D. A. G. O. R.; W. H.

o o o o

**MOORE, GEORGE S.**, of Tazewell, Tazewell County, Virginia.

Private, Company H, 16th Infantry, 1st Division.

Son of John Moore.

**Cited by Division Commander.**

Citation: "For gallantry in action and especially meritorious services."

**References:** G. O. No. 1, 1st Div., 1-20-18; A. G. O. Records, W. D. A. G. O. R.; W. H.

o o o o

**MORRISETT, DANIEL G.**, of Winterpock, Chesterfield County, Virginia.

Major, 1st Trench Mortar Hqrs., 1st Division.

Son of Hattie A. Morrisett.

**Cited by Division Commander.**

Citation: "For gallantry in action and especially meritorious services."

**References:** G. O. No. 1, 1st Div., 1-20-18; A. G. O. Records, W. D. A. G. O. R.; W. H.

o o o o

**MURDOCK, JAMES PAULDING**, of Portsmouth, Virginia.

Commander, U. S. S. Powhatan, U. S. Navy.

Son of George Wilson and Mary Pearson Paulding Murdock.

**Navy Cross.**

Citation: "For distinguished service in the line of his profession as Commanding Officer, U. S. S. Powhatan, engaged in the important, exacting and hazardous duty of transporting and escorting troops and supplies to European ports through waters infested with enemy submarines and mines."

**References:** V. W. H. C. Files, questionnaire; Navy Department records; W. H.

**MYERS, RICHARD PEGRAM**, Petersburg, Virginia.

Lieutenant Commander, U. S. N.

**Commander of Military Order of Aviz, by Portugal.**

**References:** Navy Department Records, W. H. Files; Navy Dept. letter 4/3/23.



**NELMS, JAMES ARCHIE**, of Newport News, Virginia.

Captain, 5th Regiment, U. S. M. C., 2nd Division.

Son of Clarence G. and Mollie E. Simons Nelms.

**Second Division Citation.**

Citation: "Although wounded while leading his platoon under trying conditions, had his wounds dressed on the field and remained with the company."

**Second Division Citation.**

Citation: (Text of this citation is given in Source Volume 1, mention of the citation having been omitted.)

**References:** U. S. M. C. records furnished by Major-General John A.

Lejeune; G. O. No. 40, p. 20; W. H.

**Note:** These citations are in addition to those noted in Source Volume 1, p. 119.

o o o o

**NESTER, JOHN C.**, of Laurel Fork, Carroll County, Virginia.

Private, Company G, 16th Infantry, 1st Division.

**Cited by Division Commander.**

Citation: "For gallantry in action and especially meritorious services."

**References:** G. O. No. 1, 1st Div., 1-20-18; A. G. O. Records, W. D.

A. G. O. R.; W. H.

o o o o

**NEWTON, ROBERT L.**, of Ballston, Arlington County, Virginia.

Private, Company A, 28th Infantry, 1st Division.

Son of John C. Newton.

**Cited by Division Commander.**

Citation: "For gallantry in action and especially meritorious services."

**References:** G. O. No. 1, 1st Div., 1-20-18; A. G. O. Records, W. D.;

A. G. O. R.; W. H.

o o o o

**NOLLEY, FRANK RICHMOND**, of Norfolk, Virginia.

Private, 77th Company, 6th M. G. Bn., U. S. M. C., 2nd Division.

**American E. F. Citation.**

Citation: "For gallantry in action near Magenta Farm, Meuse-Argonne Sector, November 1, 1918."

**References:** U. S. M. C. records furnished by Major-General John A.

Lejeune; Citation Order No. 3, p. 62; W. H.

**Note:** This citation is in addition to those noted in Source Volume 1, p. 121.

o o o o

**OWENS, OSCAR LEE**, of Windsor, Isle of Wight County, Virginia.

Captain and Chaplain, 2nd Division.

**Cited by Commander-in-Chief.**

Citation: "For distinguished and exceptional gallantry at Frappelle, France, on August 18, 1918, in the operations of the A. E. F."

**Recommended for the Distinguished Service Cross.**

Recommendation identical with citation above.

**References:** Certified Copies in W. H. Files.

o o o o

**PARKER, WILLIAM P.**, of Richmond, Virginia.

Enlisted Service, U. S. Marine Corps.

**Commended by Secretary of Navy, 25 April, 1919.**

Commendation: "For promptness and heroically endeavoring to rescue from drowning Harold W. Middleton, Jr., who threw himself from the ferry boat, Bridgeton, en route from Camden to Philadelphia, March 2, 1919."

**References:** Source Volume IV, p. 109; U. S. M. C. records, Navy Department.

o o o o

**PARR, CARL A.**, of Low Moor, Alleghany County, Virginia.

Private, Company A, 2nd M. G. Bn., 1st Division.

Son of Mrs. Alfredo C. Reid.

**Cited by Division Commander.**

Citation: "For gallantry in action and especially meritorious services."  
 References: G. O. No. 1, 1st Div., 1-20-18; A. G. O. Records, W. D.;  
 A. G. O. R.; W. H.

o o o o

**PEEK, GEORGE M.**, of Hampton, Virginia.

Lieutenant-Colonel, Assistant Operations Officer, 6th Army Corps.

Son of S. H. Peek.

**French Legion of Honor (Chevalier)**: By decree dated March 21, 1921.  
**Recommended for the Distinguished Service Medal.**

Recommendation: "Maj. Peek has been on duty with these forces (Army Corps of Supply, G. I.) since their organization and has rendered service of a particularly high order."

(Signed) Henry T. Allen,  
 Commanding General, Hqrs. A. E. F.,  
 Coblenz, Germany, 11-7-20.

**Officer of Grand Ducal of Crown of Luxemburg.**

References: Appendix, Vol. 1, p. 241; V. M. I., pp. 17, 143, 355; Hampton records, W. H.; A. G. O. Files, W. D.; A. G. 201; A. G. O. R.

o o o o

**PERKINSON, ALLEN CARLYLE**, of Petersburg, Virginia.

Captain, U. S. Marine Corps, 2nd Division.

Son of Dennie and Annie P. Belcher Perkinson.

**Second Division Citation.**

Citation: "Displayed coolness, courage and gallantry during a hostile raid on his post on April 21, 1918."

References: G. O. 35, p. 3; U. S. Marine Corps records submitted by Major-General John A. Lejeune; W. H.

Note: The text of the above citation was omitted from Captain Perkinson's record in Source Volume 1, p. 129.

o o o o

**PERSINGER, HENRY L.**, of Virginia.

Private, Company B, 16th Infantry, 1st Division.

**Cited by Division Commander.**

Citation: "For gallantry in action and especially meritorious services."

References: G. O. No. 1, 1st Div., 1-20-18; A. G. O. Records, W. D.;  
 A. G. O. R.; W. H.

o o o o

**PETTIGREW, VANCE M.**, of Virginia.

**Cited by Brigade Commander.**

Citation: "For gallantry in action and devotion to duty during the operations of the 2d. Inf. Brig. in the Meuse-Argonne offensive, Nov. 5-8, 1918."

References: Individual Record of Decorations (statement); A. G. O. R.;  
 G. O. No. 11, Hq. 2nd Inf. Brig., 12-20-19; W. H.

o o o o

**PHELPS, WILBUR MOOREHEAD**, of Staunton, Virginia.

Major, Medical Corps, attached to 1st Engineers, 1st Division.

**French Croix de Guerre with Palm.**

Citation: "During the operations from July 18-21, 1918, he displayed conspicuous devotion to duty, fearlessly exposing himself in a heavily shelled area to attend and evacuate wounded, and to organize in the open an evacuation service. Thanks to his initiative, his courage and energy, about 75 men have thus been saved from certain death."

(Signed) Petain,  
 The General Commander-in-Chief.

**Silver Star Citation.**

Citation: "Displayed conspicuous devotion to duty during the operations from July 18-21, by not only treating and evacuating the wounded of the organization to which he was attached, but also voluntarily going forward into heavily shelled areas and organizing an evacuation service which successfully evacuated about 75 wounded men, some of whom would have died had it not been for his initiative, energy and courage."

**Recommended for Distinguished Service Cross.**

**Recommendation:** "Displayed extraordinary heroism during the operation southwest of Soissons, July 18-21, 1918, fearlessly exposing himself during violent artillery shelling to attend and evacuate wounded and to organize in the open an evacuation service for his own and other organizations. Due to his initiative, great courage and energy, about 75 men were saved from certain death."

(Signed) C. A. Davis, Lieut. Col., Inf.

January 14, 1919.

**References:** G. O. No. 11220 "D" (Extract), G. H. Q., 11-5-18; A. G. O. R.; A. G. O. files, W. D.; A. G. 201; W. H.

**Note:** The French citation is in correction of, and the two remaining honors in addition to, those noted in Source Volume 1, p. 131.

o o o o

**PHILLIPS, WALTER C.**, of Willis, Floyd County, Virginia.

Corporal, Company C, 3rd M. G. Bn., 1st Division.

Son of William B. Phillips.

**Cited by Division Commander.**

**Citation:** "For gallantry in action and especially meritorious services."

**References:** G. O. No. 1, 1st Div., 1-20-18; A. G. O. Records, W. D.; A. G. O. R.; W. H.

**Note:** The above citation is in addition to that noted in Source Volume 1, p. 131.

o o o o

**POFF, WILLIAM D.**, of Roanoke, Virginia.

Private, Company E, 16th Infantry, 1st Division.

Son of John L. Poff.

**Cited by Division Commander.**

**Citation:** "For gallantry in action and especially meritorious services."

**References:** G. O. No. 1, 1st Div., 1-20-18; A. G. O. Records, W. D.; A. G. O. R.; W. H.

o o o o

**POINDEXTER, WILLIAM B.**, of Ridgeway, Henry County, Virginia.

Captain, Railroad Transportation Corps, Troop Movement Bureau.

Son of Alexander B. and Lelia C. Poindexter.

**Meritorious Services Citation Certificate.**

**Citation:** "For services as assistant to officer in charge of Troop Movement Bureau, Zone of Advance."

**References:** W. D. letter, 7-19-23; Randolph-Macon College records; W. H.

**Note:** This honor is in addition to that noted in Source Vol. 1, p. 132.

o o o o

**POUND, ROBERT D.**, of Leedstown, Westmoreland County, Virginia.

Private, Company M, 28th Infantry, 1st Division.

Son of Robert C. Pound.

**Cited by Division Commander.**

**Citation:** "For gallantry in action and especially meritorious services."

**References:** G. O. No. 1, 1st Div., 1-20-18; A. G. O. Records, W. D.; A. G. O. R.; W. H.

o o o o

**PURYEAR, BENNET, JR.**, of Orange, Virginia.

Major, U. S. M. C., 2nd Division.

**Navy Cross.**

**Citation:** "While attached to the Fifth Marines he participated in the occupation of the Toulon-Troyon Sectors; on the heights of the Meuse between Verdun and St. Mihiel; in the battles in the Chateau-Thierry Sector, June 1st to 10th, and in the great counterthrust, southwest of Soissons, July 18-19. While a member of the Division Staff he participated in the occupation of the Marbache Sector (just north of Nancy, August 7 to 20); the battle of St. Mihiel, September 12th to 16th; the battle of Blanc-Mont Ridge, October 1st to 10th, and the battle of Meuse-Argonne, November 1st to 11th; the march on the Rhine, and the occupation of the Coblenz Bridge Head. This officer played an important part in the successful workings



of the Department of Administration. The services, as above outlined, were conspicuous, highly meritorious, and in duty of great responsibility."

**Second Division Citation.**

Citation: "As assistant to A. C. of S. of G-I, he served in all operations in which the division has been engaged. His services have been exceptionally meritorious, and in duty of great responsibility. He contributed greatly to the success of the division in the various operations."

References: U. S. M. C. records furnished by Major-General John A. Lejeune; G. O. No. 88, p. 2; W. H.

Note: These citations are in addition to those noted in Source Volume 1, p. 134, which gives Major Puryear's address as Richmond, Va.

**RAGLAND, WILLIAM LEE**, of Virginia.

Sergeant-Major, Hq. Company, 26th Inf., 1st Division.

**Cited by Division Commander.**

Citation: "For gallantry in action and especially meritorious services."

References: A. G. O., 3-10-25; G. O. 1, Hq. 1st Div., 12-1-20; W. H.

**REID, ROBERT L.**, of Round Hill, Loudoun County, Virginia.

Private, Company I, 26th Infantry, 1st Division.

Son of L. E. Reid.

**Cited by Division Commander.**

Citation: "For gallantry in action and especially meritorious services."

References: G. O. No. 1, 1st Div., 1-20-18; A. G. O. Records, W. D.; A. G. O. R.; W. H.

**RHODES, JOSEPH S.**, of Roanoke, Virginia.

Sergeant, U. S. Marine Corps.

**Second Division Citation.**

Citation: "The above-named is cited for gallantry in action against the enemy in St. Mihiel."

References: U. S. M. C. records furnished by Major-General John A. Lejeune; G. O. No. 64, p. 16; W. H.

Note: The citation is in addition to that noted in Source Volume 1, p. 137, in which Joseph S. Rhodes is listed as a private and his home address given as New Market, Virginia.

**RICHARDS, JAMES NEVILLE COCKE** (deceased), of Riverton and Petersburg, Virginia.

Captain, Company F, 26th Infantry, 1st Division.

Son of Walter Buck and Mary Monroe Cocke Richards.

**Cited by Division Commander.**

Citation: "For gallantry in action and especially meritorious services."

References: G. O. No. 1, 1st Div., 1-20-18; A. G. O. Records, W. D.; A. G. O. R.; W. H.

Note: This citation is in addition to those noted in Source Volume 1, p. 137.

**RILEY, SAMUEL P.**, of Shradlers, Tazewell County, Virginia.

Private, Company B, 16th Infantry, 1st Division.

Son of Ben F. Riley.

**Cited by Division Commander.**

Citation: "For gallantry in action and especially meritorious services."

References: G. O. No. 1, 1st Div., 1-20-18; A. G. O. Records, W. D.; A. G. O. R.; W. H.

**RINER, ROBERT B.**, of Castlewood, Russell County, Virginia.

Private, Company G, 28th Infantry, 1st Division.

Son of Mrs. Virginia F. Keith.

**Cited by Division Commander.**

Citation: "For gallantry in action and especially meritorious services."

References: G. O. No. 1, 1st Div., 1-20-18; A. G. O. Records, W. D.; A. G. O. R.; W. H.

**ROBINSON, JAMES M.**, of Colley, Dickenson County, Virginia.

Private, Company H, 28th Infantry, 1st Division.

Son of George W. Robinson.

**Cited by Division Commander.**

Citation: "For gallantry in action and especially meritorious services."

**References:** G. O. No. 1, 1st Div., 1-20-18; A. G. O. Records, W. D.; A. G. O. R.; W. H.

o o o o

**ROCKENBACH, SAMUEL DICKERSON**, of Lynchburg, Virginia.

Brigadier-General, Cavalry, U. S. A., Quartermaster, Base Section No. 1, St. Nazaire, France; Chief of Tank Corps.

Son of Frank J. and Jane Nicolson Rockenbach.

**Commended by W. H. Hart**, Quartermaster-General, March 24, 1919, for energy and zeal as commanding general, Base Section No. 1, St. Nazaire, France, from February to July, 1919, where practically all the embarkation activities through this great Base Port were handled and which service rendered is not covered in the D. S. M. citation.

**Commended by William H. Johnston**, Major-General, April 5, 1919, for assistance rendered during the embarkation of the 91st Division.

**Commended by Paul Millard**, Mayor of Nantes, France, 6 May, 1919, for granting all French employees holiday on the 1st of May, and for sentiments of sympathy toward the French population.

**Commended by John J. Pershing**, Commander-in-Chief, Gen. Hqrs., A. E. F., February 20, 1919, for the work accomplished by the Corps.

**Letters of Commendation by H. A. Drum**, Chief of Staff; C. P. Summerall, Maj. Gen.; J. N. Greely, Chief of Staff; William D. O'Connor, Brig. Gen.; W. W. Atterbury, Brig. Gen., and C. S. Farnsworth, for able administration of the Tank Corps.

**References:** A. G. O. Files, W. D.; A. G. 201; W. H.

Note: These honors are in addition to those noted in Source Volume 1, p. 140.

o o o o

**ROGERS, HERBERT WILSON**, of Nassawadox, Northampton County, Va.

Captain (then Lieutenant), Medical Detachment, 59th Infantry.

Son of Mrs. Nettie Rogers.

**Cited by Brigade Commander.**

Citation: "Aisne-Marne offensive, July 18, to August 6, 1918. While on duty with the Medical Detachment, 59th Infantry, near Vesle River, he displayed coolness, courage and devotion to duty at all times. He at all times disregarded his personal safety in order to have the wounded placed in less dangerous positions, and it was largely due to his personal efforts that they were safely evacuated to the rear. Captain Rogers displayed the same meritorious conduct during the period from September 26 to October 21, 1918, in the Meuse-Argonne offensive."

**References:** G. O. No. 30, Hqrs. 8th Inf. Brig., 11-25-18; War Dept. letter, 7-14-23; W. H.

o o o o

**ROSE, SANFORD L.**, of Callahan, Scott County, Virginia.

Private, Company F, 26th Infantry, 1st Division.

Son of Henry E. Rose.

**Cited by Division Commander.**

Citation: "For gallantry in action and especially meritorious services."

**References:** G. O. No. 1, 1st Div., 1-20-18; A. G. O. Records, W. D.; A. G. O. R.; W. H.

o o o o

**SALYERS, FRED R.**, of Wise, Wise County, Virginia.

Private, Company L, 16th Infantry, 1st Division.

Son of Mrs. Nancy A. Salyers.

**Cited by Division Commander.**

Citation: "For gallantry in action and especially meritorious services."

**References:** G. O. No. 1, 1st Div., 1-20-18; A. G. O. Records, W. D.; A. G. O. R.; W. H.

**SEELINGER, HARRY RALPH**, of Norfolk, Virginia.

First Lieutenant, Medical Detachment, 317th Inf., 80th Div.

**Distinguished Service Cross.**

Citation: "For extraordinary heroism in action at Nantillois, France, October 5, 1918. During an attack made by two companies of the 3rd Battalion, 320th Infantry, from the Bois de Fays, Lieutenant Seelinger, with his medical detachment, accompanied the troops and opened a first-aid station in an old cellar, with no overhead cover, remaining there under an intense barrage of enemy high explosive shell and shrapnel fire until ordered to retire, working continuously from 9 A. M. until 6 P. M., caring for the wounded with great devotion and rare bravery. His coolness and utter disregard for his own safety under terrific enemy fire encouraged the wounded and raised the morale of his men to a high pitch."

References: A. G. O. R.; G. O. 9, 1923; W. H.

Note: This honor in addition to that listed in Source Vol. 1, p. 145.

o o o o

**SELLERS, EDGAR W.**, of Elkton, Rockingham County, Virginia.

Private, Company A, 2nd M. G. Battalion, 1st Division.

Son of Mrs. A. L. Sellers.

**Cited by Division Commander.**

Citation: "For gallantry in action and especially meritorious services."

References: G. O. No. 1, 1st Div., 1-20-18; A. G. O. Records, W. D.; A. G. O. R.; W. H.

o o o o

**SHEEN, HENRY H.**, of Virginia.

Lieutenant-Colonel, Quartermaster Corps.

Son of Major Wm. G. Sheen.

**Polish Krzyz Walecznych.****Distinguished Service Medal.**

Citation: "For exceptionally meritorious and distinguished services. As quartermaster, 39th Division, from September, 1917, until October, 1918, and acting chief of staff, same division, from October until December, 1918, he rendered highly meritorious services. As chief quartermaster, intermediate section, Services of Supply, he displayed sound judgment in the disposal of property valued at many millions of dollars. Later, as chief quartermaster and acting chief of staff, G-4, American Forces in Germany, he displayed marked ability and initiative in many large undertakings and perplexing problems confronting him, resulting in immense savings to the government."

References: A. G. O. R., from W. D. letter, 8-20-23, for Polish honor; G. O. 56, 1922; W. H.

Note: These honors are in addition to those listed in Source Vol. 1, p. 148.

o o o o

**SHEPHERD, LEMUEL CORNICK, JR.**, of Norfolk, Virginia.

Captain, 5th Regiment, U. S. M. C., 2nd Division.

Son of Dr. L. C. and Emma Cartwright Shepherd.

**Second Division Citation.**

Citation: "This young officer showed exceptional gameness, and in his handling of men set them an excellent example of bravery. On June 3, 1918, he was wounded in the neck, but refused to go to the rear, this during the retirement of the French from our left. On June 6, 1918, in the attack of the the Lucy Torcy Roads, he was again wounded and had to be evacuated."

References: U. S. M. C. records furnished by Major-General John A. Lejeune; G. O. No. 44, p. 17; W. H.

Note: This citation is in addition to those noted in Source Volume 1, p. 149.

o o o o

**SHORES, COLBURN**, of Tangier, Accomac County, Virginia.

Corporal, 15th Company, 6th M. G. Bn., U. S. M. C., 2nd Division.

**Second Division Citation.**



Citation: "Worthy of the highest commendation for the splendid manner in which he conducted himself under fire during the operations against the enemy from June 1st to 11th, 1918."

**Second Division Citation.**

Citation: "Under heavy shell fire, in an emergency, volunteered to carry ammunition, disregarding all danger."

**References:** U. S. M. C. records furnished by Major-General John A. Lejeune, G. O. No. 40, p. 60; G. O. No. 44, p. 57; W. H.

**Note:** These citations are in addition to those noted in Source Volume 1, p. 149.

o o o o

**SILVEY, WILLIAM RUSSELL**, of Buckingham County and Richmond, Va.  
First Lieutenant, 62nd Infantry.

Son of Mrs. G. St. C. Robinson.

**Cited by Brigade Commander.**

Citation: "For bravery in Vosges Mountains and Meuse-Argonne offensive."

**References:** G. O. No. 2, Hqrs. 11th Inf. Brig., 6-2-19; War Dept. Letter, 7-14-23; W. H.

o o o o

**SKINNER, FREDERICK HENRY**, of Newport News, Virginia.

Captain, Headquarters 30th Div.

Son of Thomas Catlett and Belle Anderson Skinner.

**Silver Star Citation.**

Citation: "For act during the operations in the St. Quentin-Cambrai area and in Belgium."

**References:** Letter, Badge and Medal Section, W. D.; G. O. No. 6, p. 1, Hqrs. 30th Div., A. E. F., 2-8-19; A. G. O. 201, W. D.; W. H.

o o o o

**SKUERS, JOSEPH**, of Sweet Hall, King William County, Virginia.

Corporal, Company B, 3rd Machine Gun Battalion, 1st Division.

Son of Thomas Skuers.

**Cited by Division Commander.**

Citation: "For gallantry in action and especially meritorious services."

**References:** G. O. No. 1, 1st Div., 1-20-18; A. G. O. Records, W. D.; A. G. O. R.; W. H.

o o o o

**SLAUGHTER, SMITH S.**, of Quinke, Greene County, Virginia.

Private, Company B, 28th Infantry, 1st Division.

**Cited by Division Commander.**

Citation: "For gallantry in action and especially meritorious services."

**References:** G. O. No. 1, 1st Div., 1-20-18; A. G. O. Records, W. D.; A. G. O. R.; W. H.

o o o o

**SMEATON, ROBERT**, of Virginia.

Sergeant-Major, 1st Bn., 26th Inf., 1st Division.

**Cited by Brigade Commander.**

Citation: "For displaying exceptional coolness and bravery during the advance from the Paris Road to the bridge beyond Ploisy. He assisted his battalion commander in consolidation while continually exposed to intense machine-gun fire. His frequent and accurate observations were a great aid in making a proper estimate of the situation, 18-23, July, 1918."

**References:** Individual Record of Decorations (statement); A. G. O. R.; G. O. No. 2, 2nd Brig. Hq., 8-2-18; W. H.

o o o o

**SMITH, BENJAMIN FRANKLIN**, of Mathews, Virginia.

Private, 47th Co., 5th Regiment, U. S. Marine Corps.

**Silver Star Citation.**

Citation: "For gallantry in action at Bois de Belleau, France, July 25, 1918. While a member of a detachment advancing against the enemy, Private Smith assumed command when his corporal was killed, and by good judgment and leadership directed the attack upon an enemy machine-gun crew. All of the enemy gunners were killed."

**References:** G. O. 14, 1923; W. H.

**Note:** This honor in addition to those listed in Source Vol. 1, p. 151, in which residence is given as Norfolk, Va.

o o o o

**SMITH, ROBERT W.**, of Winchester, Frederick County, Virginia.

Sergeant, Co. I, 116th Infantry, 29th Division.

**Silver Star Citation.**

Citation: "For gallantry in action near Samogneux, France, October 8, 1918. When his company commander had been killed and one company officer wounded and the third officer of the company was heavily engaged with his platoon on an extended front, he assumed command. With the major portion of his company, in the face of heavy rifle and machine-gun fire, he attained the company's objective. Sergeant Smith was painfully wounded, but refused medical aid until he had consolidated his company's position."

**References:** A. G. O. R.; G. O. 13, 1923; W. H.

o o o o

**SMYTHERS, FRED A.**, of Hillsville, Carroll County, Virginia.

Private, Co. H, 28th Infantry, 1st Division.

Son of Stephen S. Smythers.

**Cited by Division Commander.**

Citation: "For gallantry in action and especially meritorious services."

**References:** G. O. No. 1, 1st Div., 1-20-18; A. G. O. Records, W. D.; A. G. O. R.; W. H.

o o o o

**SNEAD, JOHN J.**, of Tyro, Nelson County, Virginia.

Private, Company C, 28th Infantry, 1st Division.

Son of James M. Snead.

**Cited by Division Commander.**

Citation: "For gallantry in action and especially meritorious services."

**References:** G. O. No. 1, 1st Dev., 1-20-18; A. G. O. Records, W. D.; A. G. O. R.; W. H.

o o o o

**SNYDER, JAMES D.**, of Abingdon, Washington County, Virginia.

Private, Company I, 18th Infantry, 1st Division.

Son of Mrs. Ettie M. Snyder.

**Cited by Division Commander.**

Citation: "For gallantry in action and especially meritorious services."

**References:** G. O. No. 1, 1st Div., 1-20-18; A. G. O. Records, W. D.; A. G. O. R.; W. H.

o o o o

**SOMERS, VERNON LEE** (deceased), of Bloxom, Accomac County, Va.

Second Lieutenant, 5th Regiment, U. S. M. C., 2nd Division.

Son of William J. and Margaret A. Mears Somers.

**Second Division Citation.**

Citation: "For extraordinary heroism in stemming the German advance in this region, and in thrusting it back from every position occupied by the Fourth Brigade from June 2nd to 11th, inclusive."

**Second Division Citation.**

Citation: "His platoon being nearly wiped out by machine gun and rifle fire, he continued to the objective, where he was struck by a rifle bullet and fell. Several of his men rushed to assist him, but with great effort he made them leave him, directing them to retire to a point where they were to dig in. He died immediately afterwards. Throughout the entire action he displayed marked bravery, and by his leadership inspired great confidence."

**References:** U. S. M. C. records furnished by Major General John A. Lejeune; G. O. No. 40, p. 13; G. O. No. 44, p. 18; W. D. letter dated 8-15-23; W. H.

**Note:** These citations are in addition to those noted in Source Volume I, p. 154.

**SPESSARD, RUTHERFORD H.**, of New Castle, Craig County, Virginia.

Major, 58th Infantry, 4th Division.

Son of Hon. N. E. Spessard.

**French Croix de Guerre, with Gilt Star.**

Citation: "On July 20, 1918, during the attack in the region of Cour-champs, upon receipt of a message from a French unit operating to the east of the village, requesting reinforcements to stop a German counter attack, he proceeded without hesitation to the attack with two platoons across ground swept by a terrible fire of artillery and machine guns and succeeded in repulsing the enemy."

References: A. G. O. R., from W. D. letter 7-25-23; W. H.

Note: This honor is in addition to that listed in Source, Vol. 1, p. 154.

o o o o

**SQUIRES, LLOYD F.**, of Ocran, Lancaster County, Virginia.

Private, Company D, 28th Infantry, 1st Division.

Son of George L. Squires.

**Cited by Division Commander.**

Citation: "For gallantry in action and especially meritorious services."

References: G. O. No. 1, 1st Div., 1-20-18; A. G. O. Records, W. D.;

A. G. O. R.; W. H.

o o o o

**STEPHENS, JOSEPH W. G.**, of Wicomico Church, Northumberland County, Virginia.

Captain, 26th Infantry.

Son of J. W. G. Stephens.

**Cited by Brigade Commander.**

Citation: "For gallantry in action during the operations 18-23, July, 1918, near Soissons. He showed conspicuous bravery and devotion to duty in bringing his company up under heavy artillery and MG. fire to reinforce a very important position on the Soissons-Paris Road, near Missy on July 19, 1918, and endangered himself by going forward through heavy artillery fire to reconnoiter the position, and displayed high qualities of courage and leadership in the attack of the same evening, until wounded so severely as to necessitate evacuation."

References: Individual Record of Decorations (statement); A. G. O. R.;

G. O. No. 2, 2nd Brig. Hq., 8-2-18; W. H.

Note: This honor in addition to that listed in Source Vol. 1, p. 156.

o o o o

**STEWART, RICHARD P.**, of Pennington Gap, Lee County, Virginia.

Private, Company A, 16th Infantry, 1st Division.

Son of Mrs. Nancy Virginia Stewart.

**Cited by Division Commander.**

Citation: "For gallantry in action and especially meritorious services."

References: G. O. No. 1, 1st Div., 1-20-18; A. G. O. Records, W. D.;

A. G. O. R.; W. H.

o o o o

**STONE, BENJAMIN L.**, of Sanville, Henry County, Virginia.

Corporal, Company I, 26th Infantry, 1st Division.

Son of Neuson P. Stone.

**Cited by Division Commander.**

Citation: "For gallantry in action and especially meritorious services."

References: G. O. No. 1, 1st Div., 1-20-18; A. G. O. Records, W. D.;

A. G. O. R.; W. H.

o o o o

**STREET, FLEM**, of Whitewood, Buchanan County, Virginia.

Private, Company G, 28th Infantry, 1st Division.

Son of Emanuel W. Street.

**Cited by Division Commander.**

Citation: "For gallantry in action and especially meritorious services."

References: G. O. No. 1, 1st Div., 1-20-18; A. G. O. Records, W. D.;

A. G. O. R.; W. H.



**SWATS, CECIL F.**, of West Augusta, Augusta County, Virginia.

Corporal, Company L, 16th Infantry, 1st Division.

**Cited by Division Commander.**

Citation: "For gallantry in action and especially meritorious services."

**References:** G. O. No. 1, 1st Div., 1-20-18; A. G. O. Records, W. D.; A. G. O. R.; W. H.

o o o o

**SYMINGTON, POWERS**, of Virginia.

Captain U. S. S. Illinois, U. S. Navy.

**Navy Cross.**

Citation: "For exceptionally meritorious services in a duty of great responsibility as Commanding Officer of the U. S. S. Illinois in the Atlantic Fleet."

**References:** Navy Dept. letter 4-3-23, W. H.; Navy Records, Navy Department; W. H.

o o o o

**TEBBS, RICHARD H., JR.**, of Leesburg, Loudoun County, Virginia.

Captain, U. S. Marine Corps.

**Order of Wen Hu (Chinese) Striped Tiger, 5th Class.**

**References:** U. S. M. C. records furnished by Major-General John A. Lejeune; W. H.

**Note:** This citation is in addition to those noted in Source Volume 1, p. 159.

o o o o

**THACKER, JOEL D.**, of Orrix, Bedford County, Virginia.

Corporal, Company I, 18th Infantry, 1st Division.

Son of Benjamin C. Thacker.

**Cited by Division Commander.**

Citation: "For gallantry in action and especially meritorious services."

**References:** G. O. No. 1, 1st Div., 1-20-18; A. G. O. Records, W. D.; A. G. O. R.; W. H.

o o o o

**THOMAS, CHARLES G.**, of Antioch, Fluvanna County, Virginia.

Private, Company M, 28th Infantry, 1st Division.

Son of John W. Thomas.

**Cited by Division Commander.**

Citation: "For gallantry in action and especially meritorious services."

**References:** G. O. No. 1, 1st Div., 1-20-18; A. G. O. Records, W. D.; A. G. O. R.; W. H.

o o o o

**TOLIVER, EMMETT R.**, of Fries, Grayson County, Virginia.

Private, Company L, 16th Infantry, 1st Division.

Son of Mrs. Bettie Toliver.

**Cited by Division Commander.**

Citation: "For gallantry in action and especially meritorious services."

**References:** G. O. No. 1, 1st Div., 1-20-18; A. G. O. Records, W. D.; A. G. O. R.; W. H.

o o o o

**TOMLIN, GILMORE C.**, of Lynchburg, Virginia.

Sergeant, Company G, Sixth Infantry.

Son of T. G. and Daisy Tomlin.

**Distinguished Service Cross.**

Citation: "For extraordinary heroism in action near Regmeville, France, September 12, 1918. Facing heavy machine-gun fire, he alone charged a machine gun which was causing his company many casualties, killed the gunner, and captured the gun."

**Cited by Division Commander (Silver Star.)**

Citation: "For coolness and determination under fire."

**References:** Clip. Vol. 36, p. 40; G. O. 37, 1919; A. G. O. Files, W. D.; A. G. 201; G. O. 37, Hqrs. 5th Div., A. P. O. 745, A. E. F., France, July 26, 1918; W. H.

**TURLEY, WILLIAM A.**, of Asberry, Tazewell County, Virginia.

Private, Company K, 16th Infantry, 1st Division.

Son of John A. Turley.

**Cited by Division Commander.**

Citation: "For gallantry in action and especially meritorious services."

**References:** G. O. No. 1, 1st Div., 1-20-18; A. G. O. Records, W. D.; A. G. O. R.; W. H.

o o o o

**TURNER, CLINTON D.**, of Norfolk, Virginia.

Private, Company E, 28th Infantry, 1st Division.

**Cited by Division Commander.**

Citation: "For gallantry in action and especially meritorious services."

**References:** G. O. No. 1, 1st Div., 1-20-18; A. G. O. Records, W. D.; A. G. O. R.; W. H.

o o o o

**TURNER, MILLS E.**, of Carrsville, Isle of Wight County, Virginia.

Private, Company E, 28th Infantry, 1st Division.

**Cited by Division Commander.**

Citation: "For gallantry in action and especially meritorious services."

**References:** G. O. No. 1, 1st Div., 1-20-18; A. G. O. Records, W. D.; A. G. O. R.; W. H.

o o o o

**TYLER, JOHN PAUL**, of Clifton Forge, Virginia.

Captain (Chaplain) Headquarters, 82nd Division.

Son of Francis Marion Tyler.

**Meritorious Services Citation Certificate.**

Citation: "For services as Division Burial Officer."

**References:** War Dept. letter, 7-14-23; W. H.

o o o o

**UNRUE, ROBERT L.**, of Roanoke, Virginia.

Corporal, U. S. Marine Corps.

**Second Division Citation.**

Citation: "The above-named is cited for gallantry in action against the enemy in Jaulny."

**References:** U. S. M. C. records furnished by Major-General John A. Lejeune; G. O. No. 64, p. 19; W. H.

o o o o

**VAUGHAN, HARRY B., JR.**, of Norfolk, Virginia.

Captain, 306th Engineers, 81st Division.

**Silver Star Citation.**

Citation: "Captain Harry B. Vaughan, Jr., for gallantry in action and especially meritorious services, who was wounded in action near Abaucourt, France, November 9, 1918."

**Silver Star Citation.**

Citation: "For gallant and meritorious conduct: Captain Harry B. Vaughan, Jr., Regimental Supply Officer, who by his efficient and untiring effort during the whole period of the operation provided needed bridge material and maintained the limited available motor transportation so as to keep supplies and rations on hand when needed."

**References:** A. G. O. Files, W. D.; A. G. 201; Appendix, Volume 1, W. H.

o o o o

**VIAL, FRANK AUGUSTINE**, of Richmond, Virginia.

Corporal, U. S. Marine Corps.

Son of John and Bettie Hutcheson Vial.

**Navy Cross.**

Citation same as given in Volume 1, for Distinguished Service Cross.

**Cruz de Guerra (Portuguese).** Decree of December 6, 1921.

**American E. F. Citation.**

Citation: "For gallantry in action near St. Etienne, France, October 3-9, 1918, while on duty as a runner."

**Second Division Citation.**

Citation: "Repeatedly carried messages between his battalion commander and Regimental Post, although exposed to fire from strongly fortified

machine-gun positions. In the face of heavy machine-gun fire he volunteered and brought to its position a detachment which had been left to hold a point while companies were being reorganized."

**Second Division Citation.**

Citation: "Distinguished himself for bravery as Battalion Runner, displayed fearless devotion to duty, surpassing all ordinary standards, and for six days and nights made liaison possible, ever volunteering to carry and gain information, and with practically no rest for six days and nights continually risking his life in crossing fields swept with machine gun and artillery fires."

References: U. S. M. C. records furnished by Major-General John A. Lejeune; G. O. No. 40, p. 40; G. O. No. 88, p. 121; Citation Order No. 5, p. 4; W. H.

Note: These citations are in addition to those noted in Source Volume 1, p. 163.

o o o o

**WALLS, LLOYD B.**, of Toms Creek, Wise County, Virginia.

Private, Headquarters Company, 26th Infantry, 1st Division.

Son of B. D. Walls.

**Cited by Division Commander.**

Citation: "For gallantry in action and especially meritorious services."

References: G. O. No. 1, 1st Div., 1-20-18; A. G. O. Records, W. D.; A. G. O. R.; W. H.

o o o o

**WARE, JOSEPH F.**, of Fort Monroe, Elizabeth City County, Virginia.

Colonel, Chief Signal Officer, 9th Army Corps, 80th Div.

**Silver Star Citation.**

Citation: "For gallantry in action near Cuisy, France, October 6, 1918, while rendering aid to wounded under heavy shell fire."

References: Citation Orders No. 8, G. H. Q., 80th Div., Washington, 3-1-20; W. H.

Note: This citation is in addition to those noted in Source Volume 1, p. 166.

o o o o

**WEEKS, GORDON H.**, of Bedford, Bedford County, Virginia.

Private, Company I, 28th Infantry, 1st Division.

Son of Rowling O. Weeks.

**Cited by Division Commander.**

Citation: "For gallantry in action and especially meritorious services."

References: G. O. No. 1, 1st Div., 1-20-18; A. G. O. Records, W. D.; A. G. O. R.; W. H.

o o o o

**WICKHAM, VIVIAN H.**, of Roanoke, Virginia.

Private, Ambulance Company No. 13, 1st Division.

Son of William H. Wickham.

**Cited by Division Commander.**

Citation: "For gallantry in action and especially meritorious services."

References: G. O. No. 1, 1st Div., 1-20-18; A. G. O. Records, W. D.; A. G. O. R.; W. H.

o o o o

**WILKINSON, HARRY A.**, of South Richmond, Virginia.

Corporal, Company I, 26th Infantry, 1st Division.

Son of Ashlie H. Wilkinson.

**Cited by Division Commander.**

Citation: "For gallantry in action and especially meritorious services."

References: G. O. No. 1, 1st Div., 1-20-18; A. G. O. Records, W. D.; A. G. O. R.; W. H.

o o o o

**WILLIAMS, ASHBY**, of Stafford County and Roanoke, Virginia.

Lieutenant-Colonel (then Major), 320th Infantry, 80th Division.

**Cited by Brigade Commander.**

Citation: "For special courage and gallantry in commanding the as-



saulting battalion of this regiment in the Bois-des-Ogons, October 8 to 11th, 1918, in the Meuse-Argonne offensive."

References: G. O. No. 3, Hqrs. 160th Inf. Brig., 5-15-19; War Dept. letter 7-14-23; W. H.

o o o o

**WILLIAMS, CECIL A.** (deceased), of Norfolk, Virginia.

Sergeant, 51st Company, 5th Regiment, U. S. M. C., 2nd Division.

**Second Division Citation.**

Citation: "Although wounded, ably assisted his platoon commander in conducting advance under extremely heavy machine gun fire."

References: U. S. M. C. records furnished by Major-General John A. Lejeune; G. O. No. 40, p. 26; W. H.

Note: This is in addition to citation noted in Source Volume 1, p. 171.

o o o o

**WILLIAMS, LLOYD WILLIAM** (deceased), of Berryville, Virginia.

Captain, 51st Company, 5th Regiment, U. S. M. C., 2nd Division.

Son of Goodwin Hulings and Anne H. McCormick Williams.

**Second Division Citation.**

Citation: "Led his company fearlessly, advancing over heavy fire, reached his objective, organized it and secured to left front of 1st Battalion and aided materially in holding the ground taken and was killed."

References: U. S. M. C. records furnished by Major-General John A. Lejeune; G. O. No. 40, p. 20; W. H.

Note: This citation is in addition to those noted in Source Volume 1, p. 171.

o o o o

**WILMER, WILLIAM HOLLAND**, of Millwood, Clarke County, and Richmond, Virginia.

Colonel, Medical Corps, U. S. Army.

Son of Bishop Wilmer (deceased).

**Distinguished Service Medal.**

Citation: "For exceptionally meritorious and distinguished services. As surgeon in charge of medical research laboratories, Air Service, American Expeditionary Forces, since September, 1918, he has rendered most distinguished service. His thorough knowledge of the psychology of flying officers and the expert tests applied efficiently and intelligently under his direction have done much to decrease the number of accidents at the flying schools in France and have established standards and furnished indications which will be of inestimable value in all future work to determine the qualifications of pilots and observers. The data collected by him is an evidence of his ability, his painstaking care, and of his thorough qualifications for the important work entrusted to him. The new methods, instruments and appliances devised under his direction for testing candidates for pilots and observers have attracted the attention and been the subject of enthusiastic comment by officers of the Allied services, and will be of importance in promoting the safety and more rapid development of aerial navigation."

References: Clip. Vol. 36, p. 92; Journal of American Medical Association, May 3, 1919; Clarke County records, W. H.; A. G. O. Files, W. D.; A. G. 201; W. H.

o o o o

**WILT, JOHN W.**, of Luray, Page County, Virginia.

Private, Headquarters Company, 26th Infantry, 1st Division.

Son of John Wilt.

**Cited by Division Commander.**

Citation: "For gallantry in action and especially meritorious services."

References: G. O. No. 1, 1st Div., 1-20-18; A. G. O. Records, W. D.; A. G. O. R.; W. H.

o o o o

**WINN, JOSEPH L.**, of Roanoke, Virginia.

Private, U. S. Marine Corps.

**American E. F. Citation.**

Citation: "For gallantry in action at Belleau Wood, France, early

in June, 1918, while carrying ammunition and rations to the front line under heavy enemy fire."

**References:** U. S. M. C. records furnished by Major-General John A. Lejeune; Citation Order No. 9, —. 49; W. H.

**WINTER, FRANCIS ANDERSON**, of Warrenton, Fauquier County, Va.

Colonel, Chief Surgeon, Line of Communication.

Son of William Drew and Sarah Stirling Winter.

**Commander of the Bath, British (Companion.)**

**Officer of the Legion of Honor (French.)**

**References:** Fauquier County records; A. G. O. Files, W. D.; A. G. 201; W. H.

**Note:** The above honors are in addition to those in Source Volume 1, p. 173.

**WISE, JENNINGS CROPPER**, of Richmond, Virginia.

Lieutenant-Colonel, 318th Infantry, 80th Division.

Son of the late John S. and Evelyn Byrd Beverly Douglas Wise.

**Cited by Commander-in-Chief.**

Citation: "For exceptionally meritorious and conspicuous service as battalion commander, 318th Infantry.

**Cited by Lieutenant-Colonel Kiffer**, Commandant le 133 e Regiment d'Infanterie.

**References:** Letter from J. C. Wise, W. H. Files; original citations framed and in possession of Col. Wise.

**Note:** These honors in addition to those in *Virginians of Distinguished Service*, Source Vol. 1, p. 173.

o o o o

**WISEMAN, HENRY ADOLPHUS**, of Danville, Virginia.

Captain, Medical Corps, 114th Infantry, 29th Division.

**Cited by Division Commander.**

Citation: "For gallantry in action. Displayed remarkable courage and devotion to duty October 10, 1918, North of Verdun, when, with utter disregard for personal safety, he remained in a position of great personal danger in order to care for the wounded."

**References:** W. D. letter, 8-15-23; G. O. No. 14, Headquarters, 29th Division, April 20, 1919; W. H.

**Note:** This citation substituted for that in Source Vol. 1, p. 174, which is incorrect.

o o o o

**WITHROW, JAMES**, of Goshen, Rockbridge County, Virginia.

Private, 1st Cl. Machine Gun Company, 26th Infantry, 1st Division.

Son of Mrs. Mary Withrow.

**Cited by Division Commander.**

Citation: "For gallantry in action and especially meritorious services."

**References:** G. O. No. 1, 1st Div., 1-20-18; A. G. O. Records, W. D.; A. G. O. R.; W. H.

o o o o

**WOOD, CHARLES PARKINSON**, of Warrenton, Fauquier County, Va.

Captain (later Major), First Gas Regiment, Chemical Warfare Service, A. E. F.

**French Croix de Guerre with Gilt Star.**

Citation: "He displayed qualities of leadership and of courage in the preparation and execution of a school operation, the success of which was largely due to him."

**References:** Foreign Citations, A. G. O. R.; Order No. 11,408 "D," Nov. 9, 1918, Gen. Hdq., French Armies of the North and Northeast; W. H.

**Note:** This Gilt Star citation in addition to the Croix de Guerre listed in Source Vol. 1, p. 174.

o o o o

**WOOD, DUNCAN M.**, of Portsmouth, Virginia.

Commanding Officer, U. S. S. Pocahontas.

Son of Edward Parker and Annie Duncan Mahon Wood.

**Navy Cross.**

Citation: "For distinguished service in the line of his profession as Commanding Officer of the U. S. S. Pocahontas and the U. S. S. Tacoma engaged in the important, exacting and hazardous duty of transporting and escorting troops and supplies to European ports through waters infested with enemy submarines and mines."

References: Navy records, Navy Dept.; W. H.

o o o o

**WRAY, FRANCIS MARION (FRANK M.)**, of Martinsville, Henry County, Virginia.

Captain, Infantry, Sixth Brigade.

Son of Pinckney Covington and Cassandra Davenport Wray.

**Recommended for Distinguished Service Cross.**

Recommendation: "While Aide de Camp to the Commanding General, Sixth Brigade, 3rd Division, he displayed extraordinary heroism and devotion to duty October 8, 9, 10, 11, 12, 13 and 14, 1918, near Cierges, Romagne and Cunel, Bois, Malaumont, and Bois de la Bultiere, by constantly reconnoitering enemy positions regardless of his safety under heavy artillery, machine-gun and rifle fire, reorganizing scattered units and bringing back absolutely reliable and invaluable information to his Brigade Commander."

(Signed) O. E. Hunt, Brigadier-General.

13th of July, 1919.

**Cited by Commander-in-Chief.**

Citation: "For distinguished and exceptional gallantry at Cierges, France, on 8-10 October, 1918, in the operation of the American Expeditionary Forces. In testimony thereof and as an expression of appreciation of this valor, I award him this Citation."

(Signed) John J. Pershing,

Commander-in-Chief.

Awarded on 17th March, 1920.

References: War Dept. letter, 8-15-23; Citation Order No. 8, G. H. Q., A. E. F., March 1, 1920; letter F. M. W., 2-13-23, to W. H.; A. G. O. Files, W. D.; A. G. 201; A. G. O. R.

o o o o

**WRIGHT, SAUNDERS**, of Pemberton, Goochland County, Virginia.

First Lieutenant, Transportation Corps.

**Meritorious Service Citation Certificate.**

Citation: "For services at Base Section No. 1."

References: War Dept. letter 7-14-23; W. H.

o o o o

**YOUELL, RICE McNUTT**, of Norton, Wise County, Virginia.

Major, 1st M. G. Battalion, 28th Infantry, 1st Division.

Son of Mrs. S. A. Youell.

**Cited by Division Commander.**

Citation: "For gallantry in action and especially meritorious services."

References: G. O. No. 1, 1st Div., 1-20-18; A. G. O. Records, W. D.; A. G. O. R.; W. H.

**Note:** This citation is in addition to those noted in Source Volume 1, p. 178.



## Summary of Honors in Vol. V

### **DISTINGUISHED SERVICE MEDAL—ARMY**

Barnett, George; Major; Huntley, Rappahannock County.  
Browne, Beverly Fieding; Lieutenant-Colonel; Accomac County.  
Collins, Christopher Clarke; Colonel; Lynchburg.  
Cox, Creed F.; Lieutenant-Colonel; Bridle Creek, Grayson County.  
Jamerson, George Hariston; Brigadier-General; Martinsville, Henry Co.  
Jordon, Richard H.; Major; Virginia.  
Keyser, Ralph Stover; Major; Thoroughfare, Prince William County.  
Maynard, Edwin Brooks; Major; Portsmouth.  
Sheen, Henry H.; Lieutenant-Colonel; Virginia.  
Wimer, William Holland; Colonel; Millwood, Clarke County.

### **DISTINGUISHED SERVICE CROSS**

Boykin, Samuel V.; Sergeant; Richmond.  
Fury, William H.; Sergeant; Moss Neck, Caroline County.  
Hagan, Joseph Addison; Captain; Richmond.  
Lawhorne, Dewey H.; Corporal; Schoolfield, Pittsylvania County.  
Manning, James F., Jr.; First Lieutenant; Purcellville, Loudoun Co.  
Seelinger, Harry Ralph; First Lieutenant; Norfolk.  
Tomlin, Gilmore C.; Sergeant; Lynchburg.

### **NAVY CROSS**

Dayton, John H.; Commanding Officer, U. S. N.; Portsmouth.  
Fuller, Edward C. (deceased); Captain; Hamilton, Loudoun County.  
Fury, William H.; Sergeant; Moss Neck, Caroline County.  
Keyser, Ralph Stover; Major; Thoroughfare, Prince William Co.  
Monarch, James McK.; Seaman; Richmond.  
Murdock, James Paulding; Commanding Officer, U. S. N.; Portsmouth.  
Puryear, Bennet, Jr.; Major; Orange, Orange County.  
Symington, Powers; Captain; Virginia.  
Vial, Frank Augustine; Corporal; Richmond.  
Wood, Duncan M.; Commanding Officer, U. S. N.; Portsmouth.

### **CITED BY COMMANDER-IN-CHIEF**

Cabell, Julian Mayo; Lieutenant-Colonel; Richmond.  
Jones, Ernest Lester; Colonel; Culpeper County.  
Owens, Oscar Lee; Captain (Chaplain); Windsor, Isle of Wight Co.  
Wise, Jennings Cropper; Lieutenant-Colonel; Richmond.  
Wray, Francis Marion; Captain; Martinsville, Henry County.

### **AMERICAN E. F. CITATIONS**

Lambeth, George D., Jr.; Sergeant; Richmond.  
McClellan, John Murray (deceased); 2nd Lieutenant; Richmond.  
Nolley, Frank Richmond; private; Norfolk.  
Vial, Frank Augustine; Corporal; Richmond.  
Winn, Joseph L.; private; Roanoke.

### **MERITORIOUS SERVICES CITATION CERTIFICATE**

Beaman, Joseph Hunter; Sergeant-Major; Southampton County.  
Hulcher, Julius J.; Major; Richmond.  
Maynard, Harry Lee, Jr.; Captain; Norfolk.  
Poindexter, William B.; Captain; Ridgeway, Henry County.  
Tyler, John Paul; Captain (Chaplain); Clifton Forge.  
Wright, Saunders; 1st Lieutenant; Pemberton, Goochland County.

### **CITED BY DIVISION COMMANDER**

Addison, Taylor G.; private; Vandyke, Buckingham County.  
Ammonette, Henry L.; private; Madison Heights, Amherst County.  
Bailey, John E.; private; Keokee, Lee County.  
Baker, Frank Austin (deceased); private; Richmond.  
Baugher, Clarence A.; Sergeant; Elkton, Rockingham County.  
Baxter, Herbert A.; private; Petersburg.  
Bogle, Andrew M.; private; Ceres, Bland County.  
Bonnville, Dave E.; private; Perrin, Gloucester County.  
Bowles, Aubrey L.; private; Louisa, Louisa County.

Brooks, Chester W.; private; Brokenburg, Spotsylvania County.  
Bruce, Harry G.; Sergeant; Elkton, Rockingham County.  
Buchanan, Fitzhugh L.; Captain; East Stone Gap, Wise County.  
Cammer, Claude Richard; 1st Lieutenant; Winchester.  
Caparell, Nicholas A.; Corporal; Fort Myer, Arlington County.  
Capps, Jesse A.; Bugler; Ben Hur, Lee County.  
Carr, Armev B.; private; Ritchpatch, Alleghany County.  
Cassell, Dorse H.; Sergeant; Kimballton, Giles County.  
Chism, James F.; private; Ballston, Arlington County.  
Clay, Charles Henry; private; Norfolk.  
Cohen, Abraham; private; Norfolk.  
Covington, William Byron; Corporal; New Church, Accomac County.  
Crockett, Marvin L.; private; Tangier, Accomac County.  
Daniels, James E.; private; Petersburg.  
Derrickson, Paul Waples (deceased); Lieutenant; Norfolk.  
Dickerson, Thomas; private; Richmond.  
Dillon, Henry; private; Arcanum, Buckingham County.  
Dodson, Wilson Brown; 2nd Lieutenant; Norfolk.  
Golliday, John B.; private; Middletown, Frederick County.  
Gordon, Lewis H.; Sergeant; Richmond.  
Greene, Samuel B.; Wagoner; Toms Creek, Wise County.  
Guerrieri, Nick V.; private; Norfolk.  
Haburn, Chester; private; Jonesville, Lee County.  
Hall, John T.; private; Gladys, Campbell County.  
Hamilton, Thomas C.; private; Holland, Nansemond County.  
Harmon, Russell Albert; 1st Lieutenant; Floyd, Floyd County.  
Harner, William R.; Campbell; Ceres, Bland County.  
Hartigan, James S.; private; Lexington, Rockbridge County.  
Harwood, Franklin Andrews; Lieutenant; Richmond.  
Haynes, Harris; private; Alexandria.  
Heck, Danna H.; Corporal; Damascus, Washington County.  
Herndon, Lewis Sidney; 1st Lieutenant; Max Meadows, Wythe County.  
Hodge, George N.; private; Williamsville, Bath County.  
Honaker, Zed S.; private; Honaker, Russell County.  
Hooker, Karl M.; Sergeant; Lynchburg.  
Horn, Granville M.; private; Skeggs, Buchanan County.  
Hulcher, Frank G.; private; Richmond.  
Hume, Julian R.; 1st Lieutenant; Norfolk.  
Jeffers, George L.; 2nd Lieutenant; Richmond.  
Jenkins, Homer B.; Sergeant; Stanley, Page County.  
Jenkins, Luther R.; private; Speers Ferry, Scott County.  
Kimberly, Clarke Oler; 1st Lieutenant; Hampton.  
King, Marshall W.; private; Hopewell.  
Lacy, Oswald F.; private; Bedford, Bedford County.  
Ledman, John W.; private; Manassas, Prince William County.  
Lumsden, Clarence; private; Boone Mill, Franklin County.  
McCoy, Claude; private; Portsmouth.  
McCoy, Steve A.; private; Carterton, Russell County.  
McCreery, Victor A.; Sergeant; Arrington, Nelson County.  
McKinney, Thomas G.; private; Danville.  
McLeod, Alexander; 1st Lieutenant; Glen Allen, Henrico County.  
Mathews, Alonzo R.; private; Penhook, Franklin County.  
Mathews, Paul E.; private; Prince George County.  
Matthews, Harry A.; Corporal; Richmond.  
Melton, Herbert S.; private; Lynchburg.  
Mitchell, Frank Mazyck; 1st Lieutenant; Norfolk.  
Moneyhun, Ralph C.; Corporal; Toms Creek, Wise County.  
Moore, George S.; private; Tazewell County.  
Morrisett, Daniel G.; Major; Winterpock, Chesterfield County.  
Nester, John C.; private; Laurel Ford, Carroll County.  
Newton, Robert L.; private; Ballston, Arlington County.  
Parr, Carl A.; private; Low Moor, Alleghany County.  
Persinger, Henry L.; private; Virginia.

Phillips, Walter C.; Corporal; Willis, Floyd County.  
 Poff, William D.; private; Roanoke.  
 Pound, Robert D.; private; Leedstown, Westmoreland County.  
 Ragland, William Lee; Sergeant-Major; Virginia.  
 Reid, Robert L.; private; Round Hill, Loudoun County.  
 Richards, James Neville Cocke (dec'd.); Captain; Riverton, Warren Co.  
 Riley, Samuel P.; private; Shradars, Tazewell County.  
 Riner, Robert B.; private; Castlewood, Russell County.  
 Robinson, James M.; private; Colley, Dickenson County.  
 Rose, Sanford L.; private; Callahan, Scott County.  
 Salyers, Fred R.; private; Wise County.  
 Sellers, Edgar W.; private; Elkton, Rockingham County.  
 Skuers, Joseph; Sweet Hall, King William County.  
 Slaughter, Smith S.; private; Quinque, Greene County.  
 Smythers, Fred A.; private; Hillsville, Carroll County.  
 Snead, John J.; private; Tyro, Nelson County.  
 Snyder, James D.; private; Abingdon, Washington County.  
 Squires, Lloyd F.; private; Ocran, Lancaster County.  
 Stewart, Richard P.; private; Pennington Gap, Lee County.  
 Stone, Benjamin L.; Corporal; Sanville, Henry County.  
 Street, Flem; private; Whitewood, Buchanan County.  
 Swats, Cecil F.; Corporal; West Augusta, Augusta County.  
 Thacker, Joel D.; Corporal; Orrix, Bedford County.  
 Thomas, Charles G.; private; Antioch, Fluvanna County.  
 Toliver, Emmett R.; private; Fries, Grayson County.  
 Tomlin, Gilmore C.; Sergeant; Lynchburg.  
 Turley, William A.; private; Asberry, Tazewell County.  
 Turner, Clinton D.; private; Norfolk.  
 Turner, Mills E.; private; Carrsville, Isle of Wight Co.  
 Walls, Lloyd B.; private; Toms Creek, Wise County.  
 Weeks, Gordon H.; private; Bedford, Bedford County.  
 Wickham, Vivian H.; private; Roanoke.  
 Wilkinson, Harry A.; Corporal; Richmond.  
 Wilt, John W.; private; Luray, Page County.  
 Wiseman, Henry Adolphus; Captain; Danville.  
 Withrow, James; private; Goshen, Rockbridge County.  
 Youell, Rice McNutt; Major; Norton, Wise County.

## SECOND DIVISION CITATIONS

Bloom, Lynn Allen; private; Norfolk.  
 Churchman, Charles Johnston; Captain; Staunton (2 citations).  
 Cumming, Samuel Calvin; Captain; Hampton.  
 Elmore, Theodore; private; Danville.  
 Etheridge, Charles Antonio; 1st Lieutenant; Norfolk.  
 Fuller, Edward C. (deceased); Captain; Hamilton, Loudoun County.  
 Fury, William H.; Sergeant; Moss Neck, Caroline Co. (2 citations).  
 Hagan, Joseph Addison; Captain; Richmond.  
 Hart, Murray E.; Trumpeter; Danville.  
 Hill, James E.; private; Roanoke.  
 Hirst, Sampel Carroll; private; Purcellville, Loudoun Co. (2 citations).  
 Johnson, Clyde D. (deceased); private; Richmond.  
 Kivlighan, Edward R.; Corporal; Staunton.  
 Lambeth, George D., Jr.; Sergeant; Richmond (2 citations).  
 Lyle, Archibald G.; private; Millboro, Bath County.  
 Nelms, James Archie; Captain; Newport News. (Two citations.)  
 Perkinson, Allen Carlyle; Captain; Petersburg.  
 Puryear, Bennet, Jr.; Major; Orange, Orange County.  
 Rhodes, Joseph S.; Sergeant; Roanoke.  
 Shepherd, Lemuel Cornick, Jr.; Captain; Norfolk.  
 Shores, Colburn; Corporal; Tangier, Accomac County (2 citations).  
 Somers, Vernon Lee (dec'd.); Lieutenant; Bloxom, Accomac Co. (2 cit.).  
 Unrue, Robert L.; Corporal; Roanoke.  
 Vial, Frank Augustine; Corporal; Richmond (2 citations).  
 Williams, Cecil A. (deceased); Sergeant; Norfolk (2 citations).  
 Williams, Lloyd W. (deceased); Captain; Berryville, Clarke County.



**CITED BY BRIGADE COMMANDER**

Burress, James R.; private; Richmond.  
 Guyn, Mack S.; private; Hillsville, Wythe County.  
 Hagan, Willis C.; 1st Lieutenant; Roanoke.  
 Langly, James; Sergeant; Hagan, Lee County.  
 Pettigrew, Vance M.; Sergeant; Virginia.  
 Rogers, Herbert Wilson; Captain; Nassawadox, Northampton County.  
 Silvey, William Russell; 1st Lieutenant; Buckingham County.  
 Smeaton, Robert; Sergeant-Major; Virginia.  
 Stephens, Joseph W. G.; Captain; Wicomico Chorch, Northumberland Co.  
 Williams, Ashby; Lieutenant-Colonel; Stafford County.

**SILVER STAR CITATIONS**

Baker, Thomas; private; Virginia.  
 Bear, James Martin; Corporal; Churchville, Augusta County.  
 Bloom, Lynn Allen; private; Norfolk.  
 Brent, Irl D'A.; Captain; Roanoke.  
 Campbell, Joshua G. B.; 1st Lieutenant; Berryville, Clarke County.  
 Dalton, Herbert S., Jr.; private; Richmond.  
 Fray, Albert N.; 2nd Lieutenant; Advance Mills, Albemarle County.  
 Gardner, Eugene; Private; Hillsville, Carroll County.  
 Hazlegrove, William Perkins; Captain; Roanoke.  
 Herndon, Lewis Sidney; 1st Lieutenant; Max Meadows, Wythe County.  
 Holland, William H.; Corporal; Suffolk.  
 Hudnall, James Snowden; 1st Lieut.; Sunnybank, Northumberland Co.  
 Jones, George R.; private; Richmond.  
 Kimberly, Clarke Oler; 1st Lieutenant; Hampton.  
 Lindsay, James B.; Corporal; Boyce, Clarke County.  
 McClanahan, Reece; Sergeant; Big Rock, Buchanan County.  
 Phelps, Wilbur Moorehead; Major; Staunton.  
 Skinner, Frederick Henry; Captain; Newport News.  
 Smith, Benjamin Franklin; private; Mathews, Mathews County.  
 Smith, Robert W.; Sergeant; Winchester.  
 Vaughan, Harry B., Jr.; Captain; Norfolk (2 citations).  
 Ware, Joseph F.; Corporal; Fort Monroe, Elizabeth City Co.

**MISCELLANEOUS CITATIONS****Citation Orders:**

Compton, Cecil A.; 1st Lieutenant; Rappahannock County.  
 Herndon, Lewis Sidney; 1st Lieutenant; Max Meadows, Wythe Co.

**Cited in Orders:**

Grayson, Stuart M.; Captain; Vienna, Fairfax County.  
 Grove, Frank A.; Captain; Max Meadows, Wythe County.  
 Kyle, Bernard Hewett; Major; Lynchburg.  
 Manning, James F., Jr.; 1st Lieutenant; Purcellville, Loudoun Co.  
 Mills, Morgan R., Jr.; Captain; Richmond.

**COMMENDATIONS**

Maynard, Edwin Brooks; Major; Portsmouth (By Maj. Gen.).  
 Monarch, James McK.; Seaman; Richmond (By Sec'y Navy).  
 Parker, William P.; private; Richmond (By Sec'y Navy).  
 Rockenbach, Samuel Dickerson; Brig.-Gen.; Lynchburg (By Quarter-master-General; by Major-General; by Commander-in-Chief; by the Mayor of Nantes, France).

**RECOMMENDATIONS****Distinguished Service Medal:**

Beaman, Joseph Hunter; Sergeant-Major; Franklin, Southampton Co.  
 Cabell, Julian Mayo; Lieutenant-Colonel; Richmond.  
 Jones, Ernest Lester; Colonel; Rixeyville, Culpeper Co.  
 Peek, George M.; Lieutenant-Colonel; Hampton.  
 Maynard, Edwin Brooks; Major; Portsmouth.

**Distinguished Service Cross:**

Anderson, Karl Brooke; private; Richmond.  
 Cumming, Samuel Calvin; Captain; Hampton.  
 Dalton, Herbert S., Jr.; private; Richmond.  
 Herndon, Lewis Sidney; 1st Lieutenant; Max Meadows, Wythe Co.  
 Kyle, Bernard Hewett; Major; Lynchburg.

Maynard, Edwin Brooks; Major; Portsmouth.  
 Owens, Oscar Lee; Captain (Chaplain); Windsor, Isle of Wight Co.  
 Phelps, Wilbur Moorehead; Major; Staunton.  
 Wray, Francis Marion; Captain; Martinsville, Henry County.

#### FOREIGN HONORS

#### BRITISH

Boykin, Samuel V.; Sergeant; Richmond—Military Medal.  
 Winter, Francis Anderson; Colonel; Warrenton, Fauquier County—  
 Commander of the Order of the Bath (Companion).

#### FRENCH

##### Croix de Guerre:

Baker, Henry Southworth; private; Lexington, Rockbridge Co.  
 Bloom, Lynn Allen; private; Norfolk.  
 Boykin, Samuel V.; Sergeant; Richmond.  
 Campbell, Joshua G. B.; 1st Lieutenant; Berryville, Clarke Co.  
 Covington, William Byron; Corporal; New Church, Accomac Co.  
 Eoff, Robert Grimshaw; Christiansburg, Montgomery Co.  
 Fletcher, Forest; 2nd Lieutenant; Lexington, Rockbridge Co.  
 Glucksman, Sempel; private; Portsmouth.  
 Herndon, Lewis Sidney; 1st Lieutenant; Max Meadows; Wythe Co.  
 Jones, Allen C.; private; Lexington, Rockbridge Co.  
 Jones, William L.; Driver; Charlottesville.  
 King, Arthur J.; private; Norfolk.  
 Kivlighan, Edward R.; Corporal; Staunton.  
 Lawhorne, Dewey H.; Corporal; Schoolfield, Pittsylvania Co.  
 Maury, Dabney Henderson, Jr.; private; Millboro, Bath Co.  
 Phelps, Wilbur Moorehead; Major; Staunton.  
 Spessard, Rutherford H.; Major; New Castle, Craig Co.  
 Wood, Charles Parkinson; Captain; Warrenton, Fauquier Co.

##### Legion of Honor (Legion d'Honneur):

Barnett, George; Major-General; Huntley, Rappahannock Co.  
 Grayson, Cary Travers; Rear-Admiral; Culpeper County.  
 Jones, Ernest Lester; Colonel; Rixeyville, Culpeper County.  
 Peek, George M.; Lieutenant-Colonel; Hampton.  
 Winter, Francis Anderson; Colonel; Warrenton, Fauquier County.

##### Medal of Honor Epidemics (Medaille d'Honneur des Epidemies):

Guthrie, John D.; Captain; Charlotte C. H., Charlotte County.  
 Hulbert, William P.; 1st Lieutenant; Middleburg, Loudoun County.  
 Michie, Henry C., Jr.; Major; Charlottesville.

##### The Commemorative Medal for the Great War (Medaille Commemorative de la Grande Guerre):

Anderson, Henry W.; Colonel; Richmond.  
 Covington, William Byron; Corporal; New Church, Accomac Co.

##### Order of Agricultural Merit (Merite Agricole):

Guthrie, John D.; Captain; Charlotte C. H., Charlotte County.

#### BELGIAN

Bell, William B.; Corporal; Gordonsville, Orange Co. (Croix de Guerre).

#### ITALIAN

Anderson, Henry W.; Colonel; Richmond (National Commemorative Medal for the War of 1915-1918).  
 Cook, Allen M.; Commander, U. S. N.; Norfolk (Officer of the Order of the Crown).  
 Dunn, Andrew B.; Major; Fort Myer, Arlington Co. (Croce de Guerra).  
 Jones, Ernest Lester; Colonel; Rixeyville, Culpeper Co. (Fatigue de Guerre; S. S. Maurizio e Lazzaro).

#### POLISH

McGhee, Hugh G.; private; Roanoke (Commemorative Cross).  
 Sheen, Henry H.; Lieutenant-Colonel; Virginia (Krzysz Walecznych).

**PORTUGUESE**

Brewster, David L. S.; Captain; Lincolnia, Loudoun Co. (Order of Avis).  
Myers, Richard Pegram; Lieutenant-Commander; Petersburg (Commander of the Military Order of Avis).  
Vial, Frank Augustine; Corporal; Richmond (Cruz de Guerra).

**ROUMANIAN**

Anderson, Henry W.; Colonel; Richmond—Grand Officer of the Order of the Star; Knight of the First Class of the Order of Regina Maria; Commander of the Order of the Crown of Roumania (with swords).

**SERBIAN**

Anderson, Henry W.; Colonel; Richmond—Knight Grand Cross of the Order of Saint Sava; Grand Officer of the Order of Saint Sava; the Royal Serbian Red Cross.

**RUSSIAN**

Anderson, Henry W.; Colonel; Richmond—The Order of Sainte Anne, Second Class (with swords).  
Bumgardner, Eugenia S., Staunton—Silver Chest Medal on Ribbon of St. Stanislas' Order.  
Gutherie, John D.; Captain; Charlotte Court House—Order of Saint Anne.

**GRECIAN**

Anderson, Henry W.; Colonel; Richmond—Commander of the Order of the Saviour.

**MONTENEGRIN**

Anderson, Henry W.; Colonel; Richmond—Commander of the Order of Danilo.

**CZECHO-SLOVAKIAN**

Anderson, Henry W.; Colonel; Richmond—The War Cross (War Department Citation).



# Local Honor List For Vol. V

## CITIES

- Alexandria:** Haynes, Harris; pvt.; Cit. Div. Comm. (1-1)\*
- Charlottesville:** Jones, William L.; Driver; Fr. C. de G. Michie, Henry C., Jr.; Maj.; Fr. Med. d'Hon des Epid. (Argent). (2-2)
- Clifton Forge:** Tyler, John Paul; Capt. (Chap.); M. S. C. C. (1-1)
- Danville:** Elmore, Theodore; pvt.; Sec. Div. Cit. Hart, Murray E.; Trumpeter; Sec. Div. Cit. McKinney, Thomas G.; pvt.; Cit. Div. Comm. Wiseman, Henry Adolphus; Capt.; Cit. Div. Comm. (4-4)
- Hampton:** Cumming, Samuel Calvin; Capt.; Sec. Div. Cit.; Rec. for D. S. C. Kimberly, Clarke Oler; 1st Lieut.; Cit. Div. Comm.; S. S. Cit. Peek, George M.; Lieut.-Col.; Fr. Leg. of Hon.; Rec. for D. S. M.; Off. of the Grand Ducal of Crown of Luxemburg. (3-7)
- Hopewell:** King, Marshall W.; Pvt.; Cit. Div. Comm. (1-1)
- Lynchburg:** Collins, Christopher Clark; Col.; D. S. M. Hooker, Karl M.; Sgt.; Cit. Div. Comm. Kyle, Bernard Hewett; Maj.; Rec. D. S. C. twice; Cit. in G. O. Melton, Herbert S.; pvt.; Cit. Div. Comm. Tomlin, Gilmore C.; Sgt.; Cit. Div. Comm.; D. S. C. Rockenbach, Samuel Dickerson; Brig.-Gen.; five commendations. (6-13)
- Newport News:** Nelms, James Archie; Capt.; two Sec. Div. Citations. Skinner, Frederick Henry; Capt.; S. S. Cit. (2-3)
- Norfolk:** Bloom, Lynn Allen; pvt.; Fr. C. de G. with S. S.; S. S. Cit.; Sec. Div. Cit. Clay, Charles Henry; pvt.; Cit. Div. Comm. Cohen Abraham; pvt.; Cit. Div. Comm. Cook, Allen M.; Comm. U. S. N.; Off. of the Order of the Crown of Italy. Derrickson, Paul Waples (Dec.); Lieut.; Cit. Div. Comm. Dodson, Wilson Brown (Dec.); 2nd Lieut.; Cit. Div. Comm. Etheridge, Charles Antonio; 1st Lieut.; 2nd Div. Cit. Guerrieri, Nick V.; pvt.; Cit. Div. Comm. Hume, Julian R.; 1st Lieut.; Cit. Div. Comm. King, Arthur J.; pvt.; Fr. C. de G. with B. S. Maynard, Harry Lee; Capt.; M. S. C. C. Mitchell, Frank M.; 1st Lieut.; Cit. Div. Comm. Nolley, Frank R.; pvt.; A. E. F. Cit. Seelinger, Harry R.; 1st Lieut.; D. S. C. Shepherd, Lemuel C., Jr.; Capt.; 2nd Div. Cit. Turner, Clinton D.; pvt. Cit. Div. Comm. Vaughan, Harry B., Jr.; Capt.; two S. S. Cit. Williams, Cecil A. (Dec.) Sgt.; 2nd Div. Cit. (18-21)
- Petersburg:** Baxter, Herbert A.; pvt.; Cit. Div. Comm. Daniels, James E.; pvt.; Cit. Div. Comm. Myers, Richard Pegram; Lieut.-Comm.; Commander of the Military Order of Aviz. Perkinson, Allen C.; Capt.; 2nd Div. Cit. (4-4)
- Portsmouth:** Dayton, John H.; Comm. U. S. N.; Navy Cross. Glucksman, Samuel; pvt.; C. de G. with G. S. McCoy, Claude; pvt.; Cit. Div. Comm. Maynard, Edwin B.; Maj.; Rec. D. S. C.; Commended; Rec. D. S. M. Murdock, James P.; Commander; Navy Cross. Wood, Duncan M.; C. O., U. S. N.; Navy Cross. (6-8)
- Richmond:** Anderson, Henry W.; Col.; thirteen foreign honors conferred by Roumania, Serbia, Russia, Greece, Montenegro, Czecho-Slovakia, Italy and France, respectively. Anderson, Karl Brooke; pvt.; Rec. D. S. C. Baker, Frank Austin (Dec.); Cit. Div. Comm. Boykin, Samuel V.; Sgt.; D. S. C.; C. de G. with G. S.; Brit. Mil. Med. Burress, James R.; pvt. Cit. Brig. Comm. Cabell, Julian Mayo; Lieut.-Col.; Cit. C.-in-C.; Rec. D. S. M. Dalton, Herbert S., Jr.; pvt.; S. S. Cit.; Rec. D. S. C. Dicker-

\*Note: The numerals in parenthesis following each local summary denote the number of men honored and the number of honors for each community. Thus (6-8) means that there were six honor men and eight honors.

- son, Thomas; pvt.; Cit. Div. Comm. Gordon, Lewis H.; Sgt.; Cit. Div. Comm. Hagan, Joseph A.; Capt.; D. S. C.; 2nd Div. Cit. Harwood, Franklin A.; Lieut.; Cit. Div. Comm. Hulcher, Frank G.; pvt.; Cit. Div. Comm. Hulcher, Julius J.; Maj.; M. S. C. C. Jeffers, George L.; 2nd Lieut.; Cit. Div. Comm. Johnson, Clyde D. (Dec.); pvt.; 2nd Div. Cit. Jones, George R.; pvt.; S. S. Cit. Lambeth, George D., Jr.; Sgt.; A. E. F. Cit.; two 2nd Div. Cit. McClellan, John Murray (Dec.); 2nd Lieut.; A. E. F., Cit. Mathews, Harry A.; Corp.; Cit. Div. Comm. Mills, Morgan R., Jr.; Capt.; Reg. Cit. Monarch, James McK.; Seaman; Navy Cross; Com. by Sec'y Navy. Parker, William P.; pvt.; Com. Sec'y Navy. Vial, Frank A.; Corp.; Navy Cross; Cruz de Guerra; two 2nd Div. Cit.; A. E. F. Cit. Wilkinson, Harry A.; Corp.; Cit. Div. Comm. Wise, Jennings C.; Lieut.-Col.; Cit. C-in-C.; Cit. Lt.-Col. (25-50)
- Roanoke:** Brent, Irl D'A.; Capt.; S. S. Cit. Hagan, Willis C.; 1st Lieut.; Cit. Brig.-Comm. Hazlegrove, William Perkins; Capt.; S. S. Cit. Hill, James E.; pvt.; 2nd Div. Cit. McGhee, Hugh G.; pvt.; Polish Commemorative Cross. Poff, William D.; pvt.; Cit. Div. Comm. Rhodes, Joseph S.; Sgt.; 2nd Div. Cit. Unrue, Robert L.; Cpl.; 2nd Div. Cit. Wickham, Vivian H.; pvt.; Cit. Div. Comm. Winn, Joseph L.; pvt.; A. E. F. Cit. (10-10)
- Staunton:** Bumgardner, Eugenia S., Russian decoration. Churchman, Charles Johnston; Capt.; two 2nd Div. Cit. Kivlighan, Edward R.; Fr. C. de G.; 2nd Div. Cit. Phelps, Wilbur M.; Maj.; C. de G. with Palm; S. S. Cit.; Rec. D. S. C. (4-9)
- Suffolk:** Holland, William H.; Corp.; S. S. Cit. (1-1)
- Winchester:** Cammer, Claude R.; 1st Lieut.; Cit. Div. Comm. Smith, Robert W.; Sgt.; S. S. Cit. (2-2)

## COUNTIES

- Accomac:** Browne, Beverly F.; Lieut.-Col.; D. S. M. Covington, William B.; Corp.; C. de G. with B. S.; Med. Com. de la Grande Guerre; Cit. Div. Comm. Crockett, Marvin L.; pvt.; Cit. Div. Comm. Shores, Colburn; Corp.; two 2nd Div. Cit. Sommers, Vernon Lee; 2nd Lieut.; two 2nd Div. Cit. (5-9)
- Albemarle:** Fray, Albert N.; 2nd Lieut.; S. S. Cit. (1-1)
- Alleghany:** Carr, Armev B.; pvt.; Cit. Div. Com. Parr, Carl A.; pvt. Cit. Div. Comm. (2-2)
- Amherst:** Amonette, Henry L.; pvt.; Cit. Div. Comm. (1-1)
- Arlington:** Caparell, Nicholas A.; Corp.; Cit. Div. Comm. Chism, James F.; pvt.; Cit. Div. Comm. Drum, Andrew B.; Maj. Croce de Guerra. Newton, Robert L.; pvt.; Cit. Div. Comm. (4-4)
- Augusta:** Swats, Cecil F.; Corp.; Cit. Div. Comm. Bear, James M.; Corp.; S. C. Cit. (2-2)
- Bath:** Hodge, George N.; pvt.; Cit. Div. Comm. Lyle, Archibald G.; pvt.; 2nd Div. Cit. Maury, Dabney H., Jr.; pvt.; C. de G. with B. S. (3-3)
- Bedford:** Lacy, Oswald F.; pvt.; Cit. Div. Comm. Thacker, Joel D.; Corp.; Cit. Div. Comm. Weeks, Gordon H.; pvt.; Cit. Div. Comm. (3-3)
- Bland:** Bogle, Andrew M.; pvt.; Cit. Div. Comm. Harner, William R.; Corp.; Cit. Div. Comm. (2-2)
- Buchanan:** Horn, Granville M.; pvt.; Cit. Div. Comm. McClanahan, Reece; Sgt.; S. S. Cit. Street, Flem; pvt.; Cit. Div. Comm. (3-3)
- Buckingham:** Addison, Taylor G.; pvt.; Cit. Div. Comm. Dillon, Henry; pvt.; Cit. Div. Comm. Silvey, William Russell; 1st Lieut.; Cit. Brig.-Comm. (3-3)
- Campbell:** Hall, John T.; pvt.; Cit. Div. Comm. (1-1)
- Caroline:** Fury, William H.; Sgt.; D. S. C.; Navy Cross; two 2nd Div. Cit. (1-4)
- Carroll:** Gardner, Eugene; pvt.; S. S. Cit. Nester, John C.; pvt.; Cit. Div. Comm. Smythers, Fred A.; pvt.; Cit. Div. Comm. (3-3)
- Charlotte:** Guthrie, John D.; Capt.; Order St. Anne; Chev. Merite Agricole; Med. D'Honneur (Argent). (1-3)
- Chesterfield:** Morrisett, Daniel G.; Maj.; Cit. Div. Comm. (1-1)

- Clark:** Campbell, Joshua G. B.; 1st Lieut.; C. de G. with G. and S. S.; S. S. Cit. Lindsay, James B.; Corp.; S. S. Cit. Williams, Lloyd W. (Dec.); 2nd Div. Cit. Wilmer, William H.; Col.; D. S. M. (4-5)
- Craig:** Spessard, Rutherford H.; Maj.; C. de G. with G. S. (1-1)
- Culpeper:** Grayson, Cary T.; Rear Adm.; Fr. Leg. of Hon. Jones, Ernest L.; Col.; S. S. Maurizio e Lazzaro; Fatigue de Guerre; Off. Leg. of Hon.; Diploma of Honor; Rec. D. S. M.; cited by Pershing. (2-7)
- Dickenson:** Robinson, James M.; pvt.; Cit. Div. Comm. (1-1)
- Elizabeth City:** Ware, Joseph F.; Col.; S. S. Cit. (1-1)
- Fairfax:** Grayson, Stewart M.; Capt.; cited in orders. (1-1)
- Fauquier:** Winter, Frances Anderson; Col.; Comm. of the Bath; Off. Leg. of Honor. Wood, Charles P.; Capt.; C. de G. with G. S. (2-3)
- Floyd:** Harmon, Russell A.; 1st Lieut.; Cit. Div. Comm. Phillips, Walter C.; Corp.; Cit. Div. Comm. (2-2)
- Fluvanna:** Thomas, Charles G.; pvt.; Cit. Div. Comm. (1-1)
- Franklin:** Lumsden, Clarence; pvt.; Cit. Div. Comm. Mathews, Alonzo R.; pvt.; Cit. Div. Comm. (2-2)
- Frederick:** Golliday, John B.; pvt.; Cit. Div. Comm. (1-1)
- Giles:** Cassell, Dorse H.; Sgt.; Cit. Div. Comm. (1-1)
- Gloucester:** Bonnaville, Dave E.; pvt.; Cit. Div. Comm. (1-1)
- Goochland:** Wright, Saunders; 1st Lieut.; M. S. C. C. (1-1)
- Grayson:** Cox, Creed F.; Lieut.-Col.; D. S. M. Toliver, Emmett R.; pvt.; Cit. Div. Comm. (2-2)
- Greene:** Slaughter, Smith S.; pvt.; Cit. Div. Comm. (1-1)
- Henrico:** McLeod, Alexander; 1st Lieut.; Cit. Div. Comm. (1-1)
- Henry:** Jamerson, George Hariston; Brig.-Gen.; D. S. M. Poindexter, William B.; Capt.; M. S. C. C. Stone, Benjamin L.; Corp.; Cit. Div. Comm. Wray, Francis Marion; Capt.; Rec. for D. S. C.; Cit. C-in-C. (4-5)
- Isle of Wight:** Owens, Oscar Lee; Capt. (Chaplain); Cit. C-in-C.; Rec. D. S. C. Turner, Mills E.; pvt.; Cit. Div. Comm. (2-3)
- King William:** Skuers, Joseph; Corp.; Cit. Div. Comm. (1-1)
- Lancaster:** Squires, Lloyd F.; pvt.; Cit. Div. Comm. (1-1)
- Lee:** Bailey, John E.; pvt.; Cit. Div. Comm. Capps, Jesse A.; Bugler; Cit. Div. Comm. Haburn, Chester; pvt.; Cit. Div. Comm. Langly, James; Sgt.; Cit. Brig. Comm. Stewart, Richard P.; pvt.; Cit. Div. Comm. (5-5)
- Loudoun:** Brewster, David L. S.; Capt.; Order de Aviz. Fuller, Edward C. (Dec); Navy Cross; 2nd Div. Cit. Hirst, Sampel C.; pvt.; two 2nd Div. Cit. Hulbert, William P.; 1st Lieut.; Fr. Med. D'Hon. des Epidemies (Argent). Manning, James F., Jr.; 1st Lieut.; D. S. C.; Cit. in G. O. Reid, Robert L.; pvt.; Cit. Div. Comm. (6-9)
- Louisa:** Bowles, Aubrey L.; pvt.; Cit. Div. Comm. (1-1)
- Mathews:** Smith, Benjamin F.; pvt.; S. S. Cit. (1-1)
- Montgomery:** Eoff, Robert G.; 1st Lieut.; Fr. C. de G. (1-1)
- Nansemond:** Hamilton, Thomas C.; pvt.; Cit. Div. Comm. (1-1)
- Nelson:** McCreery, Victor A.; Sgt.; Cit. Div. Comm. Snead, John J.; pvt.; Cit. Div. Comm. (2-2)
- Northampton:** Rogers, Herbert Wilson; Capt.; Cit. Brig. Comm. (1-1)
- Northumbreland:** Hudnall, James S.; 1st Lieut.; S. S. Cit. Stephens, Joseph W. G.; Capt.; Cit. Brig. Comm. (2-2)
- Orange:** Bell, William B.; Corp.; Belg. C. de G. Puryear, Bennet, Jr.; Maj.; Navy Cross; 2nd Div. Cit. (2-3)
- Page:** Jenkins, Homer B.; Sgt.; Cit. Div. Comm. Wilt, John W.; pvt.; Cit. Div. Comm. (2-2)
- Pittsylvania:** Lawhorne, Dewey H.; Corp.; C. de G. with G. S.; D. S. C. (1-2)
- Prince George:** Mathews, Paul E.; pvt.; Cit. Div. Comm. (1-1)
- Prince William:** Keyser, Ralph Stover; Maj.; D. S. M.; Navy Cross. Ledman, John W.; pvt.; Cit. Div. Comm. (2-3)
- Rappahannock:** Barnett, George; Maj.-Gen.; D. S. M.; Leg. of Hon. Comp-ton, Cecil A.; 1st Lieut.; Citation Orders. (2-3)
- Rockbridge:** Baker, Henry S., Jr.; pvt.; Fr. C. de G. with S. S. Fletcher, Forest; 2nd Lieut.; C. de G. with B. S. Hartigan, James S.; pvt.; Cit.



- Div. Comm. Jones, Allen C.; pvt.; Fr. C. de G. with S. S. Withrow, James; pvt.; Cit Div. Comm. (5-5)
- Rockingham:** Baugher, Clarence A.; Sgt.; Cit. Div. Comm. Bruce, Harry G.; Sgt.; Cit. Div. Comm. Sellers, Edgar W.; pvt.; Cit. Div. Comm. (3-3)
- Russell:** Honaker, Zed H.; pvt. Cit. Div. Comm. McCoy, Steve A.; pvt.; Cit. Div. Comm. Riner, Robert B.; pvt.; Cit. Div. Comm. (3-3)
- Scott:** Jenkins, Luther R.; pvt.; Cit. Div. Comm. Rose, Sanford L.; pvt.; Cit. Div. Comm. (2-2)
- Southampton:** Beaman, Joseph H.; Sgt.-Maj.; Rec. D. S. M.; M. S. C. C. (1-2)
- Spotsylvania:** Brooks, Chester W.; pvt.; Cit. Div. Comm. (1-1)
- Stafford:** Williams, Ashby; Lieut.-Col.; Cit. Brig. Comm. (1-1)
- Tazewell:** Moore, George S.; pvt.; Cit. Div. Comm. Riley, Samuel P.; pvt.; Cit. Div. Comm. Turley, William A.; pvt.; Cit. Div. Comm. (3-3)
- Warren:** Richards, James N. C. (Dec.); Captain; Cit. Div. Comm. (1-1)
- Washington:** Heck, Danna H.; Corp.; Cit. Div. Comm. Snyder, James D.; pvt.; Cit. Div. Comm. (2-2)
- Westmoreland:** Pound, Robert D.; pvt.; Cit. Div. Comm. (1-1)
- Wise:** Buchanan, Fitzhugh L.; Capt.; Cit. Div. Comm. Greene, Samuel B.; Wagoner; Cit. Div. Comm. Moneyhun, Ralph C.; Corp.; Cit. Div. Comm. Salyers, Fred R.; pvt.; Cit. Div. Comm. Walls, Lloyd B.; pvt.; Cit. Div. Comm. Youell, Rice McNutt; Maj.; Cit. Div. Comm. (6-6)
- Wythe:** Grove, Frank A.; Capt.; cited in orders. Guynn, Mack S.; pvt.; Cit. Brig. Comm. Herndon, Lewis S.; 1st Lieut.; Fr. C. de G. with G. S.; cited in G. O.; Cit. Div. Comm.; Rec. D. S. C.; S. S. Cit. (3-7)
- Virginia Honor Men—Addresses Not Known:** Baker, Thomas; pvt.; S. S. Cit. Jordan, Richard H.; Maj. D. S. M. Persinger, Henry L.; pvt.; Cit. Div. Comm. Pettigrew, Vance M.; Sgt.; Cit. Brig. Comm. Ragland, William Lee; Sgt.-Maj.; Cit. Div. Comm. Sheen, Henry H.; Lieut.-Col.; D. S. M.; Polish Krzyz Walexznch. Smeaton, Robert; Sgt.-Maj.; Cit. Brig. Comm. Symington, Powers; Capt.; Navy Cross. (8-9)

# Summary of Honors by Cities and Counties

## VOLUME I AND VOLUME V\*

### Cities

<b>Alexandria:</b>	
Men honored, Vol. I, 9; Vol. V, 1. Total.....	10
Honors conferred, Vol. I, 15; Vol. V, 1. Total.....	16
<b>Bristol:</b>	
Men honored, Vol. I, 5; Vol. V, 0. Total.....	5
Honors conferred, Vol. I, 8; Vol. V, 0. Total.....	8
<b>Buena Vista:</b>	
Men honored, Vol. I, 1; Vol. V, 0. Total.....	1
Honors recorded, Vol. I, 2; Vol. V, 0. Total.....	2
<b>Charlottesville:</b>	
Men honored, Vol. I, 29; Vol. V, 2. Total.....	31
Honors recorded, Vol. I, 37; Vol. V, 2. Total.....	39
<b>Clifton Forge:</b>	
Men honored, Vol. I, 1; Vol. V, 1. Total.....	2
Honors recorded, Vol. I, 1; Vol. V, 1. Total.....	2
<b>Danville:</b>	
Men honored, Vol. I, 6; Vol. V, 2. Total.....	8
Honors recorded, Vol. I, 9; Vol. V, 4. Total.....	13
<b>Fredericksburg:</b>	
Men honored, Vol. I, 9; Vol. V, 0. Total.....	9
Honors recorded, Vol. I, 9; Vol. V, 0. Total.....	9
<b>Hampton:</b>	
Men honored, Vol. I, 12; Vol. V, 1. Total.....	13
Honors recorded, Vol. I, 25; Vol. V, 7. Total.....	32
<b>Harrisonburg:</b>	
Men honored, Vol. I, 6; Vol. V, 0. Total.....	6
Honors recorded, Vol. I, 7; Vol. V, 0. Total.....	7
<b>Hopewell:</b>	
Men honored, Vol. I, 2; Vol. V, 1. Total.....	3
Honors recorded, Vol. I, 2; Vol. V, 1. Total.....	3
<b>Lynchburg:</b>	
Men honored, Vol. I, 31; Vol. V, 2. Total.....	33
Honors recorded, Vol. I, 46; Vol. V, 13. Total.....	59
<b>Newport News:</b>	
Men honored, Vol. I, 16; Vol. V, 0. Total.....	16
Honors recorded, Vol. I, 23; Vol. V, 3. Total.....	26
<b>Norfolk:</b>	
Men honored, Vol. I, 87; Vol. V, 9. Total.....	96
Honors recorded, Vol. I, 134; Vol. V, 20. Total.....	155
<b>Petersburg:</b>	
Men honored, Vol. I, 18; Vol. V, 3. Total.....	21
Honors recorded, Vol. I, 28; Vol. V, 4. Total.....	32
<b>Portsmouth:</b>	
Men honored, Vol. I, 17; Vol. V, 4. Total.....	21
Honors recorded, Vol. I, 32; Vol. V, 8. Total.....	40
<b>Radford:</b>	
Men honored, Vol. I, 6; Vol. V, 0. Total.....	6
Honors recorded, Vol. I, 8; Vol. V, 0. Total.....	8
<b>Richmond:</b>	
Men honored, Vol. I, 103; Vol. V, 16. Total.....	119
Honors recorded, Vol. I, 158; Vol. V, 50. Total.....	208
<b>Roanoke:</b>	
Men honored, Vol. I, 24; Vol. V, 8. Total.....	32
Honors recorded, Vol. I, 38; Vol. V, 10. Total.....	48
<b>Staunton:</b>	
Men honored, Vol. I, 10; Vol. V, 2. Total.....	12
Honors recorded, Vol. I, 21; Vol. V, 9. Total.....	30

\*Note: The figures for honor men in Volume V of this summary do not include those named in both I and V. For instance, Danville had six men in Volume I and four in Volume V, but two of the four in Volume V had been named for separate honors in Volume I. Therefore, only two men are shown for Volume V, making a total of eight for the two volumes.

**Suffolk:**

Men honored, Vol. I, 5; Vol. V, 1. Total.....	6
Honors recorded, Vol. I, 6; Vol. V, 1. Total.....	7

**Williamsburg:**

Men honored, Vol. I, 1; Vol. V, 0. Total.....	1
Honors recorded, Vol. I, 1; Vol. V, 0. Total.....	1

**Winchester:**

Men honored, Vol. I, 16; Vol. V, 1. Total.....	17
Honors recorded, Vol. I, 22; Vol. V, 2. Total.....	24

**Counties****Accomac:**

Men honored, Vol. I, 6; Vol. V, 2. Total.....	8
Honors recorded, Vol. I, 7; Vol. V, 9. Total.....	16

**Albemarle:**

Men honored, Vol. I, 9; Vol. V, 1. Total.....	10
Honors recorded, Vol. I, 17; Vol. V, 1. Total.....	18

**Alleghany:**

Men honored, Vol. I, 2; Vol. V, 2. Total.....	4
Honors recorded, Vol. I, 3; Vol. V, 2. Total.....	5

**Amelia:**

Men honored, Vol. I, 2; Vol. V, 0. Total.....	2
Honors recorded, Vol. I, 2; Vol. V, 0. Total.....	2

**Amherst:**

Men honored, Vol. I, 1; Vol. V, 1. Total.....	2
Honors recorded, Vol. I, 1; Vol. V, 1. Total.....	2

**Arlington:**

Men honored, Vol. I, 5; Vol. V, 4. Total.....	9
Honors recorded, Vol. I, 5; Vol. V, 4. Total.....	9

**Augusta:**

Men honored, Vol. I, 6; Vol. V, 1. Total.....	7
Honors recorded, Vol. I, 9; Vol. V, 2. Total.....	11

**Bath:**

Men honored, Vol. I, 1; Vol. V, 2. Total.....	3
Honors recorded, Vol. I, 1; Vol. V, 3. Total.....	4

**Bedford:**

Men honored, Vol. I, 3; Vol. V, 3. Total.....	6
Honors recorded, Vol. I, 3; Vol. V, 3. Total.....	6

**Bland:**

Men honored, Vol. I, 0; Vol. V, 2. Total.....	2
Honors recorded, Vol. I, 0; Vol. V, 2. Total.....	2

**Botetourt:**

Men honored, Vol. I, 2; Vol. V, 0. Total.....	2
Honors recorded, Vol. I, 3; Vol. V, 0. Total.....	3

**Brunswick:**

Men honored, Vol. I, 1; Vol. V, 0. Total.....	1
Honors recorded, Vol. I, 1; Vol. V, 0. Total.....	1

**Buchanan:**

Men honored, Vol. I, 3; Vol. V, 1. Total.....	4
Honors recorded, Vol. I, 3; Vol. V, 3. Total.....	6

**Buckingham:**

Men honored, Vol. I, 2; Vol. V, 3. Total.....	5
Honors recorded, Vol. I, 3; Vol. V, 3. Total.....	6

**Campbell:**

Men honored, Vol. I, 2; Vol. V, 1. Total.....	3
Honors recorded, Vol. I, 2; Vol. V, 1. Total.....	3

**Caroline:**

Men honored, Vol. I, 4; Vol. V, 1. Total.....	5
Honors recorded, Vol. I, 4; Vol. V, 4. Total.....	8

**Carroll:**

Men honored, Vol. I, 4; Vol. V, 3. Total.....	7
Honors recorded, Vol. I, 6; Vol. V, 3. Total.....	9



<b>Charles City:</b>	
Men honored, Vol. I, 1; Vol. V, 0. Total.....	1
Honors recorded, Vol. I, 1; Vol. V, 0. Total.....	1
<b>Charlotte:</b>	
Men honored, Vol. I, 2; Vol. V, 1. Total.....	3
Honors recorded, Vol. I, 2; Vol. V, 3. Total.....	5
<b>Chesterfield:</b>	
Men honored, Vol. I, 2; Vol. V, 1. Total.....	3
Honors recorded, Vol. I, 2; Vol. V, 1. Total.....	3
<b>Clark:</b>	
Men honored, Vol. I, 5; Vol. V, 2. Total.....	7
Honors recorded, Vol. I, 10; Vol. V, 5. Total.....	15
<b>Craig:</b>	
Men honored, Vol. I, 1; Vol. V, 1. Total.....	2
Honors recorded, Vol. I, 1; Vol. V, 1. Total.....	2
<b>Culpeper:</b>	
Men honored, Vol. I, 7; Vol. V, 1. Total.....	8
Honors recorded, Vol. I, 8; Vol. V, 7. Total.....	15
<b>Cumberland:</b>	
Men honored, Vol. I, 1; Vol. V, 0. Total.....	1
Honors recorded, Vol. I, 1; Vol. V, 0. Total.....	1
<b>Dickenson:</b>	
Men honored, Vol. I, 3; Vol. V, 1. Total.....	4
Honors recorded, Vol. I, 4; Vol. V, 1. Total.....	5
<b>Elizabeth City:</b>	
Men honored, Vol. I, 7; Vol. V, 0. Total.....	7
Honors recorded, Vol. I, 10; Vol. V, 1. Total.....	11
<b>Essex:</b>	
Men honored, Vol. I, 2; Vol. V, 0. Total.....	2
Honors recorded, Vol. I, 2; Vol. V, 0. Total.....	2
<b>Fairfax:</b>	
Men honored, Vol. I, 9; Vol. V, 1. Total.....	10
Honors recorded, Vol. I, 15; Vol. V, 1. Total.....	16
<b>Fauquier:</b>	
Men honored, Vol. I, 12; Vol. V, 0. Total.....	12
Honors recorded, Vol. I, 17; Vol. V, 3. Total.....	20
<b>Floyd:</b>	
Men honored, Vol. I, 8; Vol. V, 1. Total.....	9
Honors recorded, Vol. I, 10; Vol. V, 2. Total.....	12
<b>Fluvanna:</b>	
Men honored, Vol. I, 2; Vol. V, 1. Total.....	3
Honors recorded, Vol. I, 2; Vol. V, 1. Total.....	3
<b>Franklin:</b>	
Men honored, Vol. I, 2; Vol. V, 2. Total.....	4
Honors recorded, Vol. I, 4; Vol. V, 2. Total.....	6
<b>Frederick:</b>	
Men honored, Vol. I, 1; Vol. V, 1. Total.....	2
Honors recorded, Vol. I, 1; Vol. V, 1. Total.....	2
<b>Giles:</b>	
Men honored, Vol. I, 4; Vol. V, 1. Total.....	5
Honors recorded, Vol. I, 6; Vol. V, 1. Total.....	6
<b>Gloucester:</b>	
Men honored, Vol. I, 3; Vol. V, 1. Total.....	4
Honors recorded, Vol. I, 3; Vol. V, 1. Total.....	4
<b>Goochland:</b>	
Men honored, Vol. I, 0; Vol. V, 1. Total.....	1
Honors recorded, Vol. I, 0; Vol. V, 1. Total.....	1
<b>Grayson:</b>	
Men honored, Vol. I, 6; Vol. V, 2. Total.....	8
Honors recorded, Vol. I, 16; Vol. V, 2. Total.....	18
<b>Greene:</b>	
Men honored, Vol. I, 0; Vol. V, 1. Total.....	1
Honors recorded, Vol. I, 0; Vol. V, 1. Total.....	1

**Greenville:**

Men honored, Vol. I, 2; Vol. V, 0. Total.....	2
Honors recorded, Vol. I, 3; Vol. V, 0. Total.....	3

**Halifax:**

Men honored, Vol. I, 4; Vol. V, 0. Total.....	4
Honors recorded, Vol. I, 6; Vol. V, 0. Total.....	6

**Hanover:**

Men honored, Vol. I, 4; Vol. V, 0. Total.....	4
Honors recorded, Vol. I, 5; Vol. V, 0. Total.....	5

**Henrico:**

Men honored, Vol. I, 0; Vol. V, 1. Total.....	1
Honors recorded, Vol. I, 0; Vol. V, 1. Total.....	1

**Henry:**

Men honored, Vol. I, 4; Vol. V, 2. Total.....	6
Honors recorded, Vol. I, 5; Vol. V, 5. Total.....	10

**Highland:**

Men honored, Vol. I, 1; Vol. V, 0. Total.....	1
Honors recorded, Vol. I, 1; Vol. V, 0. Total.....	1

**Isle of Wight:**

Men honored, Vol. I, 3; Vol. V, 2. Total.....	5
Honors recorded, Vol. I, 5; Vol. V, 3. Total.....	8

**King George:**

Men honored, Vol. I, 3; Vol. V, 0. Total.....	3
Honors recorded, Vol. I, 5; Vol. V, 0. Total.....	5

**King William:**

Men honored, Vol. I, 1; Vol. V, 1. Total.....	2
Honors recorded, Vol. I, 2; Vol. V, 1. Total.....	3

**Lancaster:**

Men honored, Vol. I, 3; Vol. V, 1. Total.....	4
Honors recorded, Vol. I, 3; Vol. V, 1. Total.....	4

**Lee:**

Men honored, Vol. I, 8; Vol. V, 5. Total.....	13
Honors recorded, Vol. I, 11; Vol. V, 5. Total.....	16

**Loudoun:**

Men honored, Vol. I, 11; Vol. V, 2. Total.....	13
Honors recorded, Vol. I, 19; Vol. V, 9. Total.....	28

**Louisa:**

Men honored, Vol. I, 3; Vol. V, 1. Total.....	4
Honors recorded, Vol. I, 4; Vol. V, 1. Total.....	5

**Lunenburg:**

Men honored, Vol. I, 3; Vol. V, 0. Total.....	3
Honors recorded, Vol. I, 3; Vol. V, 0. Total.....	3

**Madison:**

Men honored, Vol. I, 1; Vol. V, 0. Total.....	1
Honors recorded, Vol. I, 1; Vol. V, 0. Total.....	1

**Mathews:**

Men honored, Vol. I, 2; Vol. V, 1. Total.....	3
Honors recorded, Vol. I, 3; Vol. V, 1. Total.....	4

**Mecklenburg:**

Men honored, Vol. I, 5; Vol. V, 0. Total.....	5
Honors recorded, Vol. I, 8; Vol. V, 0. Total.....	8

**Middlesex:**

Men honored, Vol. I, 2; Vol. V, 0. Total.....	2
Honors recorded, Vol. I, 3; Vol. V, 0. Total.....	3

**Montgomery:**

Men honored, Vol. I, 7; Vol. V, 1. Total.....	8
Honors recorded, Vol. I, 18; Vol. V, 1. Total.....	19

**Nansemond:**

Men honored, Vol. I, 2; Vol. V, 1. Total.....	3
Honors recorded, Vol. I, 2; Vol. V, 1. Total.....	3

**Nelson:**

Men honored, Vol. I, 3; Vol. V, 2. Total.....	5
Honors recorded, Vol. I, 4; Vol. V, 2. Total.....	6

**New Kent:**

Men honored, Vol. I, 1; Vol. V, 0. Total.....	1
Honors recorded, Vol. I, 1; Vol. V, 0. Total.....	1

**Norfolk:**

Men honored, Vol. I, 5; Vol. V, 0. Total.....	5
Honors recorded, Vol. I, 5; Vol. V, 0. Total.....	5

**Northampton:**

Men honored, Vol. I, 5; Vol. V, 1. Total.....	6
Honors recorded, Vol. I, 7; Vol. V, 1. Total.....	8

**Northumberland:**

Men honored, Vol. I, 3; Vol. V, 1. Total.....	4
Honors recorded, Vol. I, 3; Vol. V, 2. Total.....	5

**Nottoway:**

Men honored, Vol. I, 2; Vol. V, 0. Total.....	2
Honors recorded, Vol. I, 5; Vol. V, 0. Total.....	5

**Orange:**

Men honored, Vol. I, 3; Vol. V, 1. Total.....	4
Honors recorded, Vol. I, 6; Vol. V, 3. Total.....	9

**Page:**

Men honored, Vol. I, 3; Vol. V, 2. Total.....	5
Honors recorded, Vol. I, 6; Vol. V, 2. Total.....	8

**Patrick:**

Men honored, Vol. I, 2; Vol. V, 0. Total.....	2
Honors recorded, Vol. I, 5; Vol. V, 0. Total.....	5

**Pittsylvania:**

Men honored, Vol. I, 4; Vol. V, 1. Total.....	5
Honors recorded, Vol. I, 5; Vol. V, 2. Total.....	7

**Prince Edward:**

Men honored, Vol. I, 2; Vol. V, 0. Total.....	2
Honors recorded, Vol. I, 3; Vol. V, 0. Total.....	3

**Prince George:**

Men honored, Vol. I, 1; Vol. V, 1. Total.....	2
Honors recorded, Vol. I, 1; Vol. V, 1. Total.....	2

**Prince William:**

Men honored, Vol. I, 6; Vol. V, 1. Total.....	7
Honors recorded, Vol. I, 15; Vol. V, 3. Total.....	18

**Pulaski:**

Men honored, Vol. I, 2; Vol. V, 0. Total.....	2
Honors recorded, Vol. I, 4; Vol. V, 0. Total.....	4

**Rappahannock:**

Men honored, Vol. I, 0; Vol. V, 2. Total.....	2
Honors recorded, Vol. I, 0; Vol. V, 3. Total.....	3

**Richmond:**

Men honored, Vol. I, 1; Vol. V, 0. Total.....	1
Honors recorded, Vol. I, 1; Vol. V, 0. Total.....	1

**Roanoke:**

Men honored, Vol. I, 5; Vol. V, 0. Total.....	5
Honors recorded, Vol. I, 7; Vol. V, 0. Total.....	7

**Rockbridge:**

Men honored, Vol. I, 12; Vol. V, 5. Total.....	17
Honors recorded, Vol. I, 14; Vol. V, 5. Total.....	19

**Rockingham:**

Men honored, Vol. I, 5; Vol. V, 3. Total.....	8
Honors recorded, Vol. I, 6; Vol. V, 3. Total.....	9

**Russell:**

Men honored, Vol. I, 9; Vol. V, 3. Total.....	12
Honors recorded, Vol. I, 10; Vol. V, 3. Total.....	13

**Scott:**

Men honored, Vol. I, 2; Vol. V, 2. Total.....	4
Honors recorded, Vol. I, 2; Vol. V, 2. Total.....	4

**Shenandoah:**

Men honored, Vol. I, 5; Vol. V, 0. Total.....	5
Honors recorded, Vol. I, 9; Vol. V, 0. Total.....	9



<b>Smyth:</b>	
Men honored, Vol. I, 2; Vol. V, 0. Total.....	2
Honors recorded, Vol. I, 3; Vol. V, 0. Total.....	3
<b>Southampton:</b>	
Men honored, Vol. I, 5; Vol. V, 0. Total.....	5
Honors recorded, Vol. I, 6; Vol. V, 2. Total.....	8
<b>Spotsylvania:</b>	
Men honored, Vol. I, 0; Vol. V, 1. Total.....	1
Honors recorded, Vol. I, 0; Vol. V, 1. Total.....	1
<b>Stafford:</b>	
Men honored, Vol. I, 1; Vol. V, 1. Total.....	2
Honors recorded, Vol. I, 1; Vol. V, 1. Total.....	2
<b>Surry:</b>	
Men honored, Vol. I, 1; Vol. V, 0. Total.....	1
Honors recorded, Vol. I, 1; Vol. V, 0. Total.....	1
<b>Sussex:</b>	
Men honored, Vol. I, 2; Vol. V, 0. Total.....	2
Honors recorded, Vol. I, 4; Vol. V, 0. Total.....	4
<b>Tazewell:</b>	
Men honored, Vol. I, 5; Vol. V, 3. Total.....	8
Honors recorded, Vol. I, 5; Vol. V, 3. Total.....	8
<b>Warren:</b>	
Men honored, Vol. I, 3; Vol. V, 1. Total.....	4
Honors recorded, Vol. I, 5; Vol. V, 1. Total.....	6
<b>Washington:</b>	
Men honored, Vol. I, 3; Vol. V, 2. Total.....	5
Honors recorded, Vol. I, 4; Vol. V, 2. Total.....	6
<b>Westmoreland:</b>	
Men honored, Vol. I, 1; Vol. V, 1. Total.....	2
Honors recorded, Vol. I, 1; Vol. V, 1. Total.....	2
<b>Wise:</b>	
Men honored, Vol. I, 6; Vol. V, 5. Total.....	11
Honors recorded, Vol. I, 9; Vol. V, 6. Total.....	15
<b>Wythe:</b>	
Men honored, Vol. I, 1; Vol. V, 3. Total.....	4
Honors recorded, Vol. I, 1; Vol. V, 7. Total.....	8
<b>Virginians whose addresses are unknown:</b>	
Men honored, Vol. I, 39; Vol. V, 7. Total.....	46
Honors recorded, Vol. I, 52; Vol. V, 9. Total.....	61

## Distinguished Service List—Not Certified

**ALEXANDER, G. H.**  
British Military Medal.  
Reference: W. H. Files.

o o o o

**ALLEN, ROBERT M.**, of Roanoke, Virginia.  
Sous-Lieutenant, French Army.  
Son of Frank Allen and Sara McClanahan.

**Croix de Guerre with Regimental Citation.**

Citation: "Took part in the battle of the 15th to the 20th of July, 1918, during which he gave proof under particularly critical circumstances of an admirable coolness and courage."

Reference: W. H. Files.

o o o o

**BUTLER, K. L.**, of Lynchburg, Virginia.  
Lieutenant.

**Croix de Guerre.**

Reference: V. P. I. records.

o o o o

**COLHOUN, DANIEL WARWICK**, of Lynchburg, Virginia.  
Major.

**French Croix de Guerre.**

Reference: Lynchburg records, W. H.

o o o o

**COVINGTON, JOHN WILLIAM**, of Culpeper, Virginia.

First Lieutenant, 353rd Infantry, 89th Division.

Son of Mrs. Amelia Covington.

**Distinguished Service Cross.**

References: Source Vol. III, p. 88; Culpeper Records, W. H.

Note: This citation is in addition to that noted in Source Volume I, p. 235.

o o o o

**CROSLEY, SARAH WAPLES**, of Onancock, Accomac County, Va.  
Red Cross Nurse, Military Hospital No. 1, France.

**French Croix de Guerre.**

**Medaille d' Epidemies (France).**

**Serbian Cross of Mercy.**

References: War Service Record, W. H.

o o o o

**DOGGETT, DAVID S.**, of Richmond, Virginia.

First Lieutenant, 15th Field Artillery, 2nd Division.

Son of George Brooke and Georgia Anderson Doggett.

**Distinguished Service Cross.**

References: V. P. I. records; W. H.

Note: Certified citation by Division Commander is in Source Volume 1, p. 45.

o o o o

**DRAKE, JAMES HODGES, JR.** (deceased), of Richmond, Virginia.

First Lieutenant, 24th London Regiment.

Son of James Hodges and Elizabeth Ott Drake.

**Recommended for the Victoria Cross for bravery during the operations at the Hohenzollern Redoubt, Loos Salient, December 30, 1915.**

Reference: Navy League Records, W. H.

Note: Lieutenant Drake is officially credited with commendation in Source Volume 1, p. 47.

o o o o

**FOSTER, OPIE ALVIS**, of Lynchburg, Virginia.

First Class Seaman, U. S. S. Richmond.

**Commended for alertness in observing a German submarine in March, 1918, and thus preventing his ship from being attacked.**

References: Lynchburg records, W. H.

**FRIEDOFF, LINWOOD C.**, of Lynchburg, Virginia.

Sergeant, Marines.

**French Croix de Guerre.**

Reference: Lynchburg records, W. H. . . .

**GILLIAM, THEODORICK ARMISTEAD WILLIAMS, JR.**, of Norfolk, Va.

Captain, Battery E, 155th Brigade, 313th F. A., 80th Div.

Son of Mrs. Thomas H. Gilliam.

**French Croix de Guerre With Two Stars.**

Citation: "For part played in St. Mihiel and Meuse-Argonne drives."

Reference: Clip. Vol. 35, p. 127. . . .

**GRAVES, LESTER**, of Norfolk, Virginia.

Captain, 314th Field Artillery, 80th Division.

Son of W. A. Graves.

**French Croix de Guerre With Two Stars.**

Reference: Clip. Vol. 35, p. 127. . . .

**HALL, LYSLE GEORGE**, of Charlottesville, Virginia.

Second Lieutenant, Air Force, British E. F.

Son of George W. Hall.

**French Croix de Guerre.**

Reference: Randolph-Macon College records; W. H. . . .

**HOLT, HARRY PRESTON**, of Lynchburg, Virginia.

Major, Company C, 320th Infantry, 80th Division.

**Cited by Division Commander.**

Citation: "For gallantry in commanding the advance of his regiment in the Meuse-Argonne offensive, September 26, 1918, and the following days, taking all the planned objectives on schedule time. In the Meuse-Argonne offensive again from November 1-7, 1918, this officer showed wonderful spirit and courage in maintaining command of his battalion when he was suffering greatly from a recent surgical operation."

Reference: Lynchburg records, W. H. . . .

**HUMPHREYS, WILLIAM HENRY** (deceased), of Crozet, Albemarle Co.,

Captain, 58th Infantry.

Son of Mrs. Verta J. Humphreys.

**Recommended for Distinguished Service Cross.** (Posthumously).

Recommendation: "He was leading a detachment of automobile riflemen in advance of his company during a heavy bombardment under heavy machine-gun fire. All of his detachment were killed, but no trace of Captain Humphreys could be found. His body was later found by the chaplain of the First Artillery and buried by him."

Reference: . . . Clip. Vol. No. 36, p. 3. . . .

**JOHNSTON, SIDNEY.**

**French Croix de Guerre.**

Reference: W. H. Files. . . .

**JONES, WILLIAM**, of Suffolk, Virginia.

Lieutenant, Battery A, 2nd Battalion, Artillery.

Son of Mrs. Nettie Jones.

**Cited by Brigade Commander.**

Citation: "For good work done by one platoon under Lieutenant Jones, which manned 4 95mm. guns in an advanced position at Moulinneuf ferme in the open valley north of Vilcey."

Reference: Cip. Vol. No. 32, p. 13. . . .

**LOFTIS, NORMAN F.**, of South Boston, Virginia.

Private, Company K, 167th Infantry.

"Private Loftis was cited for bravery on more than one occasion."

Reference: Clip. Vol. No. 36, p. 35; W. H.



**McCANDISH, DAVID MAY**, of Richmond, Virginia.

Son of Robert and Elva May McCandish.

**French Croix de Guerre.**

Reference: Clip. Vol. No. 35, p. 24; W. H.

**MAXEY, THOMAS J.**, of Richmond, Virginia.

Sgt., A. S. S. C. Service.

Son of Frank M. Maxey, of Sunnyside, Virginia.

**Commended for Bravery.**

References: Source Volume No. 11, p. 345; Clip. Vol. IV., Section XI., p. 119; W. H.

o o o o

**MEARS, JOHN BOWDOIN.**

Cited at Santa Domingo.

Reference: W. H. Files.

o o o o

**NEBIN, HARDWICKE MARMADUKE**, of Richmond, Virginia.

Sergeant, Ambulance Service, Section 623.

Son of Arthur Lynhan Nebin.

**French Croix de Guerre.**

Reference: Navy League records, W. H.

o

**SLAUGHTER, VIVIAN**, of Orange, Virginia.

Second Lieutenant, London Regiment, British Army.

**Commended by Battalion Commander** (posthumously).

Commendation: "He did the job in hand always. He died gloriously, going straight for a German machine gun that was giving us a great deal of trouble. The battalion was temporarily held up by the machine gun until Lieutenant Slaughter charged with two platoons; he was killed, but the gun was subsequently taken and the crew killed."

References: Orange County records; Navy League records; W. H.

o

**TAYLOR, ARTHUR MANIGAULT**, of Charlottesville, Virginia.

Pvt., Norton Harjes Ambulance Corps, Section 7, 21st Div., French Inf.

Son of Joseph M. Taylor and Sarah Bergh.

**French Croix de Guerre.**

Citation: "American volunteer whose courage and devotion never failed for a single instant. Under the most perilous circumstances he shared the evacuation of the wounded with a calmness and self-denial that won the admiration of every one."

Reference: Navy League records, W. H.

o

**TOLIVER, SIM** (colored), of Bedford, Virginia.

Private, 351st Machine Gun Company.

Son of Robert and Ella Toliver.

**Croix de Guerre.**

Citation: "For capturing single-handed seven Germans."

Reference: Clip. Vol. No. 36, p. 82.

o

**WILLIAMS, CHARLES TURNER**, of Richmond, Virginia.

**Decorated—Order of the Cross of Queen Mary.**

"For relief work in Rumania in 1918."

Reference: Newspaper Clipping in V. W. H. C. Files.

## Distinguished Service Roster

---

- Adams, Edward D'Arcy, Petersburg. Volume I, page 1.  
Adams, Fred William, Ivy Depot, Albemarle County. Volume I, page 1.  
Adams, Lacy T., Virginia. Volume I, page 1.  
Addington, Frank T., Gilmerton, Norfolk County. Volume I, page 1.  
Addison, Taylor G., Vandyke, Buckingham County. Volume V, page 430.  
Akers, Harry B., Norfolk. Volume I, page 2.  
Alexander, Gail Hamilton (deceased), Danville. Volume I, page 2.  
Allamong, Isaac F., Winchester, Frederick County. Volume I, page 2.  
Allen, George E., Ark, Gloucester County. Volume I, page 2.  
Allen, Joseph Elliott, Richmond. Volume I, page 3.  
Allen, Robert H., Virginia. Volume I, page 3.  
Alley, Arvie Homer, Radford, Montgomery County. Volume I, page 3.  
Allman, Frank, Big Stone Gap, Wise County. Volume I, page 3.  
Almond, Edward Mallory, Luray, Page County. Volume I, page 4.  
Ammons, Richard Allen (deceased), Richmond. Volume I, page 4.  
Amonette, Henry L., Lynchburg. Volume I, page 4; Volume V, page 430.  
Anderson, Claude S., Volney, Grayson County. Volume I, page 4.  
Anderson, Edward Clifford, Richmond. Volume I, page 5.  
Anderson, Henry W., Richmond. Volume V, page 430.  
Anderson, Karl Brooke, Richmond. Volume I, page 5; Volume V, page 431.  
Anderson, William L., Cartersville, Cumberland County. Volume I, page 5.  
Arnest, Richard T., Hague, Westmoreland County. Volume I, page 6.  
Arvin, Miss Mary W., Richmond. Volume I, page 6.  
Astor, Louis, Newport News, Volume I, page 6.  
Baber, Thomas Edward, Richmond. Volume I, page 6.  
Bagby, Philip Haxall, Richmond. Volume I, page 6.  
Bailey, John E., Keokee, Lee County. Volume V, page 431.  
Baker, Frank Austin (deceased), Richmond. Volume I, page 7; Volume V, page 431.  
Baker, Henry Southworth, Jr., Winchester. Volume I, page 7; Volume V, page 431.  
Baker, John Cheriton, Northampton County. Volume I, page 7.  
Baker, Richard Henry, Jr., Norfolk. Volume I, page 7.  
Baker, Thomas, Virginia. Volume V, page 431.  
Barksdale, Alfred D., Houston, Halifax County. Volume I, page 7.  
Barksdale, Edward M. (deceased), Petersburg. Volume I, page 8.  
Barneby, Walter V. (deceased), Newport News. Volume I, page 8.  
Barnett, George, Huntly, Rappahannock County. Volume V, page 431.  
Barrett, Charles D., Alexandria. Volume I, page 8.  
Bass, Urbane F., colored (deceased), Fredericksburg. Volume I, page 8.  
Battle, John S. (deceased), Roanoke. Volume I, page 8.  
Battle, Marion Somerville, Roanoke. Volume I, page 9.  
Baugher, Clarence A., Elkton, Rockingham County. Volume V, page 432.  
Baxter, Herbert A., Petersburg. Volume V, page 432.  
Beach, William Hall, Concord Wharf, Northampton County. Volume I, page 9.  
Beaman, Joseph H., Franklin, Southampton County. Volume I, page 9; Volume V, page 432.  
Bear, James Martin, Churchville, Augusta County. Volume I, page 10; Volume V, page 432.  
Beatley, William L., Edwardsville, Northumberland County. Volume I, page 10.  
Bell, George Raymond, Richmond. Volume I, page 10.  
Bell, O. C., Bedford County. Volume I, page 10.  
Bell, Richard Phillips, Staunton, Volume I, page 11.  
Bell, William B., Gordonsville, Orange County. Volume I, page 11; Volume V, page 432.  
Bennett, Henry, Boydton, Mecklenburg County. Volume I, page 11.  
Bennett, James A., Nohead, Middlesex County. Volume I, page 11.

- Bentley, James G., Roaring Fork, Wise County. Volume I, page 11.  
 Berg, Hans Bernhardt, Norfolk. Volume I, page 11.  
 Berkley, Thomas Garland, Red Oak, Charlotte County. Volume I, page 11.  
 Biscoe, Robert Elbert, Fredericksburg. Volume I, page 12.  
 Bishop, George O., Salem, Roanoke County. Volume I, page 12.  
 Blackford, Staige Davis, Charlottesville. Volume I, page 12.  
 Blair, John D., Jr., Richmond. Volume I, page 12.  
 Blake, Acy, Virginia. Volume I, page 12.  
 Blake, Frederick P., Virginia. Volume I, page 13.  
 Blankenship, David, Drill, Russell County. Volume I, page 13.  
 Blanks, Raymond E., Virginia. Volume I, page 13.  
 Bloom, Lynn Allen, Norfolk. Volume V, page 433.  
 Boatwright, Walter P., New Canton, Buckingham County. Volume I, page 13.  
 Bocoek, Edgar A., Augusta County. Volume I, page 13.  
 Bocoek, John Holmes, Richmond. Volume I, page 13.  
 Boggs, John Campbell, Richmond. Volume I, page 14.  
 Bogle, Andrew M., Ceres, Bland County. Volume V, page 433.  
 Bolton, Artie Earl, Portsmouth, Norwood and Wingina. Volume I, page 14.  
 Bond, Oliver L., Berkley, Norfolk. Volume I, page 14.  
 Bonnaville, Dave E., Perrin, Gloucester County. Volume V, page 433.  
 Borum, Lewis Preston, Mathews, Mathews County. Volume I, page 14.  
 Boush, Clifford Joseph, Portsmouth. Volume I, page 15.  
 Bowles, Aubrey L., Louisa, Louisa County. Volume V, page 433.  
 Bowman, William H. (deceased), Penn Laird, Buckingham County. Volume I, page 15.  
 Boykin, Samuel V., Richmond. Volume V, page 433.  
 Bradley, Manley, Montebello, Nelson County. Volume I, page 15.  
 Brady, Dalton E., Newport News. Volume I, page 16.  
 Branson, Walter W., Castlewood, Russell County. Volume I, page 16.  
 Brasfield, George Frederick, Lynchburg. Volume I, page 16.  
 Braxton, Elliott Muse, Jr. (deceased), Newport News. Volume I, page 16.  
 Breeden, Charles William, Richmond. Volume I, page 16.  
 Brent, Irl D'A., Roanoke. Volume I, page 17; Volume V, page 434.  
 Bresnahan, Michael John, Virginia. Volume I, page 17.  
 Brewer, James C. (deceased), Bristol. Volume I, page 17.  
 Brewster, David L. S., Lincolnia, Loudoun County. Volume V, page 434.  
 Broadus, Miss Emma, Richmond. Volume I, page 17.  
 Brooks, Chester W., Brokenburg, Spotsylvania County. Volume V, page 434.  
 Brown, Wilson, Jr., Alexandria. Volume I, page 17.  
 Browne, Beverly Fielding, Accomac County. Volume I, page 18; Volume V, page 434.  
 Brownley, Wilbur T., Virginia. Volume I, page 18.  
 Bruce, Harry G., Elkton, Rockingham County. Volume V, page 434.  
 Bryan, Thomas Pinckney, (deceased), Richmond. Volume I, page 18.  
 Buchanan, Fitzhugh L., East Stone Gap, Wise County. Volume V, page 434.  
 Buell, Ernest E., Jonesville, Lee County. Volume I, page 18.  
 Bumgardner, Eugenia S., Staunton. Volume V, page 434.  
 Bundick, Lee, Virginia. Volume I, page 18.  
 Burke, Herbert J., Roanoke. Volume I, page 19.  
 Burks, James Beverly, (deceased), Newport News. Volume I, page 19.  
 Burleigh, John J., Lynchburg. Volume I, page 19.  
 Burrell, Reuben, Lanexa, New Kent County. Volume I, page 20.  
 Burress, James R., Richmond. Volume V, page 435.  
 Burress, Withers A., Richmond. Volume I, page 20.  
 Butcher, Robert G., Petersburg. Volume I, page 20.  
 Butler, Robert Lewis, (deceased), Lynchburg. Volume I, page 20.  
 Butler, William O., Marshall, Fauquire County. Volume I, page 20.  
 Byrd, Richard Evelyn, Jr., Winchester. Volume I, page 20.  
 Byrd, Thomas Bolling, Winchester. Volume I, page 21.  
 Byrd, Woodie E., Port Norfolk. Volume I, page 21.  
 Byrnes, James Carroll, Norfolk. Volume I, page 21.  
 Byron, Arthur William, Cape Charles, Northampton County. Volume I, page 21.



- Cabell, Henry C., Richmond. Volume I, page 21.  
Cabell, Julian Mayo, Richmond. Volume I, page 22; Volume V, page 435.  
Cain, Chester, Roda, Wise County. Volume I, page 22.  
Calloway Patrick H., Norwood, Nelson County. Volume I, page 22.  
Camm, Frank, Lynchburg. Volume I, page 22.  
Cammer, Claude Richard, Winchester. Volume I, page 22; Volume V, page 435.  
Camp, Vaughan, Franklin, Southampton County. Volume I, page 23.  
Campbell, Arthur G., Lexington. Volume I, page 23.  
Campbell, Gilbert S., Charlottesville. Volume I, page 23.  
Campbell, Irving E., Pinetta, Gloucester County. Volume I, page 23.  
Campbell, J. G. B., Berryville, Clarke County. Volume I, page 24; Volume V, page 435.  
Campbell Samuel S., Newport News. Volume I, page 24.  
Canady, Thomas H., Franklin. Volume I, page 24.  
Cannon, Rev. James, III, Blackstone. Volume I, page 24.  
Caparell, Nicholas A., Fort Myer, Arlington County. Volume V, page 436.  
Capps, Jesse A., Ben Hur, Lee County. Volume V, page 436.  
Capps Washington L., Norfolk. Volume I, page 25.  
Carbaugh, Charles F., Stephens City, Frederick County. Volume I, page 25.  
Carr, Armeý B., Ritchpatch, Alleghany County. Volume V, page 436.  
Carson, Miss Anne Loughheed, Riverton, Warren County. Volume I, page 25.  
Carter, Arthur H., Leesburg, Loudoun County. Volume I page 25.  
Carter, Clary (deceased), Naulakla, Caroline County. Volume I, page 26.  
Carter, Franklin Walden, Warrenton, Fauquier County. Volume I, page 26.  
Carter Henry Rose, Caroline County. Volume I, page 26.  
Carter, Hugh C., Lent, Caroline County. Volume I, page 26.  
Carter, Michael E., Charlottesville. Volume I, page 27.  
Carter, Robert B., Virginia. Volume I, page 27.  
Cartwright, Samuel H., Bristol, Washington County. Volume I, page 27.  
Cason, French, Richmond. Volume I, page 27.  
Cassell Dorse H., Kimballton, Giles County. Volume V, page 436.  
Castleman, John R., Berryville, Clarke County. Volume I, page 27  
Causey, Wiliam B., Suffolk. Volume I, page 28.  
Chadwick, F. L., Norfolk. Volume I, page 28.  
Chamberlaine, William, Norfolk. Volume I, page 28.  
Chambliss, T. M., Emporia, Greeneville County. Volume I, page 28.  
Chaney, Edward, Peter's Creek, Patrick County. Volume I, page 29.  
Chernside, Robert Alexander, Staunton. Volume I, page 29.  
Chism, James F., Ballston, Arlington County. Volume V, page 436.  
Chrisley, William H., Woodlawn, Carroll County. Volume I page 29.  
Christian, John W., Harmony, Giles County. Volume I, page 29.  
Churchman, Charles Johnston, Staunton. Volume I, page 30; Volume V, page 436.  
Clarke, George Stanley, Richmond. Volume I, page 30.  
Clausen, John S., Vienna, Fairfax County. Volume I, page 31.  
Clay, Charles Henry, Norfolk. Volume V, page 437.  
Clayton, James Arthur (deceased), Rushville, Rockingham County. Volume I, page 31.  
Clements, Frederick Atwood, Way, Amherst County. Volume I, page 31.  
Cochran, Carlisle C., Richmond. Volume I, page 31.  
Cocke, George William, Bristol. Volume I, page 31.  
Cocke, Lucien Howard, Jr., Roanoke. Volume I, page 31.  
Coffman, DeWitt, Mt. Jackson, Shenandoah County. Volume I, page 32.  
Coffman, Milton Buell, Richmond. Volume I, page 32.  
Cohen, Abraham, Norfolk. Volume V, page 437.  
Cole, James Edward, Jr., Norfolk. Volume I, page 32.  
Collier, Francis Marion, Norfolk. Volume I, page 33.  
Collins, Christopher Clarke, Lynchburg. Volume I, page 33; Volume V, page 437.  
Compton, Cecil A., Rappahannock County. Volume V, page 437.  
Cone, Hutchinson J., Norfolk. Volume I, page 33.  
Conrad, Robert Young (deceased), Winchester. Volume I, page 33.  
Cook, Allen M., Norfolk. Volume V, page 437.

- Cook, John W., Jr., Roanoke. Volume I, page 33.
- Cooper, Everett Bittle, Cambria, Montgomery County. Volume I, page 34.
- Cootes, Harry N., Staunton. Volume I, page 34.
- Copeland, Richard Watson, Hampton. Volume I, page 34.
- Corbell, Edward T., Gloucester, Gloucester County. Volume I, page 35.
- Covington, William Byron, New Church, Accomac County. Volume V, page 437.
- Cox, Creed F., Bridle Creek, Grayson County. Volume V, page 438.
- Cox, Lewis Berkeley, Richmond. Volume I, page 35.
- Craddock, Abraham P., Lynchburg. Volume I, page 35.
- Crenshaw, Russell Sydnor, Richmond. Volume I, page 36.
- Creswell, Evan Curtis, Winchester. Volume I, page 36.
- Crockett, Paul Homer (deceased), Raven, Tazewell County. Volume I, page 36.
- Crockett, Marvin L., Tangier, Accomac County. Volume V, page 438.
- Cromwell, Joseph Purnell, Lynchburg. Volume I, page 36.
- Crone, Christian, Portsmouth. Volume I, page 37.
- Crump, Richard T., Virginia. Volume I, page 37.
- Crumpton, Kenneth, Richmond. Volume I, page 37.
- Cumming, Samuel Calvin, Hampton. Volume I, page 37; Volume V, page 438.
- Curtis, Bernard B., Petersburg. Volume I, page 38.
- Cutchins, John A., Richmond. Volume I, page 38.
- Cuthbert, Andrew Charles, Richmond. Volume I, page 38.
- Dalton, Herbert S., Jr., Richmond. Volume V, page 438.
- Daniel, Charles Ellis, Louisa County. Volume I, page 39.
- Daniels, James E., Petersburg. Volume V, page 439.
- Dashiell, George F. (deceased), Smithfield, Isle of Wigh County. Volume I, page 39.
- Davant, Edward T., Roanoke. Volume I, page 39.
- Davenport, Claude R., Richmond. Volume I, page 39.
- Davis, Isaac B., Castlewood, Russell County. Volume I, page 39.
- Davis, Paul White, Roanoke. Volume I, page 40.
- Davis, Thomas H. (colored), Hampton. Volume I, page 40.
- Davis, Wiltshire C., Farmville, Prince Edward County. Volume I, page 40.
- Dawson, Harvey Allen, Roanoke. Volume I, page 40.
- Dayton, John H., Portsmouth. Volume V, page 439.
- Dean, George S., Newport News. Volume I, page 41.
- Dean, Samuel J., Elkton, Rockingham County. Volume I, page 41.
- De Barneville, Maurice F., Front Royal, Warren County. Volume I, page 41.
- Deems, Clarence, Jr., Fort Monroe, Elizabeth City County. Volume I, page 42.
- Delaplane, Channing E., Buckland, Prince William County. Volume I, page 42.
- Derrickson, Paul Waples (deceased), Norfolk. Volume I, page 42; Volume V, page 439.
- Detton, William T., Charlottesville. Volume I, page 42.
- De Witt, John L., Fortress Monroe, Elizabeth City County. Volume I, page 41.
- Dichman, Grattan C., Norfolk. Volume I, page 42.
- Dickerson, Thomas, Richmond. Volume V, page 439.
- Diener, Louis, Culpeper, Culpeper County. Volume I, page 43.
- Dillingham, A. C., Norfolk. Volume I, page 43.
- Dillon, Henry, Arcanum, Buckingham County. Volume V, page 439.
- Dinges, Harold H., Winchester. Volume I, page 43.
- Dingledine, W. Kendall, Harrisonburg. Volume I, page 43.
- Dishman, Samuel R., Shiloh, King George County. Volume I, page 43.
- Dixon, Zion, Richlands, Tazewell County. Volume I, page 44.
- Dobie, Armistead Mason, Charlottesville. Volume I, page 44.
- Dodson, Wilson Brown (deceased), Norfolk. Volume I, page 44; Volume V, page 440.
- Doeppe, John E., Richmond. Volume I, page 44.
- Doggett, David S., Richmond. Volume I, page 45.
- Dollins, John M., Batesville, Albemarle County. Volume I, page 45.

- Doughty, Charles A., Broadwater, Northampton County. Volume I, page 45.  
Dovell, Chauncey E., Somerset, Orange County. Volume I, page 45.  
Dowdy, Walter L., Grayson County. Volume I, page 46.  
Downer, John Walter, Norfolk. Volume I, page 46.  
Drake, James Hodges, Jr., Richmond. Volume I, page 47.  
Driver, Miss Madge, Richmond. Volume I, page 47.  
Drum, Andrew B., Fort Myer, Arlington County. Volume V, page 440.  
Dunn, James Rupert, Richmond. Volume I, page 47.  
Dunn, Melville Hunter, Ashland, Hanover County. Volume I, page 47.  
Dunn, William McKee, Richmond. Volume I, page 47.  
Dunnington, Walter Grey, Jr., Farmville, Prince Edward County. Volume I, page 47.  
Dutton, Benjamin Bland, Winchester. Volume I, page 48.  
Echols, Oliver P., Charlottesville. Volume I, page 48.  
Edie, Guy Lewis, Christiansburg, Montgomery County. Volume I, page 48.  
Edwards, John Davis (deceased), Norfolk. Volume I, page 48.  
Edwards, William T., Windsor, Isle of Wight County. Volume I, page 49.  
Ellingsworth, Walton Marshall, Norfolk. Volume I, page 49.  
Elliott, Charles B., Alexandria. Volume I, page 49.  
Elliott, Sydney Barrington, Warrenton, Fauquier County. Volume I, page 50.  
Ellyson, Theodore Gordon, Richmond. Volume I, page 50.  
Elmore, Theodore, Danville. Volume I, page 50; Volume V, page 440.  
Emberson, Orphus B., Willis, Floyd County. Volume I, page 50.  
Eoff, Robert Grimshaw, Christiansburg, Montgomery County. Volume V, page 440.  
Estep, Isaac, Clinchport, Scott County. Volume I, page 50.  
Etheridge, Charles Antonio, Norfolk. Volume I, page 51; Volume V, page 440.  
Eubank, Elias Marvin, Clarendon, Arlington County. Volume I, page 51.  
Eubank, Gerald Abner, Virginia. Volume I, page 51.  
Farmer, James B., Radford, Montgomery County. Volume I, page 51.  
Farmer, William R., Gladys, Campbell County. Volume I, page 52.  
Fawcett, Stanley R., Norfolk. Volume I, page 52.  
Fenwick, Edward Gulager, Falls Church, Fairfax County. Volume I, page 52.  
Field, James Gavon, Virginia. Volume I, page 52.  
Fife, James Douglas, Charlottesville. Volume I, page 53.  
Fifer, Ursher Lee, Norfolk. Volume I, page 53.  
Fitts, Francis M., Richmond. Volume I, page 53.  
Fitts, William T., Jr., Virginia. Volume I, page 54.  
Flannagan, Coke, Richmond. Volume I, page 54.  
Fleet, George T., Blacksburg, Montgomery County. Volume I, page 54.  
Fletcher, Forest, Lexington. Volume V, page 440.  
Folts, De Fred G., Richmond. Volume I, page 55.  
Forward, Alexander, Richmond. Volume I, page 55.  
Foster, Talmage D., Bertrand, Lancaster County. Volume I, page 55.  
Fowlkes, Richard Vivian, Roanoke. Volume I, page 55.  
Fox, Charles Dunsmore, Jr., Roanoke. Volume I, page 55.  
Fox, Wade H., Lost Creek. Volume I, page 56.  
Fray, Albert N., Advance Mills, Albemarle County. Volume V, page 440.  
Freeman, Gordon, Pennington Gap, Lee County. Volume I, page 56.  
Frye, Jesse A., Winchester. Volume I, page 56.  
Fuller, Edward C. (deceased), Hamilton, Loudoun County. Volume I, page 56; Volume V, page 441.  
Fury, William H., Norfolk. Volume I, page 56; Volume V, page 441.  
Gallimore, Marcus G., Gilmerton, Norfolk County. Volume I, page 57.  
Gallop, Harold M., Newport News. Volume I, page 57.  
Gardner, Eugene, Hillsville, Carroll County. Volume V, page 441.  
Garrette, Samuel O., Orange, Orange County. Volume I, page 57.  
Garthright, John E., Richmond. Volume I, page 57.  
Gerow, Leonard Townsend, Petersburg. Volume I, page 57.  
Gibson, James A. B., Richmond. Volume I, page 58.  
Gill, William Hanson, Leesburg, Loudoun County. Volume I, page 58.  
Gilliland, Samuel F., South Boston, Halifax County. Volume I, page 58.



- Gilmer, William Painter, Pulaski. Volume I, page 58.  
 Gilmer, William Wirt, Chatham, Pittsylvania County. Volume I, page 59.  
 Gills, W. Armistead, Richmond. Volume I, page 59.  
 Glass, George M., Lynchburg. Volume I, page 59.  
 Glass, Henry B., Lynchburg. Volume I, page 59.  
 Gleaves, Samuel R., Independence, Grayson County. Volume I, page 60.  
 Glenn, Emory D., Fugates Hill, Russell County. Volume I, page 60.  
 Glucksman, Samuel, Portsmouth. Volume I, page 60; Volume V, page 442.  
 Godfrey, John R., Hampton, Elizabeth City County. Volume I, page 61.  
 Goliday, John B., Middletown, Frederick County. Volume V, page 442.  
 Goodman, Clem, Charlottesville. Volume I, page 61.  
 Goodwin, Robert Hazen, Bristol. Volume I, page 61.  
 Goodwin, William Hall, Charlottesville. Volume I, page 61.  
 Goodwyn, Nathaniel B., Richmond. Volume I, page 61.  
 Goolrick, Robert E. M., Fredericksburg. Volume I, page 62.  
 Gordon, Lewis H., Richmond. Volume V, page 442.  
 Gorman, Carlisle A., Richmond. Volume I, page 62.  
 Grabell, Conrad, Virginia. Volume I, page 62.  
 Graham, Edward Lacy, Jr., Lexington. Volume I, page 62.  
 Grant, A. W., Norfolk. Volume I, page 62.  
 Grayson, Cary Travers, Culpeper. Volume I, page 63; Volume V, page 442.  
 Grayson, Stewart M., Vienna, Fairfax County, Volume V, page 442.  
 Green, William W. (colored), Staunton. Volume I, page 63.  
 Greene, John Newport, Staunton. Volume I, page 64.  
 Greene, Samuel B., Toms Creek, Wise County. Volume V, page 442.  
 Gregory, Earl Davis, Chase City, Mecklenburg County. Volume I, page 64.  
 Gregory, John D., Norfolk. Volume I, page 65.  
 Griffin, John, Woodlawn, Carroll County. Volume I, page 65.  
 Griffin, Robert Melville, Virginia. Volume I, page 65.  
 Griffin, Robert Stanislaus, Fredericksburg. Volume I, page 65.  
 Grimes, William R., Leesburg, Loudoun County. Volume I, page 65.  
 Grites, Vrasadas, Norfolk. Volume I, page 65.  
 Grove, Frank A., Max Meadows, Wythe County. Volume V, page 442.  
 Grove, Davis F., Roanoke. Volume I, page 66.  
 Guerrieri, Nick V., Norfolk. Volume V, page 443.  
 Guthrie, John D., Charlotte Court House. Volume V, page 443.  
 Guynn, Mack S., Hillsville, Carroll County. Volume I, page 66; Volume V, page 443.  
 Haburn, Chester, Jonesville, Lee County. Volume V, page 443.  
 Haburn, Harvey L., Jonesville, Lee County. Volume I, page 66.  
 Hackler, Bertram, Salem, Roanoke County. Volume I, page 66.  
 Hagan, Joseph Addison, Richmond. Volume I, page 66; Volume V, page 443.  
 Hagan, Willis C., Roanoke. Volume V, page 444.  
 Hall, John T., Gladys, Campbell County. Volume V, page 444.  
 Hall, Robert H., Independence, Grayson County. Volume I, page 67.  
 Hall, Walter Hurvey, Jr., Norfolk. Volume I, page 67.  
 Halstead, Webster D., Norfolk. Volume I, page 67.  
 Hamilton, Robert Patrick, Jr., Petersburg. Volume I, page 67.  
 Hamilton, Thomas C., Holland, Nansemond County. Volume V, page 444.  
 Hamlin, Percy Gatling, Richmond. Volume I, page 67.  
 Hamm, Horace Lothrop, Berkley, Norfolk. Volume I, page 67.  
 Hammond, Charles Galloway, Roanoke. Volume I, page 68.  
 Hammond, Gordon, Ashland, Hanover County. Volume I, page 68.  
 Hamner, Edward Chambers, Lynchburg. Volume I, page 68.  
 Handy, Thomas Troy, Emory, Washington County. Volume I, page 68.  
 Hanscom, John F., Savedge, Surry County. Volume I, page 68.  
 Harman, Walter, Virginia. Volume I, page 69.  
 Harmon, Daniel W., Charlottesville. Volume I, page 69.  
 Harmon, Russell Albert, Floyd, Floyd County. Volume V, page 444.  
 Harner, William R., Ceres, Bland County. Volume V, page 444.  
 Harris, Harry B., Willis, Floyd County. Volume I, page 69.  
 Harris, Ollie E., Kerr's Creek, Rockbridge County. Volume I, page 69.  
 Hart, Murray E., Danville. Volume V, page 444.  
 Hartigan, James S., Lexington, Rockbridge County. Volume V, page 445

Hartigan, Walter F. L., Lynchburg. Volume I, page 69.  
Hartsock, John S., Nickelsville, Scott County. Volume I, page 69.  
Harwood, Franklin Andrews, Richmond. Volume V, page 445.  
Hash, Ellis I., Independence, Grayson County. Volume I, page 70.  
Hash, Kyle C. (deceased), Major, Grayson County. Volume I, page 70.  
Haskett, Walter L., Pearisburg, Giles County. Volume I, page 70.  
Hatch, Benjamin Thomas, Jr., Disputanta, Prince George County. Volume I, page 71.  
Hathaway, Edwin Clarke, Jr., Riverview, Norfolk County. Volume I, page 71.  
Hayes, Thomas W., Suffolk. Volume I, page 71.  
Haynes, Harris, Alexandria. Volume V, page 445.  
Hazard, Erskine, Richmond. Volume I, page 71.  
Hazlegrove, William Perkins, Roanoke. Volume I, page 72; Volume V, page 445.  
Heath, Tarlton Fleming, Jr., Petersburg. Volume I, page 73.  
Heck, Danna H., Damascus, Washington County. Volume V, page 445.  
Heflin, Melfore, Tackett Mills, Stafford County. Volume I, page 73.  
Hennelly, James Hannan, Norfolk. Volume I, page 73.  
Hensley, Benjamin H., Floyd, Floyd County. Volume I, page 73.  
Herndon, Lewis Sidney, Max Meadows, Wythe County. Volume V, page 445.  
Hester, Carl P., Marion, Smyth County. Volume I, page 73.  
Hildreth, Richard P., Charlottesville. Volume I, page 74.  
Hileman, Joseph Leonard, Iron Gate, Alleghany County. Volume I, page 74.  
Hill, Abb, Millard, Dickenson County. Volume I, page 74.  
Hill, George T., Danville. Volume I, page 74.  
Hill, James E., Roanoke. Volume V, page 446.  
Hilton, James C., Norfolk. Volume I, page 75.  
Hines, LeRoy O., Norfolk. Volume I, page 75.  
Hirst, Samuel Carroll, Purcellville. Volume I, page 75; Volume V, page 446.  
Hoback, Charlie G., Norfolk. Volume I, page 75.  
Hodge, George N., Williamsville, Bath County. Volume V, page 446.  
Hodges, Earl L., Norfolk. Volume I, page 75.  
Hodges, Harry Lumsden (deceased), Richmond. Volume I, page 76.  
Holladay, Gray Goodwin, Portsmouth. Volume I, page 76.  
Holland, William H., Suffolk. Volume V, page 446.  
Holloway, Horace L., Richmond. Volume I, page 76.  
Holman, L. A., Norfolk. Volume I, page 77.  
Honaker, Zed S., Honaker, Russell County. Volume V, page 446.  
Hooker, Karl M., Lynchburg. Volume V, page 446.  
Hooker, Norman D., Amelia County. Volume I, page 77.  
Hope, Edward B., Petersburg. Volume I, page 77.  
Hopkins, Charles Henry, Virginia. Volume I, page 77.  
Hopkins, Samuel R., Warsaw, Richmond County. Volume I, page 77.  
Hopkins, William Stevens, Jr., Lexington. Volume I, page 77.  
Horn, Granville M., Skeggs, Buchanan County. Volume V, page 447.  
Horn, Walter F., Marvin, Buchanan County. Volume I, page 78.  
Hoskins, Tom, Norfolk. Volume I, page 78.  
Howe, Elliott Hampton (deceased), East Radford. Volume I, page 78.  
Howell, Thomas F., Clintwood, Dickenson County. Volume I, page 78.  
Hudgins, Lyttlebury W., Diggs, Mathews County. Volume I, page 78.  
Hudnall, James Snowden, Sunnysbank, Northumberland County. Volume V, page 447.  
Hudnall, James W. (deceased), Critz, Patrick County. Volume I, page 79.  
Hughes, Robert Greene, Richmond. Volume I, page 79.  
Hughes, William Edward, Lynchburg. Volume I, page 79.  
Hulbert, William P., Middleburg, Loudoun County. Volume I, page 80; Volume V, page 447.  
Hulcher, Frank G., Richmond. Volume V, page 447.  
Hulcher, Julius J., Richmond. Volume V, page 447.  
Hume, Julian R., Norfolk. Volume V, page 447.  
Hundley, Michael J., Kingston. Volume I, page 80.  
Hurdle, William Glenn (colored), Nansemond County. Volume I, page 80.  
Hurt, George S., Roanoke. Volume I, page 80.  
Hyatt, Claudius Roscoe, Jonesville, Lee County. Volume I, page 80.

- Iden, John Hooe**, Manassas, Prince William County. Volume I, page 81.  
**Ingram, Isaac F.**, Ferrum, Franklin County. Volume I, page 81.  
**Irby, Spirley E.** (colored), Lunenburg County. Volume I, page 81.  
**Irvine, Frank Sterrett**, Charlottesville. Volume I, page 81.  
**Jackson, Andrew**, Wingina, Nelson County. Volume I, page 81.  
**Jackson, Robert Bruce**, Keswick, Albemarle County. Volume I, page 81.  
**Jamerson, George Hairston**, Martinsville, Henry County. Volume I, page 82; Volume V, page 447.  
**James, Jules**, Danville. Volume I, page 82.  
**Jeffers, George L.**, Richmond. Volume V, page 448.  
**Jeffrey, Miss Lucy**, Richmond. Volume I, page 82.  
**Jenkins, Homer B.**, Stanley, Page County. Volume V, page 448.  
**Jenkins, Luther R.**, Speers Ferry, Scott County. Volume V, page 448.  
**Jenkins, James T.**, Buena Vista, Rockbridge County. Volume I, page 82.  
**Jennings, Edgar A.**, Lynchburg. Volume I, page 82.  
**Jervey, Henry**, Portsmouth. Volume I, page 83.  
**Jervey, James Portell**, Portsmouth. Volume I, page 83.  
**Johnsen, Niels Anton**, Virginia. Volume I, page 83.  
**Johnson, Brainard Ward**, Roanoke. Volume I, page 84.  
**Johnson, Chauncey** (colored), Phoebus, Elizabeth City County. Volume I, page 84.  
**Johnson, Clyde D.** (deceased), Richmond. Volume I, page 84; Vol. V, page 448.  
**Johnson, John**, Norfolk. Volume I, page 84.  
**Johnson, Thomas H.**, Riner, Montgomery County. Volume I, page 84.  
**Johnson, William T.**, Waverly, Sussex County. Volume I, page 85.  
**Johnston, A. Langstaff, Jr.**, Richmond. Volume I, page 85.  
**Johnston, Ewart**, Winchester. Volume I, page 85.  
**Johnstone, Alan S.**, Virginia. Volume I, page 85.  
**Jones, Allen C.**, Lexington. Volume V, page 448.  
**Jones, Catesby Ap Catesby**, Richmond. Volume I, page 86.  
**Jones, Charles G.**, Hopewell. Volume I, page 86.  
**Jones, Ernest Lester**, Rixeyville, Culpeper County. Volume V, page 448.  
**Jones, George R.**, Richmond. Volume V, page 448.  
**Jones, Hilary P.**, Markham, Fauquier County. Volume I, page 86.  
**Jones, Horace Walker**, Charlottesville. Volume I, page 86.  
**Jones, James Thomas**, Charlottesville. Volume I, page 86.  
**Jones, Julian D.**, Carysbrook, Fluvanna County. Volume I, page 86.  
**Jones, Percy H.** (deceased), Mecklenburg County. Volume I, page 86.  
**Jones, Telemaque Archer III**, Richmond. Volume I, page 87.  
**Jones, William L.**, Charlottesville. Volume V, page 449.  
**Jordan, John P.**, Haymarket, Prince William County. Volume I, page 87.  
**Jordan, Nolan L.**, Courtland, Southampton County. Volume I, page 87.  
**Jordan, Richard H.**, Virginia. Volume V, page 449.  
**Joynes, James C.** (colored), Onancock, Accomac County. Volume I, page 87.  
**Justis, Linwood H.**, Midlothian, Chesterfield County. Volume I, page 88.  
**Kaufman, John Brooks**, Portsmouth. Volume I, page 88.  
**Kean, Jefferson Randolph**, Virginia. Volume I, page 88.  
**Keezell, Rembrant P.**, Harrisonburg. Volume I, page 88.  
**Kellam, James C.**, Franktown, Northampton County. Volume I, page 88.  
**Kelly, Arthur Harold** (deceased), Richmond. Volume I, page 88.  
**Kelly, Luther Wrentmore**, Williamsburg. Volume I, page 89.  
**Kennedy, Grant, Imboden**, Wise County. Volume I, page 89.  
**Kern, James William, Jr.**, Lexington. Volume I, page 89.  
**Kessler, Milton**, Norfolk. Volume I, page 90.  
**Keyser, Ralph Stover**, Prince William County. Volume I, page 90; Volume V, page 449.  
**Kilbourne, Charles Evans**, Fort Whipple. Volume I, page 91.  
**Kimberly, Allen**, Elizabeth City County. Volume I, page 91.  
**Kimberly, Clarke Oler**, Hampton. Volume I, page 91; Volume V, page 450.  
**King, Arthur J.**, Norfolk. Volume V, page 450.  
**King, Marshall W.**, Hopewell. Volume V, page 450.  
**King, Taylor T.**, Cana, Carroll County. Volume I, page 91.  
**King, William Robert**, Poplar Hill, Giles County. Volume I, page 92.



- Kinnear, John A., Lexington. Volume I, page 92.  
Kinsolving, Arthur Barksdale, Richmond. Volume I, page 92.  
Kinsolving, Charles McIlwaine, Richmond. Volume I, page 92.  
Kitchener, John S., Hampton. Volume I, page 92.  
Kite, George J., Grove Hill, Page County. Volume I, page 92.  
Kivlighan, Edward R., Staunton. Volume V, page 450.  
Klouse, Robert W., Richmond. Volume I, page 93.  
Knight, John T., Newport News. Volume I, page 93.  
Knight, John T., Jr., Newport News. Volume I, page 93.  
Kobbe, Ferdinand W., Virginia. Volume I, page 93.  
Kyle, Bernard Hewett, Lynchburg. Volume I, page 93; Volume V, page 450.  
Lacy, Oswald F., Bedford County. Volume V, page 451.  
Laird, Horace C., Norfolk. Volume I, page 94.  
Lambeth, George D., Jr., Richmond. Volume I, page 94; Volume V, page 451.  
Lamon, Wallace J., Culpeper County. Volume I, page 94.  
Landon, Edward Carter Braxton, Hampton. Volume I, page 95.  
Langhorne, George T., Lynchburg. Volume I, page 96.  
Langly, James, Hagan, Lee County. Volume V, page 451.  
Lannon, James Patrick, Alexandria. Volume I, page 96.  
Lassiter, William, Petersburg. Volume I, page 96.  
Lawhorne, Dewey H., Schoolfield, Pittsylvania County. Volume I, page 96; Volume V, page 452.  
Lawrence, Vivian Streeter, Jr., Churchland, Norfolk County. Volume I, page 96.  
Layne, Frank W., Buckner, Louisa County. Volume I, page 97.  
Ledman, John W., Manassas, Prince William County. Volume V, page 452.  
Lee, Claude M., Albemarle County. Volume I, page 97.  
Lee, Henry D., Richmond. Volume I, page 97.  
Lewis, Frank Nelson (deceased), Cismont, Albemarle County. Volume I, page 97.  
Lieberman, Morris Joseph, Richmond. Volume I, page 97.  
Lindsay, Clarke (deceased), Charlottesville. Volume I, page 98.  
Lindsay, James B., Boyce, Clarke County. Volume V, page 452.  
Lindsey, Eugene Lee, Alexandria. Volume I, page 98.  
Lloyd, Mitchell F. (deceased), Suffolk. Volume I, page 98.  
Love, James Monroe, Jr., Fairfax, Fairfax County. Volume I, page 98.  
Loyd, Samuel Ashton, Lynchburg. Volume I, page 99.  
Lumpkin, Laurence M., Richmond. Volume I, page 99.  
Lumsden, Clarence, Boone Mill, Franklin County. Volume V, page 452.  
Lunt, Samuel M., Alexandria. Volume I, page 99.  
Lyle, Archibald G., Millboro, Bath County. Volume I, page 100; Volume V, page 452.  
Lyon, John (deceased), Rosslyn, Arlington County. Volume I, page 100.  
Lyon, Leon E., Norfolk. Volume I, page 100.  
Lyon, Leroy S., Petersburg. Volume I, page 100.  
McCabe, Edward Raynsford W., Richmond. Volume I, page 100.  
McCandish, Benjamin Vaughan, Petersburg. Volume I, page 101.  
McCaw, Walter Drew, Richmond. Volume I, page 101.  
McClanahan, James Reece, Big Rock, Buchanan County. Volume I, page 101; Volume V, page 452.  
McClellan, John Murray (deceased), Richmond. Volume I, page 101; Volume V, page 453.  
McCluer, Edwin Alexander, Urbanna, Middlesex County. Volume I, page 102.  
McCormick, Albert Montgomery Dupey, Clarke County. Volume I, page 102.  
McCoy, Claude, Portsmouth. Volume V, page 453.  
McCoy, Steve A., Carterton, Russell County. Volume V, page 453.  
McCreery, Victor A., Arrington, Nelson County. Volume V, page 453.  
McDaniels, Thomas S., Lynchburg. Volume I, page 102.  
McGhee, Hugh G., Roanoke. Volume V, page 453.  
McGroarty, Stephen, Falls Church, Fairfax County. Volume I, page 102.  
McGuire, John, Cedar Bluff, Tazewell County. Volume I, page 103.  
McGuire, Mrs. Ruth Robertson, Richmond. Volume I, page 103.  
McGuire, Stuart, Richmond. Volume I, page 103.  
McKinney, Thomas G., Danville. Volume V, page 453.

- McLeod, Alexander, Glen Allen, Henrico County. Volume V, page 453.  
 McLeod, Charles C., Lynchburg. Volume I, page 103.  
 Mackall, William W., Jr., Prince William County. Volume I, page 104.  
 Maclin, Henry W., Petersburg. Volume I, page 103.  
 Maddux, Henry Cabell, Orange, Orange County. Volume I, page 104.  
 Mallory, Henry R., Richmond. Volume I, page 104.  
 Maloney, John Paul, Cullen, Charlotte County. Volume I, page 104.  
 Manning, James F., Jr., Purcellville, Loudoun County. Volume I, page 104; Volume V, page 454.  
 Maphis, Carl Burdette, Strasburg, Shenandoah County. Volume I, page 105.  
 Marsh, Arthur G., Emporia, Greensville County. Volume I, page 105.  
 Marsh, John C., Charlottesville. Volume I, page 105.  
 Marshall, James Strother (colored), Delaplane, Fauquier County. Volume I, page 105.  
 Marshall, John Henry, Portsmouth. Volume I, page 106.  
 Marshall, Richard Coke, Jr., Portsmouth. Volume I, page 106.  
 Martin, Clarence Ames, Accomac County. Volume I, page 106.  
 Martin, Fred E., Charlottesville. Volume I, page 106.  
 Martin, W. A., Norfolk. Volume I, page 106.  
 Martin, William Watkins, Richmond. Volume I, page 107.  
 Mason, Horatio P., Hampton. Volume I, page 107.  
 Massie, Nathaniel Harden, Danville. Volume I, page 107.  
 Mathews, Alonzo R., Penhook, Franklin County. Volume V, page 454.  
 Mathews, Paul E., Petersburg. Volume I, page 107; Volume V, page 454.  
 Mathews, Harry A., Richmond. Volume V, page 454.  
 Maury, Dabney Henderson, Jr., Millboro, Bath County. Volume V, page 454.  
 Maxfield, Louis H., Norfolk. Volume I, page 107.  
 Maxie, Raymond Edgar, Richmond. Volume I, page 108.  
 Maynard, Edwin Brooks, Portsmouth. Volume I, page 108; Volume V, page 454.  
 Maynard, Harry Lee, Jr., Norfolk. Volume I, page 108; Volume V, page 455.  
 Meade, Grover M., Castlewood, Russell County. Volume I, page 109.  
 Meek, Samuel W., Jr., Richmond. Volume I, page 109.  
 Megenney, Wilber Eugene, Norfolk. Volume I, page 109.  
 Melton, Herbert S., Lynchburg. Volume V, page 455.  
 Menefee, Marvin James, Luray, Page County. Volume I, page 109.  
 Meredith, Raymond Glenn, Norfolk. Volume I, page 110.  
 Mezoff, John J., Waverly, Sussex County. Volume I, page 110.  
 Michie, Henry C., Jr., Charlottesville. Volume V, page 455.  
 Milan, William M., Jr., Cambria, Montgomery County. Volume I, page 110.  
 Miles, Alfred Hart, Norfolk. Volume I, page 111.  
 Miles, Harry Bernard (deceased), Richmond. Volume I, page 111.  
 Millar, Hudson C., Cupeper County. Volume I, page 111.  
 Miller, Cary F. (deceased), Bridgewater, Rockingham County. Volume I, page 111.  
 Miller, Claude H., Lynchburg. Volume I, page 111.  
 Miller, Wade H. (deceased), Hopewell. Volume I, page 112.  
 Mills, Morgan Reagan, Jr., Richmond. Volume I, page 112; Volume V, page 455.  
 Minnigerode, Fitzhugh Lee, Fairfax County. Volume I, page 112.  
 Miskill, Thomas Godwin, Portsmouth. Volume I, page 113.  
 Mitchell, Frank Mazyck, Norfolk. Volume I, page 113; Volume V, page 456.  
 Mitchell, James L., Norfolk. Volume I, page 113.  
 Mitchell, O. B., Lynchburg. Volume I, page 113.  
 Monarch, James McK., Richmond. Volume V, page 456.  
 Moneyhun, Ralph C., Toms Creek, Wise County. Volume V, page 456.  
 Monroe, Charles T., Seneca, Campbell County. Volume I, page 113.  
 Montague, James Lewis, Christiansburg, Montgomery County. Volume I, page 114.  
 Montague, Robert Latane, Richmond. Volume I, page 115.  
 Moore, Charles Ellett, Richmond. Volume I, page 115.  
 Moore, George S., Tazewell, Tazewell County. Volume V, page 456.  
 Moore, J. S., Lexington, Rockbridge County. Volume I, page 116.  
 Moore, Walter, Alexandria. Volume I, page 116.

- Morgan, Francis M., Ravenswood. Volume I, page 116.  
Morris, John Leon, Lexington, Rockbridge County. Volume I, page 116.  
Morrisett, Daniel G., Winterpock, Chesterfield County. Volume V, page 456.  
Morrisette, Charles J., Charlottesville. Volume I, page 117.  
Morrison, Robert Bruce, Murat, Rockbridge County. Volume I, page 117.  
Moss, Charlie, Lynchburg. Volume I, page 117.  
Mott, Thomas Bentley, Leesburg, Loudoun County. Volume I, page 117.  
Moyers, Marvin, Harrisonburg. Volume I, page 117.  
Muir, Peter Upton, University. Volume I, page 117.  
Multerer, John, Rosslyn, Arlington County. Volume I, page 118.  
Munce, George Gilliam, Richmond. Volume I, page 118.  
Murdock, James Paulding, Portsmouth. Volume V, page 456.  
Murray, Lee Chester, Bentonville, Warren County. Volume I, page 118.  
Myers, Richard Pegram, Petersburg. Volume V, page 456.  
Nalle, James Barbour (deceased), Culpeper County. Volume I, page 118.  
Neal, Ralph Thomas (deceased), Hampton. Volume I, page 119.  
Nelms, James Archie, Newport News. Volume I, page 119; Volume V, page 457.  
Nelson, Henry Warner, Taft, Lancaster County. Volume I, page 119.  
Nester, John C., Laurel Fork, Carroll County. Volume V, page 457.  
Neville, Wendell Cushing, Portsmouth. Volume I, page 120.  
Nevin, Hardwick M., Charlottesville. Volume I, page 121.  
Newbill, Willard Douglas, Irvington, Lancaster County. Volume I, page 121.  
Newman, Bernard, Darbyville, Lee County. Volume I, page 121.  
Newton, Noah Clifford, Passapatanzy, King George County. Volume I, page 121.  
Newton, Robert I., Ballston, Arlington County. Volume V, page 457.  
Nolan, Philip, Salem, Roanoke County. Volume I, page 121.  
Nolley, Frank Richmond, Norfolk. Volume I, page 121; Volume V, page 457.  
Norfleet, Richard M., Holland, Nansemond County. Volume I, page 122.  
Norris, Whitton Evans, Staunton. Volume I, page 122.  
Nulton, Louis McCoy, Winchester. Volume I, page 122.  
Nye, William Pepper, Radford. Volume I, page 122.  
Oglesby, Reuben Hillman, Lynchburg. Volume I, page 122.  
Oiler, George, Olive, Culpeper County. Volume I, page 123.  
Old, Edward Henry Herbert, Norfolk. Volume I, page 123.  
Opie, Hierome Lindsey, Staunton. Volume I, page 123.  
Osborne, Claude, Clinchfield, Russell County. Volume I, page 124.  
Osterhaus, Hugo Wilson, Virginia. Volume I, page 124.  
Ould, Robert, Norfolk. Volume I, page 124.  
Oury, William H., Virginia. Volume I, page 124.  
Owens, Oscar Lee, Windsor, Isle of Wight County. Volume V, page 457.  
Owens, Raymond E., Nocas, King George County. Volume I, page 125.  
Ozlin, Robert Lucas, Dundas, Lunenburg County. Volume I, page 125.  
Page, Thomas Newton, Norfolk. Volume I, page 125.  
Palmer, Samuel A., Petersburg. Volume I, page 125.  
Pannill, Augustus Hunter, Chatham, Pittsylvania County. Volume I, page 125.  
Parcell, Charley N., Rocky Mount, Franklin County. Volume I, page 125.  
Parker, George Withern, Norfolk. Volume I, page 126.  
Parker, Hugh C., Mount Landing, Essex County. Volume I, page 126.  
Parker, William P., Richmond. Volume V, page 457.  
Parks, Victor, Norfolk. Volume I, page 126.  
Parr, Carl A., Low Moor, Alleghany County. Volume V, page 457.  
Parrish, Charles Jefferson, Clifton Forge. Volume I, page 126.  
Parsons, Clifford D., Blacksburg. Volume I, page 127.  
Partridge, Lloyd S., Norfolk. Volume I, page 127.  
Patterson, Earle B., Charlottesville. Volume I, page 127.  
Patteson, G. W., Jr., Martinsville, Henry County. Volume I, page 127.  
Payne, Marion W., Charlottesville. Volume I, page 127.  
Paynter, Edward B., Richmond. Volume I, page 128.  
Peck, Myron Holt (deceased), Petersburg. Volume I, page 128.  
Peed, George Pulman, Portsmouth. Volume I, page 128.  
Peek, George M., Hampton. Volume V, page 458.



- Pendleton, Robert W., Glade Spring, Washington County. Volume I, page 128.
- Percy, Alfred Boyd, Norfolk. Volume I, page 128.
- Perkinson, Allen Carlyle, Petersburg. Volume I, page 129; Volume V, page 458.
- Perry, Miss Edith V., Charlottesville. Volume I, page 130.
- Perry, Randolph H., Charlottesville. Volume I, page 130.
- Persinger, Henry L., Virginia. Volume V, page 458.
- Peterson, Arnold, Norfolk. Volume I, page 130.
- Peterson, Axel, Norfolk. Volume I, page 130.
- Pettigrew, Vance M., Virginia. Volume V, page 458.
- Peyton, Philip Bradley, Charlottesville. Volume I, page 130.
- Phelps, James Thomas, Portsmouth. Volume I, page 131.
- Phelps, Wilbur Moorehead, Staunton. Volume I, page 131; Volume V, page 458.
- Phillips, Walter C., Floyd County. Volume I, page 131; Volume V, page 459.
- Phipps, Walter Blaine, Clintwood, Dickenson County. Volume I, page 131.
- Pickrell, George, Richmond. Volume I, page 132.
- Poff, William D., Roanoke. Volume V, page 459.
- Poindexter, William B., Ridgeway, Henry County. Volume I, page 132; Volume V, page 459.
- Polley, James Dickson, Richmond. Volume I, page 132.
- Porter, Ernest C., Holland, Chesterfield County. Volume I, page 132.
- Porter, Patrick A., Alexandria. Volume I, page 132.
- Potter, Lyman H., Suffolk. Volume I, page 133.
- Potts, Allen, Richmond. Volume I, page 133.
- Pound, Robert D., Leedstown, Westmoreland County. Volume V, page 459.
- Powell, Halsey, Norfolk. Volume I, page 133.
- Powers, Sidney E., Charlottesville. Volume I, page 133.
- Price, Thomas T., Abingdon, Washington County. Volume I, page 134.
- Puryear, Bennett, Jr., Orange. Volume I, page 134; Volume V, page 459.
- Quinn, Lawrence A., Fort Myer, Arlington County. Volume I, page 134.
- Ragland, William Lee, Virginia. Volume V, page 460.
- Raney, Augusta B., Lunenburg County. Volume I, page 134.
- Rankin, Clay Preston, Midland, Fauquier County. Volume I, page 134.
- Rankin, Julius D., Roanoke. Volume I, page 135.
- Reed, Asa D., Alum Ridge, Floyd County. Volume I, page 135.
- Reed, Washington, Smithfield, Isle of Wight County. Volume I, page 135.
- Reedy, George Coleman, Madison County. Volume I, page 135.
- Reid, Joseph William (deceased). Volume I, page 136.
- Reid, Robert L., Round Hill, Loudoun County. Volume V, page 460.
- Reynoldi, Frank I., Newport News. Volume I, page 136.
- Reynolds, Earl Thomas, Richmond. Volume I, page 136.
- Reynolds, Fred M., Barren Springs, Wythe County. Volume I, page 136.
- Reynolds, William Graham, Berryville, Clarke County. Volume I, page 136.
- Rhodes, Joseph S., Roanoke. Volume I, page 137; Volume V, page 460.
- Rhudy, George Garland, Elk Creek, Grayson County. Volume I, page 137.
- Rice, Herman M., Jeffress, Mecklenburg County. Volume I, page 137.
- Richards, James Neville Cocke (deceased), Petersburg. Volume I, page 137; Volume V, page 460.
- Richards, Walter A., Clifton Station, Fairfax County. Volume I, page 137.
- Richardson, Charles S. (deceased), West Point. Volume I, page 138.
- Richardson, Joseph E., Norfolk. Volume I, page 138.
- Richardson, Royall Roller, Harrisonburg. Volume I, page 138.
- Richmond, Charles H., Theological Seminary, Fairfax County. Volume I, page 138.
- Riley, Samuel P., Shradlers, Tazewell County. Volume V, page 460.
- Riner, Robert B., Castlewood, Russell County. Volume V, page 460.
- Ritter, John, Winchester. Volume I, page 138.
- Roark, Frederick M., Warrenton, Fauquier County. Volume I, page 139.
- Robbins, William Creed, St. Charles, Lee County. Volume I, page 139.
- Robertson, Archibald Gerard, Staunton. Volume I, page 139.
- Robinson, Fielding Slaughter, Norfolk. Volume I, page 139.
- Robinson, James M., Colley, Dickenson County. Volume V, page 461.

- Roblee, Norman M., Richmond. Volume I, page 140.
- Rockenbach, Samuel Dickerson, Lynchburg. Volume I, page 140; Volume V, page 461.
- Rogers, Charles F., Forksville, Mecklenburg County. Volume I, page 140.
- Rogers, E. B., Herndon, Fairfax County. Volume I, page 140.
- Rogers, Herbert Wilson, Nassawadox, Northampton County. Volume V, page 461.
- Rogers, William Hudson, Amelia, Amelia County. Volume I, page 141.
- Romiger, Clifford E., Roanoke. Volume I, page 141.
- Rose, Sanford L., Callahan, Scott County. Volume V, page 461.
- Ross, Oliver B., Radford. Volume I, page 141.
- Rouzie, Thomas Jefferson, Newport News. Volume I, page 141.
- Rowan, James H., Greenville, Augusta County. Volume I, page 141.
- Rowan, Robert P., Greenville, Augusta County. Volume I, page 142.
- Rowlett, James Breckenridge, Bedford County. Volume I, page 142.
- Royster, Thomas H., Virgilina, Halifax County. Volume I, page 142.
- Runyon, Andrew, Hurley, Buchanan County. Volume I, page 142.
- Rust, Bryan, Purcellville, Loudoun County. Volume I, page 142.
- Rutherford, Walter Orville, Harrisonburg. Volume I, page 143.
- Ryan, Claude Hoyt, Winchester. Volume I, page 143.
- Sadler, George W., Lane View, Essex County. Volume I, page 143.
- Saide, Joseph, Norfolk. Volume I, page 143.
- Sale, Charles Wallace, Fredericksburg. Volume I, page 143.
- Salyers, Fred R., Wise, Wise County. Volume V, page 461.
- Sanford, Leon R., Norfolk. Volume I, page 143.
- Sayre, Jonas Earle, Bridgewater, Rockingham County. Volume I, page 144.
- Sayre, Lewis A., The Plains, Fauquier County. Volume I, page 144.
- Scott, George Cole, Richmond. Volume I, page 144.
- Scott, Johnson L., Roanoke. Volume I, page 144.
- Scott, Marshall (deceased), Charlottesville. Volume I, page 144.
- Sebra, Allen J., Burgess Store, Northumberland County. Volume I, page 145.
- Seelinger, Harry R., Norfolk. Volume I, page 145; Volume V, page 462.
- Seets, Lester L., Marion, Smyth County. Volume I, page 145.
- Selfe, Carter C., Castlewood, Russell County. Volume I, page 145.
- Selfe, Willie J., Fredericksburg. Volume I, page 145.
- Sellers, Edgar W., Elkton, Rockingham County. Volume V, page 462.
- Semones, Paul T., Roanoke. Volume I, page 146.
- Settle, John M., Stewartsville, Bouteourt County. Volume I, page 146.
- Shackelford, Chauncey, Norfolk. Volume I, page 146.
- Shackelford, Robert T., Cismont, Albemarle County. Volume I, page 146.
- Shaffer, Carl William, Woodstock, Shenandoah County. Volume I, page 147.
- Shanklin, Almeron W. (deceased), Crozet, Albemarle County. Volume I, page 147.
- Shanks, David Carey, Salem, Roanoke County. Volume I, page 147.
- Sharman, Herbert, Elizabeth City County. Volume I, page 148.
- Sharpe, Robert E., Norfolk. Volume I, page 148.
- Sheen, Henry H., Virginia. Volume I, page 148; Volume V, page 462.
- Sheild, Philip B., Richmond. Volume I, page 148.
- Shelor, Charles A., Richmond. Volume I, page 148.
- Shelor, Waitman T., Willis, Floyd County. Volume I, page 149.
- Shepherd, Lemuel Cornick, Jr., Norfolk. Volume I, page 149; Volume V, page 462.
- Shepherd, William H., Norfolk. Volume I, page 149.
- Shores, Colburn, Tangier, Accomac County. Volume I, page 149; Volume V, page 462.
- Shufflebarger, Auburn J., Dryden, Lee County. Volume I, page 149.
- Sibold, George G., Roanoke. Volume I, page 150.
- Sidney, Monroe Foster, Lynchburg. Volume I, page 150.
- Silvester, Lindsay McD., Portsmouth. Volume I, page 150.
- Silvey, William Russell, Buckingham County. Volume V, page 463.
- Skinner, Frederick Henry, Newport News. Volume I, page 150; Volume V, page 463.
- Skinner, Henderson W., Suffolk. Volume I, page 151.
- Skuers, Joseph, Sweet Hall, King William County. Volume V, page 463.

- Slaughter, Smith S., Quinque, Greene County. Volume V, page 463.  
 Slaughter, Willis Richardson, Lynchburg. Volume I, page 151.  
 Smeaton, Robert, Virginia. Volume V, page 463.  
 Smith, Benjamin Franklin, Mathews County. Volume I, page 151; Volume V, page 463.  
 Smith, Doil L., Bassetts, Henry County. Volume I, page 151.  
 Smith, George B., Jr., Capron, Southampton County. Volume I, page 151.  
 Smith, Horace Lilburn, Jr., Petersburg. Volume I, page 152.  
 Smith, James Downing, Charlottesville. Volume I, page 152.  
 Smith, Martin Xavier, Norfolk. Volume I, page 152.  
 Smith, Perry Coke, Norfolk. Volume I, page 152.  
 Smith, Robert W., Winchester. Volume V, page 464.  
 Smith, Roy Campbell, Richmond. Volume I, page 152.  
 Smith, Wyatte P., Haymarket, Prince William County. Volume I, page 153.  
 Smolley, App, Bristol. Volume I, page 153.  
 Smythers, Fred A., Hillsville, Carroll County. Volume V, page 464.  
 Snapp, Louis Edward (deceased), Winchester. Volume I, page 153.  
 Snead, John J., Tyro, Nelson County. Volume V, page 464.  
 Snidow, Robert C., Pembroke, Giles County. Volume I, page 153.  
 Snowden, David Arrel Windsor, Alexandria. Volume I, page 153.  
 Snyder, James D., Abingdon, Washington County. Volume V, page 464.  
 Somers, Vernon Lee (deceased), Bloxom, Accomac County. Volume I, page 154; Volume V, page 464.  
 Spessard, Rutherford H., Newcastle, Craig County. Volume I, page 154; Volume V, page 465.  
 Spilman, Baldwin Day, Jr., Warrenton, Fauquier County. Volume I, page 154.  
 Spilman, Robert Scott, Warrenton, Fauquier County. Volume I, page 154.  
 Squires, Lloyd F., Ocran, Lancaster County. Volume V, page 465.  
 Stanworth, Charles S., Norfolk. Volume I, page 155.  
 Stark, Alexander Newton, Norfolk. Volume I, page 155.  
 Stark, Alexander Newton, Jr., Norfolk. Volume I, page 155.  
 Stephens, Joseph W. G., Northumberland County. Volume I, page 156; Volume V, page 465.  
 Stewart, Henry, Jr., Norfolk. Volume I, page 156.  
 Stewart, Richard P., Pennington Gap, Lee County. Volume V, page 465.  
 Stickney, Herman O., Norfolk. Volume I, page 156.  
 Stocker, Robert Maury (deceased), Hampton. Volume I, page 156.  
 Stone, Alexander H., Fredericksburg. Volume I, page 157.  
 Stone, Benjamin L., Sanville, Henry County. Volume V, page 465.  
 Stone, Emory Arthur, Norfolk. Volume I, page 157.  
 Stoneburner, Frank C., Edinburg, Shenandoah County. Volume I, page 157.  
 Strause, Carl James, Ashcake, Hanover County. Volume I, page 157.  
 Strauss, Joseph, Virginia. Volume I, page 157.  
 Strauss, Lewis Lichtenstein, Richmond. Volume I, page 158.  
 Street, Flem, Whitewood, Buchanan County. Volume V, page 465.  
 Stump, Joseph (deceased), Copper Hill, Floyd County. Volume I, page 158.  
 Sumner, Edwin Vose (deceased), Richmond. Volume I, page 158.  
 Swats, Cecil F., West Augusta, Augusta County. Volume V, page 466.  
 Swecker, Arlie D., Monterey, Highland County. Volume I, page 158.  
 Symington, Powers, Virginia. Volume V, page 466.  
 Taussig, Joseph K., Norfolk. Volume I, page 158.  
 Taylor, Clifford D., Richmond. Volume I, page 159.  
 Taylor, David Watson, Waldrop, Louisa County. Volume I, page 159.  
 Taylor, Glen B., Dayton, Rockingham County. Volume I, page 159.  
 Taylor, Henry M., Richmond. Volume I, page 159.  
 Taylor, Robertson K., Norfolk. Volume I, page 159.  
 Tebbs, Richard H., Jr., Leesburg, Loudoun County. Volume I, page 159; Volume V, page 466.  
 Tennis, William James H., Elizabeth City County. Volume I, page 159.  
 Terry, Peyton Leftwich, Roanoke. Volume I, page 160.  
 Thacker, Joel D., Orrix, Berford County. Volume V, page 466.  
 Thomas Charles G., Antioch, Fluvanna County. Volume V, page 466.  
 Thomas, Henry, Roanoke. Volume I, page 160.



- Thurston, John C. (deceased), Richmond. Volume I, page 160.  
 Tignor, William P., Old Church, Hanover County. Volume I, page 160.  
 Toliver, Emmett R., Fries, Grayson County. Volume V, page 466.  
 Tomlin, Gilmore C., Lynchburg. Volume I, page 160; Vol. V, page 466.  
 Tompkins, William Fraser, Richmond. Volume I, page 161.  
 Toulmin, Harry Aubrey, Jr., Upperville, Loudoun County. Volume I, page 161.  
 Travis, John Randolph, New London, Caroline County. Volume I, page 161.  
 Truesdell, Karl, Virginia. Volume I, page 161.  
 Tucker, Albert Sidney Johnston, Lexington. Volume I, page 162.  
 Tucker, Fred G., Warfield, Brunswick County. Volume I, page 162.  
 Turley, William A., Asberry, Tazewell County. Volume V, page 467.  
 Turner, Clinton D., Norfolk. Volume V, page 467.  
 Turner, Mills E., Carrsville, Isle of Wight County. Volume V, page 467.  
 Turpin, Eli F., Indian Valley, Floyd County. Volume I, page 162.  
 Tyler, John Paul, Clifton Forge. Volume V, page 467.  
 Uhl, Harrison J., Buchanan, Botetourt County. Volume I, page 162.  
 Unrue, Robert L., Roanoke. Volume V, page 467.  
 Upshur, Alfred P., Richmond. Volume I, page 162.  
 Vaughan, Harry B., Jr., Norfolk. Volume V, page 467.  
 Venable, George Richard, Radford. Volume I, page 163.  
 Vial, Frank Augustine, Richmond. Volume I, page 163; Volume V, page 467.  
 Waddill, Edmund C., Richmond. Volume I, page 163.  
 Wadman, Harold Athelstone, Newport News. Volume I, page 163.  
 Waldron, Hubert, Bedford County. Volume I, page 163.  
 Wales, William H., Norfolk. Volume I, page 164.  
 Walke, Willoughby, Norfolk. Volume I, page 164.  
 Walker, Meriweather Lewis, Lynchburg. Volume I, page 164.  
 Walker, Reuben Lindsay, Richmond. Volume I, page 164.  
 Waller, Littleton Waller Tazewell, Jr., Norfolk. Volume I, page 164.  
 Walls, Lloyd B., Toms Creek, Wise County. Volume V, page 468.  
 Walsh, William J., Menoka. Volume I, page 165.  
 Ware, James Vernon, Norfolk. Volume I, page 166.  
 Ware, Joseph F., Fort Monroe, Elizabeth City County. Volume I, page 166; Volume V, page 468.  
 Warren, George E., Harrisonburg. Volume I, page 166.  
 Waters, Taliesin, Antioch, Fluvanna County. Volume I, page 167.  
 Watkins, Charles, Richmond. Volume I, page 167.  
 Watson, Edwin M., Virginia. Volume I, page 167.  
 Watt, William W., Clarendon, Arlington County. Volume I, page 168.  
 Weddell, Alexander W., Richmond. Volume I, page 168.  
 Weeks, Gordon H., Bedford, Bedford County. Volume V, page 468.  
 Welton, Richard F., Jr., Portsmouth. Volume I, page 168.  
 Werner, Richard, Norfolk. Volume I, page 168.  
 West, John E., Davis Wharf, Accomac County. Volume I, page 169.  
 Westcott, Milton Roberts, Falls Church, Fairfax County. Volume I, page 169.  
 Wharton, Ira J., Phoebus, Elizabeth City County. Volume I, page 169.  
 White, Ambrose F., Coulwood, Russell County. Volume I, page 169.  
 White, James Roland, Culpeper, Culpeper County. Volume I, page 170.  
 White, Jesse J., Newport News. Volume I, page 170.  
 White, John G., Fredericksburg. Volume I, page 170.  
 White, William R., Virginia. Volume I, page 170.  
 Whiting, Thomas Spady, Hampton. Volume I, page 170.  
 Whitlock, Marion G., Roanoke. Volume I, page 171.  
 Wickham, Vivian H., Roanoke. Volume V, page 468.  
 Wilkinson, Harry A., Richmond. Volume V, page 468.  
 Williams, Ashby, Stafford County. Volume V, page 468.  
 Williams, Cecil A. (deceased), Norfolk. Volume I, page 171; Volume V, page 469.  
 Williams, John Stuart, Staunton. Volume I, page 171.  
 Williams, Lloyd William (deceased), Berryville. Volume V, page 469.  
 Williams, Thomas B., Virgilina, Halifax County.

- Williams, William C., Jonesville, Lee County. Volume I, page 172.  
Willis, John H. (deceased), Lynchburg. Volume I, page 172.  
Willis, Richarn Lee, Chatham, Pittsylvania County. Volume I, page 172.  
Wills, Davis B., Charlottesville. Volume I, page 172.  
Wilmer, William Holland, Millwood, Clarke County. Volume V, page 469.  
Wilson, William B., Virginia. Volume I, page 172.  
Wilt, John W., Luray, Page County. Volume V, page 469.  
Wiltshire, Harry Vernon, Richmond. Volume I, page 173.  
Winn, Joseph L., Roanoke. Volume V, page 469.  
Winter, Franris Anderson, Warrenton, Fauquier County. Volume I, page 173; Volume V, 470.  
Wise, Jennings Cropper, Richmond. Volume I, page 173; Vol. V, page 470.  
Wiseman, Henry A., Danville. Volume I, page 174; Volume V, page 470.  
Withrow, James, Goshen, Rockbridge County. Volume V, page 470.  
Witten, Andrew Jacques, North Tazewell. Volume I, page 174.  
Wolmendorf, Raymond G., Lexington. Volume I, page 174.  
Wood, Charles Parkinson, Warrenton, Farquier County. Volume I, page 174; Volume V, page 470.  
Wood, Duncan M., Portsmouth. Volume V, page 470.  
Wood, George, Lynchburg. Volume I, page 174.  
Wood, Joseph Miller, Birdwood, Albemarle County. Volume I, page 174.  
Woodbridge, John S., Fredericksburg. Volume I, page 175.  
Woodson, Walter Browne, Lynchburg. Volume I, page 175.  
Woodson, Wilbert T., Crozet, Albemarle County. Volume I, page 175.  
Woodville, Joseph Preston, Earlhurst, Alleghany County. Volume I, page 175.  
Woodward, Richard Fuller (deceased), Norfolk. Volume I, page 175.  
Woodward, Winsor French, Virginia. Volume I, page 176.  
Woody, Harry, Wingina, Buckingham County. Volume I, page 176.  
Worcester, Philip H., Virginia. Volume I, page 176.  
Word, William Edward, Jr. (deceased), Richmond. Volume I, page 176.  
Wrangelborg, Garfield, Malvern Hill, Charles City County. Volume I, page 176.  
Wray, Francis Marion, Martinsville, Henry County. Volume I, page 177; Volume V, page 471.  
Wrenn, Harold Holmes, Norfolk. Volume I, page 177.  
Wright, John W., Catawba, Roanoke County. Volume I, page 177.  
Wright, Kelley G., Tazewell, Tazewell County. Volume I, page 177.  
Wright, Saunders, Pemberton, Goochland County. Volume V, page 471.  
Wygal, Lawrence A., Russell County. Volume I, page 178.  
Wysor, Robert E., Dublin, Pulaski County. Volume I, page 178.  
Yeary, Milam, Big Stone Gap, Wise County. Volume I, page 178.  
Youell, Rice McNutt, Norton, Wise County. Volume I, page 178; Volume V, page 471.  
Zimmerman, Alfred G., Norfolk. Volume I, page 179.  
Zirkle, James Milton, Loftin, Augusta County. Volume I, page 179.





REFERENCE  
REMOVE FROM LIBRARY

VIRGINIA BEACH PUBLIC LIBRARY  
INFORMATION SERVICES DIVISION  
GENERAL REFERENCE BUREAU  
936 INDEPENDENCE BOULEVARD  
VIRGINIA BEACH, VIRGINIA 23455

VIRGINIA BEACH PUBLIC LIBR  
SYSTEM

A18204 651406

Virginia Beach  
Public Library

**REFERENCE**  
FOR USE IN LIBRARY  
ONLY

817 RD

orld